

Cornell University Library
Ithaca, New York

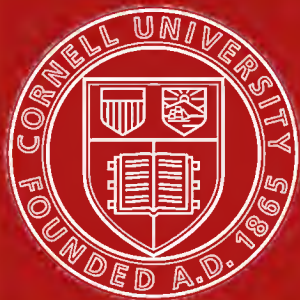
BOUGHT WITH THE INCOME OF THE
SAGE ENDOWMENT FUND
THE GIFT OF
HENRY W. SAGE
1891



CORNELL UNIVERSITY LIBRARY



3 1924 090 883 525



Cornell University Library

The original of this book is in
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in
the United States on the use of the text.

<http://www.archive.org/details/cu31924090883525>

THE
H I S T O R Y
OF THE
PARLIAMENT OF ENGLAND,
WHICH BEGAN NOVEMBER THE THIRD, 1640; WITH A SHORT AND NECESSARY VIEW OF
SOME PRECEDENT YEARS.

*I HAVE read over the first part of this History,
contained in three Books, an impartial Truth ; and
judge it fit for publike view by the printing.*

JO. LANGLEY.

May 7, 1647.



C. Middleton sc.

Thomas May, Esq.

Ætatis, Sua 55.

THE
HISTORY
OF THE
PARLIAMENT OF ENGLAND,

WHICH BEGAN NOVEMBER THE THIRD, M.DC.XL.;

WITH

A SHORT AND NECESSARY VIEW OF SOME PRECEDENT YEARS.

WRITTEN BY THOMAS MAY, Esq.
SECRETARY FOR THE PARLIAMENT.

PUBLISHED BY AUTHORITY.

*Tempora mutantur.
Mutantur Homines.
Veritas eadem manet.*

LONDON:

IMPRINTED BY MOSES BELL, FOR GEORGE THOMASON, AT THE SIGNE OF THE ROSE AND
CROWN IN ST. PAUL'S CHURCH-YARD,
M.DC.XL.VII.

AND NOW REPRINTED BY ROBERT WILKS, 89, CHANCERY-LANE,
AND SOLD BY WHITE, COCHRANE, AND CO. FLEET-STREET, LONDON.

1812.

GOVERNMENT
UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY

A P R E F A C E

TO THE

PRESENT EDITION OF THIS HISTORY.

THE following History of the Parliament of England, which begun on the 3rd day of November, in the year 1640, and which has since been usually distinguished by the name of *the Long Parliament*, was written by *Thomas May, Esquire*, a Gentleman of great Genius and Litterary attainments, who flourished in the reign of King Charles the First. He was born at *Mayfield*, in the County of *Sussex*, in the year 1595, and was the eldest son of *Sir Thomas May*, a Knight, who lived at that place, and who seems to have been possessed of a competent estate in that neighbourhood, which was sufficient to maintain him in the condition of an Independant Gentleman; as it does not appear that he was engaged in any of the Professions. And the liberal education which he gave his eldest son, our Author, seems to confirm this supposition of the Independance of *Sir Thomas May's* circumstances: for, after having sent him to some good school in the neighbourhood of *Mayfield*, in the early part of his youth, in which he made an uncommon progress in the acquisition of the learned Languages;) *Sir Thomas May* entered him at *Sidney-Sussex College*, in the University of *Cambridge*, in the rank of a *Fellow-commoner*, which is the upper Class of Students there, into which the eldest sons of the affluent and independant gentlemen of England are usually admitted. And here our Author continued his classical studies with great assiduity and success, and laid-in a copious stock of that elegant Literature,

ture, and familiar acquaintance with the best Poets and Historians of Antiquity, for which he was afterwards so much celebrated. And in the year 1612, he took the Degree of Bachelor of Arts, being then only 17 years of age; it being the custom, in those days, to remove young scholars from Grammar-schools, to the two Universities of Oxford and Cambridge, about three years earlier than is done at present, or for the last 60 or 70 years. But, after taking the Degree of Bachelor of Arts in the University of Cambridge, it does not appear that our Author ever took any other Degree there.

From the year 1612, (when he was 17 years old,) to the year 1615 (when he was twenty years of age,) it does not appear where Mr. May resided: though it seems reasonable to suppose that it was partly at Cambridge, and partly with his father in Sussex. But in the month of August, 1615, he was admitted a Student of the Law in the Society of Gray's Inn. And from that time he resided chiefly either at that Inn of Court, or in some other part of London, for more than twenty years; during which time he devoted himself much to the study and cultivation of Poetry, and, in consequence of his success in that elegant Art, became familiarly acquainted with the most eminent Courtiers and Wits of those times, and particularly with *Sir Kenelm Digby*, *Sir Richard Fanshaw*, *Sir John Suckling*, *Sir Aston Cokaine*, *Mr. Thomas Carew* (one of the Gentlemen of the Privy-chamber to King Charles,) and *Endymion Porter*; (one of the Gentlemen of his Bed-chamber,) besides Ben. Jonson (the celebrated Dramatic Poet,) and many other persons of higher quality, who were Poets themselves, and lovers of Poetry in others, amongst whom they admitted Mr. May to have a strong claim to be distinguished. And it was in the course of these 20 years (from the year 1615, to the year 1635;) that *Mr. May* made an excellent translation, in verse, of *Lucan's* noble historical Poem on the Civil War of Rome, between *Pompey the Great* and *Julius Cæsar*, intitled *Pharsalia*: which translation was first published in the year 1627, or the second year of the Reign of King Charles the First, and when Mr. May was 32 years old; and was published a second time in the year 1630; or when Mr. May was 35 years old; and was then accompanied with a continuation of the Poem in seven additional books, in English verse (like the translation of *Lucan's* work,) which carry the History of that destructive Civil War, to the death of *Julius Cæsar* in the Capitol,

by

by the hands of several Senators of Rome, who had conspired against him; who, for the most part, (or with the exception of only *Marcus Brutus* and *Caius Cassius*, and, perhaps, two or three persons more,) were Officers of his own Army, but yet thought it to be their duty to put him to death, when they found that he was resolved to terminate the long series of Victories which they had helped him to gain, with a total suppression of the Liberties of their Country. With this grand and awful event, (which afforded an example of the punishment due to ambitious men, who employ their great talents to the destruction of Publick Liberty,) Mr. May thought the Poem ought to end: and it may reasonably be supposed that he thought that Lucan himself would have closed his Poem with the description of that catastrophe, if he had lived to bring it to a conclusion.

And, after having published this Continuation of Lucan's Poem, in seven additional Books in English verse, in the year 1630, he translated it into Latin Verse, and caused the translation to be printed at Leyden in Holland, where it was much admired by learned Foreigners, and thought to be not inferiour, in the purity of the Latin, and the harmony of the Verses, to the Verses of Lucan himself.

This translation of Lucan's *Pharsalia*, with the Continuation of it in English Verse, and the translation of the said Continuation into Latin Verse, are the principal works that have contributed to the reputation of *Mr. May* as a Poet. But they are not the only ones. For he also distinguished himself as a Dramatick writer, by writing five Plays, two Comedies, and three Tragedies. The first of his Comedies was intitled *The Heir*, and was acted at London in the Reign of King James the First, in the year 1620, when our Author was but 25 years old; and it was afterwards published in the year 1633; and it is spoken of by the writers of those times as an excellent performance. And his other Comedy, which was called *The Old Couple*, is thought to have been written about the same time as the former, and was also brought upon the Stage at London, and well received by the Publick, and it is said to have been esteemed but little inferiour to his former Comedy. His three Tragedies were intitled *Cleopatra*, Queen of Egypt; *Agrippina*, Empress of Rome; and *Antigoné*, the Theban Princess: but they seem to have been less admired than his Comedies. And he distinguished

guished himself by other elegant Publications both in Verse and Prose, before the beginning of the Long Parliament, of which he wrote the following History. He lived somewhat above a year after the death of King Charles the First, in January 1648-49, and died, almost suddenly, in the year 1650, in the 55th, or 56th, year of his age.

More particulars concerning the life and writings of this eminent Author may be seen under the article of his name, in the *Biographia Britannica*. But those that have been here set-forth, are sufficient to shew that he must have had excellent opportunities of knowing the several publick events, that happened throughout the whole Reign of King Charles the First, which began in the year 1625, (when *Mr. May* was 30 years of age,) and ended in the year 1648-49, when *Mr. May* was 54 years old. And, therefore, *Mr. May* seems to have been admirably well fitted to become the historian of the transactions of this whole Reign, and especially of the proceedings of the three first years of this Parliament, which met in November, 1640, if he possessed the Grand Requisite of a good historian, which is *Impartiality, or the Love of Truth.*" Now "that he had this important Requisite," seems to be highly probable from the following considerations.

As his History of this Parliament was published so early as the year 1647, that is, less than seven years after the first meeting of it in November 1640, there must have been great numbers of persons living at the time of its publication, who had been witnesses of the several transactions recorded in it, and perfectly acquainted with all the circumstances belonging to them; and many of these persons would, no doubt, have been ready enough to contradict the accounts he had given of them in this History, and to point-out to the Publick the particular points in which he had mis-represented them, if those accounts had not been faithful. And yet I do not find than any writers of that time, from the month of May, 1647, when this History was published, to the month of May, 1660, when King Charles the Second was restored to his father's Throne, have ever contested the truth of the facts related in this History. And, therefore, it seems reasonable to conclude that those facts are true.

And, further, we may observe that the facts related in this History are found to agree with the accounts given of them by *Mr. Whitlock* in his *Memorials,*

morials, and by others of the most sedate and exact historical writers of those times: which is an additional ground for supposing him to have been a very impartial, as well as a very well-informed and judicious, relater of the proceedings of that important Period of our History.

And, lastly, this History of the Parliament almost speaks for itself in support of the impartiality of its Author. For it is written in so calm and temperate a style, is so free from invective and animosity, and has every where such an air of candour and moderation, that it seems to be almost impossible for a reader of it not to suppose it to be impartial,

And, accordingly, this is the character that has generally been allowed to belong to this work, by the most diligent and critical inquirers into the English History: of which I will here give two examples by citing the opinions of two very eminent Persons to this purpose, namely, the late very learned Dr. Warburton, Bishop of Gloucester, and the late very great Minister of State, in the three last years of the reign of King George the Second, Mr. William Pitt, who was afterwards created Earl of Chatham.

Dr. Warburton, Bishop of Gloucester, in his familiar Letters to his intimate friend, Dr. Hurd, (who was afterwards Bishop of Worcester,) has two very remarkable passages relating to this work of Mr. May, which I will here transcribe from the collection of those Letters which was published a few years ago, soon after the death of Dr. Hurd.

The first of these passages occurs in a Letter of Bishop Warburton, to Dr. Hurd, dated on the 30th day of June, in the year 1753, and is in these words:

“As to the History of the Long Parliament, the principal Authors are, *May’s History of the Parliament, Clarendon, Whitlock, Ludlow, Rushworth’s Collections, and Walker’s History of Independency.* The first is an extraordinary Performance, little known; written with great Temper, Good-sense, and Spirit; and has the qualities of a regular Composition.”

The second passage is in a Letter to Dr. Hurd, dated on the 16th of August of the same year 1753, and is in these words:

b

“*May’s*

“ *May’s History of the Parliament* is a just Composition, according to the
 “ rules of History. It is written with much Judgement, Penetration, Manli-
 “ ness, and Spirit ; and with a candour that will greatly increase your esteem,
 “ when you understand that he wrote by the order of his masters, *the Par-*
 “ *liament.*”

The opinion of the great Mr. William Pitt, (afterwards Earl of Chatham,) occurs in a Letter to his Nephew, *Thomas Pitt, Esquire*, (his elder brother’s son,) who was then a young man and a student at *Clare-hall*, in the University of Cambridge, and who was afterwards created Lord Camelford ; which Letter was dated on the 5th of September, 1754. The passage containing it is in these words :

“ I desired you, some time since, to read Lord *Clarendon’s History of the*
 “ *Civil Wars*. I have lately read a much honester and more instructive book,
 “ of the same Period of History. It is the *History of the Parliament*, by *Thomas*
 “ *May, Esquire*. I will send it to you as soon as you return to Cambridge.”

These passages of the Letters of these two very eminent persons, are strong testimonies in favour of this excellent History, of which, however, I cannot find that there has ever been published any second Edition : and the copies of this first Edition of it, (which is printed in a thin folio volume in a very large type,) are now grown very scarce. I therefore hope that this new Edition of it, in the more commodious size of a quarto volume, and with the addition of short abstracts of it’s contents, printed in a smaller character in the margins of the pages, (which, though it is a practice that is now grown much out of fashion, appears to me a most important article for the convenience of the reader,) will be acceptable to the Publick.

At the end of this History, I have printed an Appendix to it, which contains all the Declarations, and Votes, and Messages of both Houses of Parliament to the King, with the King’s Answers to them, from the month of November, 1641, (when the King had returned from Scotland to London) to the 7th of the following month of March, 1641-42, when he had refused to reside at Westminster, near the Parliament, (in consequence of some popular tu-
 mults

mults that had arisen there, from which he apprehended danger to his person) and was retiring to the city of York, to raise a body of Troops there for his defence, under the name of a *Life-Guard*; which measure was soon after followed by an open civil-war. Amongst these Parliamentary Papers will be found first, the famous *Grand Remonstrance* of the House of Commons, presented to the King in December, 1641, which contains a just Picture of the several Grievances of the Nation, arising from the King's mis-government, from the beginning of his reign, and the King's Answer to it; and secondly, an account of the King's violent Entry into the House of Commons, on the 4th of January, 1641-42, attended by a body of 300 armed men, to seize the persons of five of the most eminent Members of the House, (Mr. Danzil Holles, Sir Arthur Haslerig, Mr. Pym, Mr. Hamden, and Mr. Strode) in order to have them tried for High Treason, for what they had said and done, as Members of that House; together with an account of the altercation that took place between the King and the Parliament in consequence of that violent measure; and, thirdly, an account of several informations, that had been given to the Parliament, of Licences that had been granted, under the King's hand, to several Irish Officers of the Popish Religion, (some of whom had been bred in the wars in Flanders and Holland, in the service of the King of Spain) to go-over to Ireland, where it was much to be feared, that they would engage in the Irish rebellion; and some of them had actually done so: from which informations the Parliament could not but entertain some suspicions that the King, though he might not have at first authorised and encouraged the Irish Papists to enter into this rebellion, (as those rebels declared that he *had* done, yet, now that the rebellion was on foot, was unwilling that it should be speedily suppressed; and was in hopes that he should receive some assistance from those rebels against the English Parliament. These informations received by the Parliament, and set-forth in some of the latter Papers in this Appendix, are very positive and particular, and seem fully sufficient to justify the suspicions entertained by the Parliament, of the King's secret sentiments on this subject, and did certainly contribute very much to increase the jealousy they had conceived of his design to revoke all his late concessions, and to resume his former absolute authority, by any means that he could employ for that purpose. And, if that horrid Irish rebellion had not happened at the

time it did, and Ireland had continued for a year or two in the same state of peace and tranquillity in which it was when the King went to Scotland, in August, 1641, to meet his Parliament there, and settle the affairs of that Kingdom both in Church and State, (which he did to the thorough satisfaction of his Scottish subjects) it seems probable that, upon his return to London in the following month of November, 1641, he would have complied in like manner with his English Parliament, in all the further measures they would have proposed to him, for the compleat correction of the former abuses in the Government, both in Church and State, and for the rendering all these corrections and concessions permanent after the Dissolution of the present Parliament, so as to put them out of all danger of being rescinded, or revoked, either by the King himself or any of his successors to the Crown. And if this opinion is well founded, it will follow that that horrid rebellion in Ireland must be considered as having been the cause, not only of all the bloodshed, and robbery, and desolation, which it immediately spread over that island, but also of all the misery in which England was overwhelmed during the whole of the English civil-war, or for the space of more than nine years, to wit, from the summer of the year 1642, when it begun, to the end of the year, 1651, when, (after the great victory gained at Worcester, by the army of the Commonwealth of England, under the command of Oliver Cromwell, over the Scottish army, commanded by King Charles the Second) the whole Island of Great-Britain was restored to Peace.

It appears from the last paragraph of this History, in page 228 of this Edition, that Mr. May had intended to publish a Continuation of it, in which, as he informs us, *he proposed to give a large account of the cessation of arms made by the King with the Irish rebels, (soon after the relief of the city of Gloucester, by the Earl of Essex, in the summer of the year 1643,) and of the great victories which small numbers of the English Forces had obtained over great multitudes of those Irish rebels, before the time of that cessation; as also of the Covenant, which the English Parliament, and that part of the Nation that adhered to it, entered into, about this time, with their Brethren of Scotland, for the maintenance of the Religion and Liberties of the two Kingdoms.* But this design Mr. May did not carry into execution, though
the

the reason of his declining to do so is not apparent. This omission is much to be regretted; as a clear and faithful account of these two Subjects;—the State of Ireland, after the Massacre of the Protestants, on the 23d of October, 1641, to the cessation of arms made with them, by the King's command, in the autumn of 1643; and the Treaty of the Covenant between the Parliaments of England and Scotland entered-into about the same time;—given us by the impartial pen of this intelligent writer, would have afforded great satisfaction to his readers. But our loss on this occasion may be, in some degree, repaired, with respect to the State of Ireland during those two years, or, at least, during the first part of them, by having recourse to the excellent History of the Irish Rebellion and Massacre, in October, 1643, written by *Sir John Temple*, who was Master of the Rolls in Ireland, and a Member of the King's Privy Council in Dublin at the very time of its breaking-out, and took a zealous and active part in the measures that were immediately employed for the preservation of that important city. This account of that horrid Event is universally allowed to be perfectly true and authentick, and is, indeed, made-up, in a great degree, of the depositions of several persons who were eye-witnesses of the various assaults, and murders, and robberies of the poor Protestants, by their perfidious Popish neighbours, with whom they had been living in the most friendly and unsuspecting familiarity for almost forty years. It's authenticity is therefore above all suspicion; and it was published before *Mr. May* wrote this History of the Parliament: for it is mentioned by him in the 81st page of this Volume, with the greatest approbation, where he calls it *the faithful relation of that Rebellion by a Noble Gentleman, whose place in that Kingdom gave him the means to know it*; and he declares that he had partly collected from it, what he himself had said in this History, concerning that shocking event. It therefore seems probable, that what is related on this subject by *Sir John Temple*, in his History of this Rebellion, will contain much of the same matter which would have been related by *Mr. May* concerning it, if he had executed his first design of continuing his History to a later Period: and, therefore, I think that the readers of this work of *Mr. May*, would do well to peruse *Sir John Temple's History of the Irish Rebellion* after it, as a proper
Sequel,

Sequel, or Supplement, to it. The only Edition of *Sir John Temple's Work* that I have seen, was printed in the year 1746; and the copies of it, I am informed, are grown somewhat scarce. It would therefore be, probably, an acceptable service to the Lovers of Truth in the History of their Country, to publish another Edition of it. For the horrid event, of which it gives a faithful Relation, ought never to be forgot.

FRANCIS MASERES.

Inner Temple,
Nov. 28, 1811.

THE AUTHOR'S PREFACE.

THE use of History, and the just Rules for composure of it, have been so well and fully described heretofore by judicious Writers, that it were lost labour, and a needlesse extension of the present work, to insist, by way of Introduction, upon either of them. I could rather wish my abilities were such, as that the Reader, (to whose judgement it is left,) might finde those Rules to have been observed in the Narration itself, instead of being set-forth to him in the Preface by a vaine Anticipation.

I will only professe to follow that one Rule, *Truth*, to which all the rest (like the rest of Moral Vertues to that of Justice) may be reduced; against which there are many waies, besides plaine falsehood, wherein a Writer may offend. Some Historians, who seeme to abhorre direct falshood, have, notwithstanding, dressed Truth in such improper Vestments, as to seem to have brought her forth to act the same part that falshood would; and to have taught her, by Rhetorical disguises, partial concealments, and invective expressions, instead of informing, to seduce a Reader, and carry the judgement of Posterity after that Byas which themselves have made. It was the opinion of a learned Bishop of *England*, not long ago deceased, that the Annals of Cardinal *Baronius* did more wound the Protestant Cause, than the Controversies of *Bellarmino*: And it may well be true. For against the unexpected stroke of partial History the ward is not so ready, as against that Polemike writing, in which Hostility is professed with open face.

This fault I have endeavoured to avoid: But it is my misfortune to undertake a subject that is of such a nature that really to avoid partiality in treating it is not very easie: but to escape the suspicion,
or

or censure, of falling into it, is almost impossible for the clearest integrity that ever wrote. Other writers, as well as myself, will, I suppose, undertake to handle this subject: and, because none of them, perchance, may give perfect satisfaction, I shall, in the behalfe of us all, intreat the Reader, that, in his censure of our several productions, he would deale with the Writings of men as with mankinde itselfe, call that *the best*, which is *the least bad*.

The Subject of this work is a Civil War;—a War indeed as much *more than Civil*, and as full of miracle, both in the causes and effects of it, as was ever observed in any Age;—a Warre as cruel as unnatural;—that has produced as much rage of Swords,—as much bitterness of Pens, both publike and private,—as was ever knowne; and has divided the understandings of men, as well as their affections, in so high a degree, that scarce could any vertue gaine due applause, any reason give satisfaction, or any Relation obtaine credit, unlesse amongst men of the same side. It were, therefore, a presumptuous madnesse, to think that this poore and weake Discourse, which can deserve no applause from either side, should obtaine from both so much as pardon; or that those Persons should agree in the judgement they will form of it who could never agree in any thing else.

I cannot, therefore, be so stupid, as not to be fully sensible of the difficulty of the taske imposed on me, or the great envy which attends it; which other men who have written Histories, upon farre lesse occasion, have discoursed-of at large in their Prefaces. And *Tacitus* himselfe, complaining of those ill times which were the unhappy subject of his *Annals*, (though he wrote not in the time of the same Princes under whom those things were acted;) yet, (because the Families of many men who had then been ignominious, were yet in being,) could not but discourse how much happier those Writers had been, who had taken more ancient and prosperous times for their Argument; such (as he there expresses it,) as those times in which the great and glorious actions of the old Romans, their honourable Atchievements, and exemplary Vertues, are recorded.

And I could have wished more than my life (being myself inconsiderable) that, for the sake of the Publick, my Theme could rather have been the prosperity of these Nations, the Honour and happiness of this King, and such a blessed Condition of both, as might have reached all the ends for which Government was first ordained

ordained in the world, than the description of Shipwrecks, Ruines, and Desolations. Yet these things, truly recorded and observed, may be of good Use, and may benefit Posterity in divers kinds. For, though the present Actions, or rather sufferings, of these (once happy) Nations, are of so high a marke and consideration, as might, perchance, throw themselves into the knowledge of Posterity by Tradition, and the weight of their own Fame; Yet it may much conduce to the benefit that may arise from that knowledge, to have the true causes, original, and growth, of them represented by an honest Pen.

For the truth of this plaine and naked Discourse, which is here presented to the publike view, containing a briefe Narration of those Distractions which have fallen amongst us during the sitting of this present Parliament * ; as also some passages, and visible Actions of the former Government (whether probably conducing to these present calamities, or not; of which let the Reader judge:) I appeale only to the memory of any Englishman, whose yeares have been enow to make him know the Actions that were done; and whose conversation has been enough publike, to let him heare the Common Voice and discourses of People upon those Actions;—to his memory, I say, do I appeale, whether such Actions were not done, and such Judgements made upon them, as are here related. In which, perchance, some Readers may be put in minde of their own thoughts heretofore, which thoughts have since, like *Nebuchadnezzar's* dreame, departed from them. An English Gentleman, who went to travel when this Parliament was called, and returned when these differences were growne among us, hearing what Discourses were daily made, affirmed, That the Parliament of *England* (in his opinion) was more mis-understood in *England* than at *Rome*; And that there was a greater need to remind our own Countrymen, than to informe strangers, of what was past; So much (said he) have they seemed to forget both the things themselves, and their own former Notions concerning them †.

But

* That is, from November 3rd, A. D. 1640, to September 27th, 1643, at which this History closes.

† The meaning of this passage seems to be, " That the English Noblemen and Gentlemen who now sided with the King against the Parliament, seemed to have forgot the sentiments of disgust
and

But, where Warre continues, people are inforced to make their residence in *several* Quarters; and therefore *several*, according to the places where they converse, must their information be concerning the condition and state of things. From whence arises not onely a variety, but a great discrepency for the most part, in the Writings of those who record the passages of such times. And therefore it has seldome happened, but that, in such times of calamity and Warre, Historians have much dissented from each other. *Franciscus Haræus* compiled Annals of the bloody and fierce Warres in the *Netherlands*, when some of those Provinces fell from the obedience of *Philip* the Second, King of *Spain*: Which businesse he relates in such a way, as must, in probability, lead a Reader to believe that the King and his Officers were altogether innocent, and the people of those Countries the only causers of their own Calamity. *Meteranus* also wrote the History of those very times; which whoso reads, must needs make a contrary censure concerning the occasion of that Warre. The like discrepency hath been found in Historians of all ages and Nations, and therefore ought not to be much wondered-at, if it should now happen.

But that which, of all others subjects, is most likely to be differently related (because informations will not agree in such a distance) is concerning the actions of Warre and Souldiery; and in the time of this Warre, it is a thing of extreme difficulty (I might say, of impossibility) for those of one Party to be truly informed of all the Counsels, or the very Performances and Actions, of Commanders and Souldiers on the other side. How much valour the English Nation on both sides have been guilty of in this unnatural Warre, the World must needs know in the general fame. But for particulars, how much Worth, Virtue, and Courage, some particular Lords, Gentlemen, and others, have shewed, unlesse both sides

and indignation against the tyrannical government of the King, both in Civil and Ecclesiastical matters, which had been entertained by them, and continually expressed in their free and private conversations, before the meeting of the Parliament, and were now thwarting the Parliament in it's wise and vigorous endeavours, to restrain the King's power in such a manner as to prevent his revoking all his late concessions, and returning to the exercise of his former arbitrary authority, to which he was justly thought to be still secretly attached.

do

do write, will never perfectly be known. My residence hath been, during these Wars, in the quarters, and under the protection, of the Parliament; and whatsoever is briefly related of the Souldiery, being toward the end of this Book, is according to that light which I discerned there. For whatsoever I have missed concerning the other Party, I can make no other Apology than such as *Meteoranus* (whom I named before) doth in the Preface to his History, *De Belgicis tumultibus*. Whose words are thus: *Quòd plura de Reformatorum, & patriæ defensorum, quàm de Partis adversæ rebus gestis exposuerim; mirum haudquaquam est: quoniam plus Commercii & familiaritatis mihi cum ipsis, & major indagandi opportunitas, fuit. Si Pars adversa idem tali probitate præstiterit & ediderit; Posteritas gesta omnia legere, & liquidò cognoscere, magno cum fructu poterit.* In like manner may I averre, that, if in this discourse more particulars are set-down, concerning the actions of those men who defended the Parliament, than of those that warred against it; it was, because my conversation gave me more light on that side; to whom, as I have endeavoured to give no more than what is due, so I have cast no blemishes on the other; nor bestowed any more characters than what the truth of Story must require. If those that write on the other side will use the same candour, there is no feare but that posterity may receive a full information concerning the unhappy distractions of these Kingdoms.

This I must adde, that to inform the world of the right nature, causes, and growth of these Distractions, it will require that the Discourse begin from preecedent times; which I shall endeavour to deduce down to the present time with as much brevity as the necessity of unfolding truth can possibly admit.

Neither is it needful to begin the Story from times of any great distance; or to mention the Government of our most ancient Princes; but from that Prince* (fresh in the memory of some yet

* Queen Elizabeth, who died in the year 1603, only 37 years before the meeting of the Parliament which is the subject of this History, which was in November, 1640.

living) who first established the Reformed Religion in this King-
dome, and, according to that, settled *a new Interest in the State*;
which it was most behoofeful and requisite for her Successors to
follow, and much conducing, besides the glory of Almighty God,
to their own Honour, Power, and Greatnesse.

THE CONTENTS.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

WHEREIN is a short mention of Queene Elizabeth, King James, and the beginning of King Charles his Reign; His two first Parliaments. Of the Wars with Spaine and France. The death of the Duke of Buckingham. And the third Parliament of King Charles.

Page

1

CHAP. II.

A briefe Relation of some grievances of the Kingdome. The various opinions of men concerning the present Government. The condition of the Court and Clergy of England. Some observations of a stranger, concerning the Religion of the English people.

10

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Page

The condition of the Scottish State and Clergy, when the new Booke of Liturgy was sent unto them; how it was received; with some effects which followed. The King's Proclamation sent by the Earle of Traquare; against which the Lords make a Protestation. 18

CHAP. IV.

The Scots enter into a Covenant. The Marquesse Hamilton is sent thither from the King. A National Synod is granted to them, but dissolved within few daies by the Marquesse, as Commissioner from the King. The King declares against the Covenanters, and raises an Army to subdue them. 25

CHAP. V.

The aversenesse of the English People from this Warre with Scotland. The King advanceth to Yorke with his Army. The preparation of the Scottish Covenanters. A Pacification is made, and both Armies disbanded. Another preparation for Warre with Scotland. A Parliament called to begin in England on the 13th of April. The Parliament of Scotland is broken-off by command of the King to the Earle of Traquare. 31

CHAP. VI.

The Parliament beginneth in England, but is soone dissolved. The Clergy continue their Convocation. The Scots enter into England.

England. *Some passages of the Warre. A Parliament is called to begin on the third of November. A truce betweene the Armies for two Moneths.*

Page

59

CHAP. VII.

The beginning of the English Parliament. Grievances examined. Sufferers relieved. Delinquents questioned. The Archbishop of Canterbury committed to the Tower. The flight of Secretary WINDEBANKE, and of the Lord-Keeper FINCH.

47

CHAP. VIII.

The Tryal and death of the Earle of Strafford. Conspiracies detected during the agitation of it. An Act for continuance of this present Parliament. With a mention of that Grant of the Triennial Parliament in February before.

59

CHAP. IX.

Allowance of money from the English Parliament to the Scots. The vast Charge of disbanding the two Armies. The great Taxations for that purpose, and the manner of Poll-money. The People take a Protestation. An Act for putting-down the High-Commission Court, and the Starre-Chamber; with other occurrences of that time. The Queene-Mother departeth from England. The King goeth into Scotland.

69

CHAP.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

Page

A Standing Committee during the Recess of both Houses of Parliament. The Rebellion of the Irish, and Massacre of the Protestants there. Some endeavours of the English Parliament for relief of that Kingdom. 79

CHAP. II.

The King returneth out of Scotland, and is pompously entertained by the City of London. The Remonstrance is published by the Parliament. The King entreth into the House of Commons. The Protestation of the twelve Bishops; and how it was censured by the Lords and Commons. Divers unhappy obstructions of the relief of Ireland. 88

CHAP. III.

The Queen passeth into Holland, with her daughter the Princess MARY. Difference between the King and Parliament concerning the Militia. The King goeth toward York, and is followed with a Petition from the Lords and Commons to Theobalds, and another Declaration to Newmarket. The King is denyed entrance into Hull by Sir John Hotham. 102

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Pages

Many Members of both Houses leave the Parliament, and repair to the King. Nine of the Lords who first went away, are impeached by the Commons, and censured by the Peers. The Great Seal is carried-away from London to York. Some votes of Parliament concerning the King's proceedings. A Petition, with nineteen Propositions, sent from the Parliament to the King. 114

CHAP. V.

An Order for the bringing-in of Plate and Money into Guildhall. The King's Declaration to the Lords about him; Their Profession and Protestation to him. The King layeth Siege to Hull; but raiseth it again. The Earl of Warwick taketh possession of the Navy, as Lord-Admiral. The Earl of Essex is voted in Parliament to be Lord-General of all their Forces. 130

CHAP. VI.

A brief Relation of the condition of divers Counties in England, when the Parliament's Ordinance for the Militia, and the King's Commission of Array, were put in execution. With a mention of some Lords and others who were actors on either side. The Lord Mayor of London committed to the Tower, and sentenced by the Parliament. A mention of some Declarations, Messages, and Answers, that passed between the King and the two Houses of Parliament. 140

BOOK III.

CHAP. I.

Pages

Prince Rupert and Prince Maurice arrive in England. The Earl of Essex taking leave of the Parliament, goeth to his Command. The King increaseth in strength at Shrewsbury. A skirmish at Worcester. The great Battell of Keynton is fought. 159

CHAP. II.

The Parliament send to the King, concerning an Accommodation. A fight at Brainford. Another Treaty with the King begun, and broken off. Reading besieged by the Lord General Essex, and surrendered to him. A conspiracy to betray Bristol. A treacherous Plot against the Parliament and City of London, discovered and prevented. 176

CHAP. III.

Matters of State transacted in Parliament, touching the Assembly of Divines. The making of a new Great Seale. Impeaching the Queene of High Treason, and other things. The Lord-General Essex, after some Marches, returneth to quarter his wasted and sick Army about Kingston. The King's Forces are Masters of the West. The Earl of Newcastle's greatnesse in the North. Some mention of the Earle of Cumberland, and the Lord FAIRFAX. 187

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Pages

- Some Actions of Sir Thomas Fairfax in the North. The Queen lands in England. The revolt of Sir Hugh Cholmley, and the two Hothams. The state of this Warre in the Westerne parts. The condition of the Associated Counties. A short relation of Sir William Waller's Actions; of Colonel Cromwell, Sir William Brereton, and Sir John Gell.* 197

CHAP. V.

- The death of the Lord Brooke, and of the Earle of Northampton. A short mention of some Actions in divers Counties. The low condition of the Parliament at that time. The Siege of Gloucester.* 210

CHAP. VI.

- The Expedition of the Lord-General Essex for reliefe of Gloucester. The great Battel of Newbury described.* 220

APPENDIX:

- Containing all the Papers issued by the King and the Parliament, from the time of the King's return from Scotland to London in November, 1641, to the middle of March, in the year 1641-2, extracted from Mr. Husbands's Collection, Published in the year 1642-3.* 229

- The Titles of the several Papers contained in this Appendix, with the proper references to the Pages in which they are to be found, are as follows.*

A TABLE

Expressing the Titles of the several Papers contained in the Appendix to this History of the Parliament of November 3, 1640, which are re-printed from the first 118 pages of the much larger Collection of Papers of the same kind, which was published by MR. HUSBANDS in the year 1642-3, and contains 954 pages.

DECEMBER, 1641.

	Pages
HIS Majesty's Speech to both Houses of Parliament, after His return from Scotland. Dec. 2.	231
His Majesty's Proclamation for obedience to the Laws, concerning Religion. Dec. 10.	232
His Majesty's Proclamation for the attendance of the Members in both Houses. Dec. 12.	233
His Majesty's Speech to both Houses, concerning a Bill for pressing of Souldiers. Dec. 14.	233
A Petition from the Lords and Commons to His Majesty concerning His Speech of the fourteenth of December.	234
A Petition and Remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom. Dec. 15.	235, 238
His Majesty's Answer to the Petition that accompanied the Remonstrance.	256
His Majesty's Declaration to all His loving Subjects, in answer to the Remonstrance.	258
His Majesty's Message to the Common-Council, delivered by the Lord Newburgh, respecting Tumultuous and Riotous Assemblies. Dec. 31.	263
His Majesty's Message to the House of Peers concerning Ireland. Dec. 28.	265

JANUARY, 1641-4

His Majesty's Proclamation concerning the Rebels in Ireland. Jan. 1.	266
Articles of High Treason against the Lord Kimbolton, and five Members of the House of Commons. Jan. 3, 1641-42.	267
An Order of the Commons, against breaking open any Doors or Trunks of any Member of that House.	267
His Majesty's Speech in the House of Commons concerning the five Members. Jan. 4.	268
An Order and Declaration of the House of Commons, concerning the breach of their Priviledges. Jan. 5, 1641-42.	268
	Another

THE CONTENTS.

xxix

	Pages
Another Declaration of the House of Commons concerning the breach of their priviledges, and the Vindication of divers of their Members. Jan. 17, 1641-42.	269
The Petition and Protestation of the Bishops to the King's Majesty.	273
A Proposition by the House of Commons, unto His Majesty for a Guard.	275
His Majestie's Answer to the House of Commons' Proposition for a Guard.	276
The Petition of the Common-Council of London, to His Majestie.	276
His Majestie's Answer to the City Petition.	278
His Majestie's Proclamation for a General Fast throughout the Kingdom. Jan. 8, 1641-42.	279
His Majestie's Message to both Houses, concerning the Lord Kimbolton, and the five Members. Jan. 12, 1641-42.	280
The Petition of the County of Buckingham to His Majesty.	280
His Majestie's Answer to the Buckinghamshire Petition. Jan. 13, 1641-42.	281
An Order of both Houses concerning the Lord Digby and others. Jan. 13, 1641-42.	281
His Majestie's Profession and Addition to His last Message, concerning the Lord Kimbolton, and the five Members. Jan. 14, 1641-42.	282
Questions propounded to Master Attorney, by the House of Commons, concerning the five Members, with his Answer to each of them.	282
His Majestie's Letter to the Lord Keeper, in Defence of the Attorney-Generall.	284
His Majestie's Message to both Houses of Parliament. Jan. 20, 1641-42.	284
An Order of the Lords, to prevent the deliveriog of Petitions unto them. Jan. 20, 1641-42.	285
His Majestie's Letter to both Houses, concerning the Lord Kimbolton, and the five Members, Jan. 21, 1641-42.	285
The Scotch Commissioners' Propositions for sending 2500 men into Ireland. Jan. 24, 1641-42.	286
The Votes of the Commons, and Order of the Lords, concerning the Propositions of the Scots.	287
His Majestie's Answer to the Scotch Propositions. Jan. 26, 1641-42.	287
His Majestie's further answer to the three Articles of the said Propositions. Jan. 27, 1641-42.	287
The Petition of the House of Commons to His Majesty, concerning the Militia. Jan. 26, 1641-42.	288
His Majestie's Answer to the said Petition of the House of Commons. Jan. 28, 1641-42.	289
An Order by both Houses for prevention of Popish Commanders from going into Ireland, Jan. 29, 1641-42.	290

FEBRUARY, 1641-42.

Two Petitions of the Lords and Commons to His Majesty, the one concerning the Militia, the other concerning the five Members.	291, 292
His Majestie's Answer to the two Petitions of both Houses. Feb. 2, 1641-42.	293
His Majestie's consent for the Princess Marie's going to Holland.	294
The Queen's Majestie's Answer to a Message of both Houses.	294
	His

	Pages
His Majestie's Message to the House of Commons, concerning Master Pym's Speech. Feb. 7, 1641-42.	294
An Answer of the House of Commons, to His Majestie's Message. Feb. 10, 1641-42.	295
His Majestie's Reply to the said Answer of the House of Commons.	296
His Majestie's Message to the House of Peers, for accepting of Sir John Coniers, in Sir John Birou's room. Feb. 11, 1641-42.	298
A List of the names of those men which were thought fit to be entrusted with the Militia of the Kingdom. Feb. 12, 1641-42.	298
His Majestie's Message to both Houses of Parliament. Feb. 14, 1641-42.	300
A Petition of the Lords and Commons to His Majesty, concerning the Members accused.	301
An Ordinance, concerning Serjeant-Major Skippon.	302
A Message from a Committee to the Spanish Ambassador, concerning some Ships lying at Dunkirk.	302
The Spanish Ambassador's Answer to the same.	303
His Majestie's Message to both Houses, concerning the Militia.	304
The Petition of the Lords and Commons to His Majestie, in answer to his Majestie's Message.	304
A Message from both Houses to the King and Queen's Majesties, concerning some Letters of the Lord Digbye's.	305
A Message from both Houses to His Majesty, concerning the Prince, his Son. Feb. 24, 1641-42.	306
His Majestie's Answer to the said Message of both Houses.	306
Votes of the Lords and Commons, upon the Propositions for Ireland.	307
His Majestie's Answer, and Assent, unto the Propositions for Ireland. Feb. 24, 1641-42.	309
Directions from the Lords and Commons, concerning the Propositions for Ireland.	310
An Ordinance of both Houses, for settling the Militia of the Kingdom.	311
His Majestie's Answer to both Houses of Parliament, concerning the Militia. Feb. 28, 1641-42.	312

MARCH, 1641-42.

A Petition of the Lords and Commons to His Majesty, concerning the Militia of the Kingdom. March 1, 1641-42.	314
His Majestie's Answer to the said Petition.	316
Votes of both Houses of Parliament, for settling the Militia.	316
An Order of both Houses of Parliament, for the speedy Rigging of the Navy. March 2, 1641-42.	317
A Declaration of the Lords and Commons, presented to his Majesty at Newmarket. March 9, 1641-42.	318
Additional Reasons to the former Declaration of both Houses.	323
His Majestie's Speech at the delivery of the Declaration, from the Lords and Commons, presented to his Majesty at Newmarket, on the 9th of March, 1641-42.	324

Some

T H E C O N T E N T S.

xxxii

	Pages
Some passages, that happened between the King's Majesty, and the Committee of both Houses, on the ninth of March, when the Declaration was delivered. - -	324
His Majestie's Declaration in Answer to the said Declaration of both Houses. -	325
A Letter from both Houses of Parliament, to all High Sheriffs, concerning the Propositions for Ireland. - - -	330
Votes of both Houses for securing the Kingdom. March 15, 1641-42. - -	331
His Majestie's Message from Huntingdon to both Houses, upon His removal to York. March 15, 1641-42. - - -	332
Votes of both Houses upon His Majestie's Message from Huntingdon. -	333
A new declaration of the Lords and Commons, to His Majesty, upon His removal from Huntingdon to York, concerning Warrants granted for Papists going into Ireland. March 15, 1641-42. - - -	334
His Majestie's Answer to a Paper, intituled, a new Declaration of the Lords and Commons. -	337

Faint, mirrored text from the reverse side of the page, appearing as bleed-through. The text is largely illegible due to low contrast and is oriented upside down.

A short, faint line of text centered on the page, likely a page number or a page separator.

THE
HISTORY
OF THE
PARLIAMENT OF ENGLAND.

CHAP. I.

Wherein is a short mention of Queene ELIZABETH, King JAMES, and the beginning of King CHARLES his Reigne; his two first Parliaments. Of the Warre with Spaine and France The death of the Duke of BUCKINGHAM. And the third Parliament of King CHARLES.

QUEENE ELIZABETH, of glorious Memory, together with that great Stock of Wealth and Honour, which her prudent and just Government had brought to the English Nation, had enriched them besides with a greater Treasure (which we may justly account the cause of all the rest) Religion reformed from Popish Superstition.

That Reformation engaged the Queene in a new Interest of State, to side with the Protestants against those Potent Monarchs of the other Religion, which seemed at the beginning as much danger and disadvantage to her, as it proved in conclusion security and Honour; so impossible it is for any disadvantage to prevail over them that helpe the Lord against the Mighty.

That Storme from *France*, which so much threatened the weake beginnings of her Reigne, was suddenly blowne-over by the death of HENRY the second, and, some few Moneths after, of his Sonne FRANCIS, who had married the Queene of *Scotland*: the danger which remained greatest was from *Spain*, where PHILIP the Second then reigned, a Prince not greater in Dominion, Treasure, and Armies, than deeply engaged against the Protestant Religion, by the instigation and assistance of the Jesuites, an Order, which in the Age before had beene highly countenanced by Pope PAUL the third, in opposition to the Gospell-Doctrine, that then began to spread apace in *Germany* and other parts.

The whole Order of *Jesuites* (as endeavouring to set-up one Temporall Kingdome of *Christendome*, suitable to the *Papall Hierarchy*) applyed their service altogether to the *Monarchy* of *Spain*, as being then far the greatest in *Europe* (and fittest for their purpose) by the late uniting of so many Kingdomes and Dutchies under the person of CHARLES the Emperour, who by a fortunate birthright inherited, together with *Castile*, and *Aragon*, and all the great acquisitions of his Grandfather FERDINAND in *Italy* and the *West-Indies*, the rich and useful patrimony of his Father PHILIP, *Burgundy*, and the *Neiberlands*. All these he had left entirely to his Sonne PHILIP, who to so large a Territory, had made that strong addition of the Kingdome of *Portugall*, and might seeme an Enemy too mighty for *England* and all the *Protestants* of *Europe* to oppose.

But Queene ELIZABETH had woven the interest of her own State so inseparably into the cause of Religion itselfe, that it was hard to overthrow one without the ruine of the other. And God, who had given her so much grace and courage as to rely wholly upon him, did, with that Almighty hand, not onely hold her up from sinking, but lift her above the heads of all her enemies.

By what degrees and means she atchieved the great Actions of her reigne, and brought so much prosperity to her Nation, it is not the scope of this discourse to relate at large (for her History is not the worke in hand) but only in brief to declare that, before her death, she was the happy instrument of God to promote the Protestant Religion in all parts. She curbed the Spanish greatnesse by supporting *France* from ruine, to give some balance to the other; as she preserved *Scotland* from being swallowed-up by the French before. She protected the *Hollanders* against him, vanquished his Armies both by Land and Sea, with many other such things as might seeme too much to be the atchievements of one Reigne. And last of all, she reduced *Ireland* wholly to obedience, notwithstanding all the subtil machinations of *Spain*, and open assistance given in Armes to her Irish Rebels. All which she accomplished by the justice and prudence of her government, by making the right use of her Subjects hearts, hands, and Purses, in a
Parliamentary

Parliamentary way; as also securing her own Kingdome by strengthening the hands of Protestants abroad; insomuch as she stood at last above the reach of any enemy by open warre; and protected by God, though often attempted by domestick Treasons and Assassinations, till in the end she died in a good old age, leaving to her Successor, King JAMES, the Kingdome of *England* in an happier condition than ever it was; the Kingdome of *Ireland* wholly subdued and reduced, to reap for himselfe the harvest of all her labour and expence; and nothing to do for it, but to propagate the true Faith in that Kingdome, which she, prevented by death, could not performe; and was, in probability, an easie taske for King JAMES at that time; much conducing, besides the honour of God, to his owne Temporall strength and greatnesse, if he had onely gone fairly on in that way which Queene ELIZABETH had made plaine for him.

The Prosperity of *England* seemed then at the height, or *Ακμή*; and it pleases God that States many times shall decline from their happinesse without any apparent signes to us, or reasons that we can give, as a Heathen complains:

*O! faciles dare summa Deos, eadēque tueri
Difficiles?* Lucan.

How easie are the Gods to raise States high,
But not to keepe them so?

These things have made some high-reaching Writers impute the raising and declination of Kingdomes and Common-wealths to certaine aspects of heavenly Constellations, to Conjunctions and oppositions of Planets, and various Eclipses of Celestiall Luminaries; others, to an hidden strength, and secret efficacy of Numbers themselves; and most men to the perpetuall Rotation of fortune: but the judgements of God in those things are past our finding-out; and they are too wise, who are not content sometimes to wonder.

For King JAMES, the Successour to Queene ELIZABETH, was a wise and learned Prince, of disposition mercifull and gracious, excellently grounded in that Religion which he professed, as the world may finde by his extant writings; a Prince of whom *England* conceived wonderfull hope, and received with great joy and Triumph. But he did not beginne where his Predecessor left, proceeding rather in a contrary way: what the reasons of it were, I will not at all presume to deliver my opinion, though some have bene bold to write and publish of late yeeres, that it was feare for his own Person, that made him to temporize with *Rome*, considering the boldnesse of Jesuiticall Assassines: others, more candidly, conceived it might be his great desire of peace and union with other Princes, though he might erre in the meanes of attaining that end; for he was by nature a great seeker of Peace, and abhorrer of bloodshed, according to that Motto which he ever used, *Beati Pacifici*. I cannot search into mens thoughts, but onely relate the Actions which appeared.

King JAMES, at the beginning of his Reigne, made a Peace with *Spaine*, which

was brought very low by Queene ELIZABETH, and had beene neerer to ruine in all probability, had she lived a few yeares longer; the Estates of the united Provinces of the *Netherlands*, those usefull Confederates to *England*, began to be despised by the English Court, under a vaine shadow; in stead of a reason, "that they were an ill example for a Monarch to cherish." Then began secret Treaties to passe betwixt *Rome* and the Court of *England*; care to be taken about reconciliation of Religions; the rigour of Penall Lawes against the Papists (notwithstanding that odious plot of the Gunpowder-Treason) was abated; the pompe of Prelacy, and multitude of Ceremonies, encreased daily in the Church of *England*; and according to that were all Civil Affaires managed both at home and abroad.

Neither was it easie for the King to turne himselfe out of that way, when he was once entred into it; so that at last the Papists began by degrees to be admitted neerer to him in service and conversation. Exceeding desirous he then was to match the Prince, his Sonne, to the Infanta of *Spain*; about which many and long Treaties passed, wherein not onely the Spaniard, but the Pope, made many present advantages of the King's earnest desires, and many waies deluded him, as it appeared plainly by his owne Letters to his Ambassadors there, since found and published.

Thus was the King by degrees brought, not onely to forsake, but to oppose, his owne interest both in civill and religious affaires, which was most unhappily seene in that cause (as the Duke of ROHAN observed,) wherein, besides the interest of all Protestants, and the honour of his Nation, the estate and livelihood of his owne children were at the height concerned, the Palatinate-businesse.

From hence flowed a farther mischief; for the King (being loath, perchance, that the whole people should take notice of those waies in which he trod,) grew extremely disaffected to Parliaments, calling them for nothing but to supply his expences, dissolving them when they began to meddle with State-Affaires, and divers times imprisoning the Members for Speeches made in Parliament, against the fundamentall priviledges of that high Court.

Parliaments being thus despised and abused, projects against the Lawes were found-out to supply the King's expences, which were not small; and the King (whether to avoid the envy of those things, or the trouble of them) did in a manner put-off all businesse of Government from himselfe into the hands of a young Favourite, the Duke of BUCKINGHAM, whom he had raised, from a Knight's fourth Sonne; to that great heighth, and entrusted with the chiefe Offices of the Kingdome; besides the great power, which he had by that extraordinary favour of conferring all places and preferments both in Church and State.

This Duke, not long before the death of King JAMES, was growne into extraordinary favour and intirenesse with the Prince, whom he afterward swayed no lesse than he had before his father; like an unhappy vapour exhaled from the earth to so great an height, as to cloud not only the rising, but the setting Sunne.

King CHARLES, with great hopes and expectation of the people, and no lesse high expressions of love and duty from all in general, began his Reigne on the

Of the Duke of Buckingham.

Of King Charles.

27 of *March*, 1624. And indeed that love which the people bare to his Person, had been before testified, whilst he was yet Prince, at his returne from Spaine, though the journey itselfe had not been pleasing to the Kingdome; for, when the people saw him arrived in safety, there needed no publike Edict for thanksgiving, or joy; every society and private family (as if the hearts of all had bene in one) did voluntarily assemble themselves together, praising God, with singing of Psalmes, with joyfull feasting, and charity to the poore; insomuch that, I suppose, the like consent, without any interposing authority, hath not been often knowne.

The same affections followed him to his Throne; the same hopes and faire presages of his future Government, whilst they considered the temperance of his youth, how cleare he had lived from personall vice, being growne to the age of 23. how untainted of those licentious extravagances, which unto that age and fortune are not only incident, but almost thought excusable.

But some men suspended their hopes, as doubting what to finde of a Prince so much and so long reserved; for he had never declared himselfe of any Faction, or scarce interposed in any State affaires, though some things had been managed in his father's Reigne, with much detriment to his owne present and future fortunes. Yet that by the people in generall was well censured, as an effect of his piety and obedience to the King his father, and happy presages were gathered from it, "That so good an Obeyer would prove a just Ruler."

They wondered also to see him suddenly linked in such an intire friendship with the Duke of BUCKINGHAM; for extraordinary Favourites do usually eclipse and much deprime the Heire apparent of a Crowne, or else they are conceived so to do; and, upon that reason, hated and ruined by the succeeding Prince; in which kinde all ancient and moderne Stories are full of examples.

In the beginning of King CHARLES his Reigne, a Parliament was called, and His first Parliament. adjourned to *Oxford*, (the plague raging extremely at *London*;) where the Duke of BUCKINGHAM was highly questioned, but by the King (not without the grieffe and sad presage of many people, that private affections would too much prevaile in him against the publike) he was protected against the Parliament, which for that onely It is dissolved. purpose was dissolved, after two Subsidies had been given and before the Kingdome received reliefe in any one grievance; as is expressed in the first and general Remonstrance* of this present Parliament, where many other unhappy passages of those times are briefly touched; as that the King immediately after the dissolution of that Parliament, contrived a Warre against *Spaine*, in which the designe was A war with Spain. unhappily laid, and contrary to the advice which at that time had been given by wise men, who perswaded him to invade the *West-Indies*; a way, no doubt, farre more easie and hopeful for *England* to prevaile against *Spaine* than any other: instead of that, the King, with great expence of Treasure, raised an Army and

* This Remonstrance was passed by the House of Commons on Wednesday the 15th of December, 1641. It is intitled, *A Remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom*, and is expressed in clear and temperate language, and has a great appearance of being true. See Husbands's Collection of all Remonstrances, Declarations, &c. of this Parliament, published in the year 1642.

Fleet to assault *Cales*, the Duke of BUCKINGHAM bearing the Title both of Admirall and Generall, though he went not himselfe in person. But the matter was so ordered that the expedition proved altogether successelesse, and as dishonourable as expensive.

Of the siege of Rochelle.

They complained likewise of another designe (which indeed was much lamented by the people of *England* in generall) about that time put in practice,—a thing destructive to the highest interest of the Nation, the maintenance of the Protestant religion: a Fleet of English Ships were set-forth, and delivered-over to the French, by whose strength all the Sea-forces of Rochell were scattered and destroyed,—a losse to them irrecoverable, and the first step to their ruine.

Neither was this loane of Ships from *England* (for such was the people's complaint and suspicion against those who at that time stood at the Helme) supposed to proceed so much from friendship to the State of *France*, as from designe against Religion; for immediately upon it, the King, by what advice the people understood not, made a breach with *France*, by taking their Ships, to a great value, without making any recompence to the English, whose Goods were thereupon imbar'd, and confiscate in that Kingdome.

In revenge of this, a brave Army was raised in *England*, and commanded by the Duke of BUCKINGHAM in person, who landing at the Isle of *Rhea*, was at the first encounter victorious against the French; but, after few Moneths stay there, the matter was so unhappily carried, (the Generall being unexperienced in Warlike affaires,) that the French prevailed, and gave a great defeat, where many gallant Gentlemen lost their lives, and the Nation much of their ancient Honour.

The town of Rochelle compelled by famine to surrender to the army of the French king.

From thence proceeded another step to the ruine of *Rochell*; the sick and wounded English were sent into that City, and relieved by the besieged Rochellers, out of that little provision which they then had, upon faithful promise of supplies from *England* in the same kinde. The provisions of *Rochell* were little enough for their owne reliefe at that time, if we consider what ability the French King had to continue that siege; when to the proper wealth and greatnesse of his Crowne was added that reputation and strength which his late successe against all the other Protestant Garrisons in *France* had brought.

The besieged Rochellers, not doubting at all of the due and necessary supply of Victuall from *England*, sent their Ships thither for that purpose; but those Ships, whose returne with bread was so earnestly expected, were stayed in *England* by an *Imbargo*; and so long stayed, till that unhappy Towne was enforced to yield by famine, the sharpest of all Enemies.

But in the meane time, whilst these Ships with Victuall were detained, a great Army was raised in *England* for reliefe of *Rochell*; but too great was the delay of those preparations, till time was past, and that Army in the end disbanded by the sad death of the Duke of BUCKINGHAM their Generall, who was stabbed at *Portsmouth* by a private Gentleman, JOHN FELTON.

The Death of the Duke of Buckingham.

This FELTON was a Souldier of a low stature, and no promising aspect; of disposition serious and melancholy, but religious in the whole course of his life and conversation;

conversation ; which last I do not mention out of purpose to countenance his unlawful act, as supposing him to have had (as some did then talke) any inspiration or calling of God to it : His confessions to his friends, both publike and private, were, That he had often secret motions to that purpose, which he had resisted and prayed against, and had almost overcome, untill he was at last confirmed in it, by reading the late dissolved Parliament's Remonstrance against the Duke : That then his conscience told him it was just and laudable, to be the executioner of that man, whom the highest Court of Judicature, the Representative body of the Kingdome, had condemned as a Traytor. But, let Posterity censure it as they please ; certain it is, that FELTON did much repent him of the unlawfulness of the fact, out of no feare of death, or punishment here ; for he wished his hand to be cut-off before the execution, which his Judges could not doome by the Lawes of *England*.

The King had not long before broken-off another Parliament, called in the second yeare of his Reigne, in which the Petition of Right was granted, to the great rejoycing of the people. But it proved immediately to be no reliefe at all to them : for, the Parliament presently dissolved, the King acted-over the same things, which formerly he had done ; and that grant, instead of fortifying the Kingdome's Liberty, made it appear to be more defencelesse than before, [seeing] that Lawes themselves were no barre against the King's will. The Parliament, in hope of gracious Acts, had declared an intent to give his Majesty five Subsidies; the full proportion of which five Subsidies was, after the dissolution of that Parliament, exacted by Commission of Loane from the people, and those imprisoned which refused the payment of that Loane: Great sums of money were required and raised by privy Seales : A Commission for squeezing the subject by way of Ex-cize : Souldiers were billited upon them : And a designe laid to inslave the Nation by a force of German Horse : with many other things of that nature.

A second Parliament, in which the Petition of Right is granted.

The King dissolves it.

Those affairs of State which concerned Confederates abroad, had been managed with as much disadvantage, and infelicity to them, as dishonour to the English Nation, and prejudice to the Cause of Religion itselfe.

Peace was made with *Spaine* without consent of Parliament ; by which all hope was utterly lost, of re-establishing the King's neerest kindred in their just Dominion ; and the Protestant Religion much weakened in *Germany*. What Counsells had then influence upon the Court of *England*, might be the amazement of a wise man to consider ; and the plaine truth must needs seeme a paradox to posterity ; as that the Protestant Religion, both at home and abroad, should suffer much by the Government of two Kings ; of whom the former in his own person wrote more learnedly in defence of it ; and the latter in his owne person lived more conformably to the Rules of it ; than any of their Contemporary Princes in *Europe*. But the Civill Affaires of State were too ill managed, to protect, or at least to propagate, true Religion ; or else the neglect of Religion was the cause that Civill Affaires were blessed with no more honour and prosperity. The right waies of Queen ELIZABETH, who advanced both, had been long ago forsaken, and

Peace with Spain.

and the deviation grew daily farther, and more fatall to the Kingdom. Which appeared in a direct contrariety to all particulars of her Reigne. Titles of Honour were made more honourable by her, in being conferred sparingly, and therefore probably upon great desert; which afterwards were become of lesse esteem, by being not onely too frequently conferred, but put to open sale, and made too often the purchase of Mechannicks, or the reward of vitious persons.

The people rejoiced at the death of the Duke of Buckingham.

At the Death of that Duke, the people were possessed of an unusuall joy, which they openly testified by such expressions as indeed were not thought fit nor decent by wise men, upon so tragical and sad an accident, which in a christian consideration might move compassion, whatsoever the offences of the man were.

To such people that distick of *Seneca* might give answer:

*Res est sacra miser ; noli mea tangere fa'a :
Sacrilegæ Bustis abstinuère manus.*

Sacred is woe ; touch not my death with scorne :
Even sacrilegious hands have Tombs forborne.

And it may be that God was offended at the excesse of their joy, in that he quickly let them see, the benefit was not so great to them as they expected by it ; but his judgements are too high for men to search. True it is, that the people in generall loving the King's Person, and very unwilling to harbour the least opinion of ill in him, looked-upon the Duke as the onely hinderance of the Kingdome's happinesse ; supposing, that, though other Statesmen might afterwards arise, of as bad or worse intentions, than the Duke ; yet none would have so great a power for execution of them ; nor any other Genius be ever found, to have so great a mastery over the King's Genius. But it is certaine, that men did much therefore rejoyce at the death of this Duke, because they did before much feare what mischief might befall a Kingdome, where that man, who knew himselfe extremely hated by the people, had all the keyes of the Kingdome in his hand, as being Lord-Admirall and Warden of the Cinque-Ports ; having the command of all the Souldiers, and the onely power to reward and raise them.

A third Parliament is dissolved, and it's most eminent members are imprisoned and persecuted.

These joyes and hopes of men lasted not long : for in the same year (being the fourth of King CHARLES) and after the death of the Duke of Buckingham, another Parliament was dissolved ; and then the Priviledges of that high Court were more broken than ever before. Six Members of the House of Commons, who had been forward in vindicating the Priviledges of Parliament, were committed close Prisoners for many moneths together, without the liberty of using books, pen, inke, and paper, while they were detained in this condition ; and not admitted to baile according to Law : They were also vexed with informations in inferiour Courts ; where they were sentenced and fined for matters done in Parliament ; and the payment of such Fines extorted from them. Some were enforced to put-in security of good behaviour, before they could be released : The rest
who

who refused to be bound, were detained divers yeares after in custody, of whom one Sir JOHN ELLIOT, a Gentleman of able parts, that had been forwardest in expression of himselfe for the freedome of his Country, and in taxing the unjust actions of the Duke of BUCKINGHAM, while that Duke lived (though the truth be, that those Speeches of his were no other than what carried the publicke consent in them) dyed by the harsheness of his imprisonment, which would admit of no relaxation, though, for health's sake, he petitioned for it often, and his Physician gave in testimony to the same purpose. The freedome that Sir JOHN ELLIOT used in Parliament, was by the people in general applauded, though much taxed by the Courtiers, and censur'd by some of a more politike reserve (considering the times) in that kind that TACITUS censures THRASEAS PÆTUS, as thinking such freedom a needlesse, and therefore a foolish, thing, where no cure could be hoped by it. *Sibi periculum, nec aliis libertatem.*

Sir John Elliot dies of his imprisonment.

After the breaking-off this Parliament (as the Historian speaketh of Roman liberty, after the battel of PHILIPPI, *nunquam post hoc praelium, &c.*) the people of *England* for many years never looked-back to their ancient liberty. A Declaration was published by the King, wherein aspersions were laid upon some Members; but indeed the Court of Parliament itselfe was declared-against. All which the dejected people were forced to read with patience, and allow, against the dictate of their own reason.

The People lose the hope of being governed with the concurrence of Parliament.

The people of *England* from that time were deprived of the hope of Parliaments; and all things so managed by publike Officers, as if never such a day of account were to come.

I shall, for method's sake, first of all, make a short enumeration of some of the chiefe grievances of the Subjects, which shall be truly and plainly related; as likewise some vices of the Nation in general; (that the Reader may the better judge of the causes of succeeding troubles,) during the space of seven or eight yeares after the dissolution of that Parliament; and then shall give some account concerning the severall dispositions of the people of ENGLAND, and their different censures of the King's government during those years; touching, by the way, somewhat of the manners and customs of the Court of ENGLAND; and then briefly of the condition of Ecclesiastical affaires, and the censures of men concerning that.

CHAP. II.

A briefe Relation of some grievances of the Kingdome. The various opinions of men concerning the present Government. The condition of the Court and Clergy of England. Some observations of a stranger, concerning the Religion of the English people.

IT cannot but be thought, by all wise and honest men, that the sinnes of *England* were at a great height, that the injustice of Governours, and vices of private men were very great; which have since called-down from Almighty God so sharpe a judgement; and drawn-on, by degrees, so calamitous and consuming a Warre. Those particular crimes an English Historian can take no pleasure to relate, but might rather desire to be silent in, and say with STATIUS:

—*Nos certè taceamus, & obruta multâ
Nocte tegi nostræ patiamur crimina gentis.*

Let us be silent, and from after times
Conceale our own unhappy Nation's crimes.

But to be silent in that, were great injustice and impiety toward God;—to relate his judgements upon a Kingdome; and forget the sinnes of that Kingdom, which were the cause of them. The Heathen Historians do well instruct us in that point of piety; who never almost describe any Civil Warre, or publike affliction, without relating at the beginning, how vitious and corrupted their State was at that time grown; how faulty both the Rulers and People were, and how fit to be punished, either by themselves or others. Nor doe any of the Roman Poets undertake to write of that great and miserable Civil Warre, which destroyed the present State, and enslaved posterity; without first making a large enumeration of such causes; how wicked the manners of *Rome* were growne, how the chiefe Rulers were given to avarice and oppression, and the whole State drowned in luxury, lusts and riot,

as

as you may see upon that subject in two the most elegant of them. And shall we Christians, who adore the true God, and live under the Gospel-light, not be sensible, under so heavy a judgement, of our owne offences?

To begin with the faults of the higher powers, and their illegal oppression of the people, during these eight or nine yeers, in which parliaments were denyed to *England*, which I briefly touch, referring the Reader to a more full narration in the Remonstrance; multitudes of Monopolies were granted by the King, and laid upon all things of most common and necessary use, such as Sope, Salt, Wine, Leather, Sea-cole, and many other of that kinde.

Regia privatis crescunt araria damnis. Claud.

By losse of private men th' Exchequer growes.

Large sums of Money were exacted thorow the whole Kingdome for default of Knighthood, under the shadow of an absolute Law. Tonnage and Poundage were received without the ordinary course of Law; and, though they were taken, under pretence of guarding the Seas, yet that great Tax of Ship-money was set on foot under the same colour; by both which there was charged upon the people some years neere 700,000. li. though the Seas at that time were not well guarded.

These things were accompanied with an enlargement of Forrests, contrary to *Magna Charta*, the forcing of Coat and Conduct-Money, taking-away the Armes of Trayned Bands in divers Counties, disarming the people by engrossing of Gunpowder, keeping it in the Tower of *London*, and setting so high a rate upon it, that the poorer sort were not able to buy it; nor could any have it without license; whereby several parts of the Kingdome were left destitute of their necessary defence.

No Courts of Judicature could give redresse to the people for these illegal sufferings, whilst Judges were displaced by the King, for not complying with his will, and so awed, that they durst not do their duties: For to hold a rod over them, the clause, *Quandiu se bene gesserint*, was left out of their Patents, and a new clause, *Durante bene-placito*, inserted.

New Illegal Oathes were enforced upon the Subjects, and new Judicatories erected without Law; and when Commissions were granted for examining the excesse of Fees and great exactions discovered, the Delinquents were compounded-with, not onely for the time past, but immunity to offend for the time to come; which, instead of redressing, did confirme and encrease the grievance of the Subjects.

By this time, all thoughts of ever having a parliament againe, were quite banished; so many oppressions had been set on foot, so many illegal actions done, that the onely way to justifie the mischiefes already done, was to do that one

greater, "To take away the meanes which was ordained to redresse them, the law-ful Government of *England* by Parliaments."

Opinions of serious and just men concerning the Govern-ment.

Whilest the Kingdome was in this condition, the serious and just men of Eng-land, who were no way interessed in the emolument of these oppressions, could not but entertaine sad thoughts and presages, of what mischiefe must needs follow so great an injustice ; that things carried so farre on in a wrong way, must needs either inslave themselves and posterity for ever, or require a vindication so sharpe and smarting, as that the Nation would groane under it; and, though the times were jolly for the present, yet, having observed the judgements of God upon other sècure Nations, they could not chuse but feare the sequel. Another sort of men, and especially Lords and Gentlemen, by whom the pressures of the Government were not much felt, who enjoyed their owne plentiful fortunes, with little or insensible detriment, looking no farther then their present safety and prosperity; and the yet undisturbed peace of the Nation, whilest other Kingdomes were embroyled in cala-mities, and *Germany* sadly wasted by a sharpe Warre, did nothing but applaud the happinesse of *England*, and called those ungrateful and factious spirits, who com-plaind of the breach of Lawes and Liberties; That the Kingdome abounded with wealth, plenty, and all kinde of elegancies, more than ever; That it was for the honour of a people, that the Monarch should live splendidly, and not be curbed at all in his Prerogative, which would bring him into the greater esteeme with other Princes, and more enable him to prevaile in Treaties; That what they suffered by Monopolies, was insensible, and not grievous, if compared with other States; That the Duke of *TUSKANY* sate heavier upon his people in that very kinde; That the French King had made himselfe an absolute Lord, and quite depressed the power of Parliaments, which had beene there as great as in any Kingdome, and yet that *France* flourished, and the Gentry lived well; That the Austrian Princes, especially in *Spaine*, layed heavy burdens upon their Subjects.

Opinions of the Lords and the richer Part of the Gentry.

Thus did many of the English Gentry, by way of comparison, in ordinary dis-course, pleade for their owne servitude.

Indisposition of the Courtiers towards Parliaments.

The Courtiers would begin to dispute against Parliaments in their ordinary dis-course, That they were cruel to those whom the King favoured, and too injurious to his Prerogative; That the late Parliament stood upon too high termes with the King; and that they hoped the King should never need any more Parliaments. Some of the greatest Statesmen and Privy-Counsellors, would ordinarily laugh at the ancient Language of *England*, when the word *Liberty of the Subject* was named. But these Gentlemen, who seemed so forward in taking-up their owne yoake, were but a small part of the Nation, (though a number considerable enough to make a Reformation hard) compared with those Gentlemen who were sensible of their birth-rights, and the true interest of the Kingdome; on which side the common people in the generality, and the Country-Freeholders, stood, who would rationally argue of their owne Rights, and those oppressions that were layed upon them.

But the sins of the English Nation were too great, to let them hope for an easie

ease, or speedy, redresse of such grievances ; and the manners of the people so much corrupted, as by degrees they became of that temper, which the Historian speakes of his Romans, *ut nec mala, nec remedia, ferre possent*, they could neither suffer those pressures patiently, nor quietly endure the cure of them. Prophanesse too much abounded every where ; and, (which is most strange,) where there was no Religion, yet there was Superstition : Luxury in diet, and excesse both in meat and drinke, was crept into the Kingdome in an high degree, not only in the quantity, but in the wanton curiosity. And in abuse of those good creatures which God had bestowed upon this plentiful Land, they mixed the vices of divers Nations, catching at every thing that was new and forraigne.

Great luxury and corruption of manners among the people.

— *Non vulgo nota placebant* Petronius.
Gaudia, non usu plebejo trita voluptas.

— Old, knowne, delight
 They scorne, and vulgar, bare-worne, pleasure sleight.

As much pride and excesse was in Apparel, almost among all degrees of people, in new-fangled and various-fashioned attire ; they not only imitated, but excelled their forraigne patternes ; and in fantastical gestures and behaviour, the petulancy of most Nations in *Europe*.

Excess in Apparel.

Et laxi crines, & tot nova nomina vestis. Petr.
 Loose haire, and many new-found names of clothes.

The serious men groaned for a Parliament ; but the great Statesmen plyed it the harder, to compleat that worke they had begun, of setting-up Prerogative above all Lawes.

The Lord WENTWORTH (afterward created Earle of STRAFFORD for his service in that kinde) was then labouring to oppresse *Ireland*, of which he was Deputy ; and to begin that worke in a conquered Kingdome, which was intended to be afterward wrought by degrees in *England* : And indeed he had gone very farre and was very prosperous in those waies of Tyranny, though very much to the endamaging and setting-backe of that newly-established Kingdome.

Of the Lord Wentworth.

He was a man of great parts, of a deepe reach, subtle wit, of spirit and industry to carry-on his businesse ; and such a conscience as was fit for that worke he was designed-to. He understood the right way, and the Liberty of his Country, as well as any man ; for which, in former Parliaments, he stood up stiffely, and seemed an excellent Patriot. For those abilities he was soone taken-off by the King, and raised in honour, to be employed in a contrary way, for enslaving of his Country, which his ambition easily drew him to undertake. To this man, in my opinion, that character which LUCAN bestowes upon the Roman *Curio* in some sort may suit.

Haud

*Haud alium tantâ civem tulit indole Roma,
Aut cui plus Leges deberent recta sequenti:
Perdita tunc urbi nocuerunt sæcula, postquam
Ambitus, & Luxus, & opum metuenda facultas,
Transverso mentem dubiam Torrente tulerunt,
Momentúmque fuit mutatus Curio rerum.*

A man of abler parts *Rome* never bore,
Nor one to whom (whilest right) the Lawes ow'd more.
Our State itselſe then ſuffer'd, when the tide
Of Avarice, Ambition, factious pride,
To turne his wavering minde quite croſſe began:
Of ſuch high moment was one changed man.

Of the Court of
England.

The court of *England*, during this long vacancy of Parliaments, enjoyed itselſe in as much pleaſure and ſplendour, as ever any Court did. The Revels, Triumphs, and Princely Paſtimes, were for thoſe many yeares kept-up at ſo great a height, that any ſtranger which travelled into *England*, would verily believe, a Kingdom that looked ſo cheerfully in the face, could not be ſick in any part.

The Queene was fruitful, and now grown of ſuch an age, as might ſeeme to give her priviledge of a farther ſociety with the King than bed and board; and make her a partner of his affaires and buſineſſe; which his extreme affection did more encourage her to challenge: That conjugal love, as an extraordinary vertue of a King, in miſt of ſo many temptations, the people did admire and honour.

But the Queenes power did by degrees give priviledge to Papists (and, among them, to the moſt witty and Jeſuited,) to converſe, under the name of civility and Courtſhip, not only with inferiour Courtiers, but with the King himſelſe, and to ſowe their ſeed in what ground they thought beſt; and, by degrees, as in complement to the Queene, Nuntios from the Pope were received in the Court of *England*, PANZIANE, CON, and ROSETTI; the King himſelſe maintaining in diſcourſe, That he ſaw no reaſon why he might not receive an Embaſſadour from the Pope, being a Temporal Prince. But thoſe Nuntios were not entertained with publike Ceremony; ſo that the people, in general, tooke no great notice of them; and the Courtiers were confident of the King's Religion, by his due frequenting Prayers and Sermons.

Of the Clergy of
England.

The Clergy, whoſe dependance was meere upon the King, were wholly taken-up in admiration of his happy Government, which they never concealed from himſelſe, as often as the Pulpit gave them acceſſe to his eare; and not onely there, but at all meetings, they diſcourſed with joy upon that Theam; affirming confidently, that no Prince in *Europe* was ſo great a friend to the Church, as King CHARLES; That Religion flouriſhed no where but in *England*; and no reformed Church retained the face and dignity of a Church but that: Many of them uſed to deliver their opinion, That God had therefore ſo ſeverely puniſhed the Palatinate, becauſe their Sacriledge had beene ſo great in taking-away the endowments of Biſhopricks,

Queen

Queen ELIZABETH herselfe, who had reformed Religion, was but coldly praised; and all her vertues were forgotten, when they remembered how she cut-short the Bishoprick of *Ely*.

HENRY the Eighth was also much condemned by them, for seizing upon the Abbies, and taking so much out of the severall Bishopricks, as he did in the 37th yeer of his Reigne. To maintaine, therefore, that splendour of a Church, which so much pleased them, was become their highest endeavour; especially after they had gotten, in the yeare 1633. an Archbishop after their owne heart, Doctor LAUD; who had before, for divers yeares, ruled the Clergy, in the secession of Archbishop ABBOT, a man of better temper and discretion; which discretion, or vertue, to conceale, would be an injury to that Archbishop. He was a man who wholly followed the true interest of *England*, and that of the Reformed Churches in *Europe*; so farre as that in his time the Clergy was not much envied here in *England*, nor the Government of Episcopacy much dis-favoured by Protestants beyond the seas. Not onely the pompe of Ceremonies was daily increased, and Innovations of great scandal brought into the Church, but in point of Doctrine, many faire approaches were made towards *Rome*; as he that pleaseth to search may finde in the Books of Bishop LAUD, MONTAGUE, HOLYN, POCKLINGTON, and the rest; or, in briefe, collected by a Scottish Minister, Master BAILY. And as their friendship to *Rome* increased, so did their scorne to the Reformed Churches beyond the seas; whom, instead of lending that reliefe and succour to them, which God had enabled this rich Island to do, they failed in their greatest extremities, and, instead of harbours, became rocks to split them.

Of Archbishop Abbot.

Archbishop LAUD, who was now growne into great favour with the King, made use of it especially to advance the pompe and temporal honour of the Clergy, procuring the Lord Treasurer's place for Doctor JUCKSON, Bishop of *London*, and endeavouring, as the general report went, to fix the greatest temporal preferments upon others of that coat; insomuch as the people merrily, when they saw that Treasurer, with the other Bishops, riding to *Westminster*, called it *the Church Triumphant*: Doctors and Parsons of Parishes were made every where Justices of Peace, to the great grievance of the Country in civil affaires, and depriving them of their spiritual edification.

Of Archbishop Laud.

The Archbishop, by the same meanes which he used to preserve his Clergy from contempt, exposed them to envy; and, as the wisest could then prophecy, to a more than probability of losing all: As we reade of some men, who, being fore-doomed by an Oracle to a bad fortune, have runne into it by the same meanes they used to prevent it. The like unhappy course did the Clergy then take to deprime Puritanism, which was, "to set-up irreligion itselfe against it," the worst weapon which they could have chosen to beat it downe: which appeared especially in point of keeping the Lord's day; when not only books were written to shake the morality of it, as that of *Sunday no Sabbath*, but sports and pastimes of jollity and lightnesse were permitted to the Country-people upon that day, by publike Authority, and the Warrant commanded to be read in Churches: which, instead of producing the intended

The Court encourages a neglect of the Sabbath-day.

intended effect, may credibly be thought to have been one motive to a stricter observance of that day, in that part of the Kingdome, which before had been well-devoted; And many men, who had before been loose and carelesse, began upon that occasion to enter into a more serious consideration of it, and were ashamed to be invited, by the authority of Church-men, to that which themselves, at the best, could but have pardoned in themselves, as a thing of infirmity,

The example of the Court, where Playes were usually presented on Sundaies, did not so much draw the Country to imitation, as reflect with disadvantage upon the Court itself, and sowre those other Court-pastimes and jollities, which would have relished better without that in the eyes of all the people, as being things that had ever been allowed to the delights of great Princes.

The countenancing of loosenesse and irreligion, was, no doubt, a good preparative to the introducing of another Religion: And, the power of godlinesse being beaten-downe, Popery might more easily by degrees enter; men quickly leave that, of which they never took fast hold: And, though it were questionable, whether the Bishops and Great Clergy of *England* aimed at Popery, it is too apparent that such was the designe of Romish Agents; and the English Clergy, if they did not their owne worke, did theirs. A stranger of that Religion, a Venetian Gentleman, out of his owne observations in *England*, will tell you how farre they were going in this kinde; his words are:

Observations of a Venetian Gentleman of the Roman-Catholick Religion, concerning the Religion of the people of England.

THE Universities, Bishops, and Divines of England, do daily imbrace Catholike opinions, though they professe it not with open mouth, for feare of the Puritans: For example, They hold that the Church of Rome is a true Church; That the Pope is superiour to all Bishops; That to him it appertaines to call generall Councils; That it is lawfull to pray for soules departed; That Altars ought to be erected; in summe, they believe all that is taught by the Church, but not by the Court, of Rome.

The Opinions of Archbishop Laud concerning Popery.

The Archbishop of *Canterbury* was much against the Court of *Rome*, though not against that Church, in so high a kinde: For the Doctrine of the Roman Church was no Enemy to the pompe of Prelacy; but the Doctrine of the Court of *Rome* would have swallowed-up all under the Pope's Supremacy, and have made all greatnesse dependant upon him: Which, the Archbishop conceived, would derogate too much from the King in Temporals, (and therefore hardly to be accepted by the Court) as it would from himselfe in Spiritualls, and make his Metropolitanical power subordinate, which he desired to hold absolute and independent within the Realme of *England*, as if he had been an English Pope.

It is certaine, that the Archbishop of *Canterbury* (as an English Gentleman observes) would often professe against those Tridentine Papists, whom he hated only as *Papists*, properly so called. For at the Council of *Trent*, all matters concerning

cerning the Court of *Rome*, (which are of themselves but disputable,) were determined as points of faith, to be believed upon paine of damnation: But matters of faith indeed concerning the Church of *Rome*, were left disputable, and no Anathema annexed to them. But that Venetian Gentleman, whom before we cited, declares in what state, for matter of Religion, *England* at that time stood; and how divided, namely, into Papists, Protestants, and Puritans. Papists are well knowne. *The Protestant party* (saith he) *consists of the King, the Court-Lords and Gentlemen,* The Protestant Party. *with all that are raised by favour to any honour: Besides almost all the Prelates,* Party. *and both the Universities.*

What the Protestants are, he farther declares, viz.

They hate Puritans more than they hate Papists; That they easily combine Of the Protestants of the Church of England. *with Papists to extirpate Puritans; and are not so farre engaged to the Reformed Religion, but that they can reduce themselves againe to the old practice of their forefathers; That they are very opinionative in excluding the Pope's Supremacy.*

He speaks then concerning the Puritans, and saies: *That they consist of some Bishops, of almost all the Gentry and Commonalty; and therefore are far the most potent party.*

And further declares what they are. viz. *They are such as received the Discipline* Of the Puritans of England. *of the French and Netherlanders, and hold not the English Reformation to be so perfect as that which CALVIN instituted at Geneva; That they hate Papists far more than they hate Protestants, &c.*

Thus farre of this stranger's Observation, concerning *England*.

CHAP. III.

The condition of the Scottish State and Clergy, when the new Booke of Liturgy was sent unto them; how it was received; with some effects which followed. The King's Proclamation sent by the Earle of TRAQUARE; against which the Lords make a Protestation.

IN this condition stood the Kingdome of *England* about the yeare 1636, when the first coale was blowne, which kindled since into so great a combustion as to deface, and almost ruine, three flourishing Kingdomes. Neither was this coale blowne by the grieved party of *England*, the Commonalty, and those religious men that prayed for Reformation, but by the other side, who had oppressed them. No commotion at all was raised from the oppressed party, though it consisted of the body of the Nation, and was therefore strong enough to have vindicated themselves, would they have risen in illegal tumults.

The Land was yet quiet, and that storme which the people had feared before the death of the Duke of BUCKINGHAM, was not, in so long a time, fallen upon *England*, although the causes in Government which made them feare it, had continued at the height ever since. They onely wished for a Parliament, but durst not hope it, unlesse some strange accident, not yet discovered by them, might necessitate such a cure. The Commons, therefore, quietly endured their yoke; the Court freely enjoyed its greatnesse and splendour; and the then Clergy, without control, their dignity: Untill too great a care of securing and increasing that dignity, made them endeavour those courses, which proved the ruine of it; for from the Clergy this fire began, though the State was not innocent. The tyranny of Civil Government moved the same pace that the ambition of Prelacy did: And the King's Council had gone so farre, as they could not be content, that the people were patient, unlesse they could take-away all possibility, for the future, of the people's redresse.

But

But the name of Religion was used at the beginning of the businesse, and a conformity in Church-Worship betweene the two Kingdomes of *England* and *Scotland* pretended to be introduced: But the meanes proved unhappy, and were defective both in policy and justice, as will anon more particularly appeare.

The Archbishop of *Canterbury* was a maine Agent in this fatal worke; a man vigilant enough, of an active, or, rather, of a restlesse, minde; more ambitious to undertake, then politick to carry-on; of a disposition too fierce and cruel for his Coat; which, notwithstanding, he was so farre from concealing in a subtle way, that he increased the envy of it by insolence. He had few vulgar and private vices, as being neither taxed of covetousnesse, intemperance, or incontinence; and, in a word, a man not altogether so bad, [in his personal character] as unfit for the State of *England*.

To bring-about the worke in hand, long preparation had been made in *Scotland*; and, though that Kingdome was hardly brought to endure the Rule and Pompe of Prelacy, yet now it seemed perfectly to be wrought: The Bishops there, no lesse than in *England*, had gotten all the Ecclesiastical power into their hands, and had as great a share in Civil Government. Of the State of the Clergy in Scotland.

Of fourteene Bishops, (which is all the Scottish number), eleven were Privy-Counsellors; the Archbishop of *St. Andrewes*, Primate of *Scotland*, was Lord Chancellor; and the Bishop of *Rosse*, (a great Favourite of the Archbishop of *Canterbury*,) was in election and assured hope to be Lord High Treasurer; many of them besides were gotten into state-employment, and gainful Offices.

To establish that Episcopal Power, the High-Commission Court, like that in *England*, was erected, and a Booke of Canons for that Church was, by the King's Authority, published and ratified; wherein all Subjects to the Crowne of *Scotland* are commanded, in all Articles, to submit themselves to the Episcopal Censure. Canons for the Church of Scotland published by the King's authority.

The whole structure of Ecclesiastical policy, so long used in *Scotland*, and established by so many Acts of Parliament, was at one blow throwne-downe (as many of their Writers did then complaine) their Consistories, Classes, and Presbyteries, were held in the nature of Conventicles; and all decision of Ecclesiastical controversies confined only to the Tribunal of a Bishop. *Although* (say they) *after that unhappy Synod of Perth, which was held in the yeare 1618, we never had any National Synod, or Assembly; yet there remained a kinde of face, or name, of Provincial Synods, Presbyteries, and Sessions: (though indeed but vaine names and shadowes): but after the monstrous birth of those Canons, that very shadow was quite lost.*

*Quam vera fides Libertatis obit;
Nunc & ficta perit.*

Lucan, Book 9th.

Yet for all this, the Power of Prelacy was not so firmly rooted in *Scotland* as in *England*, nor so well fortified by the affections of the one Kingdome as of the other. Besides, the Reformation of *England* had never abrogated, nor scarce shaken, the Prelatical Dignity in any Parliament.

But in *Scotland* it was once quite ruined, and had been by degrees built-up againe, not without many difficulties;—not without great reluctancy of the Peeres, Gentry, and most of the Ministers;—not without extraordinary interposition of Regal Authority, and great art used by two Kings in managing the businesse, and raising it to that height in which it then stood; as you may reade at large in some late Writers of that Kingdome.

Neither were the Peeres and Gentry of that Kingdome so impatient of this new yoake, onely out of zeale to preservation of Religion in purity, (though that, no doubt, were their greatest reason; that Church having been ever much addicted to the Reformation of *Geneva* and those other Churches, as it appeared by their great unwillingnesse to receive those few Ceremonies of the English Church, at their Synod of *Perth*;) but also as being loath to suffer any diminution of their Temporal Liberties; which could not be avoided in admittance of Episcopal Jurisdiction, and was manifested in that Kingdome, by divers examples of rigorous proceedings, which some Bishops used against Gentlemen of quality, by way of Fines and Imprisonments, and the like; which particulars are too large to be here inserted in this Narration.

The King sends a Booke of Common Prayer to be used in the Churches of Scotland. A. D. 1637.

In the yeare 1637, a Booke of Liturgy was composed, and sent out of *England*, (which they complained of, because it was not before allowed by their Church in a National Synod, as was fit for a businesse of so great import) with an expresse command from the King, that they should reverently receive it, and publikely reade it in their Churches, beginning on Easter-day, and so forward; against which time the Privy Council of *Scotland* had commanded that every Parish should buy two, at the least, of them.

That Service-Booke was the same with the Common-Prayer Booke of *England*, excepting some few alterations, of which some (as they observed) were alterations for the better, but others for the worse.

For the better, they esteemed, that so many Chapters of the *Apocrypha* were not appointed to be read, as in the English Prayer-Booke; and where the English retained the old vulgar Latine Translation, especially in the Psalmes; that Booke followed the last Translation, commonly called that of King *JAMES*.

Those alterations for the worse were divers, observed by the Scots, especially in the Lord's Supper, of which some were these: The expresse command for situation of the Altar (so called) to the Easterne Wall; together with many postures of the Minister, whilst he officiated, expressed in their exceptions; but especially this, that in the consecrating prayer, those words, which in the English Common Prayer Booke, are directly against Transubstantiation, were quite left-out in that Booke, and instead of them, such other words, as in plain sense agreed with the Roman Masse-Booke.

As for example: *Heare us, O most merciful Father, and of thy Omnipotent goodnesse grant, so to blesse and sanctifie by thy Word and Spirit, these creatures of bread and wine, that they may be to us the body and blood of thy beloved Sonne.*

Many other alterations the Scots have observed and expressed in their writings, and,

and, in one word, affirmed, that, wheresoever that Booke varies from the English Liturgy, it approaches directly to the Roman Missall; and offered to prove, that all the material parts of the Masse-Booke are seminally there.

It was thought by many, that, if the Booke, without any alteration at all, had been sent into *Scotland*, though the Scots, perhaps, would not have received it, they would not have taken it in so evil part: And it might have been construed onely as a brotherly invitation to the same service which *England* used. But what the reasons were of those alterations, I finde no where expressed, but onely where the King, in his Declaration concerning that businesse, is pleased to say thus:

WE, supposing that they might have taken some offence, if we should have tendred them the English Service-Booke, totidem verbis; and that some factious spirits would have endeavoured to have misconstrued it, as a badge of dependance of that Church upon this of England, which we had put upon them to the prejudice of their Lawes and Liberties; We held it fitter that a new Booke should be composed by their owne Bishops, in substance not differing from this of England, that so the Roman Party might not upbraid us with any weighty or material differences in our Liturgyes; and yet in some few insensible alterations, differing from it, that it might truly and justly be reputed a Booke of that Churches owne composing, and established by Our Royal Authority, as King of SCOTLAND.

The King's declaration concerning the said book of Common Prayer.

These were the King's expressions, which, as it seemed, were not satisfactory to the Scots in that point.

For they were (as it before specified) not well-affected to their owne Bishops, whose power and jurisdiction over them was rather enforced than consented-to. Neither did they suppose that a conformity in Church Worship, had it been such as their consciences could well have imbraced, had beene any badge of their dependancy upon *England*, as being a people not conquered, but united in an equal freedom under the same King.

Besides, they could not relish it well, that the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and other English Bishops, who in many points of Ceremony and Worship, which they accounted things tolerable, did make as neere approaches to the Church of *Rome*, as possibly they could; for no other reason (as they professe in their writings) than that they laboured to bring union into the Christian Church, if it were possible; should now invite the Church of *Scotland* (whom they accounted more puritanical than themselves) to union, by a quite contrary way; as, instead of framing their Service neerer to the Scottish profession and Discipline, to urge them to a Liturgy more Popish than their own: So that it seemed, for unity they were content to meet *Rome*, rather than *Scotland*.

To

To returne to the Narration; The Service-Booke, according to the King's command, was offered to the Church of *Scotland*, and the Council there, and published by Proclamation; a day for the reading of it in all Churches appointed, which was the Easter-day following, 1637.

But then upon some considerations, and further trial of mens minds (as the King declares) the first reading of it was put-off until the 23d of *July* next ensuing, to the end that the Lords of the Session (their Session being the same with the Terme in *England*) and others, who had any Law-businesse, might see the successe of it before the rising of the Session, which alwaies endeth upon the first of *August*; and that so, upon their returne into their severall Countries, they might report the receiving of this Booke at *Edenburgh*; it being ordered, That on that Sunday the Booke should be read only in the Church of *Edenburgh*, and some other Churches neere adjacent; and warning was printed, and published in those severall Pulpits, the Sunday before, "that it was to be read."

The said Booke of Common-Prayer is read in the great Church at *Edenburgh*, July 23, 1637.

On the 23d day of *July*, being Sunday, the Booke was read in *Saint Gyles* Church, commonly called, the great Church at *Edenburgh*, where were present, many of the Privy Council, both Archbishops, and divers other Bishops, the Lords of the Session, the Magistrates of *Edenburgh*, and a great auditory of all sorts.

It is opposed in a violent manner by the people.

But the people, especially the meanest vulgar, (for they first appeared against it) and some women, expressed so great a detestation of the Booke, not onely in words and outcries, but actions; that the City-Magistrates were troubled much to get the Service performed; and the Bishop who read it, coming out of the Church, had probably beene slaine by the multitude, if he had not been rescued by a Nobleman.

Between the two Sermons the Council and Magistrates met about preventing future tumults; but, though the Booke were read more quietly in the afternoone, yet the tumult was farre greater after evening Prayer, from the people who had stayed in the streets; and the Bishop, in the Earle of *ROXBOROUGH* his Coach, hardly escaped from being stoned to death.

The greatest men and Magistrates of *Edenburgh*, to excuse themselves to the King (some of them also writing to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*) layed all the fault upon the Rabble; for as yet none of quality had appeared, insomuch as that the Privy Council and Magistrates of *Edenburgh*, the next morning, held some consultation about finding-out and punishing the ringleaders of that uproare.

The reading of it is then suspended till the King's further pleasure is known.

But not long after, upon the appearing of some others of higher ranke, and Petitions from divers Ministers, "That the reading of that Booke might be a while respited, till his Majesty might be further petitioned and informed;" the Council yeilded so far, as that it should not be urged by the Bishops, till his Majesties pleasure were further knowne.

Upon which, many Gentlemen and Ministers, who had resorted to *Edenburgh* with Petitions not long before, returned in part satisfied to their owne habitations; and at many places met-together, with fastings, and Prayer, That God would be pleased

pleased to direct the King's heart in that way which they conceived most conducive to the happinesse of the Church and State of *Scotland*.

Upon the 18th of *October* following, harvest being now ended, a great conflux of all sorts was at *Edenburgh*, to heare what the King was pleased to determine of the businesse ; where they finde an Edict against them, " That, upon paine of being guilty of Rebellion, all should, within few houres warning, depart the City ; and because the Citizens of *Edenburgh* had twice tumultuously opposed the Prayer-Booke, and assaulted the Bishop of *Edenburgh* ; as a punishment to that City, the Terme was to be removed to the Burgh of *Linlithgow* ; and the next Terme, after the ordinary vacants, to be held at the Burgh of *Dendie*, there to remaine during his Majesties pleasure."

The King publishes an Edict against the citizens of *Edenburgh*. *October* 18, 1637.

The Petitioners (as they were then called) were much moved at this Edict ; and on the 19th of that *October*, presented to the Privy-Council a great complaint against the Bishops, whom they conceived to be the Authors of all this businesse, and desired justice against them, as well for other crimes, as for introducing, contrary to Law, that superstitious and idolatrous Booke.

To this complaint a great number of all ranks subscribed, and professed to the Council, that they could not depart out of *Edenburgh* till some way were found-out to settle the present grievances.

Whilst they stayed there, their number daily increased, from all the remotest Provinces, so that the Council were enforced to give way, that till the King's pleasure were yet further knowne, they might chuse some out of their number of all ranks, to represent the rest, and follow the cause in the name of all the rest : Upon which they chose foure of the higher Nobility, foure of the lower ranke of Nobility, as representers of Provinces ; as many Burgesses of Townes ; and foure Pastors, as representers of the Classes ; having settled this, the rest quietly departed to their owne homes.

The opposers of the Service-book chuse Commissioners to represent them.

The King, hearing of these things, sent a command to the Council of *Edenburgh*, not to take upon themselves any more the decision of this controversie, which he reserved in his owne power: And Proclamation was made in *December*, 1637, concerning the King's intentions, that they were not to infringe the Lawes or Liberties of the Kingdome.

When therefore the Commissioners petitioned the Council to give way to them, to bring their Actions against the Bishops, the Council answered, That the King had commanded them to receive no more Petitions, against either the Bishops, or Booke of Service.

Whereupon the Commissioners, discontented, prepare a Protestation against the King's Council, declaring, That what mischiefes soever might afterwards ensue, was to be all imputed to the King's Council, for denying Justice.

The Council, fearing what effects might follow, desired the Bishops to absent themselves, and gave leave to the Commissioners to appeare before them ; where the Lord of *Lowden*, in name of all the rest, made an Oration, in which, charging the Bishops with other crimes, besides these stirres, he desired them to be alto-

gether
These Commissioners complain of the Scotch Bishops as being the advisers of the introduction of the new Service-book.

gether removed from the Council-Table, till they had answered and cleared themselves. To the like purpose spake one of the Ministers.

The Council seemed sorry, that it lay not in their power (since the King's Command was peremptory) to give satisfaction to their desires; but intreated their patience for so small a time, as till they might againe receive notice of his Majesties pleasure.

The Earl of Traquair publishes at Stirling a Proclamation of the King in justification of the Bishops, in February, 1638.

The King, further certified by them, sent for the Earle of TRAQUARE into *England*, who was soone dispatched againe into *Scotland*; and in *February*, 1638, caused the King's Mandate in *Sterlin* (where the Council then sate) to be published.

The Proclamation declared, that the Bishops were wrongfully accused, as Authors of sending the Prayer-Booke; That his Majesty himselfe was Author of it, and all was done by his Command; That he condemned all tumultuous proceedings of his Subjects to exhibite Petitions, or complaints, against the innocent Bishops, and Booke of Liturgy, and all subscriptions to that purpose hitherto, as conspiring against the publick peace; pronouncing pardon to those which repented, and the punishment of High Treason to such as persisted; promising to heare the just Complaints of his Subjects, so they offended not in matter or forme.

The Commissioners make a protestation against the Service-book.

After the Proclamation was made at *Sterlin*, the Earl of HUME, Lord LINDSEY, and others, in name of all the Petitioners, made a Protestation against it; which Protestation was afterward repeated at *Lithgow*, and last at *Edenburgh*.

The effect of that Protestation was (for we cannot here insert it at large) That the Service-Booke was full of Superstition and Idolatry, and ought not to be intruded upon them, without consent of a National Synod, which in such cases should judge; That it was unjust to deny them liberty to accuse the Bishops, being guilty of high crimes, of which till they were cleared, they did reject the Bishops as Judges or Governours of them. They protested also against the High-Commission Court, and justified their owne meetings, and superscriptions to Petitions, as being to defend the glory of God, the King's Honour, and Liberties of the Realme. This Protestation was read in the Market-place at *Sterlin*, and the Copy hung-up in publike.

CHAP. IV.

The Scots enter into a Covenant. The Marquisse HAMILTON is sent thither from the King. A National Synod is granted to them, but dissolved within few daies by the Marquisse, as Commissioner from the King. The King declares against the Covenanters, and raises an Army to subdue them,

FROM *Sterlin* the Commissioners resorted to *Edenburgh*, whither many from all parts met to consult of the present businesse; and concluded there to renew solemnly among them that Covenant, which was commonly called, The lesser Confession of the Church of *Scotland*, or, The Confession of the King's family; which was made and sealed under King *JAMES* his hand, in the year 1580, and afterwards confirmed by all the Estates of the Kingdome, and Decree of the National Synod in 1581. Which Confession was againe subscribed by all sorts of persons in *Scotland*, in the year 1590, by authority of Council and National Synod; and a Covenant added to it, for defence of true Religion, and the King's Majesty; which Covenant the aforesaid Lords, Citizens, and Pastours, in the year 1638, did renew, and tooke another according to the present occasion.

The Covenant itselfe (expressed at large in the Records of that Kingdome) consisted of three principal parts: The first was a re-taking, word for word, of that old Covenant, 1580, confirmed by Royal Authority, and two National Synods, for defence of the purity of Religion, and the King's Person and Rights, against the Church of *Rome*. The second part contained an enumeration of all the Acts of Parliament made in *Scotland*, in defence of the reformed Religion, both in Doctrine and Discipline, against Popery.

The third was an application of that old Covenant to the present state of things, where, as in that all Popery, so in this all Innovations in those Bookes of Liturgy

The Scots enter into a Covenant for the defence of true Religion. In February, 1638.

unlawfully obtruded upon them, are abjured; and a preservation of the King's Person and Authority; as likewise a mutual defence of each other; in this Covenant, are sworne-unto.

The King makes objections to this Covenant.

Against this Covenant the King, much displeas'd, made these four principal objections: First, By what authority they entred into this Covenant? or presumed to exact any Oath from their fellow-Subjects? Secondly, if they had power to command the new-taking of this Oath, yet what power had they to interpret it to their present occasion? it being a received *Maxime*, That no lesse authority can interpret a Law than that which made it, or the Judges appointed by that Authority to give sentence upon it. Thirdly, What power they had to adde any thing to it, and interpose a new Covenant of mutual assistance to each other, against any other power that should oppose them, none excepted? And, fourthly, That all Leagues of Subjects among themselves, without the privity and approbation of the King, are declared to be seditious by two Parliaments in *Scotland*, one of the tenth Parliament of *JAMES* the Sixth, Act the twelfth; and the other the fifteenth Act of the ninth Parliament of *QUEENE MARY*.

What answer the Covenanters made to these objections, and what arguments the King used to enforce the contrary, are largely expressed in many writings; being such, indeed, as not onely then, but since, in the sad calamities of *England*, have been discoursed-of in whole volumes; containing all that can be said concerning the true Rights and Priviledges of Princes and People.

The Covenant is subscribed by almost all the Protestants in Scotland before the end of April, 1638.

The Covenant, notwithstanding, was generally subscribed by all there present at *Edenburgh*, in *February*, 1638, and Copies of it sent abroad to those who were absent, and were so fast subscribed by them also, that, before the end of *April*, he was scarce accounted one of the Reformed Religion, that had not subscribed to this Covenant. And the Church and State were divided into two names, of Covenanters, and Non-Covenanters; the Non-Covenanters consisting, first, of Papists, whose number was thought small in *Scotland*, scarce exceeding six hundred: Secondly, of some Statesmen in Office and favour at that time: Thirdly, of some, who, though they were of the Reformed Religion, were greatly affected to the Ceremonies of *England* and the Booke of Common-Prayer.

Many Bishops at that time came from thence to the Court of *England*, and three Lords of the Council of *Scotland*, whom the King had sent-for, to advise about the affaires of that Kingdome; where, after many debates what course to take, whether of reducing the Covenanters by Armes, or using more gentle meanes: The King at last sent the Marquesse *HAMILTON*, together with those three Lords, into *Scotland*.

The Marquis of Hamilton is sent into Scotland by the King, in June, 1638.

The Marquesse arrived at *Dulkeith*, and within few daies entred *Edenburgh*, in *June*, being met and conducted into the City by a great multitude of all ranks, in which number were seven hundred Pastors of Churches.

The Marquesse, by the King's Command, dealt with the Covenanters, to renounce their Covenant, or else told them, there was no hope to obtaine a National

tional Synod, which they so much desired, for settling of the Church, which, they affirmed, could not be done, without manifest perjury and profanation of God's Name.

But when nothing was agreed upon, they besought the Marquisse, at his returne into *England*, to present their humble desire to the King: But before his departure, in *July*, he published the King's Proclamation, wherein his Majesty protests to defend the Protestant Religion; and that he would no more presse upon them the Booke of Canons, or Service-Booke, but by lawful Mediums; That he would rectifie the High Commission, and was resolved to take a speedy opportunity of calling both a Parliament and a Synod.

He publishes a Proclamation of the King in July, 1638.

When the Proclamation was ended, the Covenanters read their Protestation; of which the heads were: That they never questioned his Majesties sincerity in the Protestant Religion; That these grants of his were not large enough to cure the present distempers; for he doth not utterly abolish that Service-Booke, nor the High Commission, being both obtruded against all Law upon them; That their meetings are not to be condemned in opprobrious words, being lawful, and such as they would not forsake, until the purity of Religion, and peace, might be fully settled by a free and National Synod.

The Covenanters make a Protestation in answer to it.

The Marquisse went into *England*, to returne at a prefixed day, the twelfth of *August*. In the meane time the Scots keepe a solemne Fast; and the Covenanters, not hoping from the King so quick a call of a National Synod as the present malady required, published a writing, wherein they endeavour to prove, That the Church in such a condition may provide for itselfe; *That the power of calling a Synod, in case the Prince be an enemy to the truth, or negligent in promoting the Churches good, is in the Church itselfe.* And that the State of the Church of *Scotland* at that time was necessitated to such a course; which they endeavour to prove by reciting all their particular grievances, and by answering all arguments of the contrary side, for the Right of Princes, howsoever affected to Religion; as appears at large in their Tractate concerning the necessity of Synods.

The Marquisse returned into *Scotland* before the appointed day, and brought Articles from the King, to which the Covenanters, if they would have either Parliament or Synod, were required to consent.

The Marquis of Hamilton proposes to the Covenanters certain Articles from the King, August 12, 1638. But the Covenanters reject them.

But they utterly rejected those Articles, as too invalid for their purpose of settling things; so that the Marquisse, fearing least the Covenanters, weary of delays, would call a Synod without staying the King's consent, earnestly perswaded them to forbear it onely till his next returne from Court, whither he would presently go to perswade the King. Which request of his, with much ado, was granted by them, and the day for his returne appointed the 22 of *September*; by which time, unlesse the Marquisse returned, it was free for the Covenanters to provide for their owne affaires.

But the Marquisse, with singular diligence, prevented his day, and published

The Marquis publishes another Proclamation of the King; in September, 1638.

the King's Proclamation, of which the chiefe heads were: First, The King did abrogate all Decrees of Council for the Booke of Canons and Common-Prayer, and abrogate the High Commisson. Secondly, That none should be pressed to the five Articles of *Perth*. Thirdly, That Bishops should be subject to the censure of a Synod. Fourthly, That no Oath should be given at Ordination of Pastors, but by Law of Parliament. Fifthly, that the lesser Confession of 1580, should be subscribed to by all the Kingdome. Sixtly, That the King called a National Synod, to begin at *Glasco* the 21st of *November*, 1638, and a Parliament at *Edenburgh* the 15th of *May*, 1639. Lastly, for peace sake, he would forget all their offences past.

The Covenanters, at the first hearing of this peaceful Message, were much joyed; but, looking neerely into the words, they found (as they affirme) *That their precedent actions were tacitly condemned, and the just freedome of a National Synod taken-away.*

The Covenanters make a Protestation in answer to it.

Therefore, loath to be deceived, they frame a Protestation, not (as they alledged) mis-doubting the candor of the King, but not trusting those in favour with him; by whose destructive Counsel they supposed it was, that the King had not shewed this clemency at first.

The chiefe heads of their Protestation were these: First, after humble thanks to God and the King, they conceived this grant no sufficient remedy for their sores.

For His Majesty calls that a panick feare in them, which was upon no imaginary, but just, grounds, as a real mutation both of Religion and Lawes, by obtrusion of those Bookes directly popish.

Secondly, whereas the King in his former Mandates so highly extolled those Bookes, as most religious, and fit for the Church; they could not be satisfied with a bare remission of the exercise of them, unlesse he would utterly abrogate and condemne them; or else itching Innovators would not be wanting hereafter to raise new troubles to the Church about them.

Thirdly, the just liberty of National Synods is diminished, and Episcopacy set-up, they being allowed, as Bishops, though not deputed by the Churches, to give their voices in a Synod.

Fourthly, the subscribing againe of that old Covenant, could not be admitted, for many reasons there at large expressed; of which some are, That it would frustrate their late Covenant, and make it narrower than before, and not able to suit to the redresse of present grievances, and be a needlesse multiplying of Oathes, and taking the Name of God in vaine; with many other objections, which cannot be fully here inserted.

That Covenant, notwithstanding, was solemnly taken at *Edenburgh* by the Marquesse of HAMILTON, the King's Commissioner, and all the Privy Council.

The Marquesse then gave Order for the Synod, fearing least the Covenanters, if

if he delayed to call it, would do it themselves, and on the 16th of *November* came to *Glasgow* in great state.

Where, after many meetings for preparation to the businesse, on the 21st of the same Moneth, according to the King's Edict, the National Synod began: But within seven daies that Synod was dissolved by the Marquesse HAMILTON, in the King's Name, and they commanded to sit no more.

A National Synod of the Church of Scotland is holden at Glasgow, on the 21st of November, 1638. But it is dissolved within seven days.

The Marquesse alleading, for reason of it, that they had broken the Lawes of a free Synod in many proceedings, not onely in those few daies of their sitting, but before it began, in their manner of Elections, with other such-like matters.

But they protested against that dissolution, and continued the Synod when the Marquesse was gone. What were the Acts of that Synod, what proceedings it had, and what impediments it met withal, you may reade in two large descriptions, the one published by the King, the other by the Synod; how the Bishops protested against the Synod; how the Synod answered their Protestation; how the Synod wrote to the King; how they proceeded against the Bishops, deposing them all from their Dignities; how of all the fourteene Bishops, eight were excommunicated, foure excluded from all Ministerial Function, and two onely allowed to officiate as Pastours; how the five Articles of *Perth*, the Booke of Liturgy, the Booke of Canons and Ordination, were all condemned, the High Commission taken-away, and whatsoever else had crept into the Church since the yeare 1580, when that National Covenant was first established.

But the Synod continues it's sittings notwithstanding the Dissolution.

The Scots Covenanters, when themselves broke-up the Synod, wrote a Letter of thanks to the King, and immediately after published a Declaration, dated the fourth of *February*, 1638, from *Edenburgh*, and directed *To all the sincere and good Christians in England, to vindicate their actions and intentions, from those aspersions which enemies might throw upon them.*

The Covenanters publish an Address to the People of England; in February, 1638-9.

That Declaration was welcome to the people of *England* in general, and especially to those who stood best-affected to Religion, and the Lawes and Liberties of their Country: But by the King's Authority it was suppressed, as all other papers that might be sent from the Scots; and a Proclamation soone after, bearing date the 27th of *February*, 1638, was published by the King, and commanded to be read in all Churches of *England*; the Title of it was, *A Proclamation and Declaration to informe our loving Subjects of England, concerning the seditious Actions of some in Scotland, who, under false pretence of Religion, endeavour the utter subversion of our Royal Authority.*

The King publishes a Proclamation in England against the Scottish Covenanters, on the 27th of February, 1638-9.

The Declaration was filled with sharpe invectives and execrations against the Scottish Covenanters; but the truth is, it wrought little upon the hearts of the English People; who conceived a good opinion of the Scots; and were more confirmed in it, because the King had carried the whole businesse so closely from the English Nation, as not onely not to declare unto them in a Parliament, (which former Princes used to call upon lesse occasions) but not revealing

revealing the proceedings of it to the Body of his Privy Council, acquainting onely some of them, whom he thought fittest for his purpose, as the King himselfe expresseth in two places of his owne Booke, intituled, *A large Declaration concerning the late tumults in Scotland*, page 76, and page 126. In fine, the Scots are declared Rebels; and the King in Person, with an English Army richly furnished, is going to chastise them.

The King declares the Scots to be rebels, and resolves to raise an English army to subdue them.

CHAP. V.

The averseness of the English people from this Warre with Scotland. The King advanceth to Yorke with his Army. The preparation of the Scottish Covenanters. A pacification is made, and both Armies disbanded. Another preparation for Warre with Scotland. A Parliament called to begin in England on the 13th of April. The Parliament of Scotland is broken-off by command of the King to the Earle of Traquare.

NEVER were the people of *England* so averse from any Warre, as neither hating the Enemy against whom, nor approving the cause for which, they were engaged. The averseness of the English people from this war with Scotland.

Their owne great sufferings made them easily believe that the Scots were innocent, and wronged by the same hand by which themselves had bene oppressed. And for the cause, it was such wherein they could not desire a Victory; as they naturally supposed that the same Sword which subdued the Scots, must destroy their owne Liberties; and that the contrivers of this Warre were equal Enemies to both Nations.

Nor was this onely the thought of wisest Gentlemen, but the common people in general were sensible of the mutual interest of both Kingdomes.

Those Courtiers, who were in all things wholly compliant to the King's will, did also dislike this Warre with *Scotland*, though not for the same reason which the forenamed did; -as not considering the cause, or quarrel, but the disadvantages of the Warre itselfe.

Those disadvantages they used to vent in contemptuous expressions of the poverty of *Scotland*; "That nothing could be gotten from such wretched Enemies; That the King were happy (if with his Honour he might suffer it) to be rid of that Kingdome, and would be a great gainer by the losse of it." The younger Courtiers were usually heard to wish *Scotland* under water, or that the old Wall of SEVERUS, the Emperour, were now re-edified.

Those

Those Courtiers that were of a graver discourse, did likewise seeme to feare the consequence of this businesse, and, I remember, would daily mention the Story of CHARLES Duke of *Burgundy*, his pressing of a Warre upon the *Swissers*; and what PHILLIP DE COMMINES relates about the Battel of *Granson*, that the Duke lost to the value of three millions of Crownes; all which he fondly ventured against so wretched a people, that it is there expressed, if all the *Swissers* had been taken Prisoners, they would not be able to pay a Ransom to the value of the Spurres and Bridle-bits in his Campe: And very frequent in their mouthes was that Verse:

*Curandum imprimis ne magna injuria fiat
Fortibus & miseris.*

Juvenal.

Take heed of offering too great injuries
To people stout and poore.

But the people of *England*, though they abhorred the very thought of that unnatural Warre; yet glad they seemed to be, that such an occasion happened, which might in reason necessitate the King to call an English Parliament, and so, by accident, redresse the many grievances of *England*: Which might also prevent the feare of such Warres for the future, and bring a just punishment upon those who were found to be the Authors, or assistors, of this present disturbance.

The King raises an army in England, against the Scots' Covenanters.

But the King, though resolved to pursue his designe of Warre, yet, rather than take the advice of a Parliament, was content to want the aid of it; and to seeke supplies of a lower condition. Great sums of money he borrowed from the chiefe Nobility; and required proportionable Loanes from all the Judges and Officers; but specially the Clergy, of all ranks, were liberal in contribution to this War; which was then called by many men, *Bellum Episcopale*.

All Courtiers, as well extraordinary as ordinary, were summoned to attend the King in Person with Horse and Armes, in a proportion suitable to their ranks.

The Army is assembled at York under the command of the Earl of Arundel.

By whom, and such voluntiers of the Gentry as came-in to gaine His Majesties favour, with old Souldiers, that imbraced it as their profession, a gallant Army was made-up, *Yorke* was appointed for the Rendezvouze, and the Earle of ARÜNDELL Commander in chiefe.

The King, as it was well knowne, had beene advertised by many, and especially by the prosecuted Bishops, who were fled out of *Scotland*, that the Scottish Covenanters were in no sort able to resist him; That scarce any English Army at all would be needful to fight, but ohely to appeare, and His Majesty would finde a party great enough in *Scotland* to do the worke.

And, indeed, much might have been done in that kinde, if the Lords of the Covenant had not used a most dexterous and timely prevention, which is as necessary in a defensive, as in an offensive, Warre.

For besides the feared incursion of the English upon their Borders, and what invasion the Deputy of *Ireland*, on the Westernne Coast, might make, together with

with the Earle of ANTRIM, and his Forces from the Hebrides; the Marquisse HUNTLEY in the North, and Marquisse DUGLAS towards the Southerne parts, with the Earle of HETH, were to be feared, and the Towne of *Aberdeen* to be secured, before it could fortifie to receive the King's Fleet.

All which, with timely care, was undertaken and provided-against by several Lords, as ARGILE for the West, MONTROSSE for the North, Colonel MONROE for the South. The Scots take vigorous measures for the defence of Scotland.

The most considerable forts in that Kingdome were taken-in at the beginning, without any blood or resistance, and furnished by them with Ammunition, as *Edenburgh*, and *Dun-Britain*; and the Haven of *Leeth*, to secure *Edenburgh*, suddenly fortified. All Neuters, or suspected persons, they disarmed without tumult. The Castle of *Dalketh* they scaled and tooke, with all the warlike provision which had been brought into it by Marquisse HAMILTON the yeare before. In that Castle they found the King's Crowne, Scepter and Sword; which, in great state and solemnity, were carried from thence by the greatest Noblemen, and layed-up in *Edenburgh* Castle.

The Covenanting Lords at the same time published a long Remonstrance, in answer to the King's Proclamation against them, the 27th *February*, and to satisfie the people of *England* concerning their proceedings and intents.

The Marquisse HAMILTON arrived at *Forth* with a Fleet in *May*, and sent letters to the Governour of *Edenburgh* to obey the King's Commands, and especially to publish in *Edenburgh* that Proclamation, which had been by the King proclaimed at *Yorke*, upon the 25th of *April*; wherein, among other things, the Rents and Debts due to Covenanters, from Tenants and other, are forbidden to be paid to them.

The Governour desired the Marquisse to expect an answer till the Parliament sate, which was to begin within few daies; who, [when they were assembled,] returned answer to the Marquisse, That they could not in that obey his Command, for many reasons, expressed at large in their Commentaries.

In the meane time the King commanded the Parliament to dissolve, which immediately obeyed; And, being threatned with Warre on every side, elected Sir ALEXANDER LESLEY, an experienced Commander in the German Warres, to be their great General; to whom all the greatest Earles and Lords of the Covenant, swore obedience in all warlike Commands; taking an Oath of him for performance of his duty; and immediately betook themselves every man to his charge, through-out all parts of the Kingdome, according as they were commanded by LESLEY. The Scots chuse Sir Alexander Lesley for the General of their army.

Whilst the Armies on both sides advanced forward, and no decision of this difference seemed with reason to be hoped-for, but such as the stroke of Warre must allow; the Scottish Covenanters did, neverthelesse, continue their first course of petitioning the King; and, by many addresses to him, protested their loyalty to his Crowne and Person; and did not omit by Letters and Messages, to sollicite, as

Advocates, those English Noblemen, whom they esteemed the best and truest Patriots, as the Earles of ESSEX, PEMBROOKE, and HOLLAND, as supposing that this Warre was not approved of by any that were firme to the Cause of Religion and Liberties of both Kingdomes, (for so themselves expresse it.)

The Earle of DUMFERLING, having free passage about that time to the English Army, assured his fellow-Covenanters, that those Noble fore-named Earles, and almost all the English Nobility, were much averse from this Warre, and favourers of their suit to the King.

A treaty of Peace between the King and the Scots is opened on the 10th of June, 1639.

Which did so much encourage the Covenanters to continue their humble Petitions to the King, (and God being pleased to give his blessing) that, after some few Messages to and fro, the King was pleased to give leave, that six of them should come and personally treat at the Earle of ARUNDELL his Tent, upon the tenth of June, with some of the English Nobility; at which Discourses, some few daies after, the King himselfe vouchsafed to be present: At last, after many humble expressions of the Covenanters, and some expostulations of the King with them, by the happy mediation of wise and noble Counsellors, a Pacification was solemnly made upon such Articles as gave full satisfaction to all parties, save onely that the Scottish Covenanters were not pleased with some expressions which the King had used in the Preface to the Pacificatory Edict, as calling their late Synod, *Pseudo-Synodus Glasguensis*; and aspersing their proceedings in Armes, with such Epithites, as *tumultuous, illegal, and rebellious*.

Which notwithstanding, at the humble suit of them, the King was pleased to moderate, to expunge some of those harsh phrases; as likewise to explaine more cleerely other ambiguous sentences, to take-away all suspicions from peoples hearts; the Copies of which were delivered to divers of the English Nobility, who had taken faithful paines in procuring that happy peace; that, if any doubts should afterwards happen, their judgements might be taken concerning the intention of the writing.

The King also declared, for satisfaction of the Scots, That, though his expressions at some places might seeme harsh, yet his meaning to them was never the worse; That care must be taken of his owne reputation in forraigne parts; and that litigation about words was vaine, when the matter was cleere, and their suit wholly granted.

The King granted them a free National Synod, to be holden upon the sixth of August following, and a Parliament to begin upon the 20th day of the same Moneth, to confirme and ratifie what the Synod should decree; which the Scots thankfully receive, esteeming that to be the only proper and efficacious way to settle a firme peace both in Church and State.

They were also joyful, that the King had promised to be there himselfe in person. But that hope afterwards failed them; for the King excused himselfe, affirming, that urgent and weighty affaires at London, as he was certified by Letters from his Queen and Council, required his presence there; but that he would send
a Deputy

a Deputy thither, with full power to make good whatsoever he had promised ; which was the Earle of TRAQUARE.

This Pacification, to the great joy of good men, was solemnly concluded on the 18th of *June*, 1639, and both Armies, within eight and forty houres, to be disbanded: which was accordingly done, and both the English and Scots returned home, praising God; who, without any effusion of blood, had compounded this difference, and prevented a Warre so wickedly designed.

The Pacification is concluded on the 18th of June, 1639.

But that joy lasted not long ; for the Earle of TRAQUARE, the King's Commissioner, could not agree with the Scottish Parliament; the Scots complaining, that nothing was seriously performed, which the King had promised at the Pacification ; as shall more appeare afterward.

The Scottish Parliament complains, that the king does not perform the articles of the Pacification.

But, however it were, within a little time after that the King had been at London, that paper which the Scots avowed to containe the true conditions of that Pacification, was by the King disavowed, and commanded by Proclamation to be burned by the hands of the hangman : though the Contents of that Paper were not named at all in the Proclamation, nor the people of *England* acquainted with any of them. Which put the English in great feare that the former Counsels of divisions yet prevailed in the Court, especially discerning a shew of preparation for Warre againe.

But (leaving the Scots at their Parliament a while,) in the meane time, the Lord WENTWORTH, Deputy of *Ireland*, arrived in *England*, and was received by the King with great expressions of grace and favour, dignified with a higher Title, and created Earle of *Strafford*.

The Lord Wentworth comes over to England. And is created Earl of Strafford.

Great was the expectation of all the English, what might be the effect of his coming-over ; great was the opinion which men in general had conceived of his ability and parts ; looking at him as the onely hinge, upon which the State was now likely to turne. But very different and various were the conjectures of Gentlemen at that time, in their ordinary discourses, (for I will relate the truth,) what use this great Statesman would make of his ability and favour.

Some (as they wished) did seeme to hope, when they considered his first right Principles, that whatsoever he had acted since his greatnesse, was but to ingratiate himselfe perfectly with the King ; that so at last, by his wisdom and favour, he might happily prevaile both upon the King's judgement and affection, and carry him from those evil Counsels which he had long beene nurtured-in, to such waies as should render him most honourable and happy ; That the Earle was so wise as to understand what most became a wise man, and would make greatnesse beloved and permanent.

But others durst not hope so much from him, when they considered his Government in *Ireland*, and the ambition of the man : They feared that neither his vertue was great enough to venture his owne fortunes, by opposing any evil Counsels about the King, nor his favour great-enough to prevaile in over-ruling ; That he was sent-for onely to compleat that bad worke, which others, of lesse braine than he, had begun.

Which [bad worke] he would sooner venture to do, than to make himselfe the author of a new and good one; seeing, it hath been observed, that few Statesmen have ever opposed Princes, but rather seconded and assisted them in their bad inclinations.

From whence it comes, that few Statesmen have converted Princes from ill courses, but been themselves perverted from that goodnesse which seemed to be before in them. Historians, therefore, neither imputed the goodnesse of AUGUSTUS to MARCUS AGRIPPA, or STATILIUS TAURUS; nor the faults of TIBERIUS to SEJANUS. According to that sentence of MACHIAVEL, *Recta consilia, à quocunque profiscuntur, à Principis prudentiâ; non autem Principis prudentia à rectis consiliis derivatur.*

The king declares an intention of calling an English Parliament, to meet in April, 1640.

The Earl of Strafford returns to Ireland in December, 1639, to summon an Irish Parliament.

At that time the King declared to his Council an intention that he had of calling a Parliament in *England*, to begin in *April* following. The people seemed to wonder at so great a novelty as the name of a Parliament; but feared some further designe, because it was so long deferred: whilest, in the meane time, preparations for a Warre against *Scotland* seemed to go forward, and the Deputy of *Ireland* was first to go-over, and summon a Parliament in *Ireland*, which he accordingly did, crossing the Seas about the end of *December*.

What worke he was to do there, the people knew not, but wished that the English Parliament might have begun before the Scottish businesse had proceeded too farrè; which [meeting of the English Parliament] they supposed, might happily prevent so sad a Warre, and save those charges which would before *April* grow upon such warlike preparations, and require a supply from that Parliament: [for] that it were better to prevent such a necessity than purposely to stay till that necessity were made.

The Parliament of Scotland is prorogued on the 18th of December, 1639.

On the 18th day of that *December*, the Earle of TRAQUARE, by a Command from the King, under his Privy Seale, broke-up the Parliament in *Scotland*, and prorogued it till the second day of *June* in the following yeare.

The Scots complained that it was a new example and breach of their liberties, not heard-of before in twenty ages; That a Parliament, fully assembled, and compleat in all her Members, whilest businesse of moment was depending, should be dissolved without the consent of the House itselſe; That, whatsoever Kings in other Kingdomes might do, it concerned not them to enquire; but it was absolutely against their Lawes, according to which, the King had lately promised them he would onely proceed.

TRAQUARE, immediately upon the dissolution of the Scottish Parliament, hastened to the Court of *England* to certifie the King of all proceedings.

The Scots send four Earls, as their Commissioners, to the King, to complain of his breaches of the late Pacification.

And the Parliament-Deputies of *Scotland* dispatched-away, with special instructions to the King, also foure Commissioners, the Earles of DUMFERLING and LOWDEN, DUGLASS, and BARCLAY.

Their instructions were, That before the King himselfe, not the Council of *England* (because of the independency of that Kingdome) they should complaine of those injuries, and intreat redresse, which had been offered to them since the Pacification; The dissolving of their Parliament; the Garrisoning of *Edenburgh* Castle with three times as many [soldiers] as would serve for defence; The garrisoning

isoning of *Dun-Britain* Castle with English Souldiers ; That the Scots trading in *England*, but more especially in *Ireland*, were enforced to new Oathes, damning their late Covenant, and contrary to the Articles of Pacification.

They sent withal an information to the English Nation in general, touching all their proceedings and intentions, and expressing at large (as may be there read) what particular injuries they had received since the Pacification, and how much contrary to that Agreement.

The foure Scottish forenamed Commissioners, after some audiences before the King, and divers of his English Council, were in *March* committed to Prison, the King intending shortly to charge them, the Parliament being neere ; *LOWDEN* to the Tower, and the other three to other custody.

The king commits the four Scottish Commissioners to Prison, in *March*, 1639-40.

About this time the Earle of *STRAFFORD*, returning out of *Ireland*, where he had held a short Parliament, and gotten foure Subsidies from them, came to the King againe ; and, the English Parliament being presently to begin, an accusation was drawne against *LOWDEN*, then Prisoner in the Tower, concerning a Letter written from the Scottish Covenanters to the French King ; to which Epistle the said Earle had set his hand.

The Earl of *Stafford* comes over to *England* again, in *April*, 1640.

The matter of accusation was, That the Scots, weary of obedience to their owne King, had recourse to a forraigne Prince for assistance, and by that meanes might draw the Armies of *France* into this Island.

His answer was, The Letter was written in *May*, 1639, when *Scotland* was threatned with a grievous invasion, and they had notice, that, by Ambassadors and Agents, their Cause was represented odious to all forraigne Princes and States ; That their intention was to clear themselves from those aspersions abroad, and especially to the King of *France*, whose Ancestors had been ancient friends to the Kingdome of *Scotland* ; and for feare least that King might possibly be wrought-upon to be their Enemy otherwise.

That it was not to draw Warlike assistance from the King of *France* (which nevertheless they thought lawful in an extreame necessity and persecution) but only his mediation in their behalf to their owne King ; and that the Letter, well examined, would beare no other sense ; Though there were mention of aid, yet their secret instructions to their Messenger had specified what kinde of aid it was which they desired ; But, howsoever, they alledged, that the draught of that Letter did not then please them, nor was it at all consented-to, nor intended to be sent ; besides that, the Superscription, *To the King*, at which so great exception was taken, as, if they acknowledge the French King for their Sovereigne, was not written at all by them, but added by some Enemy after that it was gotten-out of their hands. Besides all this, the thing was done before the Pacification and Act of Oblivion, and ought not now to be remembered against them. Whether their answer were sufficient or not, true it is, that nothing at all was made of that businesse, though the King himselfe at the beginning of the English Parliament, mentioned it against the Scots, as a prooffe of their disloyalty, and justification of those Warlike preparations which he had made against them.

The

The Scots send an address to the English Parliament, in justification of their proceedings.

The Scots, in the meane time, had written to the English Parliament a large Justification of all their proceedings, intreating them, by the way of Brotherly advice, *To be wary in vindicating their owne Lawes and Liberties, to frustrate the designe of those evil Counsellors, who had procured this Parliament for no other end, than to arme the King with warlike supplies against his Scottish Subjects, and by that Warre to enslave, if not ruine, both the Nations; That, after so many violations and dissolutions of Parliaments in England, this was not called to redresse grievances, but to be so over-reached (if they were not careful and couragious) that no possibility should be left for the future of redressing any; That some dangerous practise might be well suspected, when, at the same time, a Parliament was denyed to Scotland, though promised by the word of a King; granted to England, when not expected; and obruded upon Ireland, when not desired.*

Many particulars of that nature were expressed in the Scottish Remonstrance.

CHAP. VI.

The Parliament beginneth in England, but is soone dissolved. The Clergy continue their Convocation. The Scots enter into England. Some passages of the Warre. A Parliament is called to begin on the third of November. A Truce betweene the Armies for two Moneths.

UPON the thirteenth of *April* the Parliament began; when the King produced that forenamed writing of his Scottish Subjects to the French King, as an apparent token of their disloyalty, and a necessity in him of chastising them by Armes; for which he had already made so great a preparation, as required a present supply of money from this Parliament. To the same purpose that the King had briefly expressed himself, the Lord Keeper FINCH, in a long and eloquent Oration, dilated the businesse.

The English Parliament meets on the 13th of April, 1640.

Twelve subsidies were demanded by the King, in lieu of which, the release of Ship-Money was promised; to which demand answer was made by divers Members of the House in several Speeches, "That Redresse of grievances was the chiefe end of assembling Parliaments, and ought to precede granting of Subsidies. Which not onely Reason, but the constant Practise of all ages, had confirmed; That there was never more need of redressing grievances than at this time; without which the people would repine to part with twelve Subsidies; That the sum was extraordinary great, especially to be given for releasing of that which they never conceived the King had any Title-to, but had taken by power against the Lawes."

The King promised that grievances should be afterwards redressed, but required the Money first, because there was a necessity of hastening the Warre; without which the opportunity of Summer would be lost. To which it was answered by many, "That the people had no reason to pay for that which was never caused nor desired by them, nor could any way prove to their good, but, quite contrary, to the danger and detriment of the whole Kingdome; That the same people would undoubtedly

undoubtedly pay with more willingnesse so many Subsidies to prevent that unhappy Warre, to settle the State, and punish the principal contrivers or assistors of that disturbance."

Among all the Gentlemen of the House of Commons, who spake to that purpose, the Lord GEORGE DIGBY, Sonne to the Earle of *Bristol* (a young Nobleman of extraordinary abilities) was eminent for a Speech there; wherein complaining that the House was required to give present answer concerning supplies to the King, to ingage himself in a Warre, and that a Civil Warre; *For*, said he, *so I must needs call it, seeing we are of the same Religion, and under the same King.* He divided his Complaint into five heads:

1. *We are not permitted to redresse grievances at all.*
2. *We are not permitted so much as to represent to His Majesty the disaffection of his Subjects to this Warre.*
3. *We are not permitted to say, That we thinke they are the same persons that are the causers of our grievances, and the grievances of Scotland; and that the cutting-off of those Incendiaries of State, would be a safe, easie, and honourable cure.*
4. *That Warre will make the breach wider, and the remedy desperate.*
5. *That the best Justice is, to fill the pits which are made to intrap others, with the bodies of those that digged them, &c.*

Master PYM also, a grave and religious Gentleman, in a long Speech of almost two houres, recited a Catalogue of all the grievances which at that time lay heavy upon the Common-wealth.

Of which many abbreviated Copies, as extracting the heads onely, were with great greedinesse taken by Gentlemen, and others throughout the Kingdom; for it was not then in fashion to print Speeches of Parliament.

Divers of the Members besides (too many to be here named) did fully descant upon such particular grievances, as they had informed themselves of, in their several Counties and Burroughs.

But it is most true, though it have been said, *Quicquid multis peccatur, intuitum est*, That there was never any Parliament which was more unanimous in apprehension of grievances, and yet more moderate in the Language and manner of declaring against them. And so great seemed to be their care of offending in this Parliament, (being the first that in so many yeares had been granted to *England*;) that, notwithstanding they perceived that the Money they were to give to the King, must be employed against their owne interest, yet they took the Subsidies into consideration;

consideration ; by which they might, perchance, gaine the King's affection to Parliaments ; and were content to hope, that, whilst the Houses sate, the bad Council about the King might be awed into moderation ; and the Warre against *Scotland*, by wise and honest interpositions, might be againe composed, as it had been the Summer before.

But whilst the businesse was in debate, whether they were not quick enough in granting, or the Conditions were too much feared by the King, I will not judge, but onely relate what was done.

The King in Person came into the House upon the fifth of *May*, and dissolved the Parliament, but used faire language to them, protesting that he would governe as much according to Law, as if a Parliament were constantly sitting : Yet, the next day after the dissolution of it, some Members were imprisoned ; the Lord BROOKE was searched for Papers, his Study, Cabinets, and Pockets ; Master BELLOSI and Sir JOHN HOTHAM, were committed to Prison for Speeches, but soone discharged ; Master CREW, who was a Member of the House of Commons, and was in the Chaire for Petitions concerning Ministers, was committed to the Tower, for not discovering some Petitions delivered to him in Parliament, and continued a Prisoner almost to the beginning of the next Parliament.

The King dissolves it on the 5th of May, 1640.

And the next day commits some of the Members to Prison, on account of their Speeches in Parliament.

After the dissolution of this Parliament, the Convocation of Divines continued their sitting, and, by authority from the King, made divers Canons, and an Oath to be imposed not onely upon Clergymen, but on many of the Laity.

The Convocation of the Clergy continues to sit after the Dissolution of the Parliament.

That continuance of the Convocation, (whatsoever themselves, perchance ignorant of the Law, might thinke of it,) was judged to be very illegal ; as it appeared by the Votes of the succeeding Parliament, and the opinion of Lawyers delivered there.

When Master BAGSHAW, the *November* following, inveighing against those Canons which were made whilst they sate, proved the Bishops and Clergy in a *premunie* : The Lord DIGBY at the same time affirming, that their Convocation was a new Synod, patched out of an old Conventicle. Many other Lawyers of note, at several times, argued the case concerning those Canons.

Insomuch that the House of Commons, in *December* following, *nullo contradicente*, resolved that those Canons were against the fundamental Lawes of the Kingdome, the Property and Liberty of the Subject : And, in the following *April*, 1641, falling againe upon the late Convocation, for their Canons and other misdemeanours, they voted the Convocation-House in 200,000 pounds fine to the King ; The Archbishop of *Canterbury* to pay 20,000 pounds, the Archbishop of *Yorke* 10,000 pounds, the Bishop of *Chester* 3000 pounds ; and the rest of the Clergy, according to their abilities proportionably, to make-up the summe.

Certaine it is, it was not in any substantial way advantageous to the King ; but onely to give them time and opportunity to tax the Clergy in Money for supplying his Majesty in the Warre then on foot against the Scots.

The King must needs be driven to a great exigent at that time, having so expensive a Warre in hand, and wanting the assistance of Parliament.

The courses that were then taken by the King, to supply that defect, were partly

The King raises money by illegal methods, partly the contribution of the Clergy, to whom that Warre was lesse displeasing, than to the Laiety.

Collections were made among the Papists ; Writs of Ship-money were issued-out againe, in a greater proportion than before ; great Loanes were attempted to be drawne from the City of *London*, to which purpose the names of the richest Citizens were by command returned to the Council-Board. But, these waies being not sufficient, some others were made use of, which were of a nature more unusual, as the seizing of *Bolloine* [or *Bullion*] in the Tower ; the Lord *COTTINGTON* also, for the King's use, tooke-up a great Commodity of Pepper at the Exchange, to be sold againe at an under-rate.

A consultation was also had of coyning 400,000 l. of base Money, upon allegation that Queen *ELIZABETH* had done the like for her Irish Warres : but the King waved that, upon reasons which the Merchants gave of the inconveniencies of it.

The Scots resolve to march an Army into England, in June, 1640.

The Scots, hearing of the breach of this English Parliament, thought it high time to provide for their owne safety ; and, being restrained in their Trade, and impoverished by losse of Ships seized in divers parts, resolve to enter *England* with a sword in one hand, and a Petition in the other ; signifying in the meane time to the people of *England* in two large Remonstrances, what their intentions were to that Nation, and the reasons of their entrance ; which who so pleases, may reade at large in their printed Booke.

The King raises an English Army to meet at York, under the command of the Earl of Strafford.

When the King had notice of the Scots intentions, a Fleet was forthwith sent to annoy the Maritime Coasts of *Scotland*, and a Land-Army to meet at *Yorke*, where the Earl of *STRAFFORD*, as President of the North, commanded in Chief, though the Earle of *NORTHUMBERLAND*, at the time of raising the Army, was named *Generalissimo*, but, for want of health, could not be present.

A great Magazine of Ammunition had been sent to *Hull*, *Newcastle*, and *Berwick*, the Castle of *Edenburgh* being kept by *RIVEN*, a firme man to the King's side.

The common Soldiers of the English Army shew a great dislike of this war.

But in the Expedition of the King's Army towards the North, it was a marvelous thing to observe in divers places the aversenesse of the Common Souldiers from this Warre.

Though Commanders and Gentlemen of great quality, in pure obedience to the King, seemed not at all to dispute the cause, or consequence, of this Warre ; the Common Souldiers would not be satisfied, questioning in a mutinous manner, " Whether their Captaines were Papists or not," and in many places were not appeased till they saw them receive the Sacrament ; laying violent hands on divers of their Commanders, and killing some, uttering in bold speeches their distaste of the Cause, to the astonishment of many, that common people should be sensible of publike Interest and Religion, when Lords and Gentlemen seemed not to be so.

By this backwardnesse of the English Common Souldiers, it came to passe that the Warre proved not so sharpe and fatal to both Nations, as it might otherwise have done.

Some

Some blood was shed, but very little, first, at *Newburne*, a Towne five miles distant from *Newcastle*, where part of the English Army encamped to intercept the passage of the Scots, as they marched toward *Newcastle*.

The Scots take possession of the Counties of Northumberland and Durham, in August, 1640.

But many of the English Souldiers forsooke their Commanders and fled, sooner than the use of that Nation is to do in Warre: But the English Horse made good a fight, and with great courage and resolution charged upon the Scots, but all in vaine, their number being too small.

In this Skirmish, which happened upon the 28th of *August*, the number of men slaine on both sides is not related, either by the English or Scottish Relation; but certaine it is, that it was not great.

A skirmish at Newburne on the 28th of August, 1640.

Three valiant and active Commanders of the English Army were taken Prisoners, Colonel WILMOT, Sir JOHN DIGBY, and ONEALE, the two latter being Papists, and both Captaines of Horse.

This fight opened that rich Towne of *Newcastle* to the Scots, and within few daies after, they put a Garrison into *Durham*, commanded by the Earle of *Dumferling*, and, taking that Fort of *Newcastle upon Tyne*, intercepted some Ships which were newly-arrived there with Provision of Corne for the King's Army.

Some blood was also shed about the same time, when part of the English Garrison at *Berwick*, hearing that some Ammunition was layed-up in a little Towne of *Scotland*, *Dunsian*, made an attempt upon it, but found it better fortified than was expected, and were repelled with some slaughter; from whence, hearing that a greater power of Scots was making toward them, under the command of the Lord HADINTON, (who unfortunately perished afterward, blowne-up with powder at *Dunglasse*) they returned to *Berwick*.

Another at Dunsian near Berwick.

The King, during these Skirmishes, had, by Proclamation, warned all the English Nobility, with their followers and Forces, to attend his Standard at *Yorke* against the Scots, on the 20th of *September*; where, whilst himselfe in Person resided, he received an humble Petition from the Scots, containing an expression of their loyalty to him, and the innocence of their intentions toward *England*.

But their expressions were in such general termes, that the King returned answer to the Earle of LANURICK, Secretary for *Scotland*, Commanding them to specifie their demands more particularly: Which, whilst the Scots prepared to do, it pleased God to open the hearts of many English Lords, who, considering and bewailing the great calamity and dishonour which *England* was then throwne into, by these unhappy proceedings of the King, framed an humble Letter, subscribed by all their hands, and sent it to his Majesty, wherein they represent to him the miserable condition of the Kingdome, and mischiefs attending that wicked Warre; as the danger of his Person, the waste of his Revenue, the burden of his Subjects, the rapines committed by that Army which he had raised; wherein Papists, and others ill-affected to Religion, are armed in Commands, who are not by the Lawes permitted to have Armes in their owne houses; The great mischiefe which may fall upon the Kingdome, if his intentions, which are reported, of bringing-in Irish and forraigue Forces, should take effect; The urging of Ship-money; The

A great number of English Lords who attended the King at York, petition him in September, 1640, to call another Parliament.

multitude of Monopolies and other Patents, to the great and universal grievance of his people; The great griefe of the Subjects, for the long intermission of Parliaments, for dissolving of the last, and former dissolutions of such as have been called, without any good effect: For remedy whereof, and for prevention of future dangers to his owne Royal Person, and the whole State, they humbly intreat his Majesty, That he would be pleased to summon a Parliament within some short and convenient time, whereby the causes of these, and other great grievances, which the people lye-under, may be taken-away, and the Authors and Counsellors of them may be brought to legal tryal and condigne punishment; And that this Warre may be composed without blood, in such manner as may conduce to the honour and safety of his Majesty, the comfort of the people, and uniting of both Kingdomes against the Common Enemy of the Reformed Religion. Subscribed by almost twenty Earles and Barons.

The King complies with this advice, and summons another Parliament to meet at Westminster, on the 3d of November, 1640

The King, receiving this Message from the Peeres of *England*, by his Proclamation ordained a day, which was upon 24th *September*, for all the Lords to meet at *Yorke*, to whom he declared, that, of his owne free accord, he had determined to call a Parliament in *England*, to begin as soone as possibly could be, allowing the usual time for issuing out of Writs, which was upon the third of *November* ensuing, 1640.

But he desired, first, to consult with them, what answer to returne to the Scots demands, and how with his honour he might deale with them, who had so boldly invaded *England*.

And, to make them understand the whole state of the businesse, he commanded the Earle of *TRAQUARE*, who had been his Commissioner there, to relate all occurrences since the beginning.

He desired likewise their advice, how his Army might be payed before the supplies of Parliament could come.

After many debates, and different opinions in point of honour and convenience, it was at last agreed by the greater part of Peeres, and so concluded, that sixteene Lords should be chosen to treat with the Scots, and agree upon what Conditions they thought fit.

A treaty with the Scots for a Cessation of Hostilities, in October, 1640.

Eight Earles were named, *BEDFORD*, *ESSEX*, *HARTFORT*, *SALISBURY*, *WARWICK*, *HOLLAND*, *BRISTOLL*, and *BARKSHIRE*; as likewise eight Barons, *WHARTON*, *PAGET*, *KIMBOLTON*, *BROOKE*, *PAWLET*, *HOWARD*, *SAVILE*, and *DUNSMORE*.

The Scots were required to send as many, with full Commission, to whom Letters of safe-conduct in the amplest manner were granted.

When the matter came to debate, the Earle of *Bristoll* for the most part was Prolocutour to the English, and the Earle of *LOWDEN* to the Scots.

After many demands on both sides, and expostulations upon slighter matters, which were easily reconciled, there was one point, which seemed too hard a case in the eyes of the English Peeres, that the Scottish Army should be payed by the English, whilst their owne Army was in great distresse by reason of Arreares.

But

But in conclusion, those honest Lords, who understood the condition of that unhappy Warre, were content upon any termes to make an end of it ; and in conclusion an agreement was made upon these termes :

1. *A Truce, or Cessation of Armes, for two Moneths, till the 16th of December.* The Terms of the Treaty agreed on, October 16, 1640.
2. *That 850l. a-day should be paid to the Scots, during that Truce.*
3. *That, if it were not payed, the Scots might force it from the Counties of Northumberland, Cumberland, Westmorland, and Durham.*
4. *That those Counties should be allowed the Scots for their winter-Quarters.*
5. *No new preparations for Warre to be made.*
6. *That private injuries should not breake the Truce, so satisfaction were made upon complaint.*
7. *That Merchants might freely traffique in either Kingdome, without Letters of safe-conduct, but Souldiers without leave might not passe their limits.*

Upon such termes was this unnatural Warre (although the Armies could not as yet be disbanded) brought to a Cessation ; and both Nations rested in assured confidence, that a peace must needs follow, since the whole matter was now to be debated in the English Parliament, which was to begin about a fortnight after ; for it was likely that a Parliament should put a period to that Warre, which could never have been begun, but for want of a Parliament. They were also confident, that that freedome which the fundamental Lawes and Constitution of the Kingdome of *England* allow to Parliaments, could not be denyed to this (though to many others it had long been) as being that Parliament, to which the King was necessitated ; and the onely way which was now left him to tread, after so many deviations unfortunately tried ; and upon which the people had set-up their utmost hope, whom it seemed not safe, after so long suffering, to provoke any further.

In what a desperate condition the Kingdome of *England* was at that time, what necessity there was of a present cure, with how much difficulty that cure was to be wrought, and with what warinesse and wisdome it concerned both King and people to play their parts, a judicious Reader may partly conjecture by the former passages already related.

But

But further to enlighten the Reader (for in this plaine Relation I shall be sparing to use any descants of my owne) I will referre him to Speeches which at the beginning of this Parliament were made by judicious Gentlemen, and those of greatest moderation, labouring, as much as they could possibly, to spare the King, and touch tenderly upon his Honour; which I shall mention anon.

According to the reason of the Parliament and Kingdome, went along the sense of Courtiers themselves (as was expressed in an ingenuous Treatise found in the privy Chamber) concerning the condition in which the King and Kingdome of *England* were, when this so-much-expected Parliament was to begin.

CHAP. VII.

The beginning of the English Parliament. Grievances examined. Sufferers relieved. Delinquents questioned. The Archbishop of Canterbury committed to the Tower. The flight of Secretary WINDEBANKE, and of the Lord Keeper FINCH.

ON the third of November 1640, the Parliament began; where the King expressed himself very well, in a Speech gracious and acceptable to both Houses; who did not expect from him any such acknowledgement of former errors, as might seeme too low for the Majesty of his Person; but onely desired to gaine his affection for the future. The beginning of the English Parliament, November 3, 1640.

Very pleasing to them all was that gracious expression, that *He did now cleerly and freely put himselfe upon the love and affections of his English Subjects, desiring them to consider the best way for the Safety and Security of the Kingdome of England; and in order to it, for satisfaction of their just grievances, wherein he would so heartily concur, that the world might see his intentions were to make it a glorious and flourishing Kingdome. In which businessse he did freely and willingly leave it to them where to beginne.*

He desired also that all Jealousies and Suspensions might be layed-aside by them, which he promised to doe on his part. And withal, to give some reasonable colour to his former Warre, whether to excuse or justifie the Proceedings of it, he seemed as yet much distasted with the boldnesse of the Scots, who had entred *England* with an Army against his will; calling them by the name of Rebels; and that it concerned the honour of him and *England*, to drive them out againe.

And, in his second Speech, two daies after, *I told you (said he) that the Rebels must be put out of this Kingdome; it is true, I must needs call them so, so long as they have an Army that do invade us; although I am under Treaty with them, and under my Great Seale doe call them Subjects; for so they are too.*

His

His desire to have them out, was sweetned with that reason, That he was sensible how much his English Subjects of the North would suffer otherwise.

All which, with more particulars, was set-forth in a long Oration by the Lord FINCH; who likewise justified the King's intention of calling this Parliament, before the Peeres petitioned him at *Yorke*.

Though the King were thanked for his Grace towards his English Parliament; yet that motion, of expelling the Scots, was otherwise considered-of by the Houses, as will appeare in the particulars of it: For about a weeke after it was ordered by House of Commons, That 100,000 *l.* should be paid to the two Armies, to be levied rateably upon all the Counties of *England*, (except the Northerne Counties, which were then charged) and, till it could be levied, the Money to be taken-up at interest.

Scottish Commissioners come to London, November, 19, 1640.

And Scottish Commissioners were allowed to come and exhibite their complaints, and dispute the businesse at *London*; who accordingly came thither about the nineteenth day of the same Moneth; for the business was not yet ended, but still in Treaty, which Treaty (as the King said in his Speech) was but transported from *Rippon* to *London*.

Before the great cure, which was expected from this Parliament, could go-on, it was necessary that some time should be spent in searching and declaring the wounds; which, in divers elegant and judicious Speeches, was done by some Members of both Houses.

The abuses which of late yeares had been committed about Religion, and the manifold violations of Lawes and Liberties, were upon the first day after the House of Commons was settled, being the ninth of *November*, enumerated and discoursed-upon by Master GRIMSTON, Sir BENJAMIN RUDYERD, Master PYM, and Master BAGSHAW; and the abuses of *Ireland*, reflecting much upon the Earle of *Strafford*; were opened by Sir John CLOTWORTHY, of *Devon*, but living in *Ireland*.

The like Speeches for many daies following, were made by divers Gentlemen of great quality; where, in the midst of their complaints, the King was never mentioned, but with great Honour; They alwaies mixing thanks for the present hope of redresse, with their complaints of former grievances.

The first of which they rendred to the King, and threw the other upon his Ministers; of which if the Reader would see a perfect exemplar, Sir BENJAMIN RUDYERD's Speech (the second that was delivered in the House) will best discover the present state of grievances, and the way of sparing the King; he being a Religious, Learned, and Judicious Gentleman,

Cujus erant mores qualis facundia.

Whose Speech I shall wholly insert, that the condition of the State may the better be understood.

Master

Master Speaker :

WE are here assembled to doe God's businesse, and the King's, in which our owne is included, as we are Christians, as we are Subjects: Let us, first, feare God; then shall we honour the King the more: for I am afraid we have beene the lesse prosperous in Parliaments, because we have preferred other matters before him. Let Religion be our *Primum quærite*; for all things else are but *Et cæteras* to it: yet we may have them too, sooner and surer, if we give God his preceedence.

A speech of Sir Benjamin Rudyerd, on the State of Religion.

We well know what disturbance hath been brought upon the Church for vaine, petty, trifles; How the whole Church, the whole Kingdome, hath been troubled, where to place a Metaphor, an Altar.

We have seene Ministers, their wives, children, and families, undone, against Law, against conscience, against all bowels of compassion, about not dancing upon Sundaies: What do these sort of men thinke will become of themselves, when the Master of the House shall come and finde them thus beating their fellow-Servants?

These inventions were but sieves, made of purpose to winnow the best men; and that is the Devil's occupation.

They have a minde to worry preaching; for I never yet heard of any but diligent Preachers that were vext with these and the like devices.

They despise Prophecy, and, as one said, they would faine be at something were like the Masse, that will not bite; a muzzled Religion. They would evaporate and dis-spirit the power and vigour of Religion, by drawing it out into solemne and specious formalities, into obsolete, antiquated, Ceremonies, new furbish'd-up. And this (belike) is that good worke in hand, which Doctor HEYLIN hath so celebrated in his bold Pamphlets: All their acts and actions are so full of mixtures, involutions, and complications, as nothing is cleare, nothing sincere, in any of their proceedings. Let them not say, That these are the perverse suspicions, malicious interpretations, of some factious spirits amongst us, when a Romanist hath bragged and congratulated in print, That the face of our Church begins to alter, the Language of our Religion to change: and SANCTA CLARA hath published, That, if a Synod were held *Non intermixtis Puritanis*, setting Puritans aside, our Articles and their Religion would soone be agreed.

They have so brought it to passe, that, under the name of Puritans, all our Religion is branded; and, under a few hard words against Jesuits, all Popery is countenanced.

H

Whosoever

Whosoever squares his actions by any rule, either divine or humane, he is a Puritan: Whosoever would be governed by the King's Lawes, he is a Puritan.

He that will not do whatsoever other men would have him do, he is a Puritan. Their great worke, their Masterpiece, now is, to make all those of the Religion, to be the suspected party of the Kingdome.

Let us further reflect upon the ill effect these courses have wrought, what by a defection from us on the one side, a separation on the other; some, imagining whither we are tending, made haste to turne, or declare themselves Papists before-hand; thereby hoping to render themselves the more gracious, the more acceptable. A great company of the King's Subjects, striving to hold communion with us; but seeing how farre we were gone, and fearing how much further we would go, were forc'd to fly the Land, some into other inhabited Countries, very many into savage Wildernesses, because the Land would not beare them. Do not they that cause this, cast a reproach upon the Government?

Master Speaker:

Let it be our principall care, that these waies neither continue, nor return upon us; if we secure our Religion, we shall cut-off and defeat many plots that are now on foot by them and others. Beleeve it, Sir, Religion hath been for a long time, and still is, the great designe upon this Kingdome. It is a knowne and practised principle, That they who would introduce another Religion into the Church, must, first, trouble and disorder the Government of the State, that so they may worke their ends in a confusion, which now lies at the doore.

I come next, Master Speaker, to the King's businesse more particularly; which indeed is the Kingdomes; for one hath no existence, no being, without the other, their relation is so neere; yet some have strongly and subtilly laboured [to make] a divorce [between them], which hath been the very bane of both King and Kingdome.

When foundations are shaken, it is high time to looke to the building. He hath no heart, no head, no soule, that is not moved in his whole man, to looke upon the distresses, the miseries, of the Common-wealth;—that is not forward, in all that he is and hath, to redresse them in a right way.

The King, likewise, is reduced to great streights, wherein it were undutifulnesse beyond inhumanity to take advantage of him: Let us rather make it an advantage for him, to do him best service, when he hath most need

need, not to seeke our owne good, but in him, and with them; else we shall commit the same crimes ourselves, which we must condemne in others.

His Majesty hath cleerly and freely put himself into the hands of this Parliament; and I presume, there is not a man in this House, but feelles himself advanced in this high Trust: but, if he prosper no better in our hands, than he hath done in theirs, who have hitherto had the handling of his affaires, we shall for ever make our-selves unworthy of so gracious a confidence.

I have often thought and said, "That it must be some great extremity, that would recover and rectifie this State; and when that extremity did come, it would be a great hazard, whether it might prove a remedy or ruine." We are now, Master Speaker, upon that vertical, turning-point; and therefore it is no time to palliate, to foment our owne undoing.

Let us set upon the remedy; we must, first, know the disease; But to discover the diseases of the State, is (according to some) to traduce the Government; yet others are of opinion, That this is the halfe-way to the Cure.

His Majesty is wiser then they that have advised him; and therefore he cannot but see and feele their subverting, destructive, Counsels, which speak lowder than I can speak of them; for they ring a doleful, deadly, knell, over the whole Kingdome: His Majesty best knowes who they are. For us, let the matters bolt-out the men, their actions discover them.

They are men that talk largely of the King's Service, yet have done none but their owne; and that is too evident.

They speak highly of the King's power; but they have made it a miserable power, that produceth nothing but weaknesse, both to the King and Kingdome.

They have exhausted the King's Revenue to the bottome,—nay, through the bottome, and beyond.

They have spent vast sums of money wastefully, fruitlessly, dangerously; so that more money, without other Counsels, will be but a swift undoing.

They have alwaies peremptorily pursued one obstinate, pernicious, course; first, they bring things to an extremity; then they make that extremity (of their owne making,) the reason of their next action, seven times worse than the former; and there we are at this instant.

They have almost spoiled the best-instituted Government in the world, for Sovereignty in a King, and Liberty to the Subject; the proportionable temper of both which, makes the happiest State for power, for riches, for duration.

They have, unmannerly and slubbringly, cast all their projects, all their

machinations, upon the King; which no wise, or good, Minister of State ever did, but would still take all harsh, distastefull, things upon themselves, to cleare, to sweeten, their Master.

They have not suffered His Majesty to appeare unto his people in his owne native goodnesse.

They have eclipsed him by their interpositions. Although grosse, condense, bodies may obscure and hinder the Sun from shining-out, yet he is still the same in his owne splendour. And, when those bodies are removed, all creatures under him are directed by his light, and comforted by his Beames.

But they have framed a superstitious, seeming, Maxime of State for their owne turne, That, if a King will suffer men to be torne from him, he shall never have any good service done him. When the plaine truth is, That this is the surest way to preserve a King from having ill servants about him; and the Divine truth likewise is, Take-away the wicked from the King, and his Throne shall be established.

Master Speaker: Now we see what the sores are in general; and, when more particulars shall appeare, let us be very careful to draw-out the cores of them, not to skin them over with a slight, suppurating, festering, cure, least they breake-out againe into a greater mischief: Consider of it, consult, and speake your minds.

It hath heretofore been boasted, That the King should never call a Parliament, till he had no need of his people. These were words of division, and Malignity. For the King must alwaies, according to his occasions, have use of the people's power, hearts, hands and purses; and the people will alwaies have need of the King's Clemency, Justice, and Protection: And this reciprocation is the strongest, the sweetest, union.

N. B.

It hath been said too of late, That a Parliament will take-away more from the King, than they will give him. It may well be said, That those things which will fall-away of themselves, will enable the Subject to give him more than can be taken any way else. Projects and Monopolies are but leaking Conduit-Pipes; The Exchequer itselfe, at the fullest, is but a Cisterne; and now a broken one: Frequent Parliaments onely are the fountains; and I do not doubt, but in this Parliament, as we shall be free in our advices, so shall we be the more free of our purses, that His Majesty may experimentally finde the real difference of better Counsels, the true, solid, grounds of raising and establishing his Greatnesse, never to be brought againe (by God's blessing) to such dangerous, such desperate, perplexities.

Master Speaker: I confesse I have now gone in a way much against my nature, and somewhat against my custome heretofore used in this place.

But

But the deplorable, dismal, condition, both of Church and State, hath so farre wrought upon my judgement as it hath convinced my disposition: yet am I not Sir sanguinum; I love no man's ruine: I thank God I neither hate anyman's person, nor envy anyman's fortune: onely I am zealous for a thorow Reformation, in a time that exacts, that extorts, it. Which, I humbly beseech this House, may be done with as much lenity as much moderation, as the publike safety of the King and Kingdom can possibly admit.

In so great a concurrence of businesse, and weighty affaires, concerning the safety, and the very being, of three Kingdomes, as farre as the Parliament had leisure to consider and redresse the damages, or other injuries, of particular persons; Their first care was to vindicate distressed Ministers, who had been imprisoned, or deprived, by the Bishops and all others who, in the Cause of Religion, had been persecuted by them: Many of those Ministers, within few weeks after the beginning of the Parliament, were released from durance, and restored to their Charges, with damages from their oppressours; Many Doctors and other Divines, that had been most busie in promoting the late Church-innovations about Altars and other Ceremonies, and therefore most gracious and flourishing in the State, were then questioned and committed; insomuch as the change, and the suddenesse of it, seemed wonderful to men, and may worthily serve as a document to all posterity,

Quam fragili loco starent superbi,

In what fraile places stand the proudest men.

Among divers others of this Kinde, and the most remarkable of all, was that reliefe which the Parliament, immediately upon their first sitting, gave to three persecuted Gentlemen, Doctor BASTWICK, a Physitian, Master PRYNNE, a Lawyer, and Master BURTON, a Minister. The Parliament gives relief to Dr. Bastwick, Mr. Prynne, and Mr. Burton.

The whole passage of whose Story we will here insert in one continued discourse, that it may not hereafter interrupt any other Relations of businesse.

These threemen, for the same offence, or very little differing in substance, (as those that read their extant Bookes may perceive) not being able to containe themselves in such a cause, had written against the manner of English Episcopacy, and those inconveniences, or extravagancies, which, as they conceived, flowed from it, to the prejudice of Purity in Religion; For which offence they were all three heavily censured in the High-Commission Court, at several times, and committed to several Prisons, where they long remained in durance, till afterward their cause was brought into the Starre-Chamber, where they received a sad doome; and the same day stood all three upon Pillories in *Westminster* Palace-yard, where there eares were likewise cut-off*.

It

* On the 30th day of June, 1637. The Lords, or Members of the Court of Starr-Chamber, who were principally concerned in passing this cruel sentence, were Sir Thomas Coventry, the Lord Keeper

It seemed, I remember, to many Gentlemen (and was accordingly discoursed-of) a spectacle no lesse strange than sad, to see three of several Professions, the noblest in the Kingdome, Divinity, Law, and Physick, exposed at one time to such an ignominious punishment, and condemned to it by Protestant Magistrates, for such Tenents in Religion, as the greatest part of Protestants in *England* held, and all the Reformed Churches in *Europe* maintained.

But the Court of Starre-Chamber seemed to take cognizance onely of their uniafwful publishing those Tenents, and disobedience to the Authority then in being.

This was but the beginning of their punishment; they were afterward banished to remote places of the Kingdome, and there kept in close and solitary confinement, not allowed pen and paper, nor the sight of any friends, no not so much (for two of them were married) as of their owne wives. Their imprisonments, at several removes, were in the Castles of *Lankeston*, *Lancaster*, *Carnarvon*, and the Isles of *Scyllly*, *Garnsey*, and *Jersey*.

These three, within five daies after the Parliament began to sit, were sent-for home from their banishment; and accordingly Master PRYNNE, and Master BURTON, upon the 28th of *November* came into *London*, (Doctor BASTWICK within few daies after, in the same manner) being met upon the way, some few miles from *London*, and brought into the City by five thousand persons, both men and women, on horseback, who, all of them, wore in their hats Rosemary and Bayes, in token of Joy and Triumph.

They return to London with great publick acclamations, on the 28th of November, 1640.

The discourses of men upon this action, were very different: some both of the Clergy, of the Court, and other Gentlemen besides, did not conceale their dislike of it, affirming that it was a bold and tumultuous affront to Courts of Justice, and the King's Authority: Others, who pitied the former sufferings of those men, and they that wished Reformation in matters of Justice, were pleased with it; hoping that it would worke good effects in the King's minde, and make him sensible how his people stood disaffected to the rigour of such proceedings; and esteemed it as a good presage of the ruine of those two Courts, the High-Commission, and the Star-Chamber: Which proved true within halfe a yeare after.

How it wrought at that present upon the King, is not knowne. But actions of that nature, where the people, of their owne accords, ina seeming tumultuous manner, do expresse their liking or dislike of matters in Government, cannot have alwaies the same successe, but worke, according to the disposition of the Prince or Governour, either to a sense causing Reformation, or to an hatred of them as upbraiders of his actions; *aut corrigunt, aut irritant*.

Within a moneth after, the businesse of these three men was, by Order of the Parliament, referred to Committees to examine and report.

Upon which reports, not two Moneths after, it was voted by the House of

Keeper of the Great Seal, Lord Cottington, and Sir John Finch, who was, at that time, Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas. See the Selection from the Harleian Miscellany, in one volume, quarto, printed for Kearsley, bookseller, in Fleet-Street, Number 46, in the year, 1793, in pages 314, 315, 316, &c.—324 of the said Volume.

Commons,

Commons, That those Judgements so given against them (but severally for every one of the three) were illegal, unjust, and against the liberty of the Subject; and, within a moneth after, voted that they should receive damages for their great sufferings; and that satisfaction should be made them in money, to be paid by the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the High-Commissioners, and those Lords who had voted against them in the Star-Chamber; That they should be againe restored to their callings, and receive Master BURTON 6000*l.* and Master PRYNNE 5000*l.* Doctor BASTWICK, in a vote by himself, was given the like summe.

As these were comforted after their sufferings, so other Divines (for the beginning of this Parliament seemed a little Doomesday,) after a short pleasure, were brought to their torment. Proceedings against scandalous clergymen.

A Committee was made to enquire of scandalous Ministers; which appeared in two kindes (and were accordingly censured) either loose livers, and men of a debauched behaviour, (for many such were gotten into good preferments, and countenanced to affront the Puritans;) or else offendours in way of Superstition; of the former sort many were in a short time accused, by degrees censured, and turned-out of their livings: Of the latter sort there was no small number of offenders; nor in likelihood could that (which had beene the way to all high preferments) want walkers in it.

Among all the men of his ranke, Dr. COOSENS, Master of Saint *Peter's* Colledge in *Cambridge*, was most noted for superstitious and curious observations in many kindes; a man not noted for any great depth of learning, nor yet scandalous for ill-living, but onely forward to shew himselfe in formalities and outward Ceremonies concerning Religion, many of which were such as a Protestant State might not well suffer. Dr. Coosens.

This man was questioned upon many Articles; some by himselfe; some, where other Divines were joyned with him; imprisoned he was, and afterwards bailed; and, though deprived of some preferments, yet escaped without any great punishment, and was one of them, in that crowd of offendours, who might rejoyce that the Parliament had so much businesse.

But greater Clergymen than Doctor COOSENS were then to come upon the Stage; Bishop WRENNE, a man guilty of the same crime in Superstition, that COOSENS was, as farre as concerned his owne person, but farre more guilty as a Magistrate, and able to impose it upon others, was upon the 19th of *December* accused of Treason, and entred into a recognizance of 30,000*l.* to appeare, with three sureties engaged, each of them, in bonds of 10,000*l.* Dr. Wrenne, Bishop of Norwich.

This WRENNE, being Bishop of *Norwich*, a Diocese in which there were as many strict Professors of Religion (commonly called *Puritans*) as in any part of *England*, had there violently pressed superstitious Ceremonies, or such as they conceived so, upon them, put-downe accustomed Lectures, and deprived many Ministers much beloved and revered among them. By which rigour he grew, accidentally, guilty of a wonderful crime against the wealth and prosperity of the State.

For

For many Tradesmen (with whom those parts abounded) were so afflicted and troubled with his Ecclesiastical censures and vexations, that, in great numbers, to avoid misery, they departed the Kingdome; some into *New England*, and other parts of *America*; and others into *Holland*, whither they transported their Manufactures of Cloth; [which was] not onely a losse by diminishing the present stock of the Kingdome, but a great mischiefe by impairing and endangering the losse of that peculiar Trade of Clothing, which hath been a plentiful fountaine of Wealth and Honour to the Kingdome of *England*, as it was expressed in the Parliament-Remonstrance. But more particular crimes were laid against the Bishop, which there may be occasion to discourse of hereafter, in the proceedings against him.

Dr. William Laud, Archbishop of Canterbury, Dec. 18, 1640.

The day before Bishop WRENNE was accused, being the 18th of *December*, a greater man, both in Church and State, WILLIAM LAUD, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, was voted in the House of Commons guilty of High Treason; Master DENZILL HOLLIS, a Member of that House, was sent-up to the Lords, to appeach him there; upon which he was sequestred, and confined to the Black Rod. He was also charged by the Scottish Commissioners, together with the Earle of *Strafford*, as a chiefe Incendiary in the late Warre betweene both Nations; and divers Articles laid against him; which to examine and discusse further, a Committee was appointed.

He is impeached of High Treason, Feb. 23, 1640-1.

Upon the 23d of *February*, Master PYMME made report to the House of Commons, what hainous and capital crimes were objected against him: Upon which the House fell into a serious debate, and a Charge of High Treason in fourteene Articles was drawne-up against him; which Charge two daies after was sent from the House of Commons by Master PYMME up to the Lords.

The Archbishop was that day brought before the Lords, to heare that Charge read; and it was there voted, That he should immediately be sent to the Tower; but, upon his earnest suit, for some special reasons, he was two daies longer suffered to abide under the Black Rod, and then accordingly sent to the Tower; where we will leave him, till the course of this Narration bring him to further trial upon those Articles.

Civil offenders, as well as Ecclesiastical, must needs be many, in so long a corruption of Government; of whom one, as he was first in time, and soone left the Stage, besides his chiefe Crime concerning matters of Church and Religion, so he shall first be named.

Sir Francis Windebanke is accused of illegally discharging Popish priests from prison. November 12, 1640.

Sir FRANCIS WINDEBANKE, Principal Secretary of Estate, a great Favourite and friend to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and by his friendship, as was thought, advanced to that place of Honour, was, upon the 12th of *November*, questioned in an high kinde concerning Popish Priests; of whom, in that seven or eight yeares that he had been Secretary, he had bailed a great number, and released many by his power, contrary to the Lawes made, and then in force, against them; which being examined by a Committee, and certaine to prove foule against him, as it did afterward; (for upon examination there were proved against him 74 Letters of grace to Recusants, within foure yeares, signed with his owne hand; 64 Priests discharged from

from the Gate-House, 29 discharged by a verbal Warrant from him;) he thought it his best course, before trial. to fly the Land; so that, upon the fourth of *December*, newes was brought to the House, that Secretary WINDEBANKE, with Master **R**AD, his chiefe Clarke, was fled; and soone after, notice was given that he arrived in *France*, where he long continued.

He flies to France in December, 1640.

About that time came the great businesse of Ship-Money into debate in Parliament; and was voted by both Houses to be a most illegal Taxation, and unsufferable grievance; in reference to which case, almost all the Judges were made Delinquents, for their extrajudicial opinions in it, as more particularly will afterward appeare. As for other petty grievances, (such as were the multitude of Monopolies upon all things and Commodities of greatest and most familiar use;) the House daily condemned them; and the Delinquents of meaner note in that kinde who were examined and censured, were too many to be here named: Nay, so impartial was the House of Commons in that case, that many of their owne Members, who had been guilty of such Monopolies, were daily turned-out of the House for that offence

A Debate upon Ship-money, December, 1640.

But the businesse of Ship-money did reflect with a deeper staine of guilt upon the then Lord Keeper **F**INCH, than upon any of the other Judges whatsoever, for his great activity and labouring in it, by threats and promises working upon the other Judges, as we finde alledged against him.

Sir John Finch, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal.

SIR JOHN FINCH, in the yeare 1636, when that Taxation of Ship-money was first plotted and set on foot, was newly made Lord Chiefe-Justice of the Common Pleas, a man in favour with the King, and many of the greatest Lords in Court, having before been the Queenes Attorney; a Gentleman of good birth, of an high and Imperious spirit, eloquent in speech, though in the knowledge of the Law not very deepe.

Upon the death of the Lord Keeper **C**OVENTRY, about *December*, 1639, the King was pleased to conferre that high Trust of keeping the Great Seale upon him; which Office at this time he held.

Upon the seventh of *December*, when Ship-money was fully debated, and absolutely damned by the House of Commons, and the offence of the Judges began to be scanned, sixteene Gentlemen of that House were chosen to examine those Judges, that had given their extrajudicial opinions for it (for three gave their opinions otherwise: The arguments of two of them, Judge **C**ROOKE, and Judge **H**UTTON, were very famous; Baron **D**ENHAM, who was the third, by reason of sicknesse, could not declare his opinion in so large a manner;) in order to discover what threats, or promises, had been used to them, and by what persons.

Upon which examination, and further light given, the next day a Committee was named to draw-up Charges against the Judges, and against the Lord **F**INCH, then Lord Keeper, a Charge of High Treason. He, not many daies after, became an humble Suitor to the House of Commons, That before the Charge of High Treason were delivered against him, they would be pleased to heare him, *Ore Tenus*, in their owne House.

His suit was granted ; and the next day save one, in a long Oration, he endeavoured to cleare himselfe ; but all in vaine was that endeavour ; though his deportment were very humble and submissive, and his Speech full of perswasive Rhetorick, it could not prevaile to divert the Judgement, though many in the House were moved to a kinde of Compassion.

He flies to Holland on the 23d of December, 1640.

He, either secretly informed by friends, or himselfe perceiving by evident signes, how things were likely to go with him, conceived it best to use a timely prevention, and the next day, disguised, fled, and soon crossed the Seas into *Holland*.

After his flight, he was voted by the House of Commons guilty of High Treason for foure causes :

1. Disobeying the House, in refusal to speake at their command, when he was Speaker in Parliament, in the fourth yeare of King CHARLES.
2. For threatening some Judges in the matter of Ship-money.
3. For his illegal and cruel Judgements in the Forrest-businesse, when he was Lord Chiefe-Justice of the Common Pleas.
4. For drawing that injurious Declaration after dissolution of the last Parliament.

Upon which a Charge was drawne-up against him, and carried-up to the Lords upon the 14th of *January*, 1640-41, three weeks after his flight, by the Lord FAWKELAND ; who presented it with a pithy and sharpe Oration against the man.

These two last Delinquents (though men of eminent place in the Commonwealth) as they did not long trouble the Parliament, nor much retard the progresse of publike businesse, preventing their Trials by timely flight, so can they take-up no large roome in this Historical Narration.

 CHAP. VIII.

The Tryal and death of the Earle of Strafford. Conspiracies detected during the agitation of it. An Act for continuance of this present Parliament. With a mention of that Grant of the Triennial Parliament in February before.

BUT now a greater Actor is brought upon the Stage, THOMAS WENTWORTH, Earle of *Strafford*, Lieutenant of *Ireland*, a man too great to be let escape; no sooner accused but surprized, and secured for a Tryal.

Which Tryal of his, if we consider all things,—the high nature of the Charge against him; the pompous circumstances, and stately manner of the Trial itself; the time that it lasted; the pretiousnesse of that time so consumed; and, lastly, of what moment and consequence the successe of it must prove,—I may safely say, that no Subject in *England*, and probably in *Europe*, ever had the like.

So great it was, that we can hardly call it the Trial of the Earle of *Strafford* onely; the King's affections toward his People and Parliament, the future successe of this Parliament, and the hopes of three Kingdoms depending on it, were all tried, when *Strafford* was arraigned.

Many Subjects in *Europe* have played lowder parts upon the Theater of the world, but none left it with greater noise; nor was the matter of his accusation confined within one Realme; three whole Kingdoms were his Accusers, and eagerly sought, in one death, a recompence of all their sufferings; That we may say of his case, as CLAUDIAN says of RUFFINUS,

Offensis Ruffinum divide terris.

Within ten daies after the Parliament began, the Earle of *Strafford*, newly-returned from the North, was sitting in the House of Lords; when Master PYMME, The Earl of Strafford is impeached by the House of Commons an

an ancient Gentleman of great experience in Parliamentary affaires, and no lesse knowne fidelity to his Country, came-up to the Lords, and, in the name of all the Commons of *England*, accused THOMAS, Earle of *Strafford*, Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, of High Treason; and desired their Lordships that he might be sequestred from Parliament, and forthwith committed to Prison; as also to let them know, that the Commons, within very few daies, would resort to their Lordships with the particular Articles and grounds of this Accusation.

And is taken into custody on the 13th of November, 1640.

The Earle was required to withdraw; and after a debate thereof, called-in, was committed to safe custody to the Gentleman Usher; And immediately after, upon the 13th day of *November*, a Serjeant at Armes was sent into *Ireland* for Sir GEORGE RATLIFFE, a great Favourite of the Earles, and one that, under him, had beene very active in the oppression of *Ireland*; a man of subtle wit, and knowledge of the Law; as having before beene educated at the Innes of Court, and taken the degree of Barrister.

And sent to the Tower on the 8th of December, 1640.

Sir GEORGE accordingly, upon the fourth of *December*, came-in and yeelded himselfe to the Speaker; from whence he was committed to custody. And, foure daies after, the Lords of Parliament sent the Earle of *Strafford* to the Tower, with a strict command to the Lieutenant, that he should keepe a close guard upon him.

Much time was interposed betweene the several proceedings against this Earle of *Strafford*, by reason of the multiplicity of weighly businesse which the Parliament then had. But before the end of *January*, a long Charge was read against him in the House of Commons, and a Message, not long after, sent to the Lords, to desire that he might be sequestred from all his places of Dignity and Honour, in *England* and *Ireland*.

The charge against him, January 31, 1640-1.

The Charge against him consisted of nine Articles, which, afterwards upon a further impeachment, were extended to eight-and-twenty. All those Articles are to be seene at large in the Records: But, for further satisfaction of the Reader, I will give a briefe touch of the scope of them. The first and second being much alike, concerning his ruling of *Ireland*, and those parts of *England*, where his Authority lay, in an Arbitrary way, against the fundamental Lawes of the Kingdome, which Lawes he had endeavoured to subvert. Thirdly, his retaining part of the King's Revenue, without giving a legal account. Fourthly, The abusing of his Power, to the increase and encouragement of Papists. Fifthly, That he maliciously had endeavoured to stir-up Hostility betweene *England* and *Scotland*. Sixthly, That, being Lieutenant-General of the Northerne Army, he had wilfully suffered the Scots to defeat the English at *Newburne*, and take *Newcastle*; that by such a losse and dishonour, *England* might be engaged in a National and irreconcilable quarrel with the Scots. Seventhly, That to preserve himselfe from questioning, he had laboured to subvert Parliaments, and incense the King against them. Eighthly, and lastly, That these things were done during the time of his Authority as Deputy of *Ireland*, and Lieutenant-General of the Northerne Armies in *England*.

The

The Commons, saving to themselves a liberty of further impeachment against the said Earle, &c. do require his legal answer to all.

The further impeachment, consisting of 28 Articles, was, for the most part, branched out of these, and insisted-upon in more particulars, concerning his Tyranny, in *Ireland*, over divers persons, contrary to Law. Concerning which the Reader must be referred to the Records themselves, as being too large to be here inserted.

The Earle of *Strafford*, upon the 23d of *February*, was brought before the Lords, to give-in his answer; which he accordingly did; the King himselfe being there present to heare it read. The Earle gives-in his answer February 23, 1640-1.

It was very large; and, when it was done, he was sent-back to the Tower, there to remaine till further Order.

A Committee being appointed to consider of that businesse, upon the fourth of *March* following made report in the House, That they would manage and maintaine their Accusation of Treason against him; and thought it not fit to reply to his Answer, but call him to speedy trial.

Immediately upon which, a Conference was had with the Lords concerning that Trial, and some Circumstances which were thought fit to be used at it.

The Commissioners of *Scotland* had likewise a Charge against the Earle of *Strafford*; concerning those injuries, which, as they conceived, their Nation and Kingdome had suffered from him. But the substance of that Charge was implied in those Articles before-specified; which the Parliament of *England* had exhibited against him.

Upon the 22d of *March*, 1640. [1640—1.] that remarkable Tryal of the Earle of STRAFFORD began. His trial begins. March 22, 1640-1.

Westminster-Hall was the place chosen, where Scaffolds were raised on both sides, nine degrees in height; whereof seven were appointed for the Members of the House of Commons to sit-on, who were all there in a Committee: The two upper degrees of the Scaffold, were appointed for the Commissioners of *Scotland*, and the Lords of *Ireland*, who were then come-over.

In the midst, on a lower ascent, sate the Peeres of *England*, the Earle of *Arundel* being Lord High Steward, and the Earle of *Lindsey* Lord High Constable. The Throne was placed for the King: But the King, coming thither (which he did every day of the Tryal) sate private with the Queene and other Ladies, in a close Gallery, made of purpose to heare the proceedings, and tooke notes of them himselfe, in writing.

The Earle of *Strafford* answered daily at the Barre, whilst the whole House of Commons, having put themselves into a Committee, had liberty to charge him, every man as he saw occasion: But, though many of them did sometimes speake, yet the accusations were chiefly managed by two expert Lawyers, Master GLYNNE, and Master MAYNARD, both Members of the House.

Many foule misdemeanours, committed both in *Ireland* and *England*, were daily proved against him: But that ward which the Earle, being an eloquent man, His principal ground especially of Defence.

especially lay-at, was to keepe-off the blow of High Treason, whatsoever misdemeanours should be layed upon him; of which, some he denied, others he excused, and extenuated with great subtilty; contending to make one thing good, "That misdemeanours, though never so many and so great, could not, by being put-together, make one Treason, unlesse some one of them had been Treason in its owne nature."

Every day the first weeke, from Munday to Saturday, without intermission, the Earle was brought from the Tower to *Westminster-Hall*, and arraigned many houres together; and the successe of every daies tryal, was the greatest discourse, or dispute, in all companies.

For by this time the people began to be a little divided in opinions; The Clergy in general were so much fallen into love and admiration of this Earle, that the Archbishop of *Canterbury* was almost quite forgotten by them.

The Courtiers cryed him up, and the Ladies, (whose voices will carry much with some parts of the State,) were exceedingly on his side.

It seemed a very pleasant object, to see so many Sempronias (all the chiefe Court-Ladies filling the Galleries at the Tryal) with penne, inke, and paper in their hands, noting the passages, and discoursing upon the grounds of Law and State. They were all of his side; whether moved by pity, proper to their Sex, or by ambition of being thought able to judge of the parts of the Prisoner.

But so great was the favour, and love, which they openly expressed to him, that some could not but thinke of that Verse:

*Non formosus erat, sed erat facundus Ulysses,
Et tamen æquoreas torsit amore Deas.*

Ulysses, though not beautiful, the love
Of Goddesses by eloquence could move.

But his Trial in this manner lasted, with few daies intermission, from the 22d of *March*, till the midst of *April* following, the Earle having personally answered fifteene daies.

The House of Commons abandon their prosecution by Impeachment, and proceed against the Earle by Bill of Attainder, April 21, 1641.

After all this long Trial, the House of Commons fell into debate about a Bill of Attainder against the Earle of *Strafford*; and voted him guilty of high Treason in divers particulars of that Accusation, in which they had proceeded against him; and in more particular he was voted guilty of High Treason, for his opinion given before the King, at a secret Council, which was discovered by some notes of Sir HENRY VANE, who was also a Privy-Counciller, and present at that time; in which notes it was found that the Earle of *Strafford* had said to the King, *That he had an Army in Ireland, which his Majesty might employ to reduce this Kingdome to obedience.*

These notes Sir HENRY VANE, eldest Sonne to the before-named Sir HENRY, had found (as he alledged to the House) in his Father's Cabinet, and produced before the House without his Father's knowledge; who seemed extreme angry with his Sonne for it.

This

This is related the more at large, because it was the first occasion (that was open and visible) whereby so eminent a Member, as the Lord GEORGE DIGBY, was lost from the House of Commons, as will afterward appeare: For that Vote was opposed by the Lord DIGBY and some others.

This Bill is opposed by Lord Digby, and several other members of the House of Commons; in all, fifty-nine members.

Nevertheless a Committee was appointed to draw-up the Bill of Attainder, which was accordingly done, and read in the House of Commons, on the 21st day of *April*, when the Earle was againe voted guilty of High Treason; which was carried by farre the greater part; for on the other side, were but nine and fifty, of whom the Lord DIGBY was one; who made to that purpose a very elegant, though much displeasing, Speech in the House; Of which more hereafter.

That Bill of Attainder was sent-up to the Lords; where, after the reading of it, a great division was in that House, and many of the Lords much opposed it.

But Master St. JOHN, the King's Solicitour, and a Member of the House of Commons, was appointed within few daies after, to make good the Bill by Law, and give the Lords satisfaction, which was accordingly done upon the 29th of *April*, in *Westminster-Hall*; where the Earle of *Strafford* was present at the Barre, and the King and Queene seated in their usual places.

Master St. JOHN opened the Branches of the Bill, and in a Discourse of two houres made it good by preecedent Statutes, and the like, to the satisfaction of almost all that heard him

It is passed by the House of Lords.

But the King was not satisfied in conscience, (as he declared to both Houses, two daies after,) to condemne him of High Treason; and told them, No feares, or respects whatsoever, should make him alter that resolution, founded upon his conscience: But confessed, that his misdemeanors were so great, that he held him unfit to serve him in any office whatsoever; with other expressions of that kinde.

The King refuses to consent to it.

The King's Speech was somewhat displeasing to the Houses; but the City were out of patience, and within foure daies after, came to *Westminster*, about five thousand of them, crying for Justice against the Earle of *Strafford*; and following the Lords, complaining that they were undone, and trading decayed, for want of due execution of Justice.

The Lords gave them good words, and promised them to acquaint the King with it. But the next day they appeared againe with the same complaint. Their feares being more aggravated, by reason of reports, that attempts were made to get the Earle out of Prison; upon which occasion some Lords were sent to keepe the Tower, and assist the Lieutenant there.

But the King was hard to be removed from his resolution, although the Judges in the meane time had delivered their opinions in the House of Lords, concerning the Earle of *Strafford*; and the Lords had voted him guilty of High Treason upon the fifteenth Article, for levying of money in *Ireland* by force of Armes; and upon the nineteenth, for imposing an Oath upon the Subjects in *Ireland*, That they should not protest against any of the King's Commands.

The King at last, wearied with these complaints, called a Privy-Council at *White-Hall*, where he spent a great part of the day, calling also the Judges to deliver their opinions before him, concerning the Earle of *Strafford*; and sent for

But afterwards consents to it.

foure

four Bishops, to resolve him upon scruple of conscience. After which he granted a Commission to the Earle of *Arundel*, the Lord Privy-Seale, and the two Lord-Chamberlaines, to signe that bill for the execution of the Earle of *Strafford*, three daies after, being Wednesday, the 12th of *May*, 1641; which was accordingly done upon the Scaffold on Tower-Hill.

The Earle is be-headed on the 12th of May, 1641.

This was the unfortunate end of that Earle of *Strafford*, whose character and actions have been in some manner before described.

Of whom we may truly say, That, as his life and Counsels had been of great moment and concernment in the State before, so did his death and Tryal, by unhappy accidents, prove to be.

The divisions and disturbances which his life could make, were not greater than those that his death occasioned.

APPIANUS observes of SYLIA the Dictator, That, as his living power had rob'd the Roman Senate of their freedome; so did his very Funeral: Where so many of his old Souldiers and Hacsters followed the solemnity, that the Senators who were present, durst not with freedome expresse their thoughts of him; but were inforced to flatter him dead, as well as living.

How farre the Earle of *Strafford* did, in his life-time, divide the King's affections from his People and Parliaments (which was part of the Charge against him) I cannot surely tell; But certaine it is, That his Tryal and death (which has made me insist the longer upon it) did make such a division in that kinde, as, being unhappily nourished by degrees afterward, has almost ruined the three Kingdomes*.

The length of his Tryal, whilst two Armies at an heavy expence were to be paid, and other businesse at a great stand, did divide some impatient people (at least in some degree) from the Parliament; The manner of his condemnation divided the Parliament in itselfe; and the eager pressing of his death did discover, or cause, a sad division of the King from his Parliament.

Nine and fifty Members of the House of Commons dissented in Vote from the rest, upon the Bill of Attainder: upon which some indiscreet persons (for so I must needs esteeme them, though it was never knowne who they were, or by whose notice it was done) the next day set-up a paper upon the Exchange, with the names of those nine and fifty, and a Title over it, *The names of those men, who, to save a Traytor, would betray their Country.*

They that were thus posted-up, supposing it to be done, or caused, by some of their House, were much provoked at it, many of them growing by degrees disaffected to the Parliament, (not all, for there were among those dissenting Gentlemen very wise and learned men) and, upon that unhappy distraction that fell-out about a yeere after, forsooke the Parliament.

Upon the same Bill of Attainder, the Lord DIGBY made his foresaid Speech, which, by a Command from the House (for he had printed it) was to be burnt by the Hangman; which was the visible cause of his deserting the Parliament, and proving so great an Actor against it as shall hereafter be declared.

* This was written in the year 1647.

But his Execution gives rise to great divisions in Parliament.

The worst consequence of all was, that the King's heart did upon this occasion appear to be quite alienated from the Parliament.

For, to prevent the Earle of *Strafford's* death, an escape for him out of the Tower was contrived. To further which, and to curbe the Parliament in other things by force of Armes, a great conspiracy was entred-into by many Gentlemen of rank and quality, The designe of this conspiracy had many Branches, as shall appear in the Narration.

A Conspiracy had been formed against the Parliament, in order to save the Earle of *Strafford's* life.

The persons of chiefest note in it, were Master HENRY PERCY, brother to the Earle of *Northumberland*; Master HENRY JERMIN, the great Favourite of the Queene, to whom he was Master of the Horse; Master GORING, eldest Sonne to the Lord GORING; Master WILMOT, eldest Sonne to the Lord WILMOT; Colonel ASHBURNHAM; Captaine POLLARD; Sir JOHN SUCKLING; ONEALE, an Irish man and a Papist; with divers others of a more inferiour ranke, such as were privy but to some part of the designe: For it seemes their Counsels were divided, and they were not all guilty of the same things; as by their several examinations upon Oath appeared.

But that which grieved the hearts of honest men, and made them almost despaire of that happinesse which was before hoped-for by this Parliament, was, That they discovered the King himself to be privy to this conspiracy against them; which was plainly testified by Colonel *Goring's* examination; as likewise by a Letter written by Master PERCY to his Brother the Earle of *Northumberland*; where he names the King's discourses with him, and the desire which the King had to joyne such as he thought fit with them.

The King himself was privy to this conspiracy.

The Conspirators had taken an Oath of secrecy among themselves.

The Report made in Parliament from Committees after the Examination of several Gentlemen, concerning this conspiracy, discovered many branches of their designe.

One was concerning the Tower of *London*, That Souldiers should have been put into it. For Sir JOHN SUCKLING, and some others of the Conspirators, under pretence of raising Forces for the *Portugal*, had gathered men in *London*, who were to possesse themselves of the Tower.

The Lieutenant, Sir WILLIAM BALFORE, was commanded by the King himself to admit those Souldiers into the Tower. But he, perceiving that it was a Plot to let the Earle of *Strafford* escape, disobeyed that Command of the King's; as appeared by his Examination.

In which is likewise specified, that the Earle offered 2000*l.* in Marriage with his daughter to the Lieutenant's Sonne, if he would consent to the Earles escape.

Another branch, and that the chiefe of this designe, was to bring-up the English Army, which was in the North, as yet undisbanded, and to engage it against the Parliament, to awe the Houses in divers things concerning the King's Prerogative, and maintaining Episcopacy, as Master PERCY signified in the fore-mentioned Letter.

To joyne with these Forces, and strengthen the Plot, a French Army was to be landed at *Portsmouth*, and that Towne, for the same purpose, was to be put into Master JERMIN's hands.

The Irish Army, consisting of eight thousand, almost all Papists, when the Earle of *Strafford* had escaped out of the Tower, was to be brought-over under his conduct, and engaged in the same Service.

All these things were confessed upon several Examinations.

The Parliament were most grieved to finde the King so farre in it; and then recalled to minde, how His Majesty, on the 28th of *April* before, had told the Houses, That he could not allow of the disbanding of the Irish Army, for divers reasons best knowne to himselfe.

The Conspiracy being in some part detected, PERCY, JERMYN, and SUCKLING, fled the day before they should have been examined, being the sixth of *May*, and passed into *France*, where SUCKLING not long after dyed.

But afterwards, upon the reading of a Letter in the House upon the 14th of *June*, sent by Master PERCY out of *France* to his Brother the Earle of *Northumberland*, WILMOT, ASHBURNHAM, and POLLARD, (three Members of the House of Commons, mentioned in that Letter, as privy to this Conspiracy) were commanded to withdraw, and then called-in severally, examined, and committed, WILMOT to the Tower, ASHBURNHAM to the King's Bench, and POLLARD to the *Gate-House*; from whence they were not long after released upon Baile, as being found guilty not in so high a degree as others were.

GORING, upon his Examination, dealt so cleerly with them, and so farre purged himselfe from evil intentions, that he was not at all committed by the Parliament.

ONEALE, who proved most guilty of that part of the Conspiracy, for bringing-up the English Army against the Parliament, was presently after apprehended, and committed to the Tower; whence it was generally thought he would be brought to Tryal for his life, and suffer: but he made an escape.

The Parliament, considering what great disturbance they began to finde in settling the State, what conspiracies had been on foot; and doubtful of the King's sincere affection towards them; considering also what great disbursements of money were to be made for payment of two Armies, and other charges for settling the State, to which purpose money was to be borrowed upon the Publike faith; by a joint consent of both Houses, moved the King to signe a Bill for continuance of this present Parliament, That it should never be dissolved till both Houses did consent, and agree that publike grievances were fully redrest.

A Bill was drawne-up to that purpose, and the King, the same day that he signed the Bill for execution of the Earl of *Strafford*, being the 10th of *May*, 1641, signed that also for continuance of the present Parliament.

But in this place it is fit to insert what had past before in this kinde.

The King upon the 15th of *February* before, had signed a Bill, presented to him

The King passes a bill for the continuance of the present Parliament, May 10, 1640

He had before passed a bill, for Triennial Parliaments, on the 15th of February, 1640-41.

him by both Houses, for a Parliament to be held in *England* every third yeare; That the Lord Keeper, and the Chancellor of the Dutchy, for the time being, should be sworne to issue-forth the Writs, and, upon default, to lose their places.

The same day in the afternoone there was a Conference betweene the two Houses, to returne the King thanks; upon which it was concluded that the whole House should go to the King to *White-Hall*, and that the Lord Keeper, in the name of both Houses, should returne their thankfulness to his Majesty; which was accordingly done.

Expressions of joy, by Order from the Parliament, were that night made about *London*, with ringing of Bells, making of Bonfires, with such usual things.

It is observable in the course of Histories, how much Kings, in such limited Monarchies as that of *England*, do, in time, by degrees, gaine upon the peoples Rights and Priviledges: So that those things, which, by the constitution of the Government, the people may challenge as due from the Prince, having been long forborne, become at last to be esteemed such Acts of extraordinary grace, as that the Prince is highly thanked for granting of them.

N. B.

Such was the case of this Triennial Parliament, as both Houses afterward, when the unhappy division began, and the King upbraided them with this favour, could plainly answer, "That it was not so much as by Law they might require, there being two Statutes then in force, for a Parliament once a yeere."

The King himselfe also, at the time when he granted that Triennial Parliament, could not forbear to tell them, That he put an obligation upon them in doing it, which they had scarce deserved.

For hitherto (said he) to speak freely, I have had no great encouragement to grant it; if I should looke to the outward face of your actions or proceedings, and not to the inward intentions of your hearts, I might make question of doing it

But that Grant which the King since passed, upon the tenth of *May*, for continuance of the present Parliament, not onely afterward by himselfe was much upbraided to them, but by many Gentlemen, who were not well affected to their Parliament, and by all the Faction of Prelatical Clergy, in their ordinary discourse, was censured as a greater grace than it was fit for the King to grant.

Reflection on the Act for the continuance of the Parliament.

To such men, their discourses and writings, afterward, when the great distraction happened, and the Warre was breaking-out, the Parliament, in many of their Declarations, answered:

That, though there were in it some seeming restraint of the Regal Power in dissolving Parliaments; yet really it was no taking that Power from the Crowne, but suspending the execution of it for this time and occasion only. Which was so necessary for the Publike Peace, that without it they could not have undertaken any of those great Charges; but must have left both the Armies to disorder and confusion, and the whole Kingdome to blood and ruine.

N. B.

For to pay the Armies, and defray other necessary charges, money was to be borrowed

borrowed upon the Publike Faith; which had been nothing worth, if that Parliament could have been dissolved at the King's pleasure.

And where it was objected, That no King ever granted the like before; they answered, It was evident, that no King before ever made so great a necessity for a Parliament to require it. And besides that, in the constitution of *Englands* Government, it was never the meaning of the Law-givers, that the King should dissolve any Parliament, whilst the great Affaires of the Kingdome were depending; and though the King had used to do so, it was neverthelesse unlawful.

The Scots in their Remonstrance 1640, told the King, That he had broken their Lawes in dissolving the Parliament there, against the consent of their House.

And it is very well understood by those that are skilful in Lawes of both Nations, that English Parliaments have originally the same freedome.

It was neverthelesse probably then thought by all, that the King would not have assented to that Act, if at that time the freshnesse of those fore-mentioned grievances in the peoples hearts, and the present discovery of that odious Treason, of bringing an Army against the Parliament, had not made it unsafe for him to deny it.

That opinion was more confirmed by the following Actions, since time, and the unconstancy of some Lords and Gentlemen, had raised him a Party. When that knot, which by Law he could not againe untie, he endeavoured to cut asunder by the Sword; as was afterwards observed in the Parliament's Declarations.

CHAP. IX.

Allowance of money from the English Parliament to the Scots. The vast Charge of disbanding the two Armies. The great Taxations for that purpose, and the manner of Poll-money. The people take a Protestation. An Act for putting-downe the High-Commission Court, and the Starre-Chamber; with other occurrences of that time. The Queene-Mother of France departeth from England. The King goeth into Scotland.

THE Parliament, conceiving themselves somewhat strengthened and secured by that Act of continuance, began to fall upon the maine businesse of the Kingdome; but their first desire was to ease themselves, of that unsupportable charge of keeping two Armies in pay. It was therefore resolved, that both the Armies should forthwith be disbanded. The Parliament resolves that the English and Scottish armies in the North of England shall be disbanded.

The Earle of *Holland* was nominated by the King, and well-approved of by the Parliament, to go-down as General, for disbanding of the English. And for the speedy disbursement of so great a summe, which was to be raised out of the Poll-Money (of which I shall speake anon) and the six Subsidies, much Plate was appointed, with more than ordinary haste, to be melted and coyned.

The Reader will here, perchance, desire to be satisfied, by what meanes the Scottish Army, which the King, in the beginning of the Parliament, was so desirous to have driven-out of the Kingdome, and styled Rebels, should continue undisbanded till this time.

The Cessation of Armes, which was made before to expire about the end of *December* last, was at that time renewed by the Parliament for a Moneth longer; who presently after tooke it into consideration, that the Scots should be satisfied for all their charges they had been at, and losses sustained, since that unhappy Warre that the King had raised against them.

In the *February* following, after a serious debate concerning that businesse, the necessities

necessities of the Scots being well-weighed, and their demands considered, it was not onely agreed that their Ships, taken since that Warre, should be restored, and 4000 *l.* in ready money given to them to rigge those Ships; but for the maine of all, it was resolved-upon by both Houses, to give the full summe of 300,000 *l.* in these words expressed, *Towards a supply of the losses and necessities of our Brethren of Scotland*; and that the Parliament would in due time take into consideration the manner of raising it, and the daies of payment.

Whereupon the Scottish Commissioners, three daies after, returned thankfulnesse to the Parliament, not onely for that great summe of 300,000 *l.* but for the style of *Brethren* which they had given them.

And the same weeke, to continue and further strengthen the amity of both Nations, the Parliament of *England* Ordained that all Books, Libels, and Proclamations against the Scots, should be called-in; and a thanksgiving to God should be in all Churches thorow *England*, for the happy conclusion of that peace.

But before the time came that the Parliament, pressed with so many great and weighty Affaires, could have leisure to consider and fully determine the times for payment of that great summe to the Scots (which was not till the 19th day of the following *June*, when it was concluded, that they should receive 100,000 *l.* of it at Midsummer come twelve Moneths, and the other 200,000 *l.* at Midsummer two yeares after) the Scots presented many Papers to the House at several times, for money to supply the wants of their Army; which were friendly entertained and considered by the Parliament. For that Army was kept long undisbanded; insomuch as about the end of the following *May*, there was in Arreare due to the Scottish Army (besides the gift of 300,000 *l.*) 120,000 *l.*

So great a charge was the Parliament of *England* content to be at, rather than suffer the Scots to go, till businesses were better settled; which gave occasion to many of the Clergy, and others not well-affected to the Parliament, not onely in discourse, but also in written Libels, to taxe the Parliament, and impute it to them as a crime, of too much distrust of the King; and that they kept a forraigne Army to awe their owne Prince.

But certaine it is, that since that time, when the forenamed Conspiracies began to breake-out, the Houses, not well assured of the King, nor fully trusting the English Army, were content that the Scots should not be disbanded, until the others were; being also doubtful of that Irish Army, which the King (as is before expressed,) had told them he could not disband, for some reasons best knowne to himselfe.

The Scottish army and the English army are both disbanded at the same time in August, 1641.

Nor was that Army of Scots disbanded till *August*, at the same time when the English Army was, by the Earle of *Holland*, appointed General to that purpose. And both the Armies quietly departed, conducted to their owne homes by Order from Justices of Peace, through the several Counties.

A Poll-tax laid for this purpose.

To defray so vast a charge as the payment of two great Armies, the Parliament, besides the grant of six Subsidies, imposed a Taxe seildome or never knowne, which was that of the Poll-Money, wherein the whole Kingdome were to be personally assessed. Every Duke at 100 *l.* a Marquesse at 80 *l.* Earles at 60 *l.* Viscounts and

Barons

Barons at 40 *l.* Knights of the Bathe 30 *l.* other Knights 20 *l.* Esquires 10 *l.* every Gentleman dispending 100 *l.* *per annum*, was seized [or assessed] at 5 *l.* and all others of ability, to pay a competent proportion; the meanest head of the whole Kingdome was not excused under six-pence.

This Bill of Poll-Money was offered by the Houses to the King, together with two others of great concernment, one for putting-downe the High Commission Court, and the other for putting-downe the Starre-Chamber.

But the King shewed some reluctancy in that businesse, desiring to passe only that Bill of Poll-Money for the present, and to deliberate about passing of the other two. At which the House of Commons, being certified so much by the Lords, were not well contented, and voted, that his Majesty should passe all three, or none at all.

Notwithstanding, the King, upon the second of *July*, did, accordingly, passe the Poll-Money, and demurred upon the other two. But, understanding that the matter was so ill taken, and being loath, upon mature deliberation, to displease the Kingdome at that time, he came againe upon the following Tuesday, being the fifth of *July*, and passed the other two, for putting-downe the High-Commission Court and the Starre-Chamber.

The Court of High Commission, and the Court of Star-Chamber, are abolished, July 5, 1641.

Many of the Courtiers, and neerest servants about the King, were very sorry that his Majesty, seeing that he passed those two Bills so soone after, had not freely done it at the same time (as was desired) together with the Poll-Money: Because it might be thought an unwillingnesse in him, and that his heart (which was then feared) did not perfectly concurre with his People's desires: Whereby much of the thanks, which so great a grace, freely and forwardly expressed, might have deserved, did seeme in a manner lost.

The King, therefore, at the passing of those two Bills, told them as much, That *He could not but be sensible of those reports of discontent, which he had heard was taken by some, for his not passing them before; and thought it very strange, that two things of so great importance should be expected from him, without an allowance of time to consider of them: That he wondred they could harbour any discontent, if they remembred how wuch he had done this Parliament, as his granting that the Judges hereafter should hold their places quam diu se benè gesserint; bounding the Forrest-Lawes; taking-away Ship-money; establishing the Subjects property in Tonnage and Poundage; granting the Triennial Parliament; free Justice against Delinquents. With other things; Concluding graciously, That He would omit nothing which might give them just content.*

And, when he had signed the forenamed Bills, after a short mention of the journey which he intended speedily to take into *Scotland*; he propounded to them a thing very acceptable, concerning his Nephew, the Prince Elector Palatine, that he could not but (at the desire of that Prince) send an Ambassadour to assist him at the Dyet at *Ratsbone* with the Emperour: and, fearing that he should not receive so good an Answer as might in justice be expected, he (for the better countenancing that businesse,) intended to publish a *Manifesto* in his owne name; but

The King publishes a Manifesto, to the Emperour of Germany, in favour of his nephew, the Prince Elector Palatine, in July 1641.

but would not do it but by consent and advice of Parliament; without which he conceived it would be a thing of no validity.

Which Manifesto was afterwards made by the full consent of both Houses, and Sir THOMAS ROE, a Member of the House, and a Gentleman of great abilities, was sent to the Emperour at *Ratisbone* about it; but without any good successe.

The Queene-Mother of France withdraws from England, in July, 1641.

At the same time the Queene-Mother of *France*, as was before desired by the Parliament, was to take her leave of *England*. The King consented to her departure; but, Money being wanting for the Provision of her Journey, the Parliament allotted ten thousand pounds to her, out of the Poll-Money. This great Lady had arrived in *England* almost three years before, and so long been entertained by the King, her Sonne in Law, with great respect, and an allowance answerable to support her State, 100 *l. per diem*.

Other Character and conduct.

It was her misfortune, (how farre her crime, I cannot tell) that, during her abode here, the two Kingdomes of *England* and *Scotland* were embroyled in great troubles; which the People were apt to impute in some measure to her counsels, knowing what power the Queene, her Daughter, had with the King.

Others taxed her not at all, but looked-upon other causes, the same counsels, which, long before her arrival, had distempered *England*; but the people made their judgement upon it, from her actions, or successes, in other places.

But, however it were, the Queene was feareful of the people here, and had, not long before, desired to have a guard allowed her, pretending feare of her life, by reason of some attempts, which she conceived to have been made against her; upon which a Guard was set about her house.

Her Regency in *France* had not beene happy, nor according to the interest of that Kingdome; though that, perchance, may be accounted a fault, not so particular to her as commonly incident to the Regency of Queene-Mothers in that Land: In so much as THUANUS commends the saying of CHARLES the Ninth (a Prince whom otherwise he doth not praise) upon his death-bed, *That, since he must dye at that age, (being foure and twenty) he thanked God he had no Sonne, least France should fall under a Regency, of which he had found the sad effects.* His Mother was KATHARINE DE MEDICIS, of the same Family with this Queene.

After the time of her Regency, her actions had been such, that the King her Sonne would not harbour her in his owne Kingdome; nor was she welcome into the Territories of her Sonne in Law, the King of *Spaine*. But the people there were no lesse desirous of her departure than afterward in *England*.

Insomuch as she became a strange example of the instability of humane fortunes, that so great a Queen, and Mother to so many mighty Princes, should want a quiet Harbour for her age.

And soon after dies at Cullein, or Cologn, in Germany.

Not long after her departure from *England*, she died at *Culleine*, and might seeme a parallel, in some things, to the famous Empresse of Rome who founded that City, and there planted a Roman Colony, AGRIPPINA, the wife of CLAUDIUS CESAR, and the Mother of NERO. They both had tasted of power, been active in it, but not pleasing to the people. They were both taught, that the greatnesse of their Sonnes, was

was not so much advantage to their Power, as they had hoped ; and had learned, that all power dependent upon another, is of small validity, and lesse stability ; as TACITUS observes, speaking of the same AGRIPPINA, *Nihil rerum mortalium tam instabile & fluxum est, quam fama potentiae non sua vi nixa.*

About two Moneths before the departure of this Queene, the Princesse MARY, The Princess Mary, eldest daughter of the King, is married to the Prince of Orange, May 2, 1641. eldest daughter to the King, not yet ten yeares of age, was married with great triumph at *White-Hall*, to the young Prince of *Orange*, WILLIAM ; Bishop WRENNE, being then Deane of the King's Chappel, performed the solemnity, on Sunday the second of *May*, 1641.

The Marriage had been before debated-of in Parliament, and consented-to ; The King himselfe, upon the ninth of *February*, having declared to the Lords what large Propositions the Ambassadors of the States had made to him upon that purpose.

The people in general were pleased with this Marriage, and glad the King had chosen-out for his Son-in-Law a Protestant Prince, and one who was also a servant to a State which had been long confederate with *England*, and whose Interest carried them the same way, they being Professors of the same Religion, and in that kinde of Discipline, to which the greatest part of the Parliament and the People of *England* were inclined, and to which they hoped though that hope was not at that time so fully declared as it was afterward) to reforme the Church of *England*, as that of *Scotland* had been reformed to it already. By this Match of the King's owne chusing, they began to hope that the Spanish Faction in Court was not now at all prevalent, but that things might hereafter be carried on according to the right English way.

In this hope they were the more confirmed, seeing the Parliament go-on without any opposition from the King ; no dissension having yet happened, nor being likely to happen, as they conceived : for that Conspiracy, of bringing-up the Army against the Parliament, which we touched before, was not yet discovered, nor at all thought-of ; though, within few daies after, it broke-out.

But some there were, who suspended their joy, and were not much confident that this Marriage would bring happinesse to *England*, unlesse the King were perfectly right with his People, and wished the same thing as they did ; considering on the one side the condition of the Prince of *Orange*, and that he might be ambitious of more power than was due to him ; and, for that reason, might engage himselfe in a reciprocal way for the King against his People, if occasion served.

On the other side, they considered the States as Politicians of this world, and men who had other interests in view than that of Religion ; and, if dissension should in *England* happen between Prince and People, (which was never but feared in some degree) might be apt to side with the King against the just freedome of the Subject ; which must needs deprime the strength of *England*, and keepe it from so much greatnesse as might eclipse their owne ; the King of *Spain* being now weake, and they having no such feare of him as might enforce them to need *England's* strength, as heretofore.

But the Parliament, about the beginning of this *July*, were busied in such a multiplicity of Affaires, (which, by several Committees, they daily transacted,) concerning

cerning the reformation of domestical abuses, that it were an endlesse, and indeed an improper, thing for an Historian to describe them all. The Records of Parliament will at large satisfie those that are curious in particulars; onely some of the chief I will briefly touch, which happened before the King went into *Scotland*.

Proceedings in the House of Commons against Dr. Matthew Wrenne, Bishop of Ely, in July, 1641.

Upon the fifth of *July*, 1641, the Committee, appointed for that purpose, made their report to the House of Commons, of the charge against MATTHEW WRENNE, Bishop of *Ely*, (whose accusation was before mentioned,) consisting of many Articles; which all tended to the introducing of Superstition, and too neare approaches to the Roman Religion, as those Articles will declare.

After some time spent in debate upon the Articles, it was resolved upon the question, and voted, That it was the opinion of the House, That Bishop WRENNE, was unworthy and unfit to hold, or exercise, any Office, or Dignity, in Church, or Commonwealth; And further voted, That there be a Message sent to the Lords, to desire them to joyne with the Commons, in petitioning His Majesty to remove the said Bishop both from his Person and Service.

Charges brought against several Judges for their conduct relating to Ship-money.

About the same time also, the Charges against those Judges before-mentioned, who gave their extrajudicial opinions for levying of Ship-money, being five in number, (Judge BRAMSTON, Baron TREVER, Baron WESTON, Baron DAVENPORT, and Judge CRAWLEY,) were read in the House of Commons, and several Members appointed to present those particular Charges against every Judge; which they all did, making large Speeches in aggravation of their Crimes: Against Judge BERKLEY there was a higher Charge, so great as amounted to High Treason.

The King was now wholly intent upon his journey into *Scotland*, which he determined to take upon the tenth of *August*, to which both Houses had once agreed; but afterwards, upon mature consideration, desired the King to deferre it fourteene daies longer for divers reasons.

That the distempers of the Kingdome were such, as could not well be composed, unlesse His Majesty would stay the desired time, there being many weighty affaires to be taken into consideration, and no course yet set-downe for the Government of the Kingdome in his absence

The King, notwithstanding their often and earnest pressing this suit, was steadfast to the first day, alledging that the affaires of *Scotland* did necessarily require his presence there at that time, and that he would passe any thing of just concerne before he went, and that he had to the same purpose many times desired them to hasten their businesse for him before such a time.

The King goes to Scotland, August 10, 1641.

The King accordingly, upon the tenth of *August*, departed out of *London* toward *Scotland*; but the same day, before he tooke his journey, coming to the Lords House, he passed divers Bills which the Houses had prepared for him; some concerning the publike, (as the Bill for Knighthood, the Bill for free making of Gunpowder and Saltpeter;) and others concerning the Estates and affaires of private men.

He likewise signed the Commission for passing of Bills in his absence; the Commissioners appointed were, the Lord Keeper, the Lord Privy-Seal, the Earle of

of *Lindsey*, the Earle of *Essex*, Marquesse *Hartford*, the Earle of *Bath*, and the Earle of *Dorset*.

He signed them also another Bill, whereby he made the Earle of *Essex* General of all his Forces on this side Trent, by which he had power to raise Forces in case of necessity.

But to another request, which both Houses had made to him the day before, which was, That the Earle of *Pembrooke* might be made Lord-Steward, in the Earle of *Arundel's* place, during his absence, (for the Earle of *Arundel* was then going-over with the Queene-Mother) and that the Earle of *Salisbury* might be appointed Lord-Treasurer; he said he would take further time to consider of it.

By this time many jealousies began to arise in the hearts of the people, many divisions, and differences of opinions concerning the Parliament; which, (being by degrees fomented by such persons as were disaffected to it, by reason of their owne losses, and particular interests; whose number could not be small;) did fatally prepare the way to that miserable confusion which after followed.

The Parliament begins to be less popular than it had been at first. In August, 1641.

Bishops had been much lifted-at, though not yet taken-away; whereby a great party, whose livelihood and fortune depended on them, and farre more, whose hopes of preferment looked that way; most of the Clergy, and both the Universities, began to be daily more dis-affected to the Parliament; complaining that all rewards of learning would be taken-away; which wrought deeply in the hearts of the young, and most ambitious, of that Coat.

The causes of this change.

Another thing which seemed to trouble some who were not bad men, was that extreame License, which the Common People, almost from the very beginning of the Parliament, tooke to themselves, of reforming, without Authority, Order, or decency; rudely disturbing Church-Service, whilst the Common-Prayer was reading; tearing those Bookes, Surplices, and such things: which the Parliament, (either too much busied in a variety of affaires, or, perchance, too much fearing the losse of a considerable Party, whom they might have need of against a real and potent Enemy,) did not so farre restraints as was expected, or desired, by those men.

To this were added those daily reports of ridiculous Conventicles, and preachings made by Tradesmen, and illiterate people of the lowest ranke, to the scandal and offence of many: Which some in a merry way would put-off, considering the precedent times, by saying, "that these Tradesmen did but take-up that Duty which the Prelates and the great Doctors had let-fall, *the preaching the Gospel*; That it was but a reciprocal invasion of each others callings, that Chandlers, Salters, Weavers, and such like, preached, when the Archbishop himselfe, instead of preaching, was daily busied in Projects about Leather, Salt, Sope, and such commodities as belonged to those Tradesmen."

Many people, by degrees, grew disaffected to the Parliament, being daily poysoned by the discourses of the friends, kindred, and retainers, to so many great Delinquents, as must needs feare such a Parliament; who, though they be no considerable party, in respect of the whole Common-wealth; yet plied their particular interests with more eagernesse than most men do that of the publike.

Some are taken-off by time and their owne inconstancy, when they have looked for quicker redresse of grievances than the great concurrence of so many weighty businesses (in a long-discontinued and reforming Parliament) can possibly admit, how industrious soever they might be, distracted as they were with so great a variety. Those people, after some time spent, grew weary againe of what before they had so long wished to see; not considering that a Prince, if he be averse from such a Parliament, can finde power enough to retard their proceedings, and keepe-off for a long time the cure of the State. When that happens, the people, tired with expectations of such a cure, do usually, by degrees, forget the sharpnesse of those diseases which before required it; or else, in the redressing of many and long disorders, and to prevent them for the future, there being for the most part a necessity of laying heavy Taxes, and draining of much Money from the people, they grow extremly sensible of that present smart, feeling more paine by the Cure for a time, than they did by the lingering disease before, and not considering that the causes of all which they now endure, were precedent, and that their present suffering is necessary for their future security.

It was the general opinion of all Gentlemen at that time, That a Parliament, so much and so long desired as this had been, after so great and constant a violation of the Lawes and Liberties of *England* in the King's former Government, could scarce, in possibility, ever grow into the dislike of the people, or, at least, of so great a part of the people as might be able (which yet, within one yeare, was after seene) to make a Warre against it, and endanger the utter ruine and subversion of it. But I have spoken before of some causes, which might seeme strong enough to engage a part of the people against Parliament; whose particular interests and livelihoods were neerely touched. How farre any proceeding might distaste others, who were uninterested in their private fortunes or callings, I cannot tell any certaine reason: But I remember that, within the compasse of a yeare after, (when this Civil Warre began to breake-out over all the Kingdom, and men in all companies began to vent their opinions in an argumentative way, either opposing or defending the Parliament-Cause; and Treatises were printed on both sides :) many Gentlemen who forsooke the Parliament, were very bitter against it for the proceedings in Religion, in countenancing, or not suppressing, the rudenesse of people in Churches (which I related before) when they were acting those things which seemed to be against the Discipline of the English Church, and might introduce all kindes of Sects and Schismes. Neither did those of the Parliament-side agree in opinions concerning that point: Some said, it was wisely done of the Parliament, not to proceed against any such persons, for feare of losing a considerable party, as is said before; Others thought and said, That, by so doing, they would lose a farre more considerable party of Gentlemen than could be gained of the other sort. They also affirmed, That, Lawes and Liberties having been so much violated by the King, if the Parliament had not so farre drawne Religion also into their cause, it might have sped better; for the Parliament frequently at that time, in all their expressions, whensoever they charged the corrupt Statesmen with injustice and Tyranny, would put Popery, or a suspicion of it, into the first place against them. I remember, when

when the Warre was begun, among those little Treatises, which were then published, (as many there were without any names to them,) I found one, in which the case is thus expressed, to recite the words of it. *Perchance (saith he) too much insisting upon Religion, and taxing the King for affecting Popery, hath, by accident, weakened the Parliament, and brought Parties to the King. It may seem a great Paradox that the best and onely necessary of all things, Religion, being added into the scale of Lawes and Liberties, should make the scale lighter than before. Neither can it be true but by accident; as thus: The strange intercourse betwixt Rome and the English Court; The King's owne Letters to the Pope; His favouring of Priests, and such things; though they may give a State just cause of suspicion, that their Religion is undermining: Yet, because it cannot be so absolutely proved to the sight of all the people, that the King favoured Popery, as that he violated the Lawes and Liberties of the Kingdome; (which latter was visible to all;) the former, concerning Religion, remaines; in the people's reason, as a controverted question (the King still protesting for Religion) and the disputes about that, amusing the People, make them by degrees forget that crime of the King's which was without controversie and evident, "the violation of their Lawes and Liberties:" And more than so; for some, supposing that the Parliament unjustly taxed him in Religion, did, in time, believe, that he was not so guilty of the other, as they would make him: which I have heard some of late maintaine. From whence may follow a strange conclusion; That the King's dealing so much with Rome, to the disadvantage of the Protestant Religion, should now turne to his owne advantage in a Protestant Kingdome. And we may make this as paradoxical a supposition, That, if the King had never done any thing prejudicial to the Protestant Religion, he would have found fewer Protestants this Parliament to take his part. For then, there being no dispute at all about Religion, the crimes of his State mis-government would have plainly and inexcusably appeared to all; as we have seene that some of our former Kings, for the like violation of Lawes and Liberties, when there was but one Religion, and therefore no dispute about it, have been heavily censured in Parliament, no man appearing in their justification. And why should not a Parliament thinke that such things are cause enough to be stood-upon, and to justifie their quarrel before God? as if the Almighty did not abhorre Injustice, Oppression, Tyranny, and the like, in any Kingdome, unlesse the profession of Religion were also depraved. Nay, he abhorreth it more in that place where the purest profession of Religion is.*

Besides, that frequent naming of Religion, as if it were the onely quarrel, hath caused a great mistake of the question; in some by reason of ignorance; in others, of subtilty, whilst they wilfully mistake, in order to abuse, the Parliament's Cause, writing whole Volumes in a wrong-stated case; as, instead of disputing "whether the Parliament of England lawfully assembled, where the King virtually is, may by Armes defend the Religion established by the same power, together with the Lawes and Liberties of the Nation, against Delinquents, who detain with them the King's seduced Person:" They make it the question, "Whether Subjects, taken in a general notion, may make Warre against their King for Religion's sake?"

Such

Such was the sense of many Gentlemen at that time, who adhered to the Parliament. But to proceed in the Narration.

The Parliament had been of late sensible of the losse of some from them, and (having detected divers Conspiracies and Machinations of dis-affected people against them, and fearing more,) had, in *May* last, framed a Protestation, which was solemnly taken by all the Members of both Houses, and sent through-out *England* to be taken by the people ; the forme of it was in these words :

A Protestation in support of the Privileges of the Parliament is framed in *May*, 1641.

I *A. B.* in the presence of Almighty God, promise, vow, and protest to maintaine and defend, as farre as lawfully I may, with my life, power, and estate, the true Reformed Protestant Religion, expressed in the Doctrine of the Church of England, against all Popery and Popish Innovations within this Realme, contrary to the said Doctrine ; and according to the duty of my Allegiance, I will maintaine and defend his Majesties Royal Person, Honour and Estate, as also the Power and Priviledge of Parliaments, the lawful Rights and Liberties of the Subjects, and every Person that shall make this Protestation, in whatsoever he shall do in the lawful pursuance of the same ; and to my power, as farre as lawfully I may, I will oppose, and, by all good waies and meanes, endeavour to bring condigne punishment on all such as shall, by force, practice, counsels, plots, conspiracies, or otherwise, do any thing to the contrary in this present Protestation contained : And further, That I shall, in all just and honourable waies, endeavour to preserve the union and peace betwixt the three Kingdomes of England, Scotland, and Ireland, and neither for hope, feare, or any other respects, shall relinquish this Promise, Vow, and Protestation.

It were not amisse in this place briefly to mention some alterations, which had been made before the time that the Kinge tooke his journey into *Scotland*; (though they were not done immediately about that time, but some weekes, or Moneths, before,) because they concerne some Noblemen, of whom we shall have occasion hereafter to make mention in the course of this History.

Several changes in the great Officers of the kingdom. In *May*, 1641.

The Lord COTTINGTON, upon the 17th of *May*, 1641, had resigned his place of Master of the Wards ; and the Lord Viscount SAY and SEALE succeeded him in that Office.

Within few daies after, the Lord-Treasurer, Doctor JUCKSON, Bishop of *London*, resigned his Staffe, and the Office was committed to five Commissioners. About that time the Earle of *Leicester*, who had lately returned from being Ambassadour in *France*, was, by the King, made Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*. The Earle of *Newcastle* was removed from being Governour to the Prince, and the Marquesse of *Hartford* appointed in his roome.

THE
HISTORY
OF THE
PARLIAMENT OF ENGLAND.

THE SECOND BOOK.

CHAP. I.

A Standing Committee during the Recess of both Houses of Parliament. The Rebellion of the Irish, and Massacre of the Protestants there. Some endeavours of the English Parliament for relief of that Kingdom.

THE businesse of *England*, by this absence of the King, was at a great stand. In such a concurrence of high affairs, and so great an expectation to find redress of pressing Grievances, nothing was so irksome to the People as Delay. To retard the cure, was little better than to destroy. And the Sequel, within a short time, proved worse than the wisest men could imagine, or the most jealous possibly suspect; though jealousies and fears were then grown to a great height, and the Parliament of *England* was less than ever assured of the King's real affection to them. Nothing of State was transacted in Parliament during the King's absence. Some debates

The King proposes to the Parliament of England, to permit the Soldiers of the army lately disbanded in Ireland to enlist themselves in the army of the King of Spain.

debates there were only about Church-service, and alterations to be made in the Book of Common-prayer; in which, notwithstanding, nothing was concluded. One business only came to be discussed; of which the King himself gave the occasion; who, within few daies after his arrival in *Scotland*, signified by a Letter to the Lords, That he was engaged to the Spaniard by promise, to let him have four thousand souldiers out of that lately-disbanded Irish Army, which the Earle of *Strafford* had before raised; his desire was to make good his promise by consent of Parliament. But the House of Commons (whom the Lords had invited to a Conference for that purpose,) would not consent that any Irish should go to assist the Spaniard. Some reasons were then given; but more particular cause was shewed about ten daies after, when a second Letter came from the King, in which his Majesty declared, That the Spanish Ambassadour claimed his promise, from which in honour he could not recede. Notwithstanding, since he had found that Ambassadour, so reasonable, as that he was content to accept of two thousand; he hoped the Parliament would not deny that. The House tooke it into consideration; and within two dayes, the Lord of *FAWKLAND*, a Member of the House of Commons, at a conference delivered to the Lords, gave reasons in the name of that House, why it was very unfit to grant the King's desire, because the Spaniard was not only an Ally, and confederate, but an assistant, to the Emperour against the Prince Elector, his Majesties Nephew; who, by the power and oppression of that Emperour, had been long deprived of his Inheritance: And at this time, when the King had published a Manifesto in behalf of his Nephew, and to that purpose sent an Ambassadour to the Dyet of *Ratisbone*, it would seem to be a contradiction in the King to assist the Enemies of the said Prince Elector, which might be considered as a drawing of his own Sword against himself: besides the great prejudice it must needs bring to the Protestant cause, which this present Parliament so much intended and laboured to promote. Upon these reasons it was thought fit not to consent to the King's desire in that point. And immediately the two Houses of Parliament adjourned themselves from that day, being the eighth of *September*, till the twentieth of *October*, and appointed a standing Committee of fifty Members during that recess.

But the Parliament refuses its consent.

Before the Accesses and meeting-again of the Parliament, Letters came from the English Committee in *Scotland*, and were read before that standing Committee of *Westminster*, importing the discovery of a Treasonable plot against the lives of Marquesse *HAMILTON*, and others, the greatest Peeres of *Scotland*; the conspirators being the Earle of *Crayford*, and some others. How it was discovered, or how prevented, or whether the King had any privity to it (though one of that country have since written very plainly, charging the King with it) because the States of *Scotland* were very silent in it, the Parliament of *England* took the lesse notice of it: Only the standing Committee, for avoiding the like attempts at *London*, and fearing that such might flow from the same spring, appointed strong guards to be placed in many parts of the City, till further directions might be given from the two Houses at their Accesses. The malignancy, which at that time began to appear in people of that condition and quality which wee before mentioned, and was

A report of a Plot against the Lives of the Marquis of *Hamilton* and other great Peeres of *Scotland*, in *October*, 1641.

not

not only expressed in usual discourse among their companions, but vented in scurrilous and bitter Libels against those Lords and Commons who were generally reputed the most sedulous for the Common-wealth, was cause sufficient to increase the feares and jealousies of the Parliament.

But that fatal fire, which so sadly wasted the three Kingdoms, broke-out in that in which it was least feared; and those that seemed most secure, were the first sufferers. For about the end of *October, 1641*, during the King's abode in *Scotland*, the most barbarous and bloody Rebellion that ever any age or Nation were guilty of, broke-out in *Ireland*. The atrocity of it is without a parallel; and as full of wonder was the close carriage of so black and far-reaching a Designe. The innocent Protestants were, upon a suddain, disseised of their Estates, and the persons of above two hundred thousand men, women, and children, murdered,—many of them with exquisite and unheard-of tortures,—within the space of one month.

The Papists of Ireland suddenly rise and massacre the Protestants, in October, 1641.

That which encreased the amazement of most men, was, The consideration that the ancient hatred, which the Irish (a thing incident to conquer'd Nations) had formerly borne to the English, did now seeme to be quite buried and forgotten; forty years of peace had compacted those two Nations into one body, and cemented them together by all conjunctures of alliance, intermarriages, and consanguinity, which was in outward appearance strengthened by frequent entertainments, and all kinds of offices of good neighbourhood. There seemed in many places a mutual transmigration (as was observed by a noble Gentleman, whose place in that Kingdom gave him means to know it, out of whose faithful relation of that Rebellion and Massacre, I have partly collected my discourse of it) into each others manners. *Many English strangely degenerating into the Irish manners & customes, and many Irish, especially of the better sort, having taken-up the English language, apparel, and decency of living in their private houses.* The present Government was full of lenity and moderation; and some redresse of former grievances had then been newly granted by the King to his Irish subjects. The same Gentleman, in his History of the Irish rebellion, (where the Reader may more fully informe himself of particulars) affirms, that he could never hear of any one Englishman that received any certain notice of this conspiracy, till that very evening before which it was to be put in execution. Some intimations had been given by Sir WILLIAM COLE, in a Letter to the Lords-Justices, Sir WILLIAM PARSONS, and Sir JOHN BURLACE, with the rest of the Council, concerning dangerous resorts, and meetings of some persons who were judged fit instruments for such a mischief.

Sir John Temple.

This horrid plot, contrived with so much secrecy, was to take effect upon the 23d of *October*. The Castle of *Dublin*, the chief strength of that Kingdome, and principal Magazine of the King's Armes and Ammunition, (where all those Armes which were taken from the late disbanded Irish Army, and others, which the Earl of *Stafford* had provided, were deposited,) was to be seized by nine of the clock that day by the Rebels; for which purpose many of the Irish Gentry of great quality, were, the night before, come to *Dublin*, to be in readinesse for the performing of that exploit. It was further agreed among those conspirators, that

The Castle of Dublin is saved from the seizure of the Rebels, by a lucky discovery of the intended attack upon it, the night before it was to be made.

upon the same day, all other his Majesties Forts and Magazines of Armes and Ammunition in that Kingdom should be surprized, and all Protestants and English, that would not joyn with them, should be cut-off. But it pleased God to prevent the seisure of that Castle, and so to save the Kingdom from being wholly lost in one day; and that by a means strange and unexpected. HUGH MAC MAHON, Esquire, grand-son to the famous Rebel TYRONE, a Gentleman of a plentiful fortune in the county of *Monagan*, and one that had served in Armes under the King of *Spain* as Lieutenant-Colonel, a principal Agent in this Rebellion, being come with others (as aforesaid) into *Dublin* the day before that great Designe was to be put in execution, being the 22nd of *October*, admitted into his company at a Tavern in that City, one OWEN CONALLY, of Irish extraction, but a Protestant, and servant to Sir JOHN CLOTWORTHY, a Member of the English Parliament. To this OWEN he revealed so much, as they were drinking, that the honest man, escaping from him, (though not without great danger to himself, at the present,) informed the Lord-Justice PARSONS, that night, about nine of the clock, of a dangerous Designe upon the whole Kingdom; which being taken into present consideration, MAC MAHON was apprehended, and, after his examination, the Lord MAQUIRE also, another principal actor; who were both committed to close custody, and the Castle secured with all diligence. But many conspirators of great note escaped that night out of *Dublin*, as BIRNE, MORE, PLUNKET, and others.

A Proclamation
against the Irish Re-
bels, by the Lords of
the Council at Dub-
lin.

The Lords of the Council, amazed at the discovery of so horrid a Treason, did, notwithstanding, endeavour (since there was no prevention; for MAC MAHON had plainly told them, when he was examined, that by that time all the counties of *Ireland* were risen,) to use the best remedies to that desperate disease; and hoping that, perchance, the news how the plot for seizing of *Dublin*-castle was disappointed, might somewhat dishearten the conspirators in remote parts, and encourage the good Subjects with more confidence to stand upon their guard; issued-forth a Proclamation presently, and, by careful messengers, spread it into as many parts of the Kingdom as they could. The effect of which proclamation was, to signify the discovery of the Treason, and exhort all men to do their duty in suppressing of it.

Military Stores in
Dublin Castle.

But the general Designe was past prevention; and that very day there came-in some poor English Protestants, and others in a short time, every day, and almost every hour; shewing how they had been robbed, and their houses surprized, by the Rebels, whose outrage daily increased in rapine and murdering, and firing Towns and Villages in divers counties. To oppose, therefore, the growth of that desperate malady, the Lords-Justices (dispatching Letters to the King in *Scotland*, and to the Earle of *Leicester*, lately made Lieutenant of *Ireland* by the King, and yet resident at *London*, of their lamentable condition,) examined with all diligence how they were provided for such a War. They found in *Dublin*, Stores, and Armes for ten thousand men, with Artillery, Powder, Match and Lead proportionable, laid-in by the late Earle of *Strâfford*; which, though designed by him another way, were yet reserved,
by

by God's providence, for this service. But the Officers and souldiers of the old standing army were so much dispersed into remote places of the Kingdom, for the guard of other Forts, that there was scarce any possibility of drawing a considerable company together to defend *Dublin*, or make head against the Rebels in the North. The greatest mischief to the State, and advantage to the Rebels, was, That there was no Money in the Exchequer ; and besides, the King's Revenues, and the Rents of English Gentlemen due for that halfe-year, were either in the hands of the Tenants, or of the Collectors, in the country, and must unavoidably fall into the Rebels power ; so that, although their disease were present, the only means of cure was remote, which was a dependance upon some supplies from the Parliament of *England*.

Upon the very day designed for the surprisal of the Castle at *Dublin*, the 23rd of *October*, the Northern Rebels broke-out in the Province of *Ulster*, and in few dayes got possession of so many Towns, Forts, and Gentlemen's Houses, within the counties of that Province, as might seeme almost incredible, if we consider only the chief actors, men of no great skill in Martial affairs, or any policy : such as Sir PHELIM ONEALE, and his Brother, with the rest ; and not rather (which indeed was the true reason,) the general engagements of the Irish, and their deep dissimulation, concurring with the great credulity of the English, upon the causes aforementioned, of so long intermixed co-habitation, and friendly Relations betwixt them. Both these were the causes which afterward encreased the Massacre of the English, who, when the fire brake-out, implored the friendship of their Irish neighbours, Landlords, or Tenants ; committing into their hands and protection their treasure, wives and children, with all that was dear unto them, in hope that former friendship might prevail. But they, generally, either betrayed them into the power of other Rebels, or perfidiously and cruelly murdered them with their own hands : which extreme falshood and cruelty in the Irish was thought to be much encreased by the charmings of their Priests, who told them, " That it was a mortal sin to protect, or relieve, any of the English."

The Irish rebellion breaks-out, first, in the province of Ulster, October 23. 1641.

That intermixture of the Nations did also, at this sad time, make the English lesse able to defend themselves than if they had lived singly by parties of their own. For, where the English were able to make any head, or stand upon their guard, (though in such an amazement and suddain surprisal) they defended themselves beyond belief, till the Irish (principled by their Priests) offered them fair Quarter ; with assurance of lives and goods, safe-conduct, and free passage to what places they pleased ; confirming such covenants with deep oathes, and protestations, and sometimes under their hands and Seales. But, when they had the deceived English in their power ; the Souldiers spoiled, stripped, and murdered them at their pleasure. So were many served ; as, at *Armagh*, by Sir PHELIM ONEALE and his Brother ; at *Belterbert*, by PHILIP ORELLEY ; and at *Longford*, *Tullough*, and other Castles in the County of *Fermanagh*, by others of those Rebels. But, if the English, (who stood to defend their private houses, and so were the more easily cut-off,) could have deserted their habitations at the first rising, and joynd themselves into bodies, they might, happily, have made a better resistance. Whilst these

The treachery and cruelty of the Irish rebels towards the English protestants.

these inhumane cruelties and Massacres were acting in miserable *Ireland*, and daily spreading themselves in every part of that Kingdom; many Counties in several Provinces declaring themselves, and following the barbarous example of those in *Ulster*; the sad newes was brought to the Parliament of *England*.

Vigorous proceedings of the English Parliament, for the suppression of the Irish Rebellion, Oct. 27, 1641.

The first Letters, which before were mentioned, sent from the Lords-Justices upon the 25th of *October*, were carried, and delivered at *London*, on the last day of that month by OWEN Ô CONALLY, the happy discoverer of the first Plot; with a full information of all particulars within his knowledge: which by the Lords, who were first acquainted with it, was delivered at a Conference to the House of Commons; who presently ordered, *That the House forthwith should be resolved into a Committee, to consider the matter offered concerning the Rebellion in Ireland, as likewise to provide for the safety of England.* By which Committee, it was agreed that 50,000 pound should presently be provided; and that the Loane of it should be entreated from the City of *London* upon Publick security. 2. That a Select Committee of both Houses should be named to consider the affairs of *Ireland*. 3. That OWEN Ô CONALLY, who discovered this great Treason, should have 500 pound presently paid him; and 200 pound *per annum* Pension, till Provision in Land of a greater value be made for him. 4. That Papists of quality be secured in their several Counties within *England*. 5. That no persons whatsoever, except those who are Merchants, shall be admitted to go-over into *Ireland*, without Certificates from the Committee of both Houses appointed for the affairs of *Ireland*.

These things were reported to both Houses, and willingly assented-to, within two daies after the discovery first made unto them of that Rebellion. And (notwithstanding those present distractions in *England*, which began then to appear) part of every day, during that *November*, was allotted to the consideration of *Ireland*. Within four dayes after the beginning of which month, they ordered many particulars of great import for the relief of it, consisting of supplies of Money, Magazines of Victuals, Ammunition of all sorts, courses to be taken for raising Forces for the occasions of that Kingdom; and shipping for guard of their Sea-coasts; as more particularly appeareth in the records of Parliament.

And in November, 1641.

Whilst the English Parliament were thus ordering the affaires of bleeding *Ireland*; other Letters from the Lords-Justices bearing date the fifth of *November* were brought, and communicated to both Houses. Who, in earnest zeal to the promotion of that businesse, voted two hundred thousand pounds to be raised for suppressing the Irish Rebellion, securing *England*, and payment of the Publick debts. For which, the City of *London* must of necessity be made use of, (collections through the Kingdom being too slow for such an urgency). And, to encourage the City in it, an Order was made to secure them for monies formerly lent, and to allow them the full Interest of eight *per cent.* for all-together.

Whilst the *English* Parliament were thus busied about the relief of *Ireland*; the horrid Rebellion with a swift motion ran throughout that unhappy Kingdom, many Counties daily joyning with them; and divers Lords and Gentlemen, who for many daies had lived unsuspected in *Dublin*, went into the Country to side with

with the Rebels, and act their parts in those inhumane outrages : the Lords-Justices and Privy Council were enough troubled to secure *Dublin*, to victual the Castle, and prepare defence against those dangers, which threatned the City, and were made much more by the feares of spoyled people resorting thither.

But the care of the Privy-Council extended further, (notwithstanding the troubles there) than to the City of *Dublin* ; and, having a Magazine of Armes within the Castle, they resolved so to dispose of them as that resistance might be made against the Rebels in other parts. Some Armes were happily disposed-of to such Gentlemen (Sir HENRY TICHBORNE, Sir CHARLES COOTE, and others, of whom more hereafter) as, to their lasting honour, did excellent service. But another part of them were worse than lost, namely, those which were distributed to the Lords and Gentlemen of the English Pale ; who afterwards declared themselves for the Rebels, and used the Arms to the destruction of those who had put them into their hands. The treachery of the Lords of the English Pale. That English Pale is a large circuit of Land, possessed at the first conquest of *Ireland* by the English, and ever since inhabited by them ; containing divers Counties, as *Dublin, Meth, Lowth, Kildare, &c.*

The Lords of the Council thought fit to trust those Lords and Gentlemen of the Pale both with Commissions and Armes (though many of them were professed Papists) hoping that this great Confidence would work so far upon their hearts, (if any truth or loyalty were left there,) as to keep them, at least, from joyning with the enemy ; and, if they were honest, would enable them to oppose the threatning incursions of the Northren Rebels. This great Trust the Council were more encouraged to repose in these perfidious Lords and Gentlemen of the Pale, because themselves had appeared at *Dublin* of their own accords, professing truth and loyalty, with deep and solemne Protestations, and declaring that they were most forward and ready to concur with their Lordships in that service.

But so great an affliction was to fall upon unhappy *Ireland*, that all those Lords that were Papists, after they had received Commissions and Armes, notwithstanding all their deep vowes, did most perfidiously, soon after, desert their houses, and openly declare themselves in actual Rebellion ; such as were Viscount MONGANET, GORMANSTON, and COSTELOE, DILLON, BIRNE, BELLER, TALBOT, and many others. Such of them as were papists, break their solemn protestations of Loyalty, and join the Irish rebels.

The Condition of *Dublin* was more lamentable every day than other ; and not so much afflicted were they with feares and dangers which threatned themselves, as by that extream sorrow, which compassion must needs work in them, toward all the suffering English which resorted thither. *Dublin* was the Sanctuary of all the despoiled Protestants ; and, by that meanes, became the sad stage, upon which all horror was represented ; and what mischieffes soever were acted in other parts, were there discovered and lamented. Their eyes were sad witnesses of the Rebels cruelty, in those despoiled English which daily resorted to the City ; but their eares were much more afflicted with the relation of those horrid tortures, which had been used to those who died in other parts. Their eyes could not but extremely suffer from such wretched Spectacles as daily, from all parts, presented themselves ; People of all conditions,

conditions and qualities, of every age and Sex, spoiled, and stripped, with no coverings, but ragges, or twisted straw, to hide their privities; some wounded almost to death, others frozen with cold, some tired with travel, and so surbated that they came into the City creeping on their knees; others famished beyond all relief. And, besides the miseries of their bodies, their minds were tortured with the losse of all their fortunes, and sad remembrance of their husbands, wives, or children, most barbarously murdered before their faces. In this most lamentable plight, with wasted bodies and distracted mindes, did they arrive at *Dublin*; some to be relieved, some entombed (which was more than their murdered friends could obtaine from the Rebels) insomuch as they appeared like walking ghosts in every street, and all the Barnes, Stables, and out-houses were filled with them; where they soon died, (after they had recovered the City,) in so great numbers, that all the Church-yards of *Dublin* could not contain them: but the Lords were enforced to take-in large pieces of ground on both sides of the River, to set-apart for burying-places.

Horrid acts of cruelty
committed by the
Irish rebels.

But that part of this woeful Tragedy, which was presented to their eyes, was the least, and but the shadow of that other, which was related to their eares; of which the Readers and all posterity may share the sorrow. Many hundreds of those which had escaped did, (under their oathes, lawfully taken upon examination, and recorded with all particulars; as may be seen at large in the Records;) deliver to the Council what horrid Massacres the bloody villains had made of men, women, and children; and what cruel inventions they had used to torture those whom they murdered; scarce to be equalized by any, the most black and baleful, story of any age.

Many thousands of them at several places (too many to be here inserted) after all despites exercised upon them living, were put to the worst of deaths; some were burned on set purpose; others drowned for sport and pastime; and, if they swam, were kept from landing with poles, or were shot and murdered in the water; many were buried quick, and some set into the earth breast-high, and there left to famish. But most barbarous (as appears in very many examinations) was that cruelty which was shewed to great-bellied women; whom the villaines were not content merely to murder, but ripped-up their bellies, and many times took delight to see the Hoggess eate the abortive Infants. But I am loath to dwell upon so sad a narration.

The greatest part of these inhumane cruelties were acted by the Irish upon the poor, unarmed, Brittaines, before any provocation given unto them: and, as the blood of so many thousand innocent persons was now sacrificed to their meer malice, so an equal number were afterwards sacrificed to their revenge; as, whensoever the Irish received any blow from English Forces, the English Protestants, that lived among them, were murdered in great numbers.

Vigorous proceed-
ings of the Lords of
the Council in Ire-
land, against the
Irish rebels, in No-
vember, 1641.

By this time the Lords of the Council had armed as many as they were able, and given Commissions for raising of several Regiments, which were put into the hands (for the most part) of gallant men, as their actions after testified to the world. Sir CHARLES COOTE, an active and valiant man, (who was also made Governour of *Dublin*;) with great speed made-up his Regiment out of the poor, robbed, and stripped English, which had fled to *Dublin*; Sir HENRY TICHBORNE, a worthy
Commander,

Commander, was dispatched-away with a Regiment of Foot, to keep *Tredagh* from the approaching Rebels : The Lord LAMBERT also, Sir THOMAS LUCAS, Captain ARMESTRONG, Captain YARNER, with others, raised, by Commissions, souldiers there.

This was done about the middle of *November* ; at which time also the Earle of *Ormond*, with his well-armed Troop of Horse, came to *Dublin* ; where, within few dayes after, he was, by a Commission sent from the Earl of *Leicester*, Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland* (as likewise by the King's approbation from *Scotland*, signified in a Letter,) made Lieutenant-General of all the Forces there. The Earl of Ormond is made Lieutenant-General of all the Forces in Ireland.

For the Earl of *Leicester* at that time was not enabled so far with necessaries for the service of *Ireland*, as to repair thither in person.

The Earl also sent-over to the Lords at *Dublin* (together with an Order of the Lords and Commons of the Parliament in *England*) comfortable Letters in this time of distresse, to let them know that the King had referred the whole businesse of *Ireland* to the Parliament of *England*; who had undertaken the charge and management of the War, had declared a speedy and vigorous assistance, had designed for their present supplies the summe of 50,000 pound, and taken order for all further provisions necessary. The King entrusts the whole business of suppressing the Irish Rebellion, to the English Parliament.

But, that they might not be altogether destitute of real comfort, the Parliament of *England* sent them over at the same time Twenty thousand pound, which arrived most seasonably at *Dublin* (their treasure beginning utterly to fail,) for paying those new Companies which they had raised.

About the end of *November*, the Lords-Justices and Cōuncil of *Ireland*, considering the miserable desolations brought upon that whole Kingdom, and what miseries were further threatened, Commanded, by Proclamation, a Publike and religious Fast to be weekly observed upon Friday in the City of *Dublin*, to implore the mercy and assistance of Almighty God, and divert his heavy Indignation from them. The Lords-Justices of Ireland order a Publick Fast to be kept weekly at Dublin.

CHAP. II.

The King returneth out of Scotland, and is pompously entertained by the City of London. The Remonstrance is published by the Parliament. The King entreteth into the House of Commons. The Protestation of the twelve Bishops; and how it was censured by the Lords and Commons. Divers unhappy obstructions of the relief of Ireland.

BUT, to leave *Ireland* struggling against her sad and woeful calamities, and returne again to the Affairs of *England*;—at that same time about the end of *November*, 1641, the King, being returned from *Scotland*, was by the City of *London* entertained, feasted, and conducted to his Palace at *White-hall*, with as pompous Solemnity, and costly expressions of Love and Duty, as ever any King of *England* was.

The King returns from Scotland at the end of November, 1641.

Of which extraordinary testimonies of affection toward him, the King seemed very sensible, and returned Thanks to the City; inviting, within few dayes after, the chiefe of them to *Hampton-Court*, where they were feasted, and divers Aldermen were knighted by his Majesty.

The English House of Commons present a grand Remonstrance to the King, containing a recital of all the grievances of the people throughout the King's reign, December 15, 1641.

While the King resided at *Hampton-Court*, the House of Commons presented to him a Remonstrance, or Declaration of the state of the Kingdom; wherein all the chiefe grievances and oppressions, which the Nation had groaned-under since the beginning of his Reign until that time, were recited; but with as much tenderness of expression, and respect to his Person (for such care they took, as it appeared in that Petition of theirs which accompanied the Remonstrance) as in the utterance of so much truth could possibly be shewn. For all the fault is laid upon ill Ministers, who are called a Malignant Party.

That Remonstrance, some little time before the King's return out of *Scotland*, had

had been with much earnestness debated in the House of Commons: and at that time when it was Voted, so much divided was the House, that not above nine voices carried it.

So fierce and long were the disputations about it, and arguments urged on both sides, that not only the day, but a great part of the night was spent in it. For the House arose not until two of the clock in the morning.

The prevailing part alledged for it (as it was afterward expressed in their Petition to the King) that *Their intention was only to inform his Majesty, his Peers, and all other his loyal Subjects; with no purpose at all of laying the least blemish upon his Person, but to represent how much his Royal Authority and Trust had been abused to the great prejudice and danger of his Majesty, and all his good Subjects.*

It was alledged by many Gentlemen in ordinary discourses, who were of the same opinion that the prevailing Voters in Parliament were, That such a Remonstrance might be of good use, and that the King, (having, perchance, been ignorant, in some degree, of how much evil had formerly been wrought) might, by this Remonstrance, be not only brought to a knowledge of his past Errors, but to a salubrious fear of offending again, by considering how publick and manifest to the World the defaults of Princes in point of Government must needs appear.

The other side were of opinion, That this Remonstrance, instead of directing him for the future, would teach him only to hate the makers of it, as upbraiders of his crimes, and as persons that went about to lessen, or blemish, (and so the King seemed to relish it, as appeared in his Answer printed,) his Reputation with the people. They held it fitter at such a time, when the King's Affections were dubious toward the Parliament, to win him by the sweeter way of concealing his Errors, than, by publishing of them, to hazard the provocation of him, with whom it was not behoveful to contest, unlesse they were in hope to change his disposition for the future, or ascertained of their own power, and resolved to make full use of it.

For mine own part, I will make no judgement at all upon it; nor can we truly judge by the success of things. But such an unhappy Genius ruled those times (for Historians have observed a Genius of times, as well as of climates, or men,) that no endeavours proved successful; nor did any actions produce the right (though probable) effects.

Who would not in probability have judged that the forementioned costly and splendid entertainment, which the City of London gave to the King, would have exceedingly endeared them unto him, and produced no effects but those of love and concord? Yet accidentally it proved otherwise. For many people, ill-affected to the Parliament, gave it out in ordinary discourse (*Non ignota loquor*, it is a known truth;) that the City were weary of the Parliament's tedious proceedings, and would be ready to join with the King against them. Whether it begat the same opinion in the King or not, I cannot tell; but certainly some conceived so, by some of the King's actions which immediately followed, expressing a greater confidence against the

Parliament than before, displacing some from such Trusts, as had been conferred on them: Insomuch that the City presently after, finding what ill use was made of these expressions, were enforced to declare themselves in a Petition to both Houses; "That, since some ill-affected People had interpreted their Loyal and affectionate entertainment of the King, as a sign that they would wholly adhere to him, and desert the Parliament; they openly professed the contrary; and that they would live and die with them for the good of the Common-wealth."

After which, the City, no lesse than the Parliament, did seem to be distasted both by the King and Queen.

Fears and Jealousies between the King and the Parliament, in December, 1641.

The fears and jealousies that now reigned, were of a sadder nature than the fears of any former times had been. Two years before, the people feared, that whilst this King lived, they should never see a Parliament; but now they began to fear that no Parliament could do them good.

At this time began that fatal breach between King and Parliament to appear visibly, and wax daily wider, never to be closed, until the whole Kingdom was, by sad degrees, brought into a ruinous War.

From henceforth no true confidence appeared between him and that high Court; every day almost contributed somewhat to the division; and Declarations upon several occasions were published to the world; of which, though the language, for the most part, were fairly couched, and sweetened with frequent intermixtures of gracious expressions from the King, and affectionate professions from the Parliament; yet the substance was matter of expostulation: and many intervening actions (which we shall endeavour to expresse particularly) did so far heighten them, and sharpen, by degrees, the style, till those Paper-contestations became a fatal Prologue to that bloody and unnatural War which afterward ensued.

The King, to answer that Remonstrance before mentioned, published a Declaration to justify his own Honour and Government; and at the same time sent a Message to the Common-Council of London, complaining of tumultuary assemblies of People from the City, daily resorting to Westminster, to the disturbance of that place, and his Palace of White-hall.

For people about that time, in great numbers, used to present Petitions to the Parliament, and make Protestations of their fidelity to them, in these times of fears and jealousies, which grew now so great that the House of Commons, upon the same day that the King sent that complaining Message to the City, Petitioned him to allow them a Guard for security of their Persons while they sate: alledging in the Petition that there was a *Malignant Party bitterly envenomed against them, who did daily gather strength and confidence, and were now come to that height of boldnesse, as to give-out insolent and menacing speeches against the Parliament itselfe.* It was therefore their humble desires that they might have a Guard out of the City, commanded by the Earl of ESSEX, Lord-Chamberlain of his Majesties Houshold, of whose fidelity to King and Common-wealth no question was ever made.

Which

Which Petition was denied by the King ; but with a solemn engagement of himself by the *Word of a King*, that the security of all, and every one of them, from violence was, and ever should be, as much his care, as the preservation of himself and his Children ; and, if this general assurance would not suffice to remove these apprehensions, he would command such a Guard to waite upon them, as he would be responsible for to *Almighty God*.

The next day after that the King had thus answered the Petition of the House, being the fourth of *January*, 1641, he gave unhappily a just occasion for all men to think that their fears and jealousies were not causelesse. For upon that day the King came to the Parliament in Person, attended with a great number of Gentlemen, Souldiers, and others armed with Swords and Pistols, to the number of about three hundred, who came-up to the very door of the House of Commons, and placed themselves there, and in all passages neer unto it: The King in Person entered the House of Commons, and demanded five Members of that House to be delivered to him. The manner of it was, seating himself in the Speaker's Chair, he asked him whether those five Members were there, or not? The Speaker, Mr. WILLIAM LENTHALL, returned to his Majesty an humble and discreet answer, "That he had neither eyes to see, nor tongue to answer, any thing, but what he was commanded by the House."

The King goes to the House of Commons, with a party of armed men, to arrest five of the members, January 4th, 1641-2.

The names of those Members whom he demanded were, Mr. DENZILL HOLLIS, second Sonne to the Earl of *Clare*, Sir ARTHUR HASLERIG, Mr. PYM, Mr. HAMDEN, and Mr. STRODE : All Gentlemen of great esteem and reputation in the House : Two of whom, Mr. HOLLIS, and Mr. STRODE, had before suffered many years of sharp and harsh imprisonment from the King (after the dissolution of that Parliament, in the fourth year of his Reign,) for matters done in Parliament ; which was contrary to the Priviledges of that High Court. The King had the day before, by his Attorney General, Sir EDWARD HERBERT, (a Member also of the House of Commons,) demanded the deliverance of those five forementioned Gentlemen ; and sent a Sergeant at Armes to apprehend them, pretending that he meant to charge them, and together with them, the Lord MANDEVILE, (eldest son to the Earl of MANCHESTER,) a Member of the House of Lords, with Articles of High Treason, and other misdemeanors, which Articles were to this purpose ;

1. That they had endeavoured to subvert the Government, to deprive the King of his legal power and to place on Subjects an arbitrary and tyrannical power.

2. That they had endeavoured, by foule aspersions upon his Majesties Government, to alienate the affections of his people from him.

3. That they endeavoured to draw His late Army from His Obedience, to side with them in traiterous Designes.

4. *That they trayterously invited and encouraged a forraigne power to invade His Majesties kingdom of England.*

5. *That they trayterously endeavoured to subvert the very Rights and Beings of Parliament.*

6. *That they have endeavoured, by force and terror, to compel the Parliament to joyne with them in their trayterous designes, and to that end have actually raised and countenanced tumults against the King and Parliament.*

7. *That they have trayterously conspired to Levy, and actually have Levied, Warre against the King.*

But the House of Commons, hearing this demand, to prevent such further breaches of Parliament-Priviledges as might ensue upon the same day, ordered upon the Question; *That, if any persons should come to the lodgings of any member of that House, and there offer to seale their Trunkes or Doors, or to seize upon their Persons, That then such Members should require the aide of the Constable to keep such persons in safe custody, till the House did give further Order. And they further declared, That, if any Person should offer to arrest, or detain, the Person of any Member of that House, without first acquainting the House therewith, and receiving further order from thence; that it should be lawful for such a Member, or any Person in his assistance, to stand upon his, and their, guard of defence, and to make resistance, according to the Protestation taken to defend the Priviledges of Parliaments.*

These things had passed the day before that the King had so entered into the House of Commons. His Majesty finding those five Members were not there (for they, by consent of the House, upon some informations of what would happen, had absented themselves) from the Speaker's Chair, where he sate, made a Speech to the House, wherein he told them, That he was very sorry for that occasion; but yet, *no King of England that ever was, should be more careful to maintain the Priviledges of Parliament than he would be; that those five Members were dangerous men; but he protested, in the word of a King, That he never intended any force; but to proceed against them in a legal and fair way. But sithence he could not now do that which he came for, he would trouble them no more; but expected, as soon as those five members came to the House, that the House would send them to him: or else he would take his own course to find them.*

But this great breach of Priviledges of Parliament was encreased by many circumstances. For the day before, being the third of *January*, contrary to the forementioned order of the House of Commons, the Chambers, Studies, and Trunks

Trunks of those five Members, by a Warrant from the King, were sealed-up; Sir WILLIAM KILLIGREW, and Sir WILLIAM FLEMEN, with others, being employed in that service. And within two dayes after, upon the sixth of *January*, a Proclamation was made by the King for the apprehending and imprisoning of those five Members; wherein it was suggested, that, through the conscience of their own guilt, they were absent and fled, not willing to submit themselves to justice.

Whereupon the House of Commons, in vindication of their own Priviledges and those five Gentlemen, published, within a few dayes after, a Declaration; in which that Proclamation of the King's (entituled there, *A Printed Paper*) is declared to be false, scandalous, and illegal; and that, notwithstanding the said Printed Paper, or any Warrant issued-out, or any other matter yet appearing against them, or any of them, they may and ought to attend the service of the said House of Commons, and the severall Committees then on foot: And that it was lawful for all Persons to lodge, harbour, or converse with them, or any of them; and that whosoever should be questioned for the same, should be under the protection and Priviledge of Parliament.

The House of Commons further declared, That the publishing of severall Articles purporting a form of a Charge of High Treason against the Lord MANDEVILL, and the forenamed five Members, by Sir WILLIAM KILLIGREW, Sir WILLIAM FLEMEN, and others, in the Innes of Court, and elsewhere, in the King's name, was an high breach of the priviledge of Parliament, a great scandal to his Majesty and his Government, a seditious act manifestly tending to the subversion of the Peace of the Kingdome, and an injury and dishonour to the same Members, there being no legal charge, or accusation, against them.

Whereas there is mention made in the late recited words of this Declaration, concerning the Innes of Court, we cannot omit, that about the same time (so unhappy a Genius of division reigned among all sorts) there wanted not some men disaffected to the Parliament, who went up and down, perswading the young Gentlemen of the Innes of Court to make offer of their service to the King, as a guard of defence, if any danger threatened his Person. Upon which, divers of those young Gentlemen, to ingratiate themselves, repaired to the Court, and were kindly received by the King and Queen.

The Parliament at that time further declared, That the Priviledges of Parliament, and the Liberties of the Subject, so violated and broken, could not be fully and sufficiently vindicated, unlesse his Majesty would be pleased to discover the names of those persons, who advised his Majesty to issue-out such Warrants for sealing of the Chambers and Studies of the said five Members; to send a Sergeant at Armes to the House of Commons to demand those members; to issue-out Warrants for their apprehension; to come thither himself in Person; to publish Articles in the forme of a Proclamation against the said Members in the fore-declared manner; to the end that all such persons, who advised him to these actions, might receive condigne punishment.

According to this, the Houses humbly desired his Majesty that he would so far

far satisfy their just and legal request, as to let them know those informers; (for the Law, in two several Statutes, provides that satisfaction, that, if, in time of Parliament, the King accuse a Member of the same, of what crime soever, he ought to signify to the Parliament, who were the informers;) but the King refused to do it. Upon which the House of Commons examined his Attorney-General, Sir EDWARD HERBERT, who had preferred the aforesaid Articles; he confessed nothing to them concerning any other Person, or informer; but only that he received the Command from the King himself, and knew nothing further of it. The same the King testified concerning the said Attorney in a Letter to the Lord-Keeper; wherein he justifieth the Attorney's action, as being no otherwise than the duty of a servant required. But the Parliament made another judgement of it; as namely, that Sir EDWARD HERBERT had broken the Priviledge of Parliament in preferring the said Articles, and done an illegal act; upon which he was committed to prison.

The City of London
petition the King.

These actions of the King did exceedingly afflict all honest Protestants, especially at such a time, when the affairs of bleeding *Ireland* did so much, and so speedily, require the assistance of *England*; which must needs, by these unhappy distractions, be retarded; and the total losse of the Protestant Cause there much endangered. But the City of *London* was not the least sensible of it; who, in a deep and sorrowful apprehension of this designe, Petitioned the King, with an expression of all the feares and dangers which they conceived themselves in at that time. The things which they enumerate in their Petition are, *That his Majesty had put out a Person of Honour and Trust from being Lieutenant of the Tower; That he had lately fortified Whitehall with men and munition in an unusual manner: Some of which men had abused, with provoking language, and with drawn swords wounded, divers unarmed Citizens passing-by.* To explain this branch of their Petition, the Reader must be informed, That the King, the very next day after he had entred the House of Commons, as aforesaid, went in his Coach into the City of *London*, whither he had heard that those five Members had retired themselves; and was everywhere humbly entreated by the Citizens, in flocks about his Coach, That he would be pleased to agree with his Parliament, and not infringe the Priviledge thereof. The King, perceiving which way the affections of the City went, returned again to *White-hall*, where he staid about a week after. During which time (by what advice, or to what intention, I cannot tell,) he built there a little Court of Guard, and entertained some Gentlemen, and others, who, as the Petition declares, gave those affronts to divers Citizens that passed-by. They complain likewise in the Petition of *the late endeavours used to the Innes of Court: the calling-in divers Canoniers, and other assistants into the Tower: the late discovery of divers Fire-works in the hands of a Papist.* But most of all (say they) *our feares are encreased by your Majesties late going into the House of Commons, attended with a great number of armed men, besides your ordinary Guard, for apprehending divers Members of that House, to the endangering of your sacred Person, and of the Persons and Priviledges of that Honourable Assembly.* The effects of all which feares tend, not only to the overthrow of the whole

whole trade of this City and Kingdom ; which your Petitioners already feel in a deep measure ; but also to the utter ruine of the Protestant Religion, and the Lives and Liberties of all your loyal Subjects. The Petitioners therefore most humbly pray your sacred Majesty, that, by the advice of your great Council in Parliament, the Protestants in Ireland may be speedily relieved, the Tower put into the hands of Persons of Trust, that, by removal of doubtful and unknown Persons from about White-hall and Westminster, a known and approved Guard may be appointed for the safety of your Majesty and Parliament ; and that the Lord MANDEVILL, and the five Members of the House of Commons lately accused, may not be restrained of Liberty, or proceeded-against otherwise than according to the Priviledges of Parliament.

The King, though he conceived this petition (as himself expressed) of an unusual nature, yet willing to give content to the City, returned a Gracious Answer to their particulars ; That for *Ireland*, he conceived he had expressed as much care on his part as possibly he could, and would not fail for the future. What he had done concerning the Tower, had been to satisfie their fears before, in displacing one of good Trust, and putting-in another of unquestionable Reputation ; and what preparation of strength soever he made there, was with as great an eye of safety and advantage to the City, as to his own Person. For his Guard entertained at *White-hall*, he alledged the disorderly and tumultuous conflux of people to *Westminster*, to the danger of his Royal Person, not punished at all by course of Law ; and, if any Citizens were wounded, he was assured it happened by their own ill demeanours : that he knew no other endeavours to the Innes of Court, than a gracious Intimation, that he accepted the tender of their loyal affections, encouraging them to continue the same upon all occasions. That he knew of no Fire-works in the hands of Papists. For his going to the House of Commons, that he intended no course of violence, though that way had been justifiable ; for he was assured that no Privilege of Parliament could extend to Treason ; which, he knew, would be proved against them upon clear grounds ; and they in due time should be acquainted with it ; and that his proceedings against them should be according to the Lawes.

The King, presently after his answering of that Petition, sent another Message to the Parliament, that, for the present, he would wave his proceedings against those five Members ; and returned a gentle Answer at that time to the Petitioners of *Buckinghamshire*, who came, to the number of about 2000, in behalf of their Knight, Mr. HAMDEN, a Gentleman much honoured by them, and by most of the whole Kingdom ; in which Petition they prayed that Mr. HAMDEN, and the rest, that lie under the burden of that accusation, might enjoy the just priviledges of Parliament.

It was then grown a custom, which proved accidentally very unhappie to the Kingdom, (however it were meant,) to come in great numbers to *Westminster*, when they presented Petitions to the Parliament ; though the people petitioning were unarmed, and no just fear from them in the opinion of those who affected the Parliament ;

ment; yet those who thought themselves not well relished by the people in general, took occasion from thence, either to fear indeed, or at least to pretend fear, alledging that the Parliament was disturbed by such a numerous confluence of people, and the freedom of the Houses in some degree infringed, that some of the meaner sort were too apt to cast-out rude words against such as they thought to be no good members of the Common-wealth, of what degree soever they were.

From hence was occasion taken by some, to justify that Guard about White-hall, and afterwards to excuse the King's absenting himself from the Parliament: And from this ground did the twelve Bishops, about a week before this City-Petition, frame their Petition and Protestation (for so it was called) to His Majesty and the Peers, which was to this Purpose:

A Protestation of twelve Bishops against all proceedings in the House of Lords since the 27th of December, 1641.

They protested themselves to abominate all actions or opinions tending to Poperie, or any Malignity against the State; but were willing and ready to perform their duties in Parliament: But, whereas, coming to perform that duty and service, they have been rudely menaced, affronted, and put in fear of their lives by multitudes of people, and can finde no redresse or protection upon complaint made, they therefore humbly protest before His Majestie and the noble Peers, that, saving to themselves all their Rights and Interests of sitting and voting in that House at other times, they dare not sit, or vote, in the House of Peers, until his Majestie shall further secure them. And, because their fears are not vain, but upon true grounds and objects, they do, in all duty and humility, therefore protest before his Majestie and the Peers, against all Laws, Orders, Votes, Resolutions and Determinations, as in themselves null, and of none effect, which in their absence, since the 27th of this instant December, 1641, have already passed, as likewise against all such as shall hereafter passe, during this their enforced absence from the said House. Which Protestation they desired the King to command the Clerk of that House to record.

The Lords of Parliament immediately delivered by the mouth of the Lord Keeper, at a Conference, to the House of Commons, That seeing this Protestation was of dangerous consequence, and deeply entrenching upon the fundamental Priviledges and Being of Parliament, therefore they thought fit to communicate it to the House of Commons. The Commons thanked their Lordships for imparting it to them with so much affection and speed, and for expressing their sense thereof; and came to this resolution, To accuse those twelve Bishops of high Treason.

In consequence of this Protestation they are accused of High Treason by the Commons, and committed to prison.

Master GLYNN, therefore, was sent to the Lords; who, at their Bar, in the name of all the Commons of England, accused those twelve Prelates of high Treason, for endeavouring to subvert the fundamental Laws of the Realm, and the very Being

Being of Parliaments; and to desire the Lords that they might be forthwith sequestred from Parliament, and put into safe custodie; and that their Lordships would appoint a speedie day for the Commons to charge them: The Lords instantly sent the Black-Rod to finde out these Bishops, and apprehend them: so that by eight of the clock at night they were all taken, and brought upon their knees to the Bar, and ten of them committed to the Tower: two of them, in regard of their age, were committed to the Black-Rod. The twelve Bishops were these: Jo. Eborac. THOMAS Duresme, ROBERT Coven. and Lichfield, Jos. Norwich, Jo. Asaph, GUIL. Bath & Wells, GEO. Hereford, ROB. Oxon. MATTH. Ely, GODFREY Gloucester, Jo. Peterborough, MOR. Landaff.

Such work as this was daily made to the Parliament of *England*; whereby not onely the relief of *Ireland* was wholly obstructed, but all redresse of the grievances of *England*, and settlement of the State there, was so long retarded, till both Kingdoms were at last involved in the same War and Confusion. It was a strange thing that so barbarous and bloody a Rebellion should break-out in *Ireland*, without any the least suspicion or fear of such a Calamity, without any cause given by the innocent English Protestants: and surely it may seem as strange a thing, if well considered, that the revenge of so horrid and inhumane a Massacre should be thus hindered; and indeed it might be thought almost impossible, unlesse the raising of the one, and hindering the other, proceeded from the same cause.

Of the condition of
Ireland, in Decem-
ber, 1641.

There was a great hope about the beginning of *December*, that *Ireland* would speedily be relieved, and Forces transported out of *Scotland* within a short time to that purpose, considering what careful provisions the Parliament of *England* (as is before related) had made upon the first notice of it. But at that time the King was returned from *Scotland*; and in a Speech to the Parliament, in which he conjured them to proceed in the businesse of relieving *Ireland*, he likewise took notice of a Bill for pressing of Souldiers for *Ireland*, depending in the House of Peers, and declared his dislike of putting it in that way; being, as he said, a great infringement and diminution of his Royal Prerogative; telling them withal, that he was little beholding to that man, who began such a dispute concerning the bounds of his ancient and undoubted Prerogative. But he offered at last that the Bill might passe with a *Salvo jure* both to King and People, leaving such debates to a time that might better bear it.

This Speech of the King's was much distasted by both Houses, as a great breach of Parliament-priviledge, insomuch as they framed a Petition to him, wherein they expresse, That the King, by taking notice of the debate in the House of Lords concerning a Bill for pressing of Souldiers, had broken the fundamental Priviledge of Parliament, which is, that he ought not to take notice of any matter in agitation or debate in either House, but by their information and agreement; and that he ought not to propound any condition, or limitation, to a Bill in debate and preparation, or to manifest his approbation, or dislike, of the same, until it be presented to his Majestie in due course of Parliament; and that every particular Member, of
either

either House, hath free liberty of speech, to propound or debate matters according to Order of Parliament; and that the King ought not to conceive displeasure against him for such opinions or propositions. They intreated likewise a reparation for that great breach of Priviledge; and for prevention of the like, that the King would make known who they were, by whose mis-information and evil counsel he had done it, that they might receive condign punishment.

This businesse took-up some time, and was one unhappie impediment to the sudden relief of *Ireland*, notwithstanding the high necessities of that Kingdom, and the affections of *England* in general to it; and so heavily went-on all preparations, that it was long before the House of Commons could finde means to enable the Lord-Lieutenant to send-over so much as one Regiment, for defence of the Castle and City of *Dublin*, which was commanded by a worthy Gentleman, Sir SIMON HARCOURT; who being designed Governour of the City of *Dublin*, was sent-away by Order of Parliament with his Regiment, and landed there on the last day of *December*, 1641, to the great comfort of that City, being much distressed and terrified by the neer approach of the Irish Rebels.

An English regiment is landed at Dublin on the 31st of December, 1641.

Another obstruction of the relief of *Ireland* happened about three weeks after, when the Scots delivered eight Propositions to the English Parliament, touching the sending-over of Two thousand five hundred Scots, which were then in readinesse, into the north of *Ireland*. Both Houses of Parliament consented to all the Propositions; but the King excepted against one of them, being the third, which was, *That the Scots desired to have the keeping of the Town and Castle of Carrickfergus, with power to remain there, or enlarge their Quarters at discretion; and, if any Regiments, or Troops, in that Province should joyn with them, that they receive Orders from the chief Commander of the Scottish Forces.* Against this Article the King took exceptions, and desired the Houses to take it again into consideration, as a thing of importance, which he doubted might be prejudicial to *England*: But, if the House desired it should be so, himself would speak with the Scottish Commissioners, to see what satisfaction he could give them therein. The Scots told his Majestie, that, since it was agreed-upon by both Houses of Parliament, and that the strength of his Majesties argument was, "That article implied too great a Trust for Auxiliary Forces," they were in good hope that his Majestie, being their native King, would not shew lesse trust in them, than their neighbour-Nation had freely done. Upon which the King at last was content to admit the Article, and the advice of his Parliament.

This fatal obstruction of *Ireland's* relief did but second another immediately before: For at the first, the Commissioners of *Scotland* had not power given them from the State there, to treat for sending-over a lesse number than ten thousand men; which the Lords were unwilling to yeeld to. But that obstacle seemed to be removed by the zealous affection of the House of Commons; who according to those Instructions of the State of *Scotland* to their Commissioners, voted the sending-over of ten thousand Scots. But the House of Lords, after long debate, would

would not yeeld unto it, unlesse the House of Commons would give assurance that ten thousand English might be as speedily sent-over : which the Commons as much desired, and promised their endeavour in it ; but that the English then could not be so soon raised, much lesse transported, as the Scots, every man understood. There was no other reason given, that ever I understood, but onely That it was dishonourable for *England*, that *Ireland* should be reduced by the Scots : and this was the discourse of Papists, and other persons disaffected to the Cause, among the people every where.

Though it were much wondered-at by all good Protestants, that so nice a point of Honour should be stood-upon, when their Religion and Cause lay bleeding in *Ireland* after so sad and deplorable a kinde ; which began to deject the spirits of the poor Protestants in *Ireland*, and make them suspect some secret workings under-hand against the good affections expressed by the House of Commons, and those Lords who were well-affected to the State : for they by the greater number were over-voted, so many Popish and ill-affected Lords, besides four and twenty Bishops (for the Bishops voices in Parliament were not then taken-away) sitting in that House.

It was then also generally talked, and much complained-of among the well-affected people, that the King had been so backward in proclaiming those barbarous Irish, Rebels : and not onely talked among the people, but alledged by the Parliament itselfe (in their own Declaration afterward, when the breach between King and Parliament grew greater) as a signe that those inhumane Rebels had been countenanced by the Court of England, in that the Proclamation whereby they were declared Traitors, was so long withheld, as till the first of January, though the Rebellion broke-forth in October before ; and then no more than fourty Copies were appointed to be printed, with a special command from His Majestie not to exceed that number ; and that none of them should be published, till the King's pleasure were further signified, as by the Warrant appears, a true copie whereof was printed : so that a few onely could take notice of it. And this (say they) was made more observable by the late contrary proceedings against the Scots, who were in a very quick and sharp manner proclaimed, and those Proclamations forth-with dispersed with as much diligence as might be, thorow all the Kingdom ; and ordered to be read in every Church, accompanied with Publike Prayers and Execrations.

The King seems very unwilling to proclaim the Popish insurgents in Ireland to be rebels.

That Declaration of the Lords and Commons, in which this is expressed concerning the King's slowe proclaiming of the Irish Rebels, was published when the King was gone to *York* ; at which he was much distasted in many particulars, and returned Answer to them. Among others, because that of *Ireland* seemed to lie heavie upon his reputation, it is just that the Reader should see the King's own

Answer to that point, that he may the more fairly judge ; which shall be therefore inserted, in the very words of the King's Declaration.

To countenance those unhandsome expressions whereby usually they have implied Our connivence at, or want of zeal against, the Rebellion of Ireland, (so odious to all good men) they have found a new way of exprobaton, That the Proclamation against those bloodie Traitors came not out till the beginning of January, though that Rebellion broke-out in October; and then by special Command from Us, but forty Copies were appointed to be printed. It is well known where we were at that time, when that Rebellion broke-forth, in Scotland;—that we immediately from thence recommended the care of that businesse to both Houses of Parliament here, after We had provided for all fitting Supplies from our Kingdom of Scotland;—that after Our return hither, We observed all those Forms for that service, which We were advised-to by Our Council of Ireland, or both Houses of Parliament here: and if no Proclamation issued-out sooner (of which for the present We are not certain, but think that others before that time were issued by Our directions,) it was, because the Lords-Justices of that Kingdom desired them no sooner; and when they did, the number they desired was but twenty, which they advised might be signed by Us; which we for expedition of the service, commanded to be printed. (a circumstance not desired by them) thereupon we signed more of them than Our Justices desired:—all which was very well known to some Members of one or both Houses of Parliament, who have the more to answer, if they forbore to expresse it at the passing of this Declaration; and, if they did expresse it, We have the greater reason to complain, that so envious an aspersion should be cast upon Us to Our People, when they knew well how to answer their own Objection.

This was the King's Answer to that point of the Parliament's Declaration concerning Ireland. But the House of Commons, in another Declaration, though long after, charge the King upon the same particular, with more circumstances of aggravation: as, *That, although the Rebels had most impudently styled themselves The Queen's Army, and professed that the cause of their rising was, "To maintain the King's Prerogative, and the Queen's Religion, against the Puritan Parliament of England;" and thereupon both Houses of Parliament did humbly and earnestly advise His Majestie to wipe-away this dangerous Scandal, by proclaiming them Rebels and Traitors to His Majestie and the Crown of England, which then would have mated and weakned the Conspirators in the beginning,*
and

and have encouraged both the Parliaments here, and good people there, the more vigorously to have opposed their proceedings: yet such was the power of evil council about him, that no Proclamation was set-forth to that purpose, till almost three months after the breaking-out of this Rebellion; and then Command given that but forty should be printed, nor they published, till further direction should be given by His Majestie.— But the businesse of *Ireland* was more particularly touched in subsequent Declarations, which in their due time and place may hereafter be related.

That Proclamation against the Irish Rebels, came not out above two days before the King entred the House of Commons, as is before expressed; by which act so great a disturbance was made, and the relief of *Ireland* so much retarded.

It was likewise complained of to the King by the House of Commons, within three weeks after, that, since the Ports by order of both Houses (as is before mentioned) had been stopped against all Irish Papists, many of the chief Commanders, then in the Head of the Rebels, had been suffered to passe by His Majesties immediate Warrant. Of which the King cleared himself, in Answer to them, that by examining his own memory, and the notes of his Secretaries, he could not finde himself guilty of granting any such Warrants.

CHAP. III.

The Queen passeth into Holland, with her daughter the Princess MARY. Difference between the King and Parliament concerning the Militia. The King goeth toward York, and is followed with a Petition from the Lords and Commons to Theobalds, and another Declaration to Newmarket. The King is denied entrance into Hull by Sir JOHN HOTHAM.

IT was wonderful that nothing at all could advance, or further, this great and necessary work of reducing *Ireland*, when so many courses were propounded and undertaken : as about the middle of *February*, both Houses of Parliament had found a way, which they conceived to be most substantial and firm to carry-on that War; namely, by adventuring for proportions of Land in *Ireland*; there being, by their account, within the four Provinces of *Ulster, Connaught, Munster* and *Leinster* two millions and an half of Acres of Land forfeitable from the Rebels in those Provinces, to be shared among those Adventurers in the City of *London*, or other Counties thereabout, that would bring-in, or subscribe, such Sums of money as were thought fit, and which were, upon good and serious consideration, set-down in particular; whereby, if an happie Conquest were made upon those bloody Rebels, a large recompence might be made to all those English who either in Person or Purse had contributed to so good a work. The King was well contented with these Propositions, offering withal to go himself in Person into *Ireland* (but that was not thought fitting by the Parliament); and so far it passed, that an Act was made to that purpose, enabling the Parliament with power to carry-on that War, until *Ireland* should be declared to be wholly subdued; and that no Peace, or Cessation of Arms, should be at any time made with those Rebels, unlesse both Houses of Parliament assented to it.

But while these things were acting, other businesse, wherein the safety and security

A proposal of a Fund for suppressing the Rebellion in Ireland, in February, 1641, 2.

An act of Parliament is made for that purpose.

security of *England* was concerned, fell into debate; which was touching the *Militia* of the Kingdom of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, to be settled in every County upon such persons as the Parliament should approve. A petition to this purpose was sent to the King, presently after they had received a Message from him, dated the twentieth of *January*, wherein the King in fair language desires the Parliament, since that particular Grievances and Distractions were too many, and would be too tedious to be presented by themselves, that they would comprise and digest them into one entire Body, *that so His Majestie and themselves might be able to make the more clear Judgement of them; and that it should then appear, by what His Majestie would do, how far he hath been from intending or designing any of those things, which the too-great fears and jealousies of some persons, seem to apprehend; and how ready he would be to equal, or exceed, the greatest examples of most indulgent Princes in their Acts of Grace and Favour to the People.*

Disputes concerning the Militia of England, January 20, 1641, 2.

A message from the King to the Parliament, January 20, 1641, 2.

This Message was received with thanks by the Parliament, who resolved to take it into speedie and serious consideration. But to enable them with security to discharge their duties in those affairs, they desired the King to raise-up to them a sure ground of safety and confidence, by putting in the mean time the Tower, with other principal Forts, and the whole *Militia* of the Kingdom, into the hands of such persons as the Parliament might trust, and should be recommended to him by both Houses. This Petition of theirs was not well relished by the King, as appeared by his Answer. But the thing was of so great consequence, that one Answer could not suffice.

The Parliament sends a Petition to the King in an answer to it.

Many re-iterated Petitions were presented, and many Answers returned upon this subject, which are extant upon Record; where the King often promiseth to be careful, that no hands, but those who are very faithful to the Common-wealth, shall be by him entrusted with any part of the *Militia*; but the nomination of any persons to those places he will reserve to himself, it being a principal and inseparable flower of his Crown, vested in him, and derived to him from his Ancestors, by the Fundamental Laws of the Kingdom. The Parliament on the other side affirming, that nothing could enable them to suppress the Rebellion in *Ireland*, and secure themselves, but the instant granting of that humble Petition; which they hoped the King would not absolutely deny: That it was their duty to him and the Common-wealth, to represent unto him whatsoever they found so absolutely necessary; for the preservation of both which, the Laws both of God and man enjoyn them to see it put in execution.

During the debate of this businesse, and before any absolute conclusion was made of it, the King took a journey to *Canterbury*; upon what reasons, shall be anon declared. It was before related, that the King, after his entring into the House of Commons to surprise the five Members, had stayed a week at *Whitehall*, and then retired to *Hampton-Court*; the next day after, divers Citizens, with a great shew of Boats, and Guns in them, brought the five Members to *Westminster*, with many expressions that they would not forsake them, who sate to defend their Religion, Laws and Liberties.

The

The King, now resident at *Hampton-Court*, seemed extremely distasted at the Citie, and pretended the reasons of his absence from Parliament to be fear for his Person, by reason of Tumults that might be raised : but true it is, after this time, he never could be brought neer the Citie, or Parliament, either in body or minde.

Within few days after the King had been at *Hampton-Court*, he sent for divers of his servants, who were then Members of the Parliament, to leave the House, and give their attendance upon his Person : But two, the chief of them, ROBERT Earl of *Essex*, lately made Lord Chamberlain of his Houshold, and HENRY Earl of *Holland*, Groom of the Stool, chose rather to obey his Writ, whereby they were called to assist in Parliament about the highest affairs of *England*, than to obey this private Command of his, to come and attend at *Hampton-Court*, alledging in excuse, that their attendance in Parliament was truer service to him as King, than any other could be. For this, the King presently after sent a Messenger to demand the Staff of the one, and the Key of the other, being the Ensignes of their Offices ; which they willingly resigned to the Messenger's hands.

The King and Queen go to Canterbury and Dover, with the Princess Mary, their daughter, in the middle of February, 1641, 2.

From *Hampton-Court*, about the midst of *February*, the King and Queen went to *Canterbury*, and so to *Dover*, with the Princessse MARY their eldest daughter, married, not a yeer before, to WILLIAM, son to the Prince of *Orange*. The Queen herself passed from thence into *Holland*, under pretext of keeping her daughter company to her husband, (the Lady was then about ten yeers of age) which was not at all hindered by the Parliament. But the Queen carried with her all, or the greatest part of, the Crown-Jewels of *England*, which immediately she pawned in *Holland*, and with that money bought Arms and Ammunition for that sad War which ensued not long after, between the King and the Parliament of *England*.

The King's stay at *Canterbury* and *Dover* was not long, nor the places so remote, but that some businesse might passe, though with great trouble of those Lords, and others, Members of the House of Commons, who posted between, upon all occasions. The greatest thing which was done in that time, was that the King at *Canterbury* signed the Bill for taking-away Bishops Votes in Parliament.

The King at Canterbury gives his royal assent to a Bill for taking-away the Bishops right of Voting in Parliament.

When the Queen and her daughter had taken Sail, the King came back to *Greenwich*, whither he sent for the Prince and Duke of *York* to come to him, and attend him in his journey to the City of *York*, which was the place which he intended to reside at, and to that purpose immediately went on his way as far as *Theobalds* ; to which place he was followed with a Petition from both Houses, presented to him upon the first of *March* 1641. The substance of it was, to intreat his Majestie that he would at last be pleased to grant their necessary Petition concerning the *Militia* of *England* ; which if he did refuse, in these times of distraction, they must be enforced, and did resolve, to dispose of it for the safety of the Kingdom, in such manner as had been propounded to his Majestie. They likewise intreated him to continue his abode neer *London*, and his Parliament, and not to take his son, the Prince, out of those parts : and, in conclusion, desired his Majestie to be informed by them, his great Council, that, by the Laws of *England*,

the

A Petition from the Parliament is presented to the King at Theobald's in Hertfordshire, on the 1st of March, 1641-2.

the power of raising, ordering, and disposing-of the *Militia*, within any Citie, Town, or other place, cannot be granted to any Corporation by Charter, or otherwise, without the authority and consent of Parliament.

The King denied to give any other Answer concerning the *Militia*, than what he had before done; That he conceived himself not safe in any place neer *London*; and that he would take such a care of the Prince his son, as should justifie him to God as a Father, and to his Dominions as a King. The King's answer to it.

The Parliament, upon occasion of that short Answer of the King to their Petition, voted presently that that Answer was a flat Denial; and that all was truth which they had averred in their Petition, concerning the danger of his removal so far from the Parliament, and likewise carrying of his son away. It was likewise ordered by the Lords and Commons, that the Earl of *Northumberland*, Lord-Admiral, should give speedie directions for all the Ships belonging to the Navie Royal, to be speedily rigged, and fitted for the service of the Common-wealth. Proceedings of the Parliament there-upon.

A Declaration was drawn then by both Houses, and presented to the King at *Newmarket*, upon the ninth of *March*, by the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Holland*, with some Members of the House of Commons, wherein were represented to him some of the old Grievances expressed in the first Remonstrance at his return out of *Scotland*: as, That the designe of altering Religion had been carried-on by those of greatest authority about him, for divers yeeres: That the War against *Scotland* was procured in order to that designe: That the Rebellion in *Ireland* was contrived here in *England*, out of many presumptions gathered from several examinations there. They speak likewise of his attempt for bringing his Army against the Parliament, of which before mention was made; of his Warrants granted, contrary to promise, for transportation of *JERMYN*, *DIGBY*, and other Delinquents; of that great breach of Parliament-Priviledge, in coming to the House of Commons to surprize those Members: by all which they endeavour to prove their fears and jealousies to be grounded upon true substantial reasons, and necessary for the safety of the Common-wealth entrusted to them; and that the King's fear to reside neer *London*, is altogether without ground, and pretended for nothing but to perplex the Common-wealth, proceeding from evil and traiterous Counsels; affirming, that His Majesties absence would cause men to believe, that it was out of designe to discourage the undertakers, and hinder the other provisions for relieving *Ireland*; that it would hearten the Rebels there, and all dis-affected persons in this Kingdom. A Declaration of the Parliament is presented to the King at Newmarket, March 9, 1641-2.

The King expressed much indignation when he received this Remonstrance, complaining of the manner of it, that it was onely an upbraiding, not an invitation or perswasion of him to return to the Parliament; and told them, that in all *ARISTOTLE*'s Rhetoricks there was no such argument of Perswasion; and that he would answer it in another Declaration, which, within few days after, was drawn-up, and published; wherein, with deep protestations, he vindicates the truth of his Religion, and justifies his other proceedings, denying those Warrants for transporting The King publishes a Declaration in answer to it.

porting Master JERMYN, and others, in that manner which they urge them : taxes them with their needlesse fears, and uncertain expressions of advertisements from *Rome, Venice, Paris*, and other places : recites the many gracious Acts which he had already passed this Parliament, to satisfie his People ; and protests, in conclusion, that he is most desirous to reside near his Parliament, and would immediately return to *London*, if he could see, or hear of, any provisions made for his security.

The King sends the Parliament another message from *Huntingdon*, March 15, 1641-2.

The King sent them another Message from *Huntingdon*, on the 15th of *March*, being then upon his removal to the City of *York* ; wherein he expresses his care of *Ireland*, and not to break the Priviledge of Parliament ; but chiefly, to let them know that he understands his own Rights ; forbidding them to presume, upon any pretence of Order, or Ordinance, (to which he is no party) concerning the *Militia*, or any other thing, to do, or execute, what is not warranted by those Laws ; and, withal, recommending to them the substance of his Message of the twentieth of *January* last ; that they compose and digest with all speed, such Acts as they shall think fit, for the present, and future, establishment of their Priviledges.

These were the heads of some Declarations, Petitions, and Answers : for about this time, and for three months after, such Messages, Remonstrances, Petitions and Answers, grew so voluminous, upon all occasions, as might, recited *verbatim*, make a large History.

The King goes to *York*.

Thus is the King gone to *York*, while the Parliament sit at *London*, declaring in vain, and voting (as they did upon receipt of his last Message) by consent of both Houses,

Notes of both Houses of Parliament thereupon.

1. *That, the King's absence so far remote from his Parliament, is not onely an obstruction, but may be a destruction, to the affairs of Ireland.*

2. *That, when the Lords and Commons, in Parliament, shall declare what the Law of the Land is, to have this not onely questioned and controverted, but contradicted, and a Command that it should not be obeyed, is an high breach of the Priviledge of Parliament.*

3. *That they which advised the King to absent himself from the Parliament, are enemies to the peace of this Kingdom, and justly to be suspected as favourers of the Rebellion in Ireland.*

It may seem strange to a Reader, that the King, without any, but such bootlesse opposition as Pen and Paper can make against him, even in the sight and notice of a Parliament, whilst they not onely beheld his actions, but seemed to discern the designs, and foresee the effects which would flow from them, could be able to carry the work on so clearly and so far, until the whole Kingdom were thereby involved in a most calamitous and destructive War. I will not presume to publish any

any opinion of mine own, how, or when, this ruine of the Kingdom should have been prevented ; but onely relate what was then done, that posterity hereafter may judge of it.

It was not unknown to the Parliament, at least not unsuspected, (for it was usually talked among the people of that time) that the Queen, when she passed into *Holland*, carried with her the Crown-Jewels, to pawn, or sell, there : which, if she did, they could not be ignorant what the intention was, or what the effect was like to prove ; nor could it be unknown to them how unlawful the act was, and therefore how fit to be prevented. For they indicted her afterwards of High Treason for that fact, and were able to tell the world, in a Declaration, how great a crime it is in a King himself to make-away the Ornaments of the Crown, and, in particular, the Jewels of it ; yea, in such Kings as did it onely to spend, or give-away, not to maintain War against their own People ; for whose preservation not onely those Jewels, but whatsoever else they possesse, was first bestowed on them.

They seemed to oppose the Prince's departure from *Hampton-Court*, to attend the King his Father into the North, because it might increase fears and jealousies in the People : but the King carried him away.

Above all the rest, they were not ignorant how wonderful an obstruction to all businesse of Parliament, and to the settling of *England*, or relieving of *Ireland*, that far removal of the King's Person from the Parliament must needs prove, and which themselves sufficiently expressed : That the very Journey itself, though no worse designe were in it, was in no kinde excusable, as being most inconvenient, for the reasons aforesaid, and convenient in nothing that was ever alledged for it. Yet the King passed quietly thither.

One designe of the King, which, indeed, was thought the chief of that his Northern Expedition, was prevented by the Parliament by an open and forcible way ; which was, the seizing upon the strong Town and Fort of *Hull*, with all that Magazine of Arms which was there deposited. But it was very remarkable what means had been used on both sides, to prevent, if it had been possible, that open denial of the King's entrance into *Hull*, and that the matter should not have come so far ; Which the King conceived so great an affront to him, that it grew the subject of many large and voluminous Declarations afterward, from either Part.

The King intends to take possession of the Town and Fort of Hull.

For the prevention of that, before it happened, the King from *York* had sent a Message to the Parliament, upon the eighth of *April* 1642, that he intended to go in Person over into *Ireland*, to chastise, by force of Arms, those barbarous and bloodie Rebels ; and to that purpose, he thought fit to advertise the Parliament, that he intended to raise, forthwith, by his Commissions, in the Counties near *Westchester*, a Guard for his own Person (when he should come into *Ireland*) consisting of two thousand Foot, and two hundred Horse, which he would arm at *Westchester*, from his Magazine of *Hull*.

He communicates his intention to the Parliament by a message, April 8, 1642.

But at the same time, the Lords and Commons in Parliament had sent a Petition to the King, for leave to remove the Magazine at *Hull* to the Tower of *London* ; alledging, that the Stores of Arms and Ammunition in the Tower were much

The Parliament Petitions the King for leave to remove the Magazine of arms at Hull, to the Tower of London.

much diminished, and that the necessity of Supplies for the Kingdom of *Ireland* (for which they had been issued from thence) daily increased: That the occasion for which the Magazine was placed at *Hull*, was taken-away, there being no danger now from *Scotland*. They likewise alledged, that it would be kept in the Tower with lesse charge, and more safety, and transported from thence with much more convenience for the service of *Ireland*.

The King seemed very angry at this Petition, alledging, among other things, that, if any of those Arms were designed for *Ulster* or *Leinster*, the conveyance of them would be more easie and convenient from *Hull* than from *London*. But most of all he seemed to be exasperated (for the Parliament had used timely prevention) that they had sent to keep-out from thence the Earl of *Newcastle*, whom the King, in that Answer, termeth *A Person of honour, fortune, and unblemished reputation*, and committed that Town and Fort (without his consent) to the hands of Sir JOHN HOTHAM.

The Parliament appoints Sir John Hotham Governour of the Town and Fort of Hull.

The Parliament, as it appeared by their expression in a Declaration at that time, were much confirmed in that opinion, which they had, of the King's aiming at *Hull*, when he went Northward, by an intercepted letter from the Lord GEORGE DIGBY, dated from *Middleborough*, in *Zealand*, the 20th of *January*, 1641, to Sir LEWIS DIVES, wherein he writes, that, if the King will declare himself, and retire to a safe place, he should be able to wait upon him from thence, as well as out of any part of *England*, over and above the service which he might do for him there in the mean time. The like expressions he used in another Letter to the Queen, intercepted in the same Packet, intimating some service he might do her in those parts; and desired a Cypher, whereby to hold correspondence with her in writing.

Lord Digby takes part with the King against the Parliament.

This young Lord, of whom we spake before, about the death of the Earl of *Strafford*, (a man of excellent parts, and one that had been acceptable to the Parliament, until his Speech about that businesse, and some other miscarriage, detected upon the same occasion,) was much alienated in heart from the Parliament, because that Speech of his (which he had printed against Command) was ordered to be burned by the hands of the Hang-man; so that, afterward, he became a great cherisher, (as appeared in divers things,) of those divisions which were growing between the King and Parliament, and was voted-against in the House of Commons, as a disturber of the publike peace, for appearing armed at *Kingston* upon *Thames*, in an unusual and illegal manner, with other circumstances thereto belonging. Whereupon, the Lords in Parliament sent for him; and, if he appeared not within twenty days, proclaimed him Traitor. But he in the mean time was transported by Sir JOHN PENNINGTON into *Holland*, by a Warrant under the King's hand, as the Declaration of the Lords and Commons to the King, in *March* following, expressed.

The Parliament settles the Militia of England without the King's concurrence.

During the time that the King and Parliament were (as aforesaid) busied about getting the Magazine of *Hull*, the Parliament proceeded, by degrees, in settling the *Militia* in divers Counties, and putting the Commands into such hands as they reposed confidence in; as likewise to take charge of the Navie, and provide by that means

means against any forraign force that might assault the Kingdom. And, because the Earl of *Northumberland*, Lord Admiral, by reason of indisposition of health, was disenabled then for commanding the Fleet in his own person, they thereupon recommended to his Lordship the Earl of *Warwick*, (a man of such ability in Sea-affairs, and such untainted reputation, as they durst highly trust) to supply his Lordship's room in that employment. But, understanding that the King had chosen Sir JOHN PENNINGTON into that Command, a Message was sent from both Houses to the King, on the 28th of *March*, to intreat him that the employment might no longer be detained from the Earl of *Warwick*, as a noble person, chosen by both Houses of Parliament in that Service, the Charge whereof was to be born by the Common-wealth.

The King refused to admit of the Earl of *Warwick*, taking great exception at the Message from both Houses, as appeared by his Letter, to the Lord-Keeper, concerning it, that they would take upon them the nominating of the chief Sea-Commander. But the Earl of *Warwick*, within few months after, (though not without some opposition of divers Gentlemen, who had before been placed in Command by the King, and strove to carry-away their Ships to His Majestie,) was possessed of the whole Navie : of which some more particulars may hereafter be related.

The Earl of Warwick, by the appointment of the Parliament, takes upon him the command of the English Navy.

Upon the 23d of *April*, 1642, the King, attended by some Noblemen, and no great train of Gentlemen and Souldiers, came before the walls of *Hull*, to demand entrance there ; but he found the Gates shut, and the Bridges drawn-up, by the command of Sir JOHN HOTHAM, a member of the House of Commons, who was, by the Parliament, entrusted with the Government of that Town. Sir JOHN HOTHAM appeared upon the Wall, and, kneeling-down there, intreated his Majestie that he would be pleased not to command that, which he must be enforced (though extremely grieved to disobey his Majesty in any thing) to deny at that time ; alledging that he could not admit his Majestie, without breach of trust to the Parliament, beseeching the King to give him leave to send to the Parliament, to acquaint them with his command, and take their direction.

Sir John Hotham refuses to admit the King into the Town of Hull, April 23, 1642.

The King, upon this denial, grew into choler, and, after some hot words, seeming not to believe that the Parliament had commanded any such thing ; and to that purpose speaking, demanded of Sir JOHN HOTHAM, that, if he had Order from the Parliament to keep-out his Person, he should shew it in writing ; for, otherwise, he would not believe it. But Sir JOHN HOTHAM, because the Order was not in those express words, as naming the King's particular person, though he knew the sense and meaning of the Parliament, did not produce any Writing ; onely continued beseeching the King not to command him that which he might not do : Whereupon the King, after some hours spent in vain about the Town, proclaimed Sir JOHN HOTHAM, a Traitor ; and returned, when he had received, out of the Town, his Son, the Duke of *York* ; and his Nephew, the Prince Electour ; whom Sir JOHN, the day before, had admitted into the Town, entertained, and lodged there that night.

The next day the King, in a Message to the Parliament, complained of that affront offered by Sir JOHN HOTHAM, accusing him for that he had traiterously and

and seditiously strived to put his disobedience upon the Parliament, the King seeming to believe that HOTHAM had done it upon his own head, without any direction or authority from them: And within two dayes after, sent another Message to the Parliament, complaining, in a sharper manner than before, of that great indignity, which, if they afforded him no reparation, would make the World believe that his priviledges were lesse then any Subject's in the Land; and that it was more lawful to rob him of his proper Goods, than the meanest Member of the Kingdom. He sent also, at the same time, a Letter to the Mayor of *Hull*, commanding him, and all Officers of that Town, to take care that no part of the Magazines should be removed, or transported, out of the Town, under any pretence of Order, or Power, whatsoever, without his Royal Assent, under his Hand. He caused likewise all Passages between *Hull* and *London*, to be stopped-up, and by that means apprehended a servant of Sir JOHN HOTHAM's, going with a Letter to the Parliament concerning the proceedings before-mentioned.

The Parliament immediately, upon notice of these things, declared their reasons for *Hull*, and that the stopping of Passages, and intercepting of Messengers, or Letters, to, or from, the Parliament, or in their service, was an high breach of the Priviledges of Parliament, which by the Laws of the Land, and their Protestation, they were bound to defend, and punish the violaters; authorizing, by Ordinance of both Houses, all Sheriffs, Justices, Constables, and other Officers, to aid the persons employed in the said service, for their more speedie, free, and safe passage; giving Order also to the said Officers within the Counties of *York* and *Lincoln*, to suppress any Armies raised to force *Hull*, or stop the passages before-mentioned, in disturbance of the Kingdom's peace.

The Parliament
justifies Sir John
Hotham's conduct

It was voted by them, two days after, that Sir JOHN HOTHAM, had done nothing *but in obedience to the Command of both Houses of Parliament*. Resolved, also it was upon the Question, *That this declaring of Sir JOHN HOTHAM, Traitor, being a Member of the House of Commons, was an high breach of the Priviledges of Parliament*. Resolved again, *That declaring Sir JOHN HOTHAM, Traitor, without due Processe of Law, was against the Liberty of the Subject, and Laws of the Land*.

An Order of Assistance was then given to the Earl of *Stamford*, the Lord WILLOUGHBY of *Parham*, Sir EDWARD AYSCOUGH, Sir CHRISTOPHER WRAY, Sir SAMUEL OWFIELD, and Master HATCHER, as Committees of both Houses, sent down to *Hull*, and the two Counties of *York* and *Lincoln*, for service of the Kingdom, that all Sheriffs, Justices, Mayors, &c. should be assisting to them upon all occasions.

To that Declaration, Votes, and Orders of Assistance, of both Houses of Parliament, the King, on the fourth of *May*, returned an Answer, wherein at large he expresses how hainous the affront was, and how much he accounts himself injured by the Parliament, in not repairing him against HOTHAM; labouring to prove by ancient Statutes there cited, that Sir JOHN HOTHAM's denial of entrance to him, was absolutely High Treason by the Law of the Land.

Upon

Upon this subject, within the space of one week, two other Declarations and Answers passed between the King and both Houses, too large to be here inserted : but the scope of the King's Declarations in general, are to vindicate his own Rights and dignity allowed him as King, by the Laws of the Land ; wherein he seemeth not to take notice of the present occasion, or such things as are conceived dangers and thought necessary to be prevented by a Parliament sitting. The Parliament, on the other side, with all humility, and reverent expressions to the King's Person, seeming to take no notice of any affront offered or intended to his Majestie himself, but onely of preserving *Hull*, the *Militia*, and *Navy*, out of the hands of those wicked Counsellors whom they conceived to be too prevalent with him, to the danger of ruining the Kingdom and himself; both which they laboured to preserve, and were lawfully called to it by that Authority which belongs to Parliaments, by the Fundamental Constitution of the English Government. They desire to inform the King, that his Interest in Towns, Arms, or the Kingdom itself, is not of that kinde which private men have in their Goods, to sell or dispose of them at pleasure ; but onely as entrusted to him for the good of all : in performance of which trust, none but the Parliament, while it sitteth, are or ought to be his Counsellors and directors : that there can be no good or useful disputation, where the Principles are not granted : and it was ever heretofore taken (say they) for a certain Principle, That the Parliament sitting is the onely Judge of what is dangerous to the Commonwealth, and what useful, as likewise what is lawful in those cases ; which the King, by advice of no private Council whatsoever, ought to control, or contradict ; which Principle, till the King will be pleased rightly to apprehend, Disputations and Declarations are endlesse, and no true understanding between him and his people can be begotten.

Of all these things, if a Reader desire to be satisfied in particular, he may finde the questions all fully stated by the Parliament, and the King's desires expressed by himself, in two large Declarations ; one called the Parliament's third Remonstrance, dated the 26th of *May*, 1642 ; and the King's Answer to that Remonstrance.

But things began to go on in an high manner ; the Parliament authorizing Sir JOHN HOTHAM to issue out Warrants to Constables, and other Officers, to come with Arms for the defence of *Hull* : and the King, on, the other side, forbidding any such Warrants, bringing, or training, without an expresse Authority under his hand. The King summons the Gentry of Yorkshire to attend him at York, May 12th, 1642.

The King had summoned the Gentry of that County to attend him at the City of *York* ; which they accordingly did, upon the 12th of *May*, 1642, where he caused, after he had spoken some few words to them, to be read aloud in their hearing, his Answer to the Declaration of both Houses concerning *Hull*, the Answer of the Parliament to his two Messages concerning *Hull*, together with his Reply to the same, and his Message to both Houses, declaring the reasons why he refused to passe that Bill of the *Militia* : after which he proceeded in a Speech to them, wherein he strove to make them apprehend, that traiterous attempts might
be

be made against his Person; and for that reason he desired a Guard of Horse and Foot to be levied there for his defence. He complained likewise, that the Committee of Parliament consisting of four Members of the House of Commons, FERDINANDO LORD FAIRFAX, Sir HUGH CHOLMLEY, Sir PHILLIP STAPLETON, and Sir HENRY CHOLMLEY, refused to obey his Command. For they, being there employed, in their own Country, by the Parliament, to do service to the State, were commanded by the King to depart out of the County; which they durst not do, against the intention of the Parliament, who employed them there. But the King in that Speech to the County, bade them take heed of those four Gentlemen, not knowing what doctrine of disobedience they might preach to the people, under colour of obeying the Parliament. The King's Speech and Declaration read, seemed to be much applauded by many Gentlemen, and their servants: as, when those things which came from the Parliament were read, the same persons expressed much scorn, hissing and reviling the language and reason of them.

But divers of the Gentry, and the greatest part of the Free-holders, began with sorrow to consider that this division of the King from his great Council could produce nothing but misery to the Kingdom, and dishonour to himself: and therefore they humbly answered his Propositions concerning a Guard, That they were willing to do any service, or expose their lives to any hazard, for the safety of his Majesties Royal Person; yet they thought themselves unworthy to advise him in a thing of so high consequence; but humbly beseeched him to impart the grounds of his fears and jealousies to his high Court of Parliament, of whose loyal care and affections to the King's honour and safetie, and to the prosperitie of the whole Kingdom, they were most confident. And in behalf of the four fore-mentioned Members of Parliament, lately employed to attend *your Majestie* (said they) *from both Houses, being all Gentlemen of quality and estate in the County; we humbly crave your Majesties leave to expresse our confidence in their unstained loyalty to your Majestie, so far as that you may securely admit their attendance to negotiate their employments, until they shall be recalled by the Parliament. And we do all engage ourselves for their fidelity, as being most assured that your Royal Person shall be secure in the General loyalty of your Subjects in this County, without any extraordinary Guard.*

A Petition is presented to the King from great numbers of people in Yorkshire to comply with the advice of his Parliament.

The King was presented also the next day with a Petition from many thousands, who termed themselves, *peaceably-affected Subjects in the County of York*, in which, expressing their loyalty and affection to him, they speak thus: *We are confident that no so absolute and hearty observance of your Majesties just commands can be demonstrated, as when you shall in Parliament declare them: If they be divided (which God forbid) our hearts even tremble to consider the danger, and diminution of the honour and safety of your Self and Kingdom; since it is clear to every understanding*

ing, that it is not a divided part of one or several Counties can afford that honour and safety to your Majesty as the whole Kingdom: Which you may command, no ground of fear or danger remaining, if a good confidence were begot betwixt your Majesty and the Parliament; whose grave and loyal Counsels are, as we humbly conceive, the visible way, under God, to put a speedie end to the troubles in Ireland, and establish your Throne in Righteousnesse. And, lastly, we humbly supplicate that we may represent our unfitnessse to become Judges betwixt your Majesty and Parliament in any thing, or dispute the Authority of either: which we humbly conceive do fortifie each other, &c.

The King was not well satisfied, or pleased, with this Petition, but persisted still in his former way of raising Forces, under the name of a *Guard*; whilst the Parliament were voting to maintain those Gentlemen, *their Committee in the North*, in such things as they have done, and shall further do, in obedience to their commands, for preservation of the Kingdom's Peace; as also to maintain their Ordinance concerning the *Militia*, and to issue-out Commissions into all parts of the Kingdom, and appoint certain days for all the Trained-Bands to be exercised in each County according to that Ordinance; and that some Members might be sent into the severall Counties, to see the Ordinance performed; and the Magazines of those severall Counties in *England* and *Wales* to be forthwith put into the power of the Lord-Lieutenants of the said Counties, being such as were entrusted by the Parliament. And, whereas the King had made Proclamation for all the Gentlemen and others of that County to attend him in Arms as a *Guard*; the Parliament three days after declared, that it was against the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom, that any of the Subjects thereof should be commanded by the King to attend him at his pleasure, but such as are bound thereto by special service; and that whosoever, upon pretence of his command, shall take Arms, and gather together with others in a warlike manner, to the terror of the King's people, shall be esteemed disturbers of the publike peace: and that the Sheriffs of those Counties where such raising, or drawing, of armed men should be, should immediately raise the power of the Countie to suppress them, and keep the King's Peace according to Law.

The King continues to raise forces under the name of a *Guard* to his person.

And the Parliament raises the *Militia*.

So different and directly contrary, at this time, were the Commands of the King and Parliament, in all things, that the Lords in Parliament, having been informed that the King was resolved to adjourn the next Term from *Westminster* to *Yorh*, and had given command to the Lord-Keeper to issue Proclamations and Writs to that purpose, voted that such a removal of the Term, while the Parliament sate, was illegal; and ordered that the Lord-Keeper should not issue any Writs, or seal any Proclamation, tending to that end.

 CHAP. IV.

Many Members of both Houses leave the Parliament, and repair to the King. Nine of the Lords who first went-away, are impeached by the Commons, and censured by the Peers. The Great Seal is carried-away from London to York. Some Votes of Parliament concerning the King's proceedings. A Petition, with nineteen Propositions, sent from the Parliament to the King.

Many members of both houses of Parliament repair to the King at York, in April and May, 1642.

THE King proceeded in his earnest endeavour of raising Forces, as a Guard for his Person: which in some measure he had effected, by many fair expressions of love and grace to the people of those Northern Counties, and serious Protestations of the clearness of his intent from any violation of Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom, or making War against the Parliament. But the Kingdom was not much affrighted with any Forces which the King could so raise; nor could any other attempt of his in the Northern parts, make the people fear a Civil War, until they saw that great defection of the Parliament-Members, which began before the end of *April*, and continued for the greatest part of that *May*: for at that time did the Lords, one after another, and sometimes by numbers, abandon the Parliament sitting, and go to the King at *York*: insomuch that, in a very short space, those Lords became the greater number; and their departure began therefore to seem lesse strange, than the constant sitting of the rest. The Lords who left the Parliament, were these: the Duke of *Richmond*, Marquesse *Hartford*, the Earls of *Lindsey*, *Cumberland*, *Huntingdon*, *Bath*, *Southampton*, *Dorset*, *Salisbury*, (although *Salisbury*, within few days after, repenting himself, made a secret escape from *York* to *London*, and joyned himself again to the Parliament, with whom he continued constant ever after) *Northampton*, *Devonshire*, *Bristol*, *Westmerland*, *Barkeshire*, *Monmouth*, *Rivers*, *Newcastle*, *Dover*, *Carnarvan*, *Newport*; the Lords *MATBEVERS*, *WILLOUGHBY* of *Eresby*, *RICH*, *HOWARD* of *Charleton*,
 -NEWARK,

NEWARK, PAGET, CHANDOYS, FAWCONBRIDGE, PAWLET, LOVELACE, SAVILE, COVENTRY, MOHUN, DUNSMORE, SEYMOUR, GREY of *Ruthen*, CAPEL. With in the same compasse of time, many of the House of Commons, (though no great number, in respect of those who continued in that house,) did likewise so far break that trust which was reposed in them, as to forsake their seats in Parliament; some of them, as was reported, invited by Letters from the King, and others of their own accord.

At the revolt of so many members from the Parliament, the Kingdom in general began to fear; and all that loved the Nation's Peace, were in an high measure dismayed; among whom nothing was to be heard, in all meetings and discourses, but sad presages of misery to the Kingdom, if Almighty God did not in a miraculous way prevent it: They concluded, that no other way could have been found out to endanger the overthrow of that Parliament, which many open attempts and secret conspiracies could not do: That, as the ruine of *England* could not in probability be wrought but by itself; so the Parliament could not be broken (a Prologue to the other) but by her own Members, and that sentence verified, *Perditio tua ex te*. Though the opinions of men differed concerning the censure of those Members; while some condemned, others in some degree excused them, according as affection and private interests did lead them: yet concerning the Effects which that Revolt in all probability must produce, all rational men concurred in opinion, that nothing but Calamity and Ruine could flow from it. What else (said they) can this Revolt do, but nourish and increase the King's disaffection to the Parliament? What, but encourage his distance from it, and attempts against it? What, but secure the Irish Rebels, and endanger the losse of that Kingdom; cherish Papists, obstruct Justice, and give impunity to all Delinquents? Nothing else had power to undermine and shake the dignity and reverence belonging to that high Court; whilst not onely the People, by that diminution of their number, were perswaded to esteem of it as an imperfect Parliament; but the King might take that advantage of it (which proved true in his succeeding Declarations and Writings, what he never did before) as to call them a Faction, or pretended Parliament, and such like.

Various reflections of the people on the abandonment of the Parliament by many of it's members.

In censuring those Lords and Commons who deserted the Parliament, the People, as was said before, did much differ. Some, considering how great the number was, and that many of them were of whole estates, of good reputation, and able parts, began to think, or at least to say, that the Parliament was not free enough; that those Members (which was also their own excuse) were curbed by a prevalent faction in the Houses, and over-awed by tumults from the City of *London*. Upon that occasion, they called to minde in what manner the names of nine and fifty Members of the House of Commons had been posted-up at the Exchange, for dissenting from the rest about condemning of the Earl of *Strafford*; besides the menacing speeches which had been given by rude people to some Lords, whom they thought ill-affected.

Others answered, that although such things had been rashly and foolishly done

by some unadvised persons, yet it could not be feared that any tumults from the Citie would ever violate a Parliament sitting; and that the tumultuous appearance of such multitudes from the Citie, was rather intended for encouragement and security of the Parliament against such invasions as might be made upon them, to awe their just freedom, and treacherous Conspiracies which by report were made against them by people disaffected to that high Court; which that Plot of bringing the Army against them formerly, and late resorts of armed persons about *White-hall*, gave them cause to fear: That no fears of danger could be pretended from the House itself against any Member, but such as that Member was bound to undergo and suffer, rather than betray so great a trust of the people: That it was to be presumed, no Member of Parliament who was well-affected to his Country, could suffer any thing from the house itself; whose ends and counsels must needs be supposed to tend to the publike good, or else our Ancestours, who constituted that Frame of Government, were much deceived: That it was very improbable the Liberty of Subjects should be violated by that Court, which is the onely defence and conservator of it, and without which, it had always suffered from Princes, yea, such Princes as were not very wicked.

N. B.

They alledged that it was very dishonourable for those Lords, being the greater number, to pretend fear for deserting the Parliament: for, if it were upon a true dislike of any proceedings there, they were enow to have stayed, and perchance have cured those inconveniences, and too many to have suffered in a good Cause; though Honour would command one man alone, lawfully called to it, to maintain a truth with any hazard. On the other side, they were too many to flee, to encourage the King against his Parliament, and thereby foment that dissention which could produce no good effect.

It was alledged by many men, that some of those Lords were Noblemen of honourable and vertuous repute. Though that were not denied, nor could any certain signe from the former demeanours of the Lords in general, arise, to distinguish who were likely to adhere to the Parliament, and who to desert it (for they were deceived on both sides, in some particulars) yet certainly it was averred, that those Lords whom the people had most especially trusted-in, as true Patriots, proved to be part of those who continued in the House; and those whom the people in general distasted, or distrusted, happened to be among those, who, upon this occasion, forsook the Parliament.

N. B.

It was likewise frequently spoken, that those Members of the House of Commons who deserted it, were men generally of as able parts as any that continued there. It was no wonder, (replied others) but very probable that they were such men, and such as had, or thought they had, good parts enough to be looked-upon by a Prince: for those men (though we should esteem them all of equal honesty,) were likeliest to fall-off. There is a difference between Wisdom and good Parts, such as we count Eloquence, Wit, polite Learning, and the like: and that Wisdom which is least adorned with such dresses as these, is usually at such times most safe in itself, and free-est from being corrupted; as that Beauty is, which is set-off
with

with the least witchery of Attire: for that Beauty which is curiously decked, as it is most subject to be tempted by others; so it is most apt to be proud of itself, and by consequence, to betray itself to such a temptation as is great enough. So it hath been often seen in this case (as was observed by an old Parliament-man) that those Gentlemen of fine parts, when other men of a plainer wisdom have had the honour in a constant way to do excellent service for the Common-wealth, have been won from their Countrey's cause, as soon as Majestie hath at all vouchsafed to tempt them, or that, perchance, their opinion of themselves hath made them meet, or seek, such a temptation. Besides that danger of invitation from a King, it hath been too often known, that men of such parts, or that think so of themselves, have been apter to take pet, and grow angry, when any Speech of theirs hath not received that honour which they expected, or any other affront hath been offered to them; and what such an anger may make proud and ambitious spirits to do, even against their own Country, and the dictates of their Conscience and Reason, the world hath been taught by many examples, some of high consequence, and very remarkable, such as CORIOLANUS the Romane, and JULIAN the Spanish, General, which for the eminence of the persons, and extraordinary effects which they wrought in the world, must needs fall into Record; when the actions of mean and private men are buried in oblivion. Besides, there are many, whose Callings make them capable of easier and greater gratifications from the King than other men; as Lawyers and Divines; who will therefore be apt to lean that way where the preferment lies. Such discourses were frequent in all companies at that time; for different affections did at all meetings beget such argumentative language.

What sense and apprehension the Parliament had of so many Members forsaking their station, shall appear anon, by a Vote passed in the House of Commons, and presented to the Lords by Master DENZIL HOLLIS, after some intervening passages have been related.

Whilst the King, encouraged and strengthened by this great accession of reputation to his side, pursued his designe of raising Forces in the North; the Parliament, after they had on the twentieth of *May* petitioned the King to disband such Forces, and rely for his security (as his Predecessours had done) upon the Laws, and the affections of his People, contenting himself with his usual and ordinary Guards; declared that otherwise they held themselves bound in duty towards God, and the Trust reposed in them by the People, and by the Fundamental Laws and Constitutions of the Kingdom, to employ their care and utmost power to secure the Parliament, and preserve the Kingdom's Peace; and immediately it was voted in The Parliament passes a Vote, "that it appears that the King, seduced by wicked Counsel, intends to make War against the Parliament, who, in all their consultations and actions, have proposed no other end unto themselves, but the care of his Kingdoms, and the performance of all duty and loyalty to his Person upon them," May 20, 1642.

It was likewise resolved upon the Question, *That, whensoever the King maketh War upon the Parliament, it is a breach of the Trust reposed in him by his People, contrary to his Oath, and tending to the dissolution of this Government. As also, That*

That whosoever shall serve or assist him in such Wars, are Traitors by the Fundamental Laws of this Kingdom, and have been so adjudged in two Acts of Parliament; 11 RICH. 2. and 1 HEN. 4: and that such persons ought to suffer as Traitors.

The Parliament orders nine Lords who had deserted them, to rejoin them, May 30, 1642.

And, upon their refusal to obey this order, the House of Commons impeaches them before the House of Lords, June 15, 1642.

But those Lords who had forsaken the Parliament continuing still with the King in the Northern parts, the Parliament by an Order of the 30th of *May*, summoned nine of them, who first had gone away, to appear at *Westminster*; viz. the Earls of *Northampton*, *Devonshire*, *Dover*, and *Monmouth*; the Lords *HOWARD* of *Charleton*, *RICH*, *GREY* of *Ruthen*, *COVENTRY*, and *CAPEL*: but they utterly refused to come-away, returning an Answer in writing; which the Parliament judged to be a slighting and scornful Letter: Upon which, a Vote was passed against them in the House of Commons, and presented on the 15th of *June* to the Lords, by Master *HOLLIS*; with an Oration of his own concerning the importance of the businesse; the greatest part of which Speech being here inserted, may give light to the Reader concerning the condition of the Kingdom at that time, and the judgement of the Houses upon it.

His Speech began thus :

The Speech of Mr. Denzill Hollis, before the House of Lords, impeaching the said nine Lords for their desertion.

“ My Lords, By command of the Knights, Citizens and Burgesses of the House of Commons, I come hither to your Lordships in behalf of the Parliament, or rather in behalf of the whole Kingdom, labouring with much distraction, many fears, great apprehensions of evil and mischief intended against it, and now hatching and preparing by that malignant party, which thirsts after the destruction of Religion, Laws and Liberty; all which are folded-up, cherished, and preserved in the careful bosome of the Parliament.

“ It hath ever been the policie of evil Counsellors (who are the greatest enemies we have in the world, or can have) to strike at Parliaments, keep-off Parliaments, break Parliaments, or divide Parliaments, by making Factions, casting-in Diversions and Obstructions, to hinder and interrupt the proceedings of Parliament; all against the Parliament.

“ Your Lordships have had experience of this Truth this Parliament; a succession of designes upon it: First, to awe it, and take-away the freedom of it by the terrour of an Army; then, to bring Force against it, actually to assault it, and with the Sword to cut in sunder this onely Band which ties and knits-up King and People; the People among themselves, and the whole frame of this Government, in one firm, and, I hope, indissoluble, knot of Peace and Unity.

“ God diverted those designes, did blowe upon them; presently, another is set upon, which was, To obstruct and hinder our proceedings, that in the meantime the flame of Rebellion might consume the Kingdom of *Ireland*, and distempers, distractions, and jealousies, be fomented here at home, to tear-out the bowels of this Kingdom, the Parliament being disabled from helping it, by occasion of so many diversions, so much businesse cut-out unto it, many obstructions

“structions and difficulties, especially that great one, from whence all the rest
 “receive countenance and support, his Majestie’s absenting himself, not concur-
 “ring with us, and so withdrawing both his presence and influence; by which
 “means such remedies could not be applied as were necessary, and what was done,
 “was done with infinite trouble to the Parliament, and excessive charge to the
 “Subject, double, treble, of what otherwise would have served the turn: So the
 “Subject is grieved, and oppressed with charge, and the blame of all is laid upon
 “the Parliament, and the Parliament unjustly said to be the cause of all these
 “Evils, which the authors of them had made so great, and so confirmed and
 “secured by the frequent interruptions of the Parliament, that they could not
 “suddenly, nor easily, be suppressed or removed

“Well, by God’s infinite blessing, the Parliament was in a fair possibility to
 “wade thorow this likewise; and, though the Night had been black and stormy,
 “some Day began to appear: miraculously our Armies have prospered in *Ireland*;
 “and, God be praised, the malevolent practices of these Vipers at home, as they
 “appeared, were in some sort mastered; and the Parliament began to act and
 “operate towards the settling of the great Affairs, both of Church and State, and
 “providing for the defence and safety of this Kingdome, against either forraign in-
 “vasion, or any striving of the disaffected party among themselves.

“Then three ways are together assayed for the weakening and invalidating the
 “proceeding and power of the Parliament, and making-way for the utter subver-
 “sion of it.

1. “Force is gathered together at *York*, under pretence of a Guard for His
 “Majestie’s Person, to make an opposition against the Parliament, and by strong
 “hand to support and protect Delinquents; so as no Order of Parliament can be
 “obeyed, but on the other side is slighted and scorned, to make the Parliament
 “of no reputation, to be but *Imago Parliamenti*, a meer shadow, without sub-
 “stance, without efficacie.

2. “To send-out in His Majestie’s name, and as Declarations and Messages
 “from him, bitter invectives against the Parliament, to perplex it, and engage it
 “in expence of time to answer them: and besides, cunningly to insinuate and in-
 “fuse into the people, by false colours and glosses, a disopinion and dislike of the
 “Parliament, and, if it be possible, to stir-up their spirits to rise against it, to
 “destroy it, (and, in it, all other Parliaments,) to the ruine of themselves, their
 “wives and children.

3. “The third Plot is: The Members are drawn-away, and perswaded to for-
 “sake their duty and attendance here, and go-down to *York*, thereby to blemish
 “the actions of both Houses, as done by a few and an inconsiderable number, and
 “rather a Party than a Parliament, and perhaps to raise and set-up an anti-Parlia-
 “ment there.

“My Lords, this is now the great Designe, whereby they hope, by little and
 “little, the Parliament shall even bleed to death, and moulder to nothing, the
 “members droppng-away one after another: a desperate and dangerous practice,
 “and,

“ and, as your Lordships well observed (when you were pleased to communicate
 “ the businesse to us) an effect of the evil Counsels now prevailing, and tending to
 “ the dissolution of the Parliament, of this Parliament, which, under God, must be
 “ the preserver of three Kingdoms, and keep them firm and loyal to their King,
 “ subject to his Crown, save them from being turned into a Chaos of disorder and
 “ confusion, and made a dismal spectacle of misery and desolation; this Parliam-
 “ ent, which is the last hope of the long-oppressed, and, in other Countries
 “ even almost wholly-destroyed, Protestant Religion: this Parliament which is
 “ the onely means to continue us to be a Nation of freemen and not of slaves; to
 “ be owners of any thing: in a word, which must stand in the Gap, to prevent
 “ an in-let and inundation of all misery and confusion.

“ My Lords, this Parliament they desire to destroy; but I hope it will destroy
 “ the destroyers, and be a wall of Fire to consume them, as it is a wall of Brasse
 “ to us, to defend King, and Kingdom, us and all we have.

“ Your Lordships wisely foresaw this Mischief, and as wisely have endeavoured
 “ to prevent it, by making your Orders to keep your Members here; as that of
 “ the ninth of *April*, and several other Orders, enjoyning them all to attend;
 “ thereby restraining them from repairing to *York*, where the Clouds were obser-
 “ ved to gather so fast, threatening a storm, and such preparations to be made
 “ against the Parliament, That it necessitated both Houses to pass a Vote,
 “ *That the King, seduced by wicked Counsel, intended to make War against the*
 “ *Parliament: and all who shall serve and assist in such Wars are declared to be*
 “ *Traitours*: which Vote passed the 20th of *May*: so setting a mark upon
 “ that place, and their opinion concerning those who should at this time resort
 “ thither.

“ Yet now, in such a conjuncture of time, when the Kingdom had never more
 “ need of a Parliament, and the Parliament never more need of all the help and
 “ assistance, of the best endeavour and advice, of every member; the Safety, and
 “ even Being, of three Kingdoms depending on it; after such Orders and Com-
 “ mands of your Lordship’s House to the contrary; such a Vote of both Houses;
 “ and expressly against their Duty; being called thither by Writ under the Great
 “ Seal, which is the King’s greatest and highest Command, and not controllable
 “ nor to be dispensed-with by any other Command from him whatsoever; and
 “ called to treat and consult *de Arduis Regni*, the great, urging, and pressing
 “ affairs of the Kingdom, never more urgent, never more pressing: notwith-
 “ standing all this, these Lords, the Earls of *Northampton*, *Devonshire*, *Dover*,
 “ *Monmouth*; the Lords HOWARD of *Charlton*, RICH, GREY, COVENTRY, and
 “ CAPEL, have left their stations, withdrawn themselves and are gone to *York*;
 “ and, being summoned to appear by an Order of the 30th of *May*, instead of
 “ obedience, return refusal, by a slighting and scornful Letter, which hath been so
 “ adjudged both by your Lordships and the House of Commons.

“ My Lords, the House of Commons hath likewise, upon the consideration
 “ and

“ and debate of this businesse, finding it so much to concern the safety of
 “ the Kingdom and the very Being of the Parliament, passed this Vote;
 “ *That the Departing of these nine Lords from the Parliament without*
 “ *leave, after such a time as both Houses had declared, ‘ That the King,*
 “ *seduced by wicked Counsel, intended to make War against the Parlia-*
 “ *ment;’ and their still continuing at York, notwithstanding their Sum-*
 “ *mons and Command, is an high Affront and Contempt of both Houses;*
 “ *and that the said Lords did as much as in them lay, that the service of*
 “ *Parliament might be deserted, and are justly suspected to promote a War*
 “ *against the Parliament.*

“ The House, in further prosecution of their duty in this particular, and in
 “ pursuance of their Protestation, which obliges them to endeavour to bring to
 “ condign punishment all such high offenders against, not onely the Priviledges,
 “ but the very Essence, of Parliament, have sent me up to impeach these Lords,
 “ and desire that speedy and exemplary Justice may be done upon them.

“ And accordingly, *I do here, in the name of the Knights, Citizens and*
 “ *Burgesses of the Commons House assembled in Parliament, and in the*
 “ *name of all the Commons of England, Impeach SPENCER Earl of Nor-*
 “ *thampton, WILLIAM Earl of Devonshire, HENRY Earl of Dover,*
 “ *HENRY Earl of Monmouth, CHARLES Lord HOWARD of Charleton,*
 “ *ROBERT Lord RICH, CHARLES Lord GREY of Ruthen, THOMAS*
 “ *Lord COVENTRY, and ARTHUR Lord CAPEL, for these high Crimes and*
 “ *Misdemeanours following; viz. For, that, contrary to their duty, they*
 “ *being Peers of the Realm, and summoned by Writ to attend the Parlia-*
 “ *ment; and contrary to an Order of the House of Peers of the ninth of*
 “ *April last, and several other Orders, requiring the attendance of the*
 “ *Members of that House; and after a Vote past in both Houses the twen-*
 “ *tieth of May last, ‘ That the King, seduced by wicked Counsel, intended*
 “ *to make War against the Parliament; and that whosoever served or*
 “ *assisted him in that War, was adjudged a Traitor;’ did, notwith-*
 “ *standing, afterwards, in the same month of May, contemptuously, having*
 “ *notice of the said Votes and Orders, withdraw themselves from the*
 “ *said House of Peers, and repair to the City of York, where the prepa-*
 “ *rations of the said War were, and yet are, in contrivance and agitation;*
 “ *they knowing of such preparations: and being, by an Order of the thir-*
 “ *tieth of May, duly summoned by the House of Peers, to make their appear-*
 “ *ance before that House upon the eighth day of June last past, they refused*
 “ *to appear, and returned a scornful Answer by a Letter under their hands,*
 “ *directed*

“ directed to the Speaker of the Lords House, and remaining there upon
“ Record.

“ For which Crimes and Misdemeanours, to the interruption of the pro-
“ ceedings of Parliament, and great Affairs of the Kingdom, and tending
“ to the dissolution of the Parliament, and disturbance of the Peace of the
“ Kingdom; I am commanded, in the name of the said Commons, to
“ demand of your Lordships, that the said Lords may be forthwith put to
“ their Answer, and receive speedy and exemplary punishment, according
“ to their demerits. The Commons saving to themselves liberty, at all times
“ hereafter, to exhibite any other, or further, Impeachment, or Accusation,
“ against the said Lords, or any of them.”

The House of Lords
passes a sentence
against them, in
July, 1642.

Upon this Impeachment of the nine Lords, the House of Peers, about a month after, being in their Robes, entred into debate of the said Impeachment; and, after divers Speeches made by some Lords, setting-forth the greatnesse of their Offence, they were censured, 1. Never to sit more as Members of that House. 2. That they should be utterly incapable of any benefit, or priviledges, of Parliament. 3. That they should suffer Imprisonment during their pleasure. After which Censure, it was concluded that the said Lords should be demanded, in the behalf of both Houses of Parliament, to submit to the said Censure.

About that time, when the Members of both Houses of Parliament did daily forsake their station, and repair to the King at *York*, another accident fell-out, which gave a great wound to the Parliament, and much encouragement to the King in his designes; which was, the carrying-away of the Great Seal of *England* from *London* to *York*.

The Lord-Keeper
Littleton sends the
Great Seal of Eng-
land to the King at
York.

EDWARD LORD LITTLETON, on whom the King, (when the Lord-Keeper FINCH fled out of *England*, as is before related,) had conferred the keeping of the Great Seal (he being before Lord Chiefe-Justice of the Common-Pleas,) and had created him a Baron of the Realm, had continued for some space of time, after the rest were gone to *York*, firm to the Parliament in all appearance, and upon all occasions had voted according to the sense of those that seemed the best-affected that way; and, among other things, had given his Vote for settling the *Militia* by Ordinance of Parliament; insomuch that there seemed no doubt at all to be made of his constancy; till at the last, before the end of the month of *June*, a young Gentleman, one Master *Thomas Eliot*, Groom of the Privy-Chamber to the King, was sent closely from *York* to him; who (being admitted by the Lord-Keeper into his private Chamber, where none else were by,) so handled the matter, (whether by persuasions, threats, or promises, or whatsoever,) that, after three hours time, he got the great Seal into his hands, and rid post with it away to the King at *York*.

And the next day
goes thither himself.

The Lord-Keeper LITTLETON, after serious consideration with himself what he
had

had done, or rather suffered, and not being able to answer it to the Parliament; the next day, early in the morning, rode after it himself, and went to the King.

Great was the complaint at *London* against him for that action; nor did the King ever shew him any great regard afterwards. The reason which the Lord-Keeper LITTLETON gave, for parting so with the great Seal, to some friends of his who went after him to *York*, was this; That the King, when he made him Lord-Keeper, gave him an Oath in private, which he took, That, whensoever the King should send to him for the great Seal, he should forthwith deliver it. This Oath (as he averred to his friends) his conscience would by no means suffer him to dispense withal; he onely repented (though now too late) that he had accepted the Office upon those terms.

The Parliament, to prevent so sad a War, sent-out two Orders; one, to all Sheriffs, Justices, and Other Officers within 150 miles of the City of *York*, that they should take special care to make stay of all Arms and Ammunition carrying towards *York*, until they have given notice thereof to the Lords and Commons, and received their further direction; and to that purpose, to keep strict Watches within their severall limits, to search-for, and seize, all such Arms, and apprehend the persons going with the same: The other was to the Sheriff of *Lancashire*, and other adjacent Counties, to suppress the raising and coming-together of any Souldiers, Horse or Foot, by any Warrant from the King, without the advice of the Lords and Commons in Parliament; as likewise to declare all that should execute any such Warrant from the King, disturbers of the peace of the Kingdom; and to command the Trained-Bands to be assistant to the Sheriffs in that service.

The Parliament publishes Orders to prevent the King from raising forces.

These Orders of the Parliament were immediately answered by a Proclamation from the King, forbidding all his Subjects belonging to the Trained-Bands, or *Militia* of this Kingdom, to rise, march, muster, or exercise by vertue of any Order, or Ordinance, of one or both Houses of Parliament, without Consent or Warrant from his Majesty. The Parliament, notwithstanding, proceed in settling the *Militia* of the Kingdom, (having made, on the second of *June*, an Order for those revolted members to return to their duty again before the 16th of that month, under the forfeiture of an hundred pounds, to be disposed-of towards the Wars in *Ireland*, besides undergoing such punishments as the Houses should think fit) and had by this time at many places began to settle the said *Militia*.

The King publishes a Proclamation in answer to them.

Upon the same second of *June* also, the Lords and Commons sent a Petition to the King, with nineteen Propositions; which the King received with great indignation, as appeared in his Answer to them both in general, and in divers particulars concerning those Propositions, as esteeming himself injured in restraint of his Power and Prerogative. The Petition and Propositions were as followeth.

The Parliament presents a Petition to the King, containing nineteen Propositions, on the 2nd of June, 1642.

The humble Petition and Advice of both Houses of Parliament; with Nineteen Propositions, and the Conclusion, sent unto His Majesty the second of June, 1642.

Your Majesties most humble and faithful Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament, having nothing in their thoughts and desires, more precious and of higher esteem (next to the honour and immediate Service of God) than the just and faithful performance of their duty to Your Majestie, and this Kingdom; And, being very sensible of the great distractions and distempers, and of the imminent dangers and calamities which those distractions and distempers are like to bring upon Your Majestie and Your Subjects; all which have proceeded from the subtil informations, mischievous practices, and evil counsels of men disaffected to God's true Religion, Your Majesties Honour and Safety, and the publike Peace and Prosperity of Your People; after a serious observation of the causes of those Mischiefs; Do, in all humility and sincerity present to Your Majestie their most dutiful Petition and Advice, that, out of Your Princely Wisdom for the establishing Your Own Honour and Safety, and your gracious tendernesse of the Welfare and Security of Your Subjects and Dominions, You will be pleased to grant and accept these their humble Desires and Propositions, as the most necessary and effectual Means, through God's blessing, of removing those Jealousies and Differences which have unhappily fallen betwixt Your Majesty and Your People, and of procuring to both Your Majestie and Them a constant course of Honour, Peace, and Happiness.

The Propositions.

1. That the Lords and others of Your Majesties Privy-Council, and such great Officers and Ministers of State, either at home, or beyond the Seas, may be put from Your Privy-Council, and from those Offices and Employments, excepting such as shall be approved-of by both Houses of Parliament: And that the persons put into the places and Employments of those that are removed, may be approved-of by both Houses of Parliament. And that Privy Counsellors shall take an Oath for the due execution of their places, in such form as shall be agreed upon by both Houses of Parliament.

2. That the great Affairs of the Kingdom may not be concluded, or transacted, by the advice of private men, or by any unknown, or unsworn, Counsellors; but that such matters as concern the Publike, and are proper for the high Court of Parliament, (which is Your Majesties great and supreme Council,) may be debated, resolved, and transacted, onely in Parliament, and not elsewhere: and such as shall presume to do any thing to the contrary, shall be reserved to the censure and judgement of Parliament: And such other matters of State as are proper for
Your

Your Majesties Privy-Council, shall be debated and concluded by such of the Nobility, and others, as shall from time to time be chosen for that place, by approbation of both Houses of Parliament. And that no publike Act concerning the Affairs of the Kingdom, which are proper for Your Privy Council, may be esteemed of any validity, as proceeding from the Royal Authority, unlesse it be done by the Advice and Consent of the major part of Your Council, attested under their hands. And that Your Council may be limited to a certain number, not exceeding twenty-five, nor under fifteen. And if any Counsellour's place happen to be void in the interval of Parliament, it shall not be supplied without the assent of the major part of the Council; which voice shall be confirmed at the next sitting of Parliament; or else to be void.

3. That the Lord High Steward of *England*, the Lord High-Constable, the Lord Chancellour, or Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal, the Lord-Treasurer, the Lord Privy-Seal, the Earl-Marshal, the Lord-Admiral, the Warden of the Cinque-Ports, the chief Governour of *Ireland*, the Chancellour of the Exchequer, the Master of the Wards, the Secretaries of State, the two Chief-Justices, and the Chief-Baron, may always be chosen with the approbation of both Houses of Parliament; and in the intervals of Parliaments, by assent of the major part of the Council, in such manner as is before exprest in the choice of Counsellours.

4. That he, or they, unto whom the Government and Education of the King's Children shall be committed, shall be approved-of by both Houses of Parliament; and in the intervals of Parliament, by the assent of the major part of the Council, in such manner as is before exprest in the choice of Counsellours: And that all such Servants as are now about them, against whom both Houses shall have any just exceptions, shall be removed.

5. That no Marriage shall be concluded, or treated, for any of the King's Children, with any forraign Prince, or other person whatsoever, abroad or at home, without the consent of Parliament, under the Penalty of a *Præmunire* unto such as shall be concluded, or treat any Marriage as aforesaid: And that the said Penalty shall not be pardoned or dispensed-with, but by the consent of both Houses of Parliament.

6. That the Laws, in force, against Jesuites, Priests, and Popish Recusants, be strictly put in execution, without any Toleration or Dispensation to the contrary: And that some more effectual course may be enacted by Authority of Parliament, to-disable them from making any disturbance in the State, or eluding the Law by Trusts, or otherwise.

7. That the Votes of Popish Lords, in the House of Peers, may be taken-away, so long as they continue Papists: And that Your Majestie will consent to such a Bill as shall be drawn, for the education of the children of Papists by Protestants, in the Protestant Religion.

8. That

8. That Your Majestie will be pleased to consent that such a Reformation be made of the Church-Government, and Liturgie, as both Houses of Parliament shall advise; wherein they intend to have Consultations with Divines, as is expressed in their Declaration to that purpose: And that Your Majestie will contribute Your best assistance to them, for the raising of a sufficient Maintenance for preaching Ministers throughout the Kingdom: And that Your Majestie will be pleased to give Your Consent to Laws for the taking-away of Innovations, and Superstition, and of Pluralities, and against scandalous Ministers.

9. That Your Majestie will be pleased to rest satisfied with that course that the Lords and Commons have appointed for ordering of the *Militia*, until the same shall be further settled by a Bill: And that Your Majestie will recal Your Declarations and Proclamations against the Ordinance made by the Lords and Commons concerning it.

10. That such Member of either House of Parliament as have, during this present Parliament, been put out of any Place and Office, may either be restored to that Place and Office, or otherwise have satisfaction for the same, upon the Petition of that House whereof he or they are members.

11. That all Privy-Counsellours and Judges may take an Oath, the Form whereof to be agreed-on and settled by Act of Parliament, for the maintaining of the Petition of Right, and of certain Statutes made by this Parliament, which shall be mentioned by both Houses of Parliament: And that an enquiry of all the breaches and violations of those Laws, may be given in charge by the Justices of the King's Bench every Term, and by the Judges of Assize in their Circuits, and Justices of the Peace at the Sessions, to be presented and published according to Law.

12. That all the Judges, and all the Officers placed by approbation of both Houses of Parliament, may hold their places *quam diu bene se gesserint*.

13. That the Justice of Parliament may passe upon all Delinquents, whether they be within the Kingdom, or fled out of it: And that all persons cited by either House of Parliament, may appear, and abide the censure of Parliament.

14. That the general Pardon offered by Your Majestie, may be granted with such Exceptions as shall be advised by both Houses of Parliament.

15. That the Forts and Castles of this Kingdom may be put under the Command and Custodie of such persons as Your Majestie shall appoint, with the approbation of Your Parliament; and in the intervals of Parliament, with approbation of the major part of the Council, in such manner as is before expressed in the choice of the Counsellours.

16. That the extraordinary Guards and Military Forces now attending Your Majestie, may be removed and discharged; and that, for the future, You will
raise

raise no such Guards, or extraordinary Forces, but according to the Law, in case of actual Rebellion, or Invasion.

17. That Your Majestie will be pleased to enter into a more strict Alliance with the States of the United Provinces, and other Neighbour Princes, and States of the Protestant Religion, for the defence and maintenance thereof against all designes and attempts of the Pope, and his adherents, to subvert and suppress it; whereby Your Majestie will obtain a great access of strength and reputation, and Your Subjects be much encouraged and enabled in a Parliamentary-way, for Your aid and assistance in restoring Your Royal Sister, and her Princely Issue, to those Dignities and Dominions which belong unto them, and relieving the other distressed and Protestant Princes who have suffered in the same Cause.

18. That Your Majestie will be pleased, by Act of Parliament, to clear the Lord *Kymbolton*, and the five Members of the House of Commons, in such manner, that future Parliaments may be secured from the consequence of that evil precedent.

19. That Your Majestie will be graciously pleased to passe a Bill for restraining Peers made hereafter from sitting or voting in Parliament, unless they be admitted thereunto with the consent of both Houses of Parliament.

And these, our humble Desires, being granted by Your Majestie, we shall forthwith apply ourselves to regulate Your present Revenue in such sort as may be for Your best advantage, and likewise to settle such an ordinary and constant increase of it, as shall be sufficient to support Your Royal Dignity in Honour and Plenty, beyond the proportion of any former Grants of the Subjects of this Kingdom to Your Majesties Royal Predecessours. We shall likewise put the Town of Hull into such hands as Your Majestie shall appoint, with the consent and approbation of Parliament, and deliver-up a just account of all the Magazine, and cheerfully employ the uttermost of our endeavours in the real expression and performance of our most dutiful and loyal affections, to the preserving and maintaining the Royal Honour, Greatnesse, and Safety, of Your Majesty and Your Posterity.

Hen. Elsynge, Cler. Parl. D. Com.

To these Propositions sent from the Parliament, the King returned such an Answer as shewed that he was much displeas'd with the whole Businesse: For before his particular Answers to the several Propositions, he complaineth in general, and those very sharp, expressions of the method of their proceedings against him: and that the Cabalists of this businesse (for so he calls them) have used
The King returns an Answer to this Petition, expressing great displeasure at many of the Propositions.
 great

great art and subtilty against him, first to strengthen themselves with unlawful power, before they make their illegal demands. He taxes them, that first they had removed the Law itself, as a rub in their way, and pressed their own Orders and Ordinances upon the people (tending to a pure arbitrary power) as Laws, and required obedience to them, without the consent or concurrence of himself. That they had wrested from him the command of the *Militia*, (a thing inherent in his Crown) countenanced the Treason of HOTHAM against him, and directed to the people invectives against his Government, to weaken his just authority and due esteem among his Subjects; casting upon him aspersions of a strange nature, as, that he should favour a Rebellion in the bowels of his Kingdom. He complains likewise that they had broached (for so he calls it) a new Doctrine, namely, that the King is bound to passe all Laws that shall be offered to him by both Houses of Parliament: a point of policie fit for their present businesse, as destructive to all his Rights. That they have overawed his Subjects, in stifling all Petitions that did not please them; and filled the peoples ears with needlesse fears, and jealousies, and such like things, before they thought his Majestie sufficiently prepared to take those bitter Pills. For (saith he) *if they had unseasonably vented such Propositions, as the wisdom and modestie of their Predecessours never thought fit to offer to any of Our Progenitours, nor We, in honour or regard to Our Regal Authority, (which God hath intrusted Us with for the good of Our People) could receive without just indignation (for such many of the Propositions are) their hopes would soon have been blasted, and those persons to whom Offices, Honours, Power, and Commands were designed, by such ill-timing of their businesse, would have failed of their expectation, not without a brand upon the Attempt.* Therefore he saith, that they had made before-hand those fore-named preparations. The King seems to doubt likewise, (because the Parliament have not told him that this is all they desire of him,) that these Propositions are probably intended to make way for a Superfetation of a (yet) higher nature. And, in the Propositions in general, he observes, that the Contrivers of them (the better to advance their true ends) disguised, as much as they could, their intents, with a mixture of some things really to be approved by every honest man, others specious and popular, and some already granted by him: All which (saith he) are cunningly twisted, and mixed with other things of their main designe of ambition and private interest.

But the King desires not to be understood so, as if he intended to fix this designe upon both, or either House of Parliament: for he utterly professeth against it, being most confident of the loyalty, good affections, and integrity of the intentions of that great Body, and knowing well that very many of both Houses were absent, and many dissented from all those particulars of which he complains: but that he believes, and accordingly professes to all the world, that the malignity of this designe hath proceeded from the subtil informations, mischievous practices, and evil counsels of some ambitious, turbulent, spirits, disaffected to God's true Religion (using their own language) the Unity of the professors thereof, his Honour

Honour and Safety, and the publike peace and prosperity of the people. (And such other like general expressions).

In particular, the King expressed himself with great indignation against ten of their Propositions, which were the 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 9, 10, 15, 16, 19; averring, that, if they did intend the establishment of his honour, together with the security of his people (as their profession is) they would not offer him such Propositions: for that Profession, joyned to these Propositions, appeared to his judgement as a mockery and scorn.

He averreth further, that their Demands are such, as that he should be unworthy of his Royal descent from so many famous Ancestours, and unworthy of the Trust reposed in him by the Laws, if he should divest himself of such a power so inherent in his Crown, and assume others into a participation of it; protesting, that, if he were both vanquished and a prisoner, in worse condition than any, the most unfortunate, of his predecessours had ever been reduced unto, he would never stoop so lowe as to grant those demands, and to make himself, of a King of *England*, a Duke of *Venice*.

The several Answers that the King made, and Arguments that he used to each several branch of those Propositions, are too large to be here inserted, and may be read by those that would be further informed, in the printed Book of Parliament-Declarations and Ordinances*.

* The Book here referred-to was printed in this very same Year 1642, at London, for Edward Husbands, J. Warren, and R. Best, and sold at the Middle Temple, and at Gray's-Inn-gate, and at the White Horse in Paul's Church-yard: and it's Title was as follows; AN EXACT COLLECTION of all Remonstrances, Declarations, Votes, Orders, Ordinances, Proclamations, Petitions, Messages, Answers, and other remarkable passages between the King's most Excellent Majesty and his High Court of Parliament; Beginning at his Majestie's return from Scotland, being in December, 1641, and continued until March the 21st, 1643.

WHICH were formerly published either by the KING'S Majestie's Command, or by Order from one, or both Houses of Parliament.

With a Table, wherein are most exactly digested all the fore-mentioned things according to their severall Dates and Dependancies.

 CHAP. V.

An Order for the bringing-in of Plate and Money into Guildhall. The King's Declaration to the Lords about him : Their Profession and Protestation to him. The King layeth Siege to Hull ; but raiseth it again. The Earl of Warwick taketh possession of the Navie, as Lord-Admiral. The Earl of Essex is voted in Parliament to be Lord-General of all their Forces.

The two Houses of Parliament pass Ordinances for raising Troops and Money without the King's concurrence, June 10, 1642.

ON the tenth day of *June* following, an Order was made by both Houses of Parliament, for bringing-in of Money and Plate, to maintain Horse, Horse-men, and Arms, for Preservation of the Publike Peace, and defence of the King's Person, (for that the Parliament, in their expressions, alwaies joyned together with their own safety) and both Houses of Parliament. Wherein it was expressed, that whosoever should bring-in any Money or Plate, or furnish any Horse-men and Arms for that purpose, should have their Money repayed with Interest, according to eight in the hundred ; for which both Houses of Parliament did engage the Publike Faith.

Four Treasurers were ordained, whose Acquittances for the receipt of any Sum, should be a sufficient ground to the Lenders to demand their Money and Plate again, with the Interest belonging thereunto. The Treasurers were, Sir JOHN WOLLASTON, Knight, and Alderman of *London*, Alderman TOWES, Alderman WARNER, and Alderman ANDREWES. Commissaries, also, were appointed to value the Horse and Arms which should be furnished for that service.

It was desired in that Order, that all men resident in, or about, *London*, or within 80 miles, would bring-in their Money, Plate, or Horse, within a fortnight after notice ; and they that dwell farther-off, within three weeks : and that those who intended to contribute within the time limited, but were not, for the present, provided of Money or Horse, should subscribe, that it might be soon known what provision

provision would be for effecting of that great and important Service. And, in conclusion, it was declared, that whatsoever was brought-in, should be employed to no other purposes but those before-mentioned; the maintenance of the Protestant Religion, the King's Person, dignity, and authority, the Laws of the Land, the Peace of the Kingdom, and the Priviledges of Parliament.

Whilst this Order was drawing-up, advertisement by Letters was given to the Parliament, that the Crown-Jewels were pawned at Amsteldam, and other places of the Netherlands; upon which money was taken-up, and Warlike Ammunition provided in those Parts, as Battering-pieces, Culverins, Field-pieces, Morter-pieces, Granadoes, with great store of powder, pistols, carabines, great saddles, and such like. Whereby the Parliament thought they could not otherwise judge than that the King did plainly intend a War against them, and had designed it long before.

They received intelligence, at the same time, that the King had sent a Commission of *Array* into *Leicestershire*, directed to the Earl of *Huntington*, the Earl of *Devonshire*, and Mr. HENRY HASTINGS, second son to the Earl of *Huntington*; (for the Lord HASTINGS, eldest son to that Earl, did then adhere to the Parliament) which three were chief in the Commission; but many other Knights and Gentlemen of that County were named in it. Together with this Commission of *Array*, the King sent a Letter also, containing the reasons of it, wherein he complaineth that the Parliament, by their Ordinance for the *Militia*, would divest him of that power, which is properly inherent in his Crown. And for the occasion and reason of that Commission, he urgeth a Declaration of their own, using their very expressions and words in his Letter; that, whereas it hath been declared by Votes of both Houses of Parliament, the fifteenth of *March* last, that the Kingdom hath of late been, and still is, in evident and imminent danger, both from enemies abroad, and a Popish discontented party at home; he concludes, that for the safeguard both of his own Person and People, there is an urgent and inevitable necessity of putting his people into a posture of defence, &c. Thus did the Parliament's Prologue to their Ordinance of *Militia*, serve the King's turn for his Commission of *Array*, *totidem verbis*. The copie of which Commission and Letter coming into the hands of the Parliament, it was resolved upon the Question by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, that *this Commission of Array for Leicester is against Law, and against the Liberty and Property of the Subject*: and resolved again upon the Question, within two days after, *That all those that are actours in putting the Commission of Array in execution, shall be esteemed as disturbers of the Kingdom's Peace, and betrayers of the Liberty of the Subject*. It was also ordered by both Houses, that this Commission of *Array*, and the forementioned Votes, should be forthwith printed, and published throughout the Kingdom.

The King issues a Commission of *Array* to raise the *Militia* of *Leicestershire*, in June, 1642.

The King was not wanting to his own designe in the mean time, and whatsoever might give countenance to the businesse he had in hand: but made a short Declaration

claration to the Lords who then attended him at York, and others his Privy-Council there, in these words :

The King's Declaration to the Lords at York.

We do declare, that We will require no obedience from you, but what is warranted by the known Laws, as We expect that you shall not yeeld to any Commands not legally groundd, or imposed by any other. We will defend all you, and all such as shall refuse any such Commands whether they proceed from Votes and Orders of both Houses, or any other way, from all danger whatsoever. We will defend the true Protestant Religion established by the Laws, the lawful Liberties of the Subjects of England, and just Priviledges of all the three Estates of Parliament; and shall require no further obedience from you, than as We accordingly shall perform the same. We will not (as is falsely pretended) engage you in any War against the Parliament, except it be for Our necessary defence against such as do insolently invade, or attempt against, Us and Our Adherents.

Upon this Declaration of the King, those Lords and others of his Council made a Promise to him, and subscribed it with their hands, as followeth.

Their Profession and Protestation to him.

We do engage our selves not to obey any Orders or Commands whatsoever, not warranted by the known Laws of the Land. We engage our selves to defend Your Majestie's Person, Crown and Dignity, with Your just and legal Prerogative, against all Persons and Power whatsoever. We will defend the true Protestant Religion established by the Law of the land, the lawful Liberties of the Subjects of England, and the just Priviledges of Your Majestie, and both Houses of Parliament. Lastly, we engage our selves not to obey any Rule, Order, or Ordinance, whatsoever, concerning any Militia, that bath not the Royal Assent.

Subscribed by,

L. Keeper, D. of Richmond, Ma. Hertford, E. of Lindsey, E. of Cumberland, E. of Huntington, E. of Bath, E. of Southampton, E. of Dorset, E. of Salisbury, E. of Northampton, E. of Devonshire, E. of Bristol, E. of Westmerland, E. of Barkeshire, E. of Monmouth, E. of Rivers, E. of Newcastle, E. of Dover, E. of Carnarvan, E. of Newport, L. MOWBRAY and MATREVERS, L. WILLOUGHBY of Eresby, L. RICH, L. CHARLES HOWARD of Charleton, L. NEWARK, L. PAGET, L. CHANDOYS, L. FALCONBRIDGE, L. PAULET, L. LOVELACE, L. COVENTRY, L. SAVILE, L. MOHUN, L. DUNSMORE, L. SEYMOUR, L. GREY of Ruthen, L. FAWLKLAND, the Controller, Secretary NICHOLAS, Sir JOHN CULPEPER, Lord Chief Justice BANKS.

The

The King immediately wrote a Letter to the Lord Mayor of *London*, the Aldermen and Sheriffs, forbidding by expresse Command any Contribution of Money or Plate, toward the raising of any Arms whatsoever for the Parliament; and that they should lend no Money, unlesse toward the relief of *Ireland*, or payment of the Scots. He published then a Declaration to all his Subjects, inveighing bitterly against the Parliament, for laying a false and scandalous imputation upon him of raising War against the Parliament, or levying Forces to that end: in which he invites all his loving Subjects, to prevent his own danger, and the danger of the Kingdom from a malignant party (taking-up the Parliament's language) to contribute Money or Plate to him, and they shall be repayed, with consideration of eight in the hundred. And immediately upon it made a Profession before those forementioned Lords and Councillors about him (calling God to witness in it) disavowing any preparations or intentions to levie War against the Parliament: upon which, those forementioned Lords, and others, then present at *York*, made this Declaration and Profession, subscribed under their hands.

We whose names are under-written, in obedience to His Majestie's Desire, and out of the Duty which we owe to His Majestie's Honour, and to Truth, being here upon the place, and witnesses of his Majestie's frequent and earnest Declarations and Professions of His abhorring all designes of making War upon the Parliament; and not seeing any colour of Preparations or Counsels that might reasonably beget the belief of any such Designe, do professe before God, and testifie to all the world, that we are fully perswaded that His Majestie hath no such intention; but that all his endeavours tend to the firm and constant settlement of the true Protestant Religion, and the just Privileges of Parliament, the liberty of the Subject, the Law, Peace, and Prosperity of this Kingdom.

A Declaration of the Lords at York, of their belief of the King's professions of his resolution to support the Protestant Religion, and the Liberties of his subjects.

The King, strengthened with Arms and Ammunition from *Holland*, and more strengthened (for as yet he wanted hands to weild those Arms) by this Protestation of Lords in his behalf concerning his intention of not making War against the Parliament, whereby the people might more easily be drawn to side with him, proceeded in his business with great policie and indefatigable industry. His pen was quick in giving answer to all Petitions or Declarations which came from the Parliament; and with many sharp expostulations, in a well-compiled Discourse, on the 17th of *June*, answered a Petition of the Parliament; which Petition was to this effect, that he would not disjoyn his Subjects in their duty to himself and Parliament, destroying the Essence of that high Court; which was presented to him at *York* by the Lord HOWARD, Sir HUGH CHOLMLEY, and Sir PHILIP STAFLETON: and within three weeks, both in his own Person, and by his Messengers,

with

with Speeches, Proclamations, and Declarations, advanced his businesse in a wonderful manner. At *Newark* he made a Speech to the Gentry of *Nottinghamshire* in a loving and winning way, commending their affections towards him; which was a great part of the perswasion for the future, coming from a King himselfe. Another speech he made at *Lincoln*, to the Gentry of that County, full of Protestations concerning his good intentions, not onely to them, but to the whole Kingdom, the Laws and Liberties of it. In that short time also, by the help of many subtil Lawyers, whom he had about him, he returned a very long and particular Answer, with arguing the case in all points *, to a Declaration which the Parliament had before made against the Commission of *Array*, expounding that Statute 5 HEN. 4, whereupon that Commission was supposed to be warranted. The proofs and arguments on both sides, are to be read at large in the Records, or in the printed Book of Ordinances and Declarations, where a Reader may satisfie his own judgement. Within that time also the King sent-out a Proclamation against levying Forces without his Command, urging Laws and Statutes for it: And another long Proclamation to inform the people of the legality of his Commissions of *Array*, and to command obedience to them. Another he sent-forth against the forcible seizing or removing any Magazine of Ammunition of any County; and another, forbidding all relieving or succouring of *Hull* against him. Upon which, the Parliament declared, that those Proclamations, without their assent, were illegal; and forbade all Sheriffs, Mayors, &c. to proclaim them, and all Parsons and Curates to read or publish them.

From *York* the King removed to *Beverley*; from whence he sent a Message to both Houses, and a Proclamation concerning his going to *Hull*, to take it in; requiring, before his journey, that it might be delivered-up to him. But that Message of his came to the House of Peers, after they had agreed upon a Petition, which was drawn-up, to move the King to a good accord with his Parliament, to prevent a Civil War; to be carried to him, and presented at *Beverley*, by the Earl of *Holland*, Sir JOHN HOLLAND, and Sir PHILIP STAPLETON. That very Petition seemed to them so full an answer to the King's Message, that both Houses resolved to give no other answer to that Message, but the said Petition. But immediately after, a Declaration was published by both Houses of Parliament, for the preservation and safety of the Kingdom, and the Town of *Hull*; with assurance of both Houses to satisfie all losse sustained by any service done for the safety of the said Town, by reason of overflowing of water upon the grounds there, to all persons who should be found faithful in their several services.

The King continued resolute in his intention of gaining *Hull*: By what means he attempted it, and how those attempts proved to be frustrate, is now the subject of a short Discourse.

The King makes preparations for besieging the town of *Hull*.

* These answers of the King were, for the most part, drawn-up by Mr. Edward Hyde, who was afterwards Earl of Clarendon, and Lord Chancellor of England.

The Town of *Hull* was not more considerable to the Kingdom as a Maritime and strong place, than it was now made remarkable to the world in many high and famous circumstances of this Civil War: for which cause, I shall the more particularly insist upon it.

Hull was the place which (being intrusted with so rich a Magazine of Ammunition) did probably allure the King to forsake a Parliament sitting at *London*, and visite the North. *Hull* was the place where the King in person did, first, finde his Commands denied, and his attempts resisted in an actual way; which proved the subject of so many Declarations and Disputations of State and Government: and *Hull* is the place which must now bear the first brunt of his armed Indignation.

The King, with an Army of three thousand foot, and one thousand horse, was removed from *York* to *Beverley*, a Town distant from *Hull* six miles; and intending to besiege *Hull* by Land (expecting also that Sir John PENINGTON with some of his ships should stop the passages, and cut-off provisions from relieving the Town by Sea, though that expectation were made frustrate by the Earl of *Warwick*, his seizing on the Navie Royal) proclaimed that none, on pain of death, should convey any provision or relief thither. He disposed many men in cutting of Trenches, to divert the current of fresh water that ran to *Hull*, and sent two hundred horse into *Lincolnshire* under the command of the Lord WILLOUGHBY, son to the Earl of *Lindsey*, and Sir THOMAS GLENHAM, to stop all relief of it from *Burton* upon *Humber*.

Sir JOHN HOTHAM perceiving the King's intentions and endeavours, and knowing him to be in person within an hour and half's march of the Town, having, first, sent three Messengers, one after another, with humble Petitions to him, who were all laid-fast by the King, and not suffered to return; called a Council of War, in which it was debated, Whether or not they should permit the enemies to march neer the Town with their Ordnance, holding them play from off the Walls and Out-works, until the Tide came to its height, and then draw-up the Sluce, and let them swim for their lives. But a more merciful advice prevailed, which was, (for prevention of so many deaths) to draw-up the Sluce presently, having the advantage of a Spring-tide, and drown all the Countrey about *Hull*. But Sir JOHN HOTHAM, before it was done, gave the inhabitants and owners of land thereabout sufficient and timely notice to remove their Cattel, and all their goods, and assured them (which was ratified by the Parliament upon the Publike Faith) that whatsoever damage they received thereby, should be repaired by the authority of Parliament, out of the estates of those persons who had been most active and assistant to the King in that designe.

Sir JOHN by Letters informed the Parliament in what condition the town was, desiring onely (so it might speedily be done) a supply of Money and Victuals, with five hundred men. Upon which, by command of Parliament, Drums were beat-up in *London*, and other adjacent places, for Souldiers to be sent to *Hull* by Sea. The Earl of *Warwick* was desired by the Houses to send two of the King's ships from the *Downs* to *Hull*, to do as Sir JOHN HOTHAM should direct for his best

assistance. Sir John Meldrum is sent by the Parliament to assist Sir John Hotham in the defence of Hull.

assistance. And Sir JOHN MELDRUM, a Scottish Gentleman, an expert and brave Commander, was appointed to assist Sir JOHN in that service.

The King's Army were not confident to carry the Town by plain force, making their approaches with great difficulty and disadvantage, and those for the most part in the night-time, when, undiscovered, they burnt two Mills about the Town; they therefore had recourse to subtilty; and, knowing some within the Walls fit for their purpose, a Plot was therefore laid to fire the town in four places, which whilst the souldiers and inhabitants were busie in quenching, two thousand of the King's Army should assault the walls. The signe to those within the town, when to fire those places, was, when they discerned a fire on *Beverley-Minster*, this should be assurance to them within the town that they without were ready for the assault. But this treason had no successe, being discovered by one of the instruments, and confessed to Sir JOHN HOTHAM. Many particular services were done both by Land and Water, by Barks and Boats upon the River *Humber*.

The Townsmen of *Hull* were so far provoked by this treacherous designe of their enemies, and so much animated against them, that they all entered into Pay; and now the Walls could not contain them; but five hundred of the town, conducted by Sir JOHN MELDRUM, issued-out, about the end of *July*, upon their besiegers; who, seeing their approach, prepared courageously to receive and encounter them: but they were but a small part of the King's Forces which were resolute to fight; the other part, which consisted of the Trained-Bands of that Countrey, were not forward to be engaged against their neighbours: the King's Horse, and most resolute assistants, seeing themselves deserted by the Foot, retired as fast as they could to *Beverley*: but Sir JOHN MELDRUM pursued them, slew two, and took thirty prisoners in the pursuit. And not long after, when the supplies from *London* arrived at *Hull*, Sir JOHN MELDRUM, with a greater Force, made so fierce a sally upon his enemies, as caused most of the Leaguer to retire disorderly, one and twenty of them being slain, and fifteen taken prisoners. Sir JOHN MELDRUM, following the advantage of his successe with a swift motion, arrived suddenly at a Leaguer-town called *Aulby*, between three and four miles from *Hull*; where the King's magazine was kept in a Barn, in which was a great quantity of Ammunition, Powder, and Fire-balls, and certain Engineers employed there for making of Fire-works: Sir JOHN suddenly set upon it in the night, drove-away the Guard, who consisted most of Trained-Bands, and other *Yorkshire* men, bearing no great affection to the War, and therefore ran more speedily away, leaving their Arms behinde them: much of the Ammunition and other Arms they took-away with them, fired the Barn, the Powder, and Fireworks, and what else they could not carry with them, and returned safely again into *Hull*.

The King abandons
the siege of Hull.

The King, calling a Council of War, and (considering the ill successe of his proceedings, and the preciousness of that time which he consumed there,) by their advice resolved to break-up his siege before *Hull*, and march away; the chief men about him laying the fault of this failing upon the unskilfulnesse of the Countrey Captains, and cowardice of the Trained-Bands. The King probably might have
sped

sped better, if Sir JOHN PENINGTON could have brought part of the Navie to his assistance: but that was seized by the Earl of *Warwick*; of which it will be now time to speak more particularly.

The Earl of *Warwick* had, in former times, been so great a lover of the Sea-service, and so well experienced in those affairs (being, besides, a man of Courage, of Religious life, and known Fidelity to his Country,) that, among all the Noble-men at this time, he was esteemed by the Parliament (in this important businesse of settling their *Militia* by Land and Sea) the fittest man to take Command of the Navie, as Lord-Admiral. According to that, an Ordinance of both Houses was drawn-up, to confer the Office on him.

Of the Earl of Warwick.

He is appointed by the Parliament to the Office of Lord-Admiral.

The King had given the employment to Sir JOHN PENINGTON, a man who had long been Vice-Admiral, and a successful Commander; and he had written his Letters to the Earl of *Warwick*, with a strict Command to quit the Place. The Earl of *Warwick* was in a great straight between two such high Commands, being gone-down to take possession of the Navie; and he therefore called a Council of War, acquainting them all, both with the Ordinance of Parliament, and the King's Letters. But the Earl himself was swayed in conscience to give obedience rather to the Ordinance of Parliament; and the reason of it himself gives in a Letter directed to a Lord of the House. *When I considered (saith he) the great care which I have seen in the Parliaments of this Kingdom, for the good and safety both of King and Kingdom, and every man's particular in them; and that they are the great Council, by whose authority the Kings of England have ever spoken to their Subjects; I was resolved to continue in this employment, until I shall be revoked by that Authority that hath intrusted me with it.*

Most of the Captains took-up unanimously the same resolution that the Earl did, excepting five, which were the Rere-Admiral, Captain FOGGIE, Captain BAILY, Captain SLINGSBY, and Captain WAKE, who alledged that they had the King's Command to obey Sir JOHN PENINGTON, whom he had appointed Admiral instead of the Earl of *Northumberland*. These five had gotten-together round, to make defence against the Earl: but he came to Anchor about them, and having begirt them, summoned them again; upon which three of them came-in, and submitted: two onely, Captain SLINGSBY and Captain WAKE, stood-out. The Earl let fire a Gun over them, and turned-up the Glassè upon them, sending his Boat, and most of the Boats in the Fleet, to let them know their danger, if they came not within that space. But so peremptory was their answer, that the Masters and Sailors grew impatient; and, although they had no Arms, assaulted them, seized upon those Captains, being armed with their Pistols and swords, strook their Yards and Top-masts, and brought them to the Earl. Thus by the wonderful courage of these unarmed men, the businesse was ended without effusion of any blood, when the Earl was ready to give fire upon them.

And is admitted to the command of the whole Fleet.

Within few days after, another addition of strength was brought to the Earl of *Warwick* by an accident. A great and strong ship of the King's, called *the Lion*, putting to-Sea from *Holland*, and bound for *Newcastle*, being much distressed

with foul weather, was driven into the *Downs*. Captain FOXE, who commanded that ship, saluted the Earl of *Warwick*, who presently acquainted the Captain with the Ordinance of Parliament, whereby his Lordship had command of those ships, requiring his submission thereunto. The Captain at first refused to yeeld obedience to the Ordinance, and thereupon was presently clapt in hold : but all his Officers in the ship submitted themselves, and strook their Sails and Top-yards in token of obedience to the said Ordinance. This ship was very considerable, carrying two and fourty great Pieces of brass Ordnance ; besides, a little Vessel laden with Gun-powder of a great value, was taken also together with this ship. The Earl was informed by some of her men, that young Prince RUPERT and Prince MAURICE, with divers other Commanders, intended to have come from *Holland* in this ship, the *Lion*. But after three days and three nights storm at Sea, those two Princes (in a sick and weak condition) landed again in *Holland*.

The King hearing of the surprisal of the *Lion*, sent a Messenger to the Earl of *Warwick*, to demand her again, with all the goods therein, and that she should be brought to *Scarboroughh*. But the Earl returned an Answer to this effect, that the Parliament had intrusted him with the Care of the Fleet, and that that ship was a part thereof : therefore he humbly besought his Majestie to pardon him ; for without their consent he might not part with her ; and that he knew of no goods within her belonging to his Majestie.

But, leaving the Earl of *Warwick* to his Sea-employments, it is time to return to those warlike Levies and Preparations which were made by Land : for now the fatal time was come, when those long and tedious Paper-conflicts of Deciarations, Petitions, and Proclamations, were turned into actual and bloody Wars, and the Pens seconded by drawn swords.

The Parliament orders a Land-army to be raised; July 12, 1642.

On the twelfth of *July*, 1642, the Parliament voted that an Army should be raised for the safety of the King's Person, and defence of the Parliament ; for so they called it, desiring to joyn together what seemed to be at so great a distance and enmity.

And appoints the Earl of *Essex* to be General of it.

The Earl of *Essex* was by a great and unanimous consent of both Houses chosen General of that Army, and of all Forces raised for the Parliament ; with whom they protested to live and die in that Cause.

The Earl of *Essex* was a Gentleman of a noble and most untainted reputation, of undoubted loyalty to his Country and Prince ; having always (what course soever the Court steered) served in an honourable way, the right interest of the English Nation, and the Protestant Religion ; and to that end had formerly engaged himself in the *Palatine* War, and service of the *Netherland* United Provinces : insomuch as at this time, when they sought a Lord to undertake the high charge of commanding in chief, there seemed to be no choice at all ; but we may say of this Election, as PATERCULUS did of another, *Non quærendus erat quem eligerent, sed eligendus qui eminebat.*

The Parliament at that time were very able to raise Forces, and arm them well, by reason of the great masse of Money and Plate which to that purpose was heaped-up

up in *Guild-hall*, and daily increased by the free Contribution of those that were well-affected to the Parliament Cause : where not only the wealthiest Citizens and Gentlemen who were neer-dwellers, brought-in their large bags and goblets ; but the poorer sort, like that widow in the Gospel, presented their mites also ; inso-much that it was a common Jeer of men disaffected to the Cause, to call it the Thimble and Bodkin-Army.

The Earl of *Essex* was very careful and industrious in raising of his Army ; in which he desired to have as great a Body of Horse as could conveniently be gotten, by reason that he conceived his chief work was to seek-out the King's Forces, and prevent their spoiling of the Country, and disarming several Counties, to furnish themselves. And indeed, his Forces, considering the long Peace of *England*, and unreadiness of Arms, were not onely raised, but well-armed in a short time. Many of the Lords who then sate in the House of Peers (besides those Lords who went into divers Counties to settle the *Militia*, and therefore raised Forces for safety of those several Places) listed themselves in the Lord General's Army, and took Commissions as Colonels ; the Lord ROBERTS, the Lord SAINT-JOHN, eldest son to the Earl of *Bullenbrook*, the Lord of *Rochford*, eldest son to the Earl of *Dover* : and many Gentlemen of the House of Commons, of greatest rank and quality there, took Commissions for Horse and Foot-service in that Army ; of whom these were some : Sir JOHN MERRIC, who was made Serjeant-Major-General of that Army ; the Lord GREY of *Grooby*, son to the Earl of *Stamford* ; Master DENZIL HOLLIS, Master HAMDEN, Sir PHILIP STAPLETON, Sir WILLIAM WALLER, Sir SAMUEL LUKE, Sir HENRY CHOLMLY, Master GRANTHAM, Master WHITLOCK, with divers others. The Earl of *Bedford*, within two days after that the Earl of *Essex* was chosen *Generalissimo*, was voted to be General of the Horse.

The Earl of Bedford is appointed by the Parliament their General of the Horse.

 CHAP. VI.

A brief Relation of the condition of divers Counties in England, when the Parliament's Ordinance for the Militia, and the King's Commission of Array, were put in execution. With a mention of some Lords and others who were actors on either side. The Lord Mayor of London committed to the Tower, and sentenced by the Parliament. A mention of some Declarations, Messages, and Answers, that passed between the King and the two Houses of Parliament.

DURING the time that this Army was raising for the Parliament, to be conducted by his Excellency in person, the King, with small strength as yet, was removing from place to place to gather Forces, and draw people to his side, Of whose proceedings, and by what degrees he encreased in power, I shall speak hereafter in a continued Series, to avoid confusion in the Story. But in the mean time, the Parliament's Ordinance of *Militia*, and the King's Commission of *Array*, were justling together almost in every County: the greatest of the English Nobility on both sides appearing personally, to seize upon those places which were deputed to them either by the King or by the Parliament. No Ordinances from the One, or Proclamations from the Other, could now give any further stop to this general and spreading Mischief. God was not pleased that one Chimney should contain this Civil fire; but small sparks of it were daily kindling in every part of the Land.

Let it not therefore seem amisse, if in the first place I make a brief Relation into what posture every particular County, or most of them, had endeavoured to put themselves, during that time, which was since the twelfth of *July*, when the first apparent denouncing of War began, and the General was elected in Parliament;

till the three and twentieth of *October*, when it broke-out into a fierce and cruel Battel. But let not the Reader expect any full, or perfect, Narration of this, which would take-up too great a time, and prove as tedious as unnecessary. The onely reason why I have entered into it, is to inform the Reader what Lords and Gentlemen did first appear in action on either side, in those particular Counties, that in the progresse of the Story he may be better acquainted with those names, whose Actions proved of so high concernment in the future War. Nor can any perfect Judgement be made of the affections or condition of any one County in this brief Narration of so short a time: for scarce was there any City or Shire, but endured in processe of time many Changes, and became altered from their first condition, either by unconstancy of affections, or else enforced to take a new side, as they were threatened by approaching Armies of either party, when the War grew to a greater height.

In some Counties there was no struggling at all, one side wholly prevailing, and the People's affections bending the same way: as it appeared in *Lincolnshire* at the first, (which was the first account given to the Parliament of their *Militia*, and where some circumstances are of that note, as to make it justly deserve a more particular recital than other places) when the Lord WILLOUGHBY of *Parham* went-down thither, being chosen by the Parliament Lord-Lieutenant of that County. This young Lord, being come to *Lincoln*, expresth to the Parliament what cheerful and hearty obedience he found from the Captains and Officers of the Trained-Bands, and in how good a posture they were, beyond all expectation; considering the unhappinesse of the Plague being then in the Town, which hindered the appearance of some: but that was fully supplied by a Company of Volunteers, equal in number and goodnesse of Arms to the Trained-Bands. Yet that Change which I spake of before, did afterwards sadly appear in this County, which was afterwards as much divided in itself as any part of *England*, and by that means became a most unhappie seat of War, often gained and lost again by either side. *Lincolnshire* was then very forward for the Lord WILLOUGHBY (however afterward he found some resistance from the Earl of *Lindsey*, who sided with the King) as he wrote-up to the Parliament, and sent also to them the King's Letter, and his own Answer: Which are both fit to be inserted into the Story, being the first of that kinde, and much unfolding the nature of the business.

The inhabitants of Lincolnshire adhere to the Parliament.

The King's Letter to the Lord WILLOUGHBY of Parham.

CHARLES REX.

Right Trusty and Wellbeloved, We greet you well. Whereas We understand that you have begun to assemble, train and muster the Trained-Bands of Our County of Lincoln, under pretence of an Ordinance of Parliament whereto We have not given Our consent, which is not onely contrary to the Law,

Law, but to Our Command and Pleasure, signified by Our Proclamation sent to Our High Sheriff of that Our County. Wherefore, that you may not hereafter plead ignorance of such Our Prohibition, We do by these Our Letters command and charge you, upon your Allegiance, to desist and forbear to raise, train, exercise or assemble together, any part of the Trained Bands of Our said County, either by yourself, or by any others employed under you, or by warrant from you. And because you may, for what you have already done concerning the Militia of that Our County, plead, that you had not so particular a Command, We shall passe by what you have already done therein, so as presently, upon your receipt hereof, you shall desist and give-over meddling any further with any thing concerning the Militia of that Our County. But if you shall not presently desist, and forbear meddling therewith, We are resolved to call you to a strict account for your disobedience therein, after so many particular and legal Commands given you, upon your Allegiance, to the contrary; and shall esteem and proceed against you, as a disturber of the Peace of the Kingdom.

Given at our Court at York, the fourth of June, 1642.

*To Our Right Trusty and Wellbeloved, the
Lord WILLOUGHBY of Parham.*

The Lord WILLOUGHBY of Parham, his Letter in Answer to His Majesty.

SIR,

As there can be nothing of greater unhappinesse to me, than to receive a Command from Your Majesty whereunto my endeavours cannot give so ready an obedience as my affections; so I must confesse the difficulty at this time not a little, how to expresse that Duty which I owe to Your Majesty's late Commands, and not falsifie that Trust reposed in me by Your high Court of Parliament; through whose particular directions I am now come into this County to settle the Militia, according to the Ordinance of Parliament, which by the votes of my Lord LITTLETON, and others in the House of Peers, better versed in the Laws than myself, passed as a legal thing; and hath since been confirmed (if I mistake not) by his example, and Your Majesty's Chief Justice Sir JOHN BANKS, both in accepting their Ordinance, and nominating their Deputy-Lieutenants: how much further they proceeded, I know not.

But,

But, Sir, if the opinions of those great Lawyers drew me into an act unsuitable to Your Majesties liking, I hope the want of yeers will excuse my want of judgement. And, since, by the Command of the Parliament, I am now so far engaged in their Service as the sending-out Warrants to summon the County to meet me this day at Lincoln, and afterwards in other places; I do most humbly beseech Your Majesty not to impose that Command on me, which must needs render me false to those that relie on me, and so make me more unhappie then any other misery that can fall upon me.

These things, Sir, I once more humbly beseech Your Majestie, may be taken into Your Gracious consideration; and that You would never be pleased to harbour any misconceit of me, or of this Action; since nothing hath yet passed by my Commands here, or ever shall, but what shall tend to the honour and safety of Your Majesties Person, to the preservation of the Peace of Your Kingdoms, and to the content (I hope) of all Your Majestie's Subjects in these parts, amongst whom I remain,

Your Majestie's most humble and most
dutiful Subject and Servant,
FRANCIS WILLOUGHBY.

Upon the receipt of these Letters, the Lords sent a Message to the House of Commons, in which they expressed how much they did value and approve the endeavours of this Lord in a service so much importing the safety of this Kingdom, not doubting of their readinesse to concur with them, upon all occasions, to manifest the sense they have, and shall retain, of his deservings; which appear the greater, by how much the difficulties (appearing by the circumstances of those Letters) have been greater. The Lords, therefore, as they resolved to make his Interest their own, in this Service for the publike good and safety of the Kingdom; so they desired the Commons to joyn with them in so just and necessary a work. To this the House of Commons consented, and resolved to joyn with the Lords in this Vote, making the like resolution also for the Deputy-Lieutenants for the County of *Lincoln*, and desired the Lords concurrence therein. Upon which it was ordered by the Lords in Parliament, that they agree with the House of Commons for the resolution concerning the Deputy-Lieutenants of the County of *Lincoln*.

In *Essex* also, (which proved a most unanimous County, and by that means continued in peace and happinesse,) the Earl of *Warwick* (whose care and action was not confined onely to the Sea) had been chosen Lord-Lieutenant by the Parliament, and, when he went-down to muster and exercise the Country, was received with great applause. The Trained-Bands were not onely compleat, but increased by Volunteers to unusual numbers; and so affectionate to that Cause they were in general, that

The people of the County of Essex also adhere zealously to the Parliament.

that they presented a Petition to the Earl of *Warwick* and the Deputy-Lieutenants, in the name of all the Captains and Lieutenants of the several Companies, and in the name of all persons belonging to the Trained-Bands. To which Petition, when it was read in the field, they expressed a full consent by their general acclamations and applause in every Company. The Earl of *Warwick* therefore sent the Petition to the Parliament, to let them see the extraordinary alacrity and affection of that County of *Essex* to them: which was in these words, which follow.

To the Right Honourable ROBERT Earl of Warwick, Lord-Lieutenant of the County of Essex; and to the worthy Gentlemen the Deputy-Lieutenants of the same County, confided in by the most Honourable the high Court of Parliament.

“ We, the Captains and Lieutenants, with the full consent of the Trained-Bands and Voluntiers of the County now assembled, having, before the access of this present Parliament, seen our Religion, our Laws and Liberties, brought to the brink of ruine and subversion, by the results of most desperate and wicked Counsels, could not but with exceeding joy behold the assembling and continuance of so great and faithful a Council (the Representative Body of this Kingdom) and with most certain confidence commit thereto all that was dear unto us.

“ And, having also seen the late hellish designs and actings of a malignant party in this Kingdom, and the bloody Rebellion in *Ireland*, all working to retard the progresse, or subvert the being, of this worthy Parliament, and therein to bereave us of all our hopes of Reformation, or future peace and happiness to this Church or State; we cannot but ascribe all glory and praise unto the Lord of lords, and expresse most hearty thankfulness to his blessed Instruments, that great Assembly, for their undaunted resolutions, unparallel'd endeavours, and happie proceedings for the common good. And herein (as not the least means of our safety) for the most necessary and seasonable Ordinance of theirs touching the *Militia*, whereby we are put under the Command and Guidance of so noble a Lord, and such worthy Gentlemen, whereunto we humbly desire this present day and meeting may be an evidence and pledge of our free and willing obedience.

“ Having intrusted our Religion, our Laws, and all, into the hands of that great and most faithful Council, the Parliament, whose care and fidelity we have so abundantly found; we even bleed to see the heart and actions of our Royal King (contrary to his own Royal expressions) declining from the Counsels of his Parliament, and carried after other Counsels, whom as the Laws and Constitutions of this Land have not known nor reposed upon, so we (for our own parts) neither will nor dare intrust them with our Religion or Laws: and whom, we
“ verily

“ verily believe, could they prevail against that highest Court, (under God our
 “ chiefest Bulwark and Defence) would soon deprive us both of Religion and
 “ Law, and (notwithstanding all their specious pretences) reduce us to a condition
 “ no less miserable than slavish.

“ From the deep apprehensions of all which, we do freely and heartily pro-
 “ mise and tender our persons and estates to assist and defend (to the uttermost)
 “ the high Court of Parliament now assembled, the Members, Power, and Privi-
 “ ledges thereof; and therein, his Majestie’s Person and Authority, and the
 “ Kingdom’s Peace, (according to our late Protestation) against all contrary
 “ Counsels, Power, or force of Arms, whatsoever, which shall be reared-up, or
 “ attempted, against them.

“ And this our humble Acknowledgement and Resolution, (which, we doubt
 “ not, will be accorded-unto by all good Subjects) we humbly desire your
 “ Honour and Worships to tender, on our behalf, to that most honourable
 “ Assembly of Parliament: for whose happy progresse and successe we shall
 “ daily pray.

Subscribed.

J. KITELEY, HENRY FARRE, JOHN BALLEET, JOHN FLEMMING, WILLIAM
 MARSHAM, ROBERT BARRINGTON, Captains. THOMAS HARPER, JOHN
 WOODCOCK, RICHARD LAWRENCE, GEORGE COLWEL, THOMAS CLARK,
 WILLIAM BURLS, Lieutenants.

The Parliament were very forward to expresse their approbation of this most
 affectionate Declaration of the *Essex* men, and returned them an Answer; part
 of which was in this manner.

*This just and faithful resolution of theirs to the publike good, the Lords and Com-
 mons do not onely approve, but commend; assuring them that, as their endeavours
 have been for the Peace and Happinesse of the King and Kingdom, so they will
 persist in discharge of the great and publike Trust which lies upon them; to go
 thorow all difficulties which may oppose the publike Peace and Welfare of this
 Kingdom; and will, upon all occasions, be ready to expresse, particularly to those
 persons, that respect which is due to persons from whom they have received so
 great assurance of affection and fidelity.*

In *Kent* there was cheerful obedience (without any open opposition) shewed to
 the Ordinance of the *Militia*; as it appeared by their Petition and Proclamation,
 and more by their real and constant actions. True it is, that some Gentlemen of
 that County were not much affected to the Parliament’s Cause, who did accordingly
 frame a displeasing Petition to the Houses, and brought it up to *London*, accom-
 panied with many Gentlemen of that County: but the Parliament, having notice of
 it, sent Officers, and disarmed those Gentlemen who brought the Petition, before
 they passed over *London*-bridge: and the two which presented it to the House of
 Commons, Sir WILLIAM BUTLER and Mr. RICHARD LOVELACE, were both
 committed.

The majority of the
 people of Kent also
 adhere to the Parlia-
 ment.

committed. Those in *Kent* who favoured the King's party and Commission of *Array*, were not a number considerable enough to bring that County into any combustion; the Gentlemen which adhered to the Parliament used so great a care and industry in settling the *Militia*, in disarming those few (but great) Papists that were among them, in raising Arms, and taxing themselves at high rates for the service of the Parliament, that they not onely preserved their own County in quiet, but gave great assistance to the Parliament-Armies in other places, as will appear in the sequel of this Story.

Sussex.

The Eastern end of *Sussex* (it being a long and narrow County, lying for many miles upon the Sea) stood firm to the Parliament, and were very industrious in settling of the *Militia*, by which means they were so happy as to preserve themselves in peace and quietnesse. But the Western part of that County, by means of many revolted Members of the Parliament, who resided there, together with their Allies and friends, was, at the first, in some distraction, though it continued not very long.

Surrey and Middlesex.

Surrey and *Middlesex*, by fortune of their situation, could not but side with, and, by consequence, be protected by, the Parliament.

Suffolk, Norfolk, and Cambridgeshire.

The Eastern Counties, *Suffolk*, *Norfolk*, and *Cambridgeshire*; (once the Kingdom of the *East Angles*;) were happily kept from the beginning without any great combustion; though it were certain that many of the chief Gentry in those Counties bended in their affections to the King's Commission of *Array*. But they were not a party strong enough to engage their Countries in a War: For the Freeholders and Yeomen in general adhered to the Parliament; and those Gentlemen who attempted to raise men, or draw Fortes together, or provide Arms for the King, were soon curbed, and all their endeavours crushed at the beginning, by those of the other side; and especially by the great wislom and indefatigable industry of Master OLIVER CROMWELL, a Member of the House of Commons, who had taken a Commission for Colonel of Horse from the Parliament: of whose particular actions there will be high occasion to discourse hereafter.

Hampshire.

The County of *Southampton* began at the first to be divided, and continued so, being long and variously perplexed with the changing fortunes of either side. Colonel GORING, eldest son to the Lord GORING, who had been, the year before, a means to detect that Conspiracie of bringing-up the Northern Army against the Parliament, (of which already hath been spoken) and by that, had grown into some Trust with the Parliament, of which he was a Member, was sent-down to *Portsmouth*, to keep that place for them; and three thousand pounds were allowed him for the charges of Fortification. He, receiving that money from the Parliament, broke his Trust, and kept the Place for the King against them; with what successe, shall hereafter be declared. But, immediately after his revolt, the Earl of *Portland*, Governour of the Isle of *Wight*, a man suspected by the Parliament, was committed to custody in *London*, for security of his person, lest he should comply with Colonel GORING, and command that Island for the King's party. The

Colonel Goring deserts the Parliament.

The Isle of Wight.

Government

Government of *Wight* was then committed to the Earl of *Pembrook*, a man of whose fidelity the Parliament doubted not.

Though the Southern and Eastern parts of *England* enjoyed some shew of rest, the Counties more remote from *London*, toward the North and West, could not at all partake of that happinesse.

In *Lancashire* the Lord STRANGE, son to the Earl of *Derby*, who was made Lancashire. Lord-Lieutenant of *Lancashire* and *Cheshire* by the King, seeking to put the Commission of *Array* in execution, found great resistance from the Parliamentary Gentlemen, Sir THOMAS STANLEY, Master HOLLAND, Master HOLCRAFT, Master EGERTON, Master BOOTH, as also Master ASHTON, and Master MOOR, both Members of the House of Commons; by whom, within the space of few months, he was quite driven out of the County, and that Shire wholly ruled by the Parliament, though it abounded more with Papists than any other.

The Lord STRANGE, upon the fifteenth day of *July*, had made an attempt to gain The King's troops under Lord Strange are repulsed at Manchester, July 15, 1642. *Manchester*, and by those Gentlemen was repulsed; where one man was slain, which was the first blood shed in these Civil Wars. But this Lord was not at all fortunate in service against the Parliament; who, not long after, returned again with a great Force, consisting of three thousand men, to the Town of *Manchester*; where, after he had sharply besieged it for the space of two whole weeks, he was at last quite beaten, with the losse of many of his men.

In *Cheshire* also, the other County of which he was made Lieutenant by the Cheshire, King, his fortune was no better; where he was resisted by Sir WILLIAM BRETON and other Gentlemen, and hindered from seizing the Magazine of that County, as he intended. Nor could the Earl of *Rivers*, whom the King had put into the Commission of *Array* (being a Papist) assist him sufficiently to make good that County for the King, but that the Papists were all disarmed there by those Protestant Gentlemen that adhered to the Parliament.

Further North, the Countries were more full of variance. The Earl of *New-* Northumberland, *castle*, with a strong Garrison, kept for the King the Town of *Newcastle*. And the Earl of *Cumberland*, made Lord-Lieutenant of *York-shire* by the King, was Yorkshire. active in putting the Commission of *Array* in execution: but they were resisted by the Lord FAIRFAX, and others of the Parliamentary Gentlemen. But this businesse of the North shall now be passed-over, deserving a larger Story hereafter, when time shall require, to speak of the Earl of *Newcastle's* greatnesse, and the various fortunes of the Lord FAIRFAX and his son Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX.

In *Derbyshire*, where many great Lords and Gentlemen inhabited, none at all of Derbyshire. note stood for the Parliament, but Sir JOHN GELL and his brother: of whose actions it will be seasonable to speak in another place.

Staffordshire and *Nottinghamshire* were in no lesse combustion. Staffordshire and Nottinghamshire.

In *Leicestershire* the troubles were far greater, and early begun by Master Leicestershire, HENRY HASTINGS, second son to the Earl of *Huntingdon*, whom the King had made Sheriff of that County, and put into the Commission of *Array*; who raised

great Forces to seize upon the Magazines of that County. Against whom the Earl of *Stamford* was sent by the Parliament, as Lord-Lieutenant, with a considerable strength, who arrived there, did much curb the proceedings of Master *HASTINGS*, and took possession of the Town of *Leicester*.

Warwickshire.

Great was the Contention about that time in *Warwickshire*, between the Earl of *Northampton* for the King, and the Lord *BROOK* for the Parliament, not without sharp encounters, and slaughter on either side. The Earl having seized the Ordnance at *Banbury*, marched with great fury into *Warwickshire*, spoiling the Country as he went, though not without opposition of the people, and the Lord *BROOK*'s Forces; against whom he could not at all prevail.

Wiltshire.

Berkshire.

The Earl of *Pembrook* had settled the *Militia* in *Wiltshire* with small ado, though it continued not long so. And the Earl of *Holland* in *Berkshire*, being but faintly resisted by the Earl of *Berkshire*, the Lord *LOVELACE*, and others. For soon after the Earl of *Berkshire*, together with Sir *JOHN CURSON*, Sir *ROBERT DORMER*, and others for the Commission of *Array*, who came to *Wallington* in *Oxfordshire*, to seize the Magazine of that part of the County, which was laid-up in that Town, were there taken prisoners, and sent-up to the Parliament by Colonel *HAMDEN* and Colonel *GOODWIN*, two Members of the House of Commons, and Knights of the Shire for *Buckingham*.

The Western countries.

But the further that this Discourse travels Westward, the greater and more remarkeably you shall finde such contestations; especially considering the number of Lords and Gentlemen of great rank, and many of them Members of Parliament, who sided with the King against the Parliament, and were therefore afterward voted out of the House. One great Head there was of all those Western Counties, *WILLIAM*, Marquesse of *Hartford*, whom the King, by his Commission of *Array*, had appointed Chief, and made him Lord-Lieutenant-General of *Devon*, *Cornwall*, *Somerset*, *Dorset*, *Wilts*, *Southampton*, *Gloucester*, *Berks*, *Oxford*, *Hereford*, and seven Counties within the Principality of *Wales*: who, notwithstanding his high Command, was never able to atchieve any great matter for the King's side; so much were the common people of the West at that time inclined to the Parliament, and so active were those Gentlemen who stood for it; such as were the sons of Sir *FRANCIS POPHAM*, Master *ALEXANDER POPHAM*, *HUGH*, and *EDWARD*, who were more animated by the example of their aged father; Master *STRODE*, a Deputy-Lieutenant, and others, against all those frequent attempts which the Marquesse made.

The Marquis of Hartford is made Lord-Lieutenant of them all by the King.

Great was the number of considerable men in those Countries, which took part with the Marquesse against the Parliament, and very industrious in their several Stations, to put in execution the Commission of *Array*; as the Lord *PAWLET*, Sir *RALPH HOPTON*, and Sir *JOHN STOWEL*, both Members of the House of Commons, and for that reason put out of the House. Sir *RICHARD SLANY*, in *Cornwal*, another Member, put out also for the same cause; as likewise were Sir *EDWARD RODNEY*, and Master *COVENTRY*, both Parliament-men, who followed the Marquesse in some of his actions. Sir *BEVILLE GREENVILLE*, an active

man,

man, another Member of Parliament, was very industrious for the *Array*, both in *Cornwal* and *Devon*, joyning himself with the Earl of *Bath*, came for that purpose to his house at *Tastock*, in *Devonshire*, and assisted by many Gentlemen, as Master *CULINS*, Sheriff of that County, *M. BAMFIELD*, *M. ASHFORD*, *M. GIFFORD*, *M. SAITHIL*, Baronet *SEYMOUR*, and *M. COURTNEY*; to whose assistance Squire *ROGERS* came with Forces out of *Dorsetshire*.

Various were the Successes which Marquesse *Hartford*, assisted by so many of the Gentry, found in his several Enterprises; sometimes prevailing, but more often distressed. In one Skirmish, which, about the beginning of *August*, himself, the Lord *PAWLET*, Sir *RALPH HOPTON*, Sir *JOHN STOWEL*, and *M. SMITH*, another Member of the House of Commons, made against the Deputy-Lieutenants in *Somersetshire*, he prevailed against them, and possessed himself of the Town of *Shepton-Mallet*: Ten men were slain, and many wounded. Going afterwards to *Wells*, he had been besieged by many thousands of the People, who arose against him; but that having timely notice of their coming, he escaped a back-way out of the Town. About which time, the Earl of *Bedford* was sent down by the Parliament against him, with three hundred Horse: by whom the Lord Marquesse, the Lord *PAWLET*, Sir *RALPH HOPTON*, Colonel *LUNSFORD*, and many other considerable men, were besieged in *Sherburn*. For great numbers out of the Country came daily to the assistance of the Earl of *Bedford*. Many weeks did that Siege continue; many Sallies were made out, and sharp encounters on both sides performed with great courage: the Parliament side being in firm hope to have taken them at last; which was conceived a thing of great moment, and advantage to their affairs, if they could have possessed the persons of so many men, considerable both in their Fortunes and Valour; and who proved afterwards very strong and cruel enemies. Yet that hope was frustrate: for about the beginning of October they all escaped out of *Sherburn*: the Earl nevertheless pursued after them, and in the Chase took *M. PALLART*, Sir *HENRY*, Sir *JOHN*, and Sir *CHARLES BARCLAY*, prisoners. Within a week after, the Earl of *Bath* was apprehended, and brought-up a prisoner to the Parliament.

Sherburn is besieged by the troops of the Parliament. In August, 1642.

It cannot be much wondered-at, that Division was found in Countrey-Towns and Villages so far remote from the Parliament, where the people were variously wrought-upon by perswasions or fears from either side: when *London* itself, the Seat of that great Council, and chiefest Bulwark of their defence, was not without some taste of these Distractions. Which, besides the actions of some private Citizens, too petty to be here rehearsed, may appear to the Reader in one thing, which cannot be omitted: The Lord Mayor of *London* was at this time a prisoner in the Tower, committed by the Parliament.

Sir *RICHARD GURNEY*, Lord-Mayor of *London* for that year, was charged by the House of Commons on the seventh of *July*, for being a mover of Sedition in the Kingdom, in causing the King's Proclamation concerning the Commission of *Array* (which was declared by both Houses to be illegal) to be proclaimed in the City. The Lord Mayor of *London* is imprisoned by the Parliament for taking part with the King against them. July 7, 1642.

City. And the Charge being perfected, was sent-up to the Lords, desiring that he might forthwith be called to his Answer ; which was accordingly granted.

Four days after, while the Lord Mayor was attending the Lords House upon this Charge, an additional Impeachment was read against him in the House of Commons, brought-in by the Common-Council of *London*, for divers breaches of his Oath in execution of his Office, for proclaiming divers illegal Proclamations, and contemning the Orders of Parliament.

This Impeachment was forthwith sent-up, and read in the Lords House. Upon the reading of which, it was ordered that he should be sent to the Tower, from thence to be brought to a legal Trial upon his Impeachment.

Many days, during the space of a whole month, was this Lord-Mayor brought from the Tower to *Westminster*, to attend the Lords of Parliament, and many times returned back without being heard, by reason of so great a multiplicity of Businesses as the Houses were then in.

He is tried by the House of Lords, and found guilty, and condemned to a punishment. August 12, 1642.

At last, after some hearings, he was brought, on the twelfth of *August*, to the House of Lords, to receive his Censure : The effect whereof was, that he should be put from his Mayoralty, never bear Office in the City or Commonwealth, be incapable of all Honour or Dignity to be conferred on him by the King, and stand committed prisoner to the Tower, during the pleasure of both Houses.

Messages and complaints of the King and Parliament against each other.

During the time of these contentions between the Ordinance of the *Militia* and the Commission of *Array*, which is briefly touched by itself ; it will not be amisse to return to the King's proceedings in his own Person, by what degrees he came to encrease in strength, and what contestations happened betwixt Himself and the Parliament : wherein, that which concerned the Pen, shall be first briefly touched, and then his other actions. But those Declarations, Petitions, and Proclamations, which, upon all occasions, were then published, are too many and too long to be recited in a Story : in the Records, and printed Books of Ordinances, they may be read. I shall onely mention some of the chief, and excerpt the most material contents of them.

The Parliament, about the end of *July*, had petitioned the King to forbear all preparations of War, and remove his Garrisons. To which he gave Answer, and upbraided them with their preparations of War, for appointing the Earl of *Essex* to be their General, and the Earl of *Warwick* Admiral. In that Answer, he descants at large upon particulars, commanding his said Answer and their Petition to be read in all Churches. To which the Parliament reply, as they had done before, that they cannot lay-down their Arms, nor adjourn the Parliament to any other place, as he would have them, unlesse he leave-off those Warlike preparations, and comply with that Council, to which onely he ought to adhere by the Constitution of this Government. They likewise command the Petition, Answer, and Reply, to be read in all Churches.

But, things proceeding still higher, the King, being returned to the City of *York*, from thence sent-forth a Proclamation, to suppress (as he there styleth it) the present

present Rebellion under command of ROBERT, Earl of *Essex*; offering withal free pardon to him, and all such as shall within six days after the date thereof, being the ninth of *August*, lay down their Arms. In which Proclamation also he commanded the Marquisse *Hartford* to raise speedily what Forces he could, within all those Counties whereof he had made him Lieutenant-General in the Commission of *Array* (of which before was spoken) and to march against, destroy, or apprehend, the said Earl of *Essex*.

The Parliament, upon this Proclamation, make a Declaration, wherein they briefly recount all the King's former proceedings against them and the Kingdom: All which they attribute (after their usual manner) to his wicked Council; and promise still to make him great and happy, if he will return to his great Council.

But the next day after his former Proclamation, the King, continuing still at *York*, sent forth another, declaring that no Papist should serve him in his Army, and that his Souldiers should commit no rapine upon the people. And within two days after that, he published a Discourse, called *A Declaration to all his loving Subjects, concerning the proceedings of this present Parliament*. This Declaration was of a great length, containing fifty pages in a large *Quarto*. In which was comprised a kinde of History, touching all former passages betwixt himself and them, from the beginning of these divisions: which is to be read in the printed Book of Parliament-Ordinances. Toward the end of that Declaration, he protesteth a wonderful love to Parliaments, and to the peace and happinesse of the Kingdom: but he requires that some persons (as disturbers of the publike peace) may be delivered into the hands of Justice, to be tried by their Peers, naming the Lord of *Kymbolton*, and those five Members of the House of Commons whom before he came to surprise in that House, Master HOLLIS, Sir ARTHUR HASLERIG, M. PYM, M. HAMBLEN, and M. STRODE; as likewise M. HENRY MARTIN, and Sir HENRY LUDLOW, two Members also of the House of Commons, for speaking some bold Speeches in that House. He also desires to have delivered-up to him Alderman PENINGTON, who succeeded in the Mayoralty to the fore-named Sir RICHARD GURNEY, and Captain VENN, one of the City-Captains: those two last he accuses of bringing tumults from the City, to terrifie the Parliament at *Westminster*. Another desire of the King's is, that Inditements of High Treason upon the Statute of the 23d yeer of King EDWARD the Third, may be drawn against the Earls of *Essex*, *Warwick*, and *Stamford*, the Lord BROOK, Sir JOHN HOTHAM, and Serjeant Major-General SKIPPON, an expert and religious Souldier, a man of high action in the succeeding War, whom the City had employed in exercising of their *Militia*; as likewise against all those who shall hereafter exercise the *Militia* by vertue of the Ordinance of Parliament.

The King publishes a long Declaration against the proceedings of the Parliament, on the 10th of August, 1642.

The Pen was very quick upon all occasions: and the King, the next day after the publication of this long fore-mentioned Declaration, sent a Message to the Parliament, upbraiding both Houses with an Order which they had then made, for the borrowing of an hundred thousand pounds out of that money which the Adventurers had raised for reducing of *Ireland*, and subduing the Rebels there; affirming,

affirming, that, out of his Princely care and piety toward distressed *Ireland*, he cannot but take notice of it; commanding them immediately to retract that mischievous and unjust Order (for so he calls it) as they would answer the contrary to Almighty God, himself, and those that have trusted them: Wherein he expecteth their speedie Answer and Obedience; and the rather, that he may thereby be secured, that such part of the four hundred thousand pounds as is, or shall be, collected from his good Subjects of *England*, by vertue of the late Act of Parliament, whereby the same is granted, may not likewise (under false pretences) be diverted from the proper use to which it was intended, and misemployed to the disturbance of the Kingdom's peace, in a War against him.

The Lords and Commons in Parliament make Answer to this Message, expressing what caution there was in the very Order (which, upon that very occasion, was printed) for speedie repayment of that Sum, and disposing of it to the right use. But, first, they tell the King, that this very Message of his to them, is an high breach of the Priviledge of Parliament: and, upon that occasion, they call to remembrance, and declare many particulars of their care for the relief of *Ireland*, and the King's hindering of it. Those particulars there expressed, are as followeth. They declare, *that this bloodie Rebellion was first raised by the same Counsels that had before brought two Armies within the bowels of this Kingdom, and two Protestant Nations ready to welter in each other's blood, which were both defrayed a long time at the charge of the poor Commons of England, and quietly, at last, disbanded; by God's blessing upon the Parliament's endeavours. That, this designe foiling, the same wicked Counsels which had caused that impious War, raised this barbarous Rebellion in Ireland; and recommended the suppressing thereof (for the better colour) to the Parliament's care: who, out of a fellow-feeling of the unspeakable miseries of their Protestant Brethren there (not suspecting this horrid Plot, now too apparent) did cheerfully undertake that great work, and do really intend and endeavour to settle the Protestant Religion and a permanent Peace in that Realm, to the glory of God, the honour and profit of his Majestie, and security of his three Kingdoms. But how they have been discouraged, retarded, and diverted, in and from this pious and glorious Work, by those traiterous Counsels about his Majestie, will appear by many particulars.*

The Parliament charges the King with actions tending to defeat the vigorous measures taken by the Parliament for the suppression of the rebellion of the Papists in Ireland.

They there mention the sending-over at first of twenty thousand pounds by the Parliament, and that good way found-out to reduce *Ireland* by the Adventure of private men, without charging the Subject in general, which would probably have brought in a Million of money, had the King continued in, or neer, *London*, and not, by leaving his Parliament, and making War upon it, so intimidated and discouraged the Adventurers, and others who would have adventured, that that good Bill is rendered in a manner ineffectual.

They mention, that when, at the sole charge of the Adventurers, five thousand Foot, and five hundred Horse were designed for the relief of *Munster*, under the command of the Lord WHARTON, and nothing was wanting but a Commission to enable that Lord for the Service, such was the power of wicked Counsel, that no
Commission

Commission could be obtained from the King; by reason whereof, *Lynrick* was wholly lost, and the Province of *Munster* since in very great distresse.

That when well-affected persons, at their own charge, by way of Adventure, had prepared twelve Ships, and six Pinnaces, with a thousand Land-forces, for the service of *Ireland*, desiring nothing but a Commission from his Majestie; that Commission, after twice sending to *York* for it, and the Ships lying ready to set-Sail, three weeks together, at the charge of neer three hundred pounds a day, was likewise denied. And those Adventurers (rather than lose their Expedition) were constrained to go by vertue of an Ordinance of both Houses of Parliament. N. B.

That, though the Lords-Justices of *Ireland* earnestly desired to have two Pieces of Battering cannon sent-over, as necessary for that Service; yet such commands were given to the Officers of the Tower, that none of the King's Ordnance must be sent, to save his Kingdom. N. B.

That CHARLES BLOYD, Engineer and Quarter-Master-General of the Army in *Ireland*, and in actual employment there against the Rebels, was called-away from that important Service, by expresse command of the King. N. B.

That Captain GREEN, Controller of the Artillery, a man in Pay, and principally employed and trusted here by the Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland* for providing and ordering the Train of Artillery, which was to be sent to *Dublin*, and who had received great sums of money for that purpose, was commanded from that employment and trust, to serve the King in this unnatural War against his Parliament. And, when the Parliament had provided six hundred suits of Clothes for present relief of the poor Souldiers in *Ireland*, and sent them towards *Chester*, WILLIAM WHITAKER, that undertook the carriage of them, was assaulted by the King's souldiers lying about *Coventry*; who took-away the six hundred suits of Clothes, and the poor man's Waggon and Horses, though they were told that the Clothes were for the souldiers in *Ireland*, and though the poor Carrier was five times with the Earl of *Northampton*, to beg a release of his Waggon. N. B.

That three hundred suits of Clothes sent likewise by the Parliament for *Ireland*, with a Chirurgion's Chest of Medicaments, towards *Chester*, were taken all away by the King's Troopers, under command of one Captain MIDDLETON, together with the poor Carrier's Horses and Waggon, for the King's service. As likewise, that a great number of Draught-horses, prepared by the Parliament for the Artillery and Baggage of the Irish Army, and sent to *Chester* for that purpose, being there, attending a passage, are now required by the King for his present service in *England*; whose forces are so quartered about the Roads to *Ireland*, that no Provision can passe thither by Land with any safety.

That Captain KETTLEBY and Sir HENRY STRADLING, the Admiral and Vice-Admiral of the Ships appointed to lie upon the coast of *Ireland*, to annoy the Rebels, and to prevent the bringing of Ammunition and relief from forraign parts, are both called-away from that employment by the King's command: and by reason of their departure from the coast of *Munster*, to which they were designed,

the Rebels there have received Powder, Ammunition, and other relief from foreign parts.

By which particulars (say they) it may seem that those Rebels are countenanced there, upon designe to assist the enemies of the Parliament here : especially considering that those confident Rebels have presumed, very lately, to send a Petition to the King, intituling themselves his Majesties Catholike Subjects of *Ireland*, and complaining of the Puritan Parliament of *England*; and desiring, that since his Majestie comes not thither, according to their expectation, they may come into *England* to his Majestie.

The Parliament, therefore, finding what danger both Kingdoms are in, by the designes of cruel enemies, thought fit to provide for the safety of both, by preparing a competent Army for the defence of King and Kingdom. But in regard that the Plate, brought-in by so many well-affected men, could not be coined so suddenly as the service required; and well knowing that one hundred thousand pounds might, for a short time, be borrowed out of the Adventurers money for *Ireland*, without any prejudice to the affairs of that Kingdom, whose Subsistence depends upon the Welfare of this, and resolving to make a speedy repayment of that money, made this Order : which, that it may appear (say they) to all the world to be neither mischievous, illegal, nor unjust, (as the King calls it) the House of Commons thought fit to recite it *in hæc verba*; and, instead of retracting the Order, to repay that money with all possible speed.

The Order, *July 30.*

It is this day Ordered, by the Commons House of Parliament, That the Treasurers appointed to receive the Moneys come-in upon the Subscriptions for Ireland, do forthwith furnish, by way of Loan, unto the Committee of Lords and Commons for the defence of the Kingdom, the sum of one hundred thousand pounds, for the supply of the publike necessity, for defence of the King, Parliament, and Kingdom, upon the Publike Faith, to be repayed duely and carefully within so short a time, that it shall not be diverted from that purpose for which it was intended, or any way frustrate the Acts already made in the behalf of that adventure.

During the time of these Paper-conflicts, the King, in person, had often removed, and visited many places. To the Gentry of *Leicestershire* he made a Speech on the 20th of *July*, after his usual manner, with protestations of his great love to the people, and care of the Kingdom. And from thence removing Northward, on the fourth of *August* he made a Speech, after the same manner, to the

the Gentry of *Yorhshire*; from whence he returned back to *Nottingham*, and there set-up his Standard Royal. Very few people resorted to it. Nor had the King at this time a considerable strength to guard his Person, if any attempts had been made to have seized upon him. From *Nottingham*, on the 25th of *August*, the King sent a Message to the Parliament by the Earls of *Southampton* and *Dorset*, and Sir JOHN CULPEPER, one of the Members of the House of Commons, who had deserted the Parliament, and went to the King at *York*; having not long before been made by him Chancellour of the Exchequer.

The King sets-up his Standard at Nottingham, August 5, 1642.

The King's Message to both Houses of Parliament from *Nottingham*, August 25th, 1642.

We have, with unspeakable grief of heart, long beheld the Distractions of this Our Kingdom. Our very Soul is full of Anguish, until We may finde some Remedy to prevent the Miseries which are ready to overwhelm this whole Nation by a Civil War. And, though all Our endeavours tending to the composing of those unhappie Differences betwixt Us and Our two Houses of Parliament (though pursued by Us with all Zeal and Sincerity) have been hitherto without that Success we hoped-for; yet such is Our constant and earnest care to preserve the publike Peace, that We shall not be discouraged from using any Expedient, which, by the blessing of the God of mercy, may lay a firm foundation of Peace and Happinesse to all Our good Subjects. To this end observing that many Mistakes have arisen by the Messages, Petitions, and Answers betwixt Us and Our two Houses of Parliament; which haply may be prevented by some other way of Treaty, wherein the matters in difference may be more clearly understood, and more freely transacted: We have thought fit to propound to you, That some fit persons may be by you enabled to treat with the like number to be authorized by Us, in such a manner, and with such freedom of Debate, as may best tend to that happie Conclusion which all good men desire, The Peace of the Kingdom. Wherein, as we promise, in the word of a King, all safety and encouragement to such as shall be sent unto Us, if you shall chuse the place where We are for the Treaty, which we wholly leave to you, presuming the like care of the safety of those We shall employ, if you shall name another place: So We assure you and all Our good Subjects, that (to the best of Our understanding) nothing shall be therein wanting on Our part, which may advance the true Protestant Religion, op-

pose Popery and Superstition, secure the Law of the Land (upon which is built, as well Our just Prerogative, as the Propriety and Liberty of the Subject) confirm all just Power and Priviledges of Parliament, and render Us, and Our people, truly happie, by a true understanding betwixt Us and Our two Houses of Parliament. Bring with you as firm resolutions to do your duty, and let all Our People joyn with Us in Our prayers to Almighty God for his blessing upon this Work.

If this Proposition shall be rejected by you, We have done Our duty so amply, that God will absolve Us from the guilt of any of that blood which must be spilt. And what opinion soever other men may have of Our Power, We assure you, nothing but Our Christian and pious care to prevent the effusion of blood, hath begot this motion; Our provision of Men, Arms, and Money, being such, as may secure Us from further violence, till it please God to open the eyes of Our People.

The Answer of the Lords and Commons to the King's Message of the 25th of August, 1642.

May it please Your Majestie.

“ The Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, having received Your
 “ Majestie's Message of the 25th of August, do with much grief resent the dange-
 “ rous and distracted state of this Kingdom, which we have by all means en-
 “ deavoured to prevent, both by our several Advices and Petitions to Your Majes-
 “ tie, which have been not onely without successe, but there hath followed that,
 “ which no evil Counsel in former times hath produced, or any age hath seen,
 “ Those several Proclamations and Declarations against both the Houses of Par-
 “ liament, whereby their Actions are declared Treasonable, and their Persons
 “ Traitors; and thereupon Your Majestie hath set-up Your Standard against
 “ them, whereby you have put the two Houses of Parliament, and in them this
 “ whole Kingdom, out of Your Protection: So that until Your Majestie shall
 “ recal those Proclamations and Declarations whereby the Earl of *Essex* and both
 “ Houses of Parliament, their adherents and assistants, and all such as have
 “ obeyed and executed their Commands and Directions, according to their duties,
 “ are declared Traitors, or otherwise Delinquents; and until the Standard, set-up
 “ in pursuance of the said Proclamations, be taken-down, Your Majestie hath
 “ put us into such a condition, that, whilst we so remain, we cannot by the Fun-
 “ damental priviledges of Parliament; the publike Trust reposed in us, or with
 “ the general good and safety of this Kingdom, give Your Majestie any other
 “ Answer to this Message.

Within

Within few days after, the King sent instructions under his Privy Signet to his Commissioners of *Array* for the several Counties of *England* and *Wales*; as to *Marquesse Hartford*, whom the King had made Lieutenant-General of all the Western Counties, as is before expressed; to the Earl of *Cumberland*, Lord-Lieutenant of *Yorkshire*; and the Lord STRANGE, Lieutenant for *Lancashire* and *Cheshire*: in which Instructions he commands them to pursue the Earl of *Essex*, whom he again calls Rebel and Traitour.

Immediately after, the King sent a Reply to that Answer of the Parliament to his last Message of the 25th of *August*; which being short, that the Reader may the more truly inform himself of the nature of this strange division, I shall wholly insert in the very words.

We will not repeat what means We have used to prevent the dangerous and distracted estate of the Kingdom, nor how those means have been interpreted, because, being desirous to avoid effusion of blood, We are willing to decline all memory of former Bitternesse, that might make Our offer of a Treaty lesse readily accepted. We never did declare, nor ever intended to declare both Our Houses of Parliament Traitours, or set-up Our Standard against them; and much lesse to put them and this Kingdom out of Our protection: We utterly professe against it before God and the world. And further, to remove all possible Scruples which may hinder the Treaty so much desired by Us; We hereby promise, so that a day be appointed by you for the revoking of your Declarations against all persons as Traitours or otherwise for assisting Us, We shall, with all cheerfulness, upon the same day, recall our Proclamations and Declarations, and take-down Our Standard. In which Treaty, We shall be ready to grant any thing that shall be really for the good of Our subjects; conjuring you to consider the bleeding condition of Ireland, and the dangerous condition of England, in as high a degree, as by these Our Offers We have declared Our Self to do: and assuring you, that Our chiefe desire in the world is to beget a good understanding and mutual confidence betwixt Us and Our two Houses of Parliament.

To the King's most Excellent Majestie:

The humble Answer and Petition of the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament to the King's last Message.

May it please Your Majestie:

“ If we, the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, should repeat all the ways we have taken, the endeavours we have used, and the expressions we have
“ made

“ made unto Your Majestie, to prevent those distractions and dangers Your
 “ Majestie speaks of, we should too much enlarge this Reply. Therefore, as we
 “ Humbly, so shall we Onely, let Your Majestie know that we cannot recede from
 “ our former Answer, for the reasons therein expressed : for that Your Majestie
 “ hath not taken-down Your Standard, recalled Your Proclamations and Decla-
 “ rations whêreby You have declared the Actions of both Houses of Parliament to
 “ be Treasonable, and their Persons Traitors : And You have published the same
 “ since Your Message the 25th of *August*, by Your late Instructions to Your
 “ Commissioners of *Array*. Which Standard being taken-down, and the Decla-
 “ rations, Proclamations, and Instructions, recalled ; if Your Majestie shall then,
 “ upon this our humble Petition, leaving your Forces, return unto Your Par-
 “ liament, and receive their faithful advice, Your Majestie shall finde such expres-
 “ sions of our fidelities and duties, as shall assure You that Your Safety, Honour,
 “ and Greatnesse, can onely be found in the affections of Your People, and the
 “ sincere Counsels of Your Parliament, whose constant and undiscouraged endea-
 “ vours and consultations have passed thorough difficulties unheard-of, onely to
 “ secure Your Kingdoms from the violent mischiefs and dangers now ready to fall
 “ upon them ; who deserve better of Your Majestie, and can never allow them-
 “ selves (representing likewise Your whole Kingdom) to be balanced with those
 “ persons whose desperate dispositions and counsels prevail still so to interrupt all
 “ our endeavours for the relieving of bleeding *Ireland*, as we may fear our labours
 “ and vast expences will be fruitlesse to that distressed Kingdom. As Your Pre-
 “ sence is thus humbly desired by us ; so it is in our hopes that Your Majestie
 “ will in Your Reason believe, There is no other way than this, to make Your
 “ Majestie’s Self happie, and Your Kingdoms safe.”

The Parliament, immediately after, published a Declaration, that the Arms
 which they were enforced to take-up for the preservation of the Kingdom, Laws
 and Liberties, could not be laid-down, until the King should withdraw his Protec-
 tion from such persons as had been voted Delinquents by both Houses, and leave
 them to the Justice of Parliament.

The King, within few days after, made another Reply to the last Answer of the
 Parliament. The substance of it was, that he could neither do nor offer any more
 than he had already : and that he should think himself clear and innocent
 from any blood that might be spilt in this Quarrel ; praying God so to deal
 with him and his posterity, as he desired to preserve Religion, Law, and
 Liberty of the Subjects, and Priviledges of Parliament. The Parliament returned
 Answer, that, while the King thinks himself bound in Honour to protect such
 Delinquents, in whose preservation the Kingdom cannot be safe, nor the Rights
 of Parliament at all maintained, but must needs fall into utter contempt ; they
 must needs think he hath not done what he can or ought to do. They tell him,
 it is impossible that any reasonable man should believe him to be so tender of
 bleeding *Ireland*, when at the same time divers of the Irish Traitors, the known
 favourers of them, and agents for them, are admitted into his Presence with
 grace and favour, and some of them employed in his service.

THE
HISTORY
OF THE
PARLIAMENT OF ENGLAND.

THE THIRD BOOK.

CHAP. I.

*Prince RUPERT and Prince MAURICE arrive in England.
The Earle of ESSEX, taking leave of the Parliament,
goeth to his Command. The King increaseth in
strength at Shrewsbury. A skirmish at Worcester.
The great Battell of Keynton is fought.*

ABOUT the beginning of this *September*, Prince RUPERT, second Sonne to FREDERICK Prince Elector-Palatine of the *Rhine*, (who had long beene detained Prisoner of Warre by the Emperour, and was newly-released,) arrived in *England*, to offer his Service to the King, his Uncle, in those Warres, which were now visibly begun in this unhappy Kingdome: together with him came his younger Brother Prince MAURICE, and were an addition rather of Gallantry than of strength to the King's side, they being both young and unexperienced Souldiers. Neither, indeed, though they were neere in birth to the Crowne of *England*, were they neere enough to
adde

The Count Palatine, Charles, Elector of Germany, retires into Holland; in July, 1642.

adde any security to the King, by purchasing the People's hatred to themselves; though that were imagined, and talked-of by many, as the cause why they were sent-for. Their elder Brother, CHARLES, Prince Elector, might have served more fitly to play that part: But he, having long remained in the Court of *England*, had lately left the King, not above two Moneths before the arrival of his Brothers: The reasons why he went-away were partly expressed by himselfe afterward in a Message, which he sent out of *Holland* to the Houses of Parliament, wherein he professed sorrow for these distractions, and protested that, whilst he was in the Court of *England*, he had by all means endeavoured to bring the King into a good opinion of his Parliament; acknowledging that his owne interest, and that of the Protestant Religion in *Germany*, did more depend upon the happinesse of the English Parliament, than upon any thing else under God. True it is, that this Prince left not the King, until he saw that the rent betweene him and his Parliament was too great to close; and, having before been exposed by the King to some probability of envy, (as when he attended his Majestiy to the House of Commons for the surprizal of the five Members; and was with him afterwards, when some other things displeasing to the people had been done;) he might, in likelihood, (being of that opinion that he was of concerning this cause,) thinke It the wisest way to take a faire leave, in time, of the King.

These two young Princes, after their arrival in *England*, were soone put into employment and Command under the King, their Uncle; in which they shewed themselves very forward and active, as will appeare afterward: and, if they were more hot and furious than the tender beginnings of a Civil Warre would seem to require, it may be imputed to the fervour of their youth, and the great desire which they had to ingratiate themselves with the King; upon whom, as being no more than Souldiers of fortune, their hopes of advancement wholly depended.

Prince Rupert commands a body of the King's troops against the Parliament, in September, 1642.

Prince RUPERT, the elder brother, and the more furious of the two, within a fortnight after his arrival, commanded a small party of those Forces which the King had at that time gathered together, which were not of so great a body as to be termed an Army: with which he marched into divers Counties, to roll himselfe, like a snow-ball, into a larger bulke, by the Accession of Forces in every place. Through divers parts of *Warwickshire*, *Nottinghamshire*, *Leicestershire*, *Worcestershire*, and *Cheshire*, did this young Prince fly with those Troops which he had, not *inviting* the people so much by faire demeanour (for such was the report to the Houses of Parliament,) as *compelling* them by extreme rigour, to follow that side which he had taken. Many Townes and Villages he plundered, that is to say *robb'd* (for at that time, first, was the word *plunder* used in *England*; being born in *Germany*, when that stately Country was so miserably wasted and pilaged by forraigne Armies;) and committed other outrages upon those who stood affected to the Parliament, executing some, and hanging-up servants at their Masters doores, for not discovering of their Masters. Upon which newes, the Houses of Parliament fell into a serious debate, and agreed that a Charge of High Treason should be drawne-up against him, for endeavouring the destruction of this State,

State, which was voted a great breach of the Kingdom's Lawes, and breach of the priviledge of that great Council, representing the whole state of it.

Let it not seeme amisse in this place to insert a passage, happening at the same time, which cannot be omitted by reason of the eminence of that person whom it concernes, in the succeeding Warres.

Colonel GORING, who was before spoken-of as having undertaken to keepe the Towne of *Portsmouth* against the Parliament, being now no longer able to hold it out, was permitted by Captain MERRICK, not without allowance from the Earl of *Warwick*, to leave the place, and to be conveyed to the *Brill* in *Holland* according to his owne desire. This the Parliament were contented with, because the Captaine was necessitated to agree to it, for preservation of that Towne, and many persons therein well-affected to the Parliament; for GORING had threatened to destroy the Towne with wilde-fire, if he might not preserve his owne life by a peaceable surrender.

Whilist Prince RUPERT was thus active with a flying Party, the King himselfe was moving with those Forces which he had, but in a gentler and calmer way; for the reverence which the people bare to his Person, made him finde lesse resistance; as windes lose their fury when they meet no opposition; but howsoever, the King desired to go in such a way, as to be taken for a Father of his Country, and a Prince injur'd by the Parliament; professions of love, perswasions, and Protestations of his affection to the people, were the chiefe instruments which he used to raise himselfe a strength, and complaints against the proceedings and actions of the Parliament; as when he was marching toward *Shrewsbury*, where he intended to make his chiefe Rendezvouze, being a place convenient to receive and entertaine such Forces as should come to him out of *Wales*: Which place (as will appeare afterward) failed not his expectation, though it were more than the Parliament could suspect. As he was marching thither with a small Army, he made a Speech betweene *Stafford* and *Wellington*, on the 19th of *September*, and caused his Protestation to be then also read in the head of his Army; where-in, among other things, he tells them (for their comfort and hope to prevaile) that they should meet no Enemies but Traytors, most of them Brownists, Anabaptists, and Atheists, who would destroy both Church and Common-wealth. And in this Protestation, with deepe vowes, and imprecations upon himselfe and his posterity, he declares his whole care and intentions to be for the maintenance of the Protestant Religion, the Lawes and property of the Subject, together with the Priviledge of Parliament, as he was accustomed to do in his former Speeches.

The King marches with an army toward *Shrewsbury*, in *September*, 1642.

But the King, not many daies before, had taken a more harsh and co-ercive way; for marching thorow *Derbyshire*, *Leicestershire*, and *Nottinghamshire*, he commanded the Trayned-Bands of those Counties to attend and guard his Person; and, when they were met, disarmed the greatest part of them, taking as many Armes as served for 2000 men, besides good summes of Money, which, not without some constraint, he borrowed from them.

But, to leave the King's proceedings for a while, it is time to returne to the Lord-General for the Parliament, and the Army raised under his conduct; which

The Earl of Essex leaves the City of London, to take the command of the Parliament army, Sept. 9, 1642.

at that time, when Prince RUPERT began to march, was growne to a considerable body, consisting of about 14 thousand Horse and Foot ; their general Rendezvouze was at *Northampton*, where many of the chiefe Commanders, as the Lord BROOKE, Lord ROBERTS, Colonel HAMDEN, and others, stayed with them, expecting the presence of his Excellence, who on the ninth of *September*, taking his leave of the Parliament and City of *London*, bent his journey toward *Northampton*, and was waited-on by the Trayned-Bands, and a great number of armed Gentlemen, from *Essex*-House to the end of the City with great solemnity. But the love and wishes of the people that did attend him, were farre greater than any outward signification could expresse : To whom he seemed at that time, though going to a Civil Warre, as much an Englishman, and as true a Patriot, as if he had gone against a forraigne Enemy. Great was the love and honour which the people in general bore to his Person, in regard of his owne vertue, and honourable demeanour ; and much increased by the Memory of his noble Father, the highest example that ever I yet read, of a Favourite both to Prince and people ; of whom that was most true, which VELLELIUS PATERCULUS speaks with flattery and falsehood of SEJANUS, *In quo cum judicio Principis certabant studia populi*, the people's love strived to match the Prince's judgement. That Cause, wherein the Earle of ESSEX had engaged himselfe, seemed to them religious enough to require their prayers for the successe of it : For the Parliament, though they raised an Army, expressed much humility and reverence to the King's Person ; for not many daies after the departure of the Lord-General, by consent of both Houses, a Petition to the King was drawne-up, to be carried by Sir PHILIP STAPLETON, a Member of the House of Commons, often spoken-of before, and at this time a Colonel in the Lord-General's Army. This Petition he carried to *Northampton* to the General, to be by him presented (according to the Parliament's desire) to His Majesty, in a safe and honourable way : In which Petition nothing at all (according to their former Declarations) is charged upon the King himselfe, but only upon his wicked Council ; and the former misgovernments briefly mentioned ; and that this wicked Council have raised an horrid Rebellion and Massacre in *Ireland* ; and ever since, by opposition against the Parliament, hindered the reliefe of that Kingdom, and at last drawne his Majesty to make a War upon his Parliament, leading an Army in Person to the destruction of his people, depriving his good Subjects of his Majestie's protection, and protecting those Traytors against the Justice and Authority of Parliament.

A Petition of the Parliament to be presented to the King, to prevent a Civil War.

We, the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, have (for these are the Words of the Petition) for the just and necessary defence of the Protestant Religion, of your Majestie's Person, Crowne, and Dignity, and of the Lawes and Liberties of the Kingdome, and the Priviledges and power of Parliaments, taken-up Armes, and have appointed and authorized ROBERT Earle of ESSEX, to be Captaine-General of all the Forces by us raised, to conduct the

the same against those Rebels and Traytors, to subdue and bring them to condigne punishment: And we do most humbly beseech your Majesty, to withdraw your Royal Presence and Countenance from these wicked persons; and, if they shall stand-out in defence of their rebellious and unlawful attempts, that your Majesty will leave them to be suppressed by that Power which we have sent against them; And that your Majesty will not mix your owne dangers with theirs, but in peace and safety, without your Forces, forthwith returne to your Parliament, and by their faithful advice compose the present distempers and confusions abounding in both your Kingdomes, and provide for the security and honour of your selfe and your Royal Posterity, and the prosperous estate of all your Subjects. Wherein if your Majesty please to yeeld to our most humble and earnest desires; We do, in the presence of Almighty God, professe, That we will receive your Majesty with all Honour, yeeld you all due obedience and subjection, and faithfully endeavour to secure your Person and Estate from all dangers; and to the uttermost of our Power, to procure and establish to your selfe, and to your People, all the blessings of a glorious and happy Reigne.

According to this Petition were those Directions from the Parliament to the Lord-General sent at the same time; wherein the Lord-General is required by the Houses, to use his utmost endeavour, by Battel or otherwise, to rescue the King's Person, the Persons of the Prince, and the Duke of Yorke, out of the hands of those desperate persons now about them. Another Direction was, That if his Majesty, upon this humble Petition, should be pleased to withdraw himselfe from the persons now about him, and returne to the Parliament, that then the Lord-General should disband, and should serve and defend his Majesty with a sufficient strength in his return. Another Direction was, That his Excellency should proclaime pardon to all those who were at that time seduced against their Parliament and Country, if within ten daies after that Proclamation they would returne to their duty, doing no hostile act within the time limited: Provided that this should not extend to admit any man into either House of Parliament, who stands suspended, without giving satisfaction to that House whereof he was a Member; and excepting all persons impeached for Delinquency by either House, and those persons who have been eminent Actors in these Treasons, and therefore impeached in Parliament of High Treason; such as were at that time declared, and there named; the Earles of *Bristol, Cumberland, Newcastle, and Rivers*, Secretary NICHOLAS, Master ENDYMION PORTER, Master EDWARD HIDE, the Duke of *Richmond*, the Earle of *Carnarvan*, Viscounte *Newarke*, and Viscount *Fawkland*; These were the persons at that time voted-against, and declared Traytors, though afterwards others were added to the number of them, and many of these left-out, as occasions altered.

Such Directions, and others for the advantage of the Army, and behoofe of the Countries, thorow which he was to march, were given by the Parliament to his Excellency; but above all things to restraine carefully all impieties, prophannesse, and disorders in his Army.

The Lord-General Essex with his Army arrives at Northampton.

The General arriving at *Northampton*, was there possessed of a great and gallant Army, well furnished at all points, consisting of about twenty thousand, with those that within few daies were to come thither: An Army too great to finde resistance at that time from any Forces a-foot in *England*; for the King's side had then small strength: What they had, consisted of Horse, who in small Parties roved up and downe, to make Provision, and force Contribution in several places. Prince RUPERT especially, like a perpetual motion, with those Horse which he commanded, was in a short time heard-of at many places of great distance. The care therefore which his Excellency especially tooke, was so to divide his great Army, as to make the several parts of it useful, both to annoy the straggling Troops of the Enemy, and protect those Counties that stood affected to the Parliament, as also to possesse himselfe, either in his owne Person, or by his Lieutenants, of such Towns as he thought might be of best import, if this sad War should happen to continue.

From *Northampton* he marched to *Coventry*, to make that considerable City a Garrison for the Parliament; and from thence to *Warwick*; and having fortified that Towne, marched-away towards *Worcester*, upon intelligence that the King himselfe intended to come thither with his Forces. For his desire was to finde-out the King; and the Parliament, to whom he imparted his designe by Letter, approved well of his advance towards *Worcester*.

A Skirmish at Worcester.

The City of *Worcester*, as well as the whole County, had beene in great distractions, by reason not only of the dissenting affections of the Inhabitants, but the frequent invitations from both sides; if we may call that an invitation, which is made by armed force. Sir JOHN BYRON had first entred *Worcester* for the King's side, whom Master FIENNES, Sonne to the Lord SAY, had opposed for the Parliament; and afterward Prince RUPERT with five hundred Horse, not farre from the City, was encountred by Master FIENNES, who commanded another Body about that number; the skirmish was but small, and not above twelve men slaine, as the report was made at *London*. But before the Lord-General could arrive at *Worcester*, (who was marching thither from *Warwick*, as was before expressed,) there happened a fight there, not to be omitted, in regard of the persons that were there slaine or wounded, though the number of men in general that fell were small. Prince RUPERT was then at *Worcester* with twelve Troops of Horse, when about that City divers of the Parliament's Forces were, though not joyned in one Body, but dispersed: The Prince marched out of the City into a greene Meadow, and there set his men in Battel-Array, to encounter whom he could first light-upon. Within halfe a mile of that Field were the Parliament Troops, Colonel SANDYS with his Regiment of Horse, Captaine HALES, and Captain WINGATE, who made toward the Prince; but their passage was very disadvantageous, as being thorow

thorow a narrow Lane, where onely foure of a breast could march: Colonel SANDYS, whose fault was too much courage, charging with his owne Regiment thorow that Lane, too soone, before the rest of the Parliament-Forces could come-up (for, besides the forenamed Captains, HALE and WINGATE, Captaine FIENNES, and Captaine AUSTIN were not farre off, and were marching apace to their assistance) made, notwithstanding, some slaughter of the Prince's men, and maintained the Fight until the mentioned Forces approached the place; but then the Prince, (the two sides growing into some equality of number,) fearing, perchance, to be too long engaged in a Fight, until the Lord-General's Army might approach, some of the fore-runners of it not being farre off, retreated-back into the City of *Worcester*, thorow which he marched-away with as much speed as he could, the Parliament-Forces following him thorow the Towne, and so over a Bridge, about which some of the Parliament Dragoneers were placed, who cut-off twenty of the Prince's Troopers, and tooke thirty Prisoners. There were found dead at the place of their first encounter 13 men. There were slaine of the Parliament-side of note, Colonel SANDYS's Cornet, who first of all fell, and Sergeant-Major DOUGLAS; and Colonel SANDYS himselfe was desperately wounded, of which wounds he died about a Moneth after. It was reported that Colonel WILMOT, (of whom we have spoken before, and who was afterward an eminent Champion on the King's side,) was, in this conflict, runne thorow the body by Colonel SANDYS.

His Excellency, immediately after this fight, came to *Worcester* with his Army, where he resolved to quarter a while, as a place convenient to send-out Parties upon all occasions, and watch the motion of the King's Forces. This discourse shall here leave him, and relate the passages of the other Armies.

The Lord-General Essex with his Army comes to Worcester.

Prince RUPERT, having left *Worcester*, marched with his Troops to *Ludlow*, twenty miles distant thence; and the King with a small Body of Horse, passed into *Wales*, and having made a Speech full of Protestations, to the Inhabitants of *Denbigh* and *Flintshire*, and gained some Parties there, the next day he marched to *Shrewsbury*, where he intended to quarter for a time, as a fit Rendezvouze for those Forces expected from *Wales*, and other neere adjacent parts. To *Shrewsbury* the King caused a Mint to be brought, and there coyned all the Plate which he then had, or was then and soone after presented to him; for many Noblemen, Gentlemen, and others, about that time had furnished the King, not onely with Horses and Armes, but Money and Plate, as the Citizens of *London*, and other Gentlemen had done to the Parliament, upon their Publike Faith, as is before expressed. It is a wonderful thing, almost beyond what himselfe could hope, or the Parliament suspect, how much and how suddenly the King grew in strength, in that little time that he quartered at *Shrewsbury*; The King, within few daies after his coming thither, had, in publike, to the Gentry, Freeholders, and other Inhabitants of that County, made an Oration full of perswasive Art, and such winning expressions, as fitted the purpose he had in hand, such as might render him to the thoughts of those people, an injur'd Prince, and move compassionate

The King with his army comes to Shrewsbury, Sept. 23, 1642.

affections

affections toward him. Which Speech of his, as it was reported and printed in London, I shall here insert.

His Speech to his Army.

Gentlemen :

It is some benefit to me, from the insolencies and misfortunes which have driven me about, that they have brought me to so good a part of my Kingdome, and to so faithful a part of my People: I hope neither you nor I shall repent my coming hither; I will do my part that you may not; and of you I was confident before I came. The residence of an Army is not usually pleasant to any place; and mine may carry more feare with it, since it may be thought (being robb'd and spoiled of all mine owne, and such terrour used to fright and keep all men from supplying of me) I must onely live upon the aid and reliefe of my people. But be not afraid; I would to God my poore Subjects suffered no more by the insolence and violence of that Army raised against me (though they have made themselves wanton even with plenty) than you shall do by mine; and yet I feare I cannot prevent all disorders; I will do my best: And this I promise you, No man shall be a looser by me, if I can help it.

I have sent hither for a Mint; I will melt-downe all my owne Plate, and expose all my Land to sale or morgage, that, if it be possible, I may bring the least pressure upon you: In the mean time, I have summoned you hither to do that for me and yourselves, for the maintenance of your Religion, and the Law of the Land (by which you enjoy all that you have) which other men do against us. Do not suffer so good a Cause to be lost, for want of supplying me with that, which will be taken from you by those who pursue me with this violence. And, whilst these ill men sacrifice their Money, Plate, and utmost industry to destroy the Common-wealth, be you no lesse liberal to preserve it. Assure yourselves, if it please God to blesse me with successe, I shall remember the assistance that every particular man here gives me, to his advantage. However, it will hereafter (how furiously soever the minds of men are now possessed) be honour and comfort to you, that, with some charge and trouble to yourselves, you did your part to support your King, and preserve the Kingdome.

The King's army is much increased at Shrewsbury.

But with such skill had the King managed his affaires there, and so much had fortune crowned his endeavours, that before the middle of October, which was about three weekes after his first coming to Shrewsbury, with an inconsiderable Body of an Army, he was growne to a great strength, consisting of about six thousand

thousand Foot, three thousand brave Horse, and almost two thousand Dragoons ; And, purposing about that time to remove from thence, he issued out Warrants to the Inhabitants of *Shrewsbury*, and other adjacent Townes and Villages, to send Horses and Carts for his removal.

The King marched along within the view of *Coventry*, but not intending to lose any time there in sitting-downe before it, unlesse the Towne had been freely surrendered to him : But that was denyed, though in a very humble Message, by the Governour of it. Marching-on, he came and lay at *Southam*, when the Lord-General *Essex* was not many miles distant from him. So much was the King now growne in strength, that he was able, at so great a distance, to strike some terrour into the City of *London* itselfe, and provoke their sedulous endeavour for a defence against his feared approach, though the Lord-General *Essex* with as great an Army, were then abroad to attend his Marches. The Parliament itselfe tooke the busi-
Preparations are made by Order of Parliament for the defence of London against the King's army, in October, 1642.

nnesse into their strict care: For both Houses conceiving that the City was in imminent danger of the King's Forces, ordered, That the Trayned-Bands thereof should be speedily raised for a Guard ; That such Fortifications as could suddenly be made, should not be wanting ; That a Committee should be appointed to consider of the present setting up Courts of Guard, and raising Works, for planting of Ordnance in special places about the City and Suburbs. According to which Order many hundreds of men fell presently to worke, in digging of Trenches, and other Bulwarks. It was Ordered likewise, That the Trayned-Bands of *London*, *Middlesex*, and *Surrey*, should be put into a readinesse; And that the close Committee, by help of the Lord-Mayor, should, with all diligence, search-out and secure the persons of all the ill-affected Citizens, or the chiefe of them, that were suspected to be most able, or active, to raise a Party against the Parliament.

Twelve Companies of *London* were, by Order of Parliament, sent to *Windsor*, to possesse and secure that Castle ; and many Seamen were raised to guard the passages of the River *Thames*.
 The Parliament about that time, considering how much these Civil distractions increased over the whole Kingdome, passed a Vote, That it was and should be lawful for all Counties in *England*, to enter into an Association, for mutual defence of each other, of their Religion, Lawes, and Liberties. Whereupon, within a short time after, *Buckingham*, *Hartford*, and *Nottinghamshire*, began to associate after that manner, raised Forces for the Parliament, and advanced both Plate and Money upon their Propositions.

The Parliament authorizes different Counties to associate together for their mutual defence.

The danger that seemed to threaten *London* at that time, though distant in place, yet in reason was neer. For the King's Army was judged to be neerer to it than the Lord-General's was; and it was probable enough, that his desires would rather lead him to attempt the City than to engage against the Army ; and it was thought and spoken by some, that *London* was a place where he had many friends, who, upon the approach of such an Army, would appeare for him, and, to facilitate his achievements, would fill the City with intestine tumults and seditious : —That *London* was the onely place where the Parliament was to be totally suppressed,

sed, and his Army enriched to the height of their desires. But others were of opinion, that such an attempt, as it was preposterous, would prove frustrate, and that the City could not be gained, unless the Army were first subdued. For, besides the consideration, that the supposed Party for the King in *London*, were not, in probability, of power enough to accomplish his ends, it might be thought that they were not so desperately inclined to him, as to throw themselves and estates into such hazard, as must be undergone in the confused rage of a licentious Army. But the maine reason against it was, That the Lord-General *Essex*, with an Army as strong as the King's, would follow his March neere at hand, and, by the help of those Forces which the City of *London* would poure-forth upon him, utterly ruine his inclosed Army. But, howsoever the counsels were, it pleased God that it was brought to a Battel, to which probably the King might be the more invited by that advantage of the absence of a great part of the Parliament's Army.

The Battle of Edgehill, or Keynton, October 23, 1642.

This famous Battel, called by some the Battel of *Edgehill*; by others the Battel of *Keynton* (that *Keynton* is a little Towne in *Warwickshire*, almost in the mid-way betweene *Stratford upon Avon* and *Banbury*) was fought on a Sunday, being the 23d day of *October*. The King on Saturday the 22d of *October*, came within six miles of *Keynton*, and that night at *Cropredy* and *Edgecot* lodged his great Army, consisting of about 14,000 Foot, and about 4000 Horse and Dragoners; a farre greater number than the Lord-General *Essex* had together at that time (though his whole Army consisted of more;) for that opportunity the King tooke of the absence of many Regiments of the Parliament. The Lord-General *Essex* on that Saturday night quartered at *Keynton* with his Army, consisting then but of 12 Regiments of Foot, and about 40 Troops of Horse, little, in all, exceeding the number of 10,000 men. The reason why his Forces at that time were no more in number, was, (besides that, by reason of the suddenesse of his march, and diligence to follow the King's Army, he had left behinde two Regiments of his Foot, one under the Command of Colonel *HAMDEN*, the other of Colonel *GRANTHAM*, together with 11 Troops of Horse, behinde but one daies March, and left to bring-on the Artillery, which was seven Peeces of Canon, with great store of Ammunition, and which came not to *Keynton* till the battel was quite ended;) the Lord-General also had before left for preservation of the Countries thereabout (and whom on such a sudden he could not call together to his Assistance) one Regiment of Foot, and two Troops of Horse, under the command of the Earle of *Stamford* at *Hereford*, that the power of *Wales* might not fall into *Glocestershire*; another Regiment was left at *Worcester*, another at *Coventry*, for the safety of that Towne, and one Regiment occasionally lodged then in *Banbury*.

In *Keynton* the Lord-General intended to rest Sunday, to expect the residue of his Forces and Artillery: but in the morning the Enemy was discovered not far off; which made him give present order for drawing that Army which he had there, into the field. The King's Forces had gotten the advantage of a very high and steepe ascent, called *Edgehill*, from whence they were discovered that morning; not farre from the foot of that hill, was a broad Champion, called, *The vale of the red Horse*, a name suitable to the colour which that day was to bestow upon

upon it; for there happened the greatest part of the encounter. Into that field the Lord-General was forced presently to march, making a stand about halfe a mile distant from the foot of *Edgehill*, where he drew his Army into *Battalia*, and saw the King's Forces descending the Hill, ready for their encounter; that Army at the first having two advantages, of the hill, and of the winde. It was full of skilfull Commanders, and well-ordered; their greatest Body of Horse was on the right wing; on the left were some Horse and Dragooneers.

The Parliament-Army was drawne-up and put into *Battalia* upon a little rising ground in the forenamed Vale, the Foot being, many of them, a good space behind the Horse, when the Charge began. Three Regiments of Horse were on the right wing; the Lord-General's owne Regiment, commanded by Sir PHILIP STAPLETON; Sir WILLIAM BALFORE's Regiment, who was Lieutenant-General of the Horse; and the Lord-FIELDING's Regiment, which stood behinde the other two, in the way of a Reserve; Sir JOHN MELDRUM's Brigado had the Van; Colonel ESSEX was in the middle; the Lord-General's Regiment, the Lord BROOKE, and Colonel HOLLIS, were in the Reare; in the left wing were about 20 Troops of Horse, commanded by Sir JAMES RAMSEY, their Commissary-General. In this posture they stood, when the other Army advanced toward them, the strength of their Horse being (as aforesaid) on their right wing, opposite to the left wing of the Parliament-Army.

The Cannon on both sides with a loud thunder began the Fight; in which the successe was not equal, the Parliament's Cannon doing great execution upon their Enemies, but theirs very little.

The Earle of *Lindsey*, General for the King, with a Pike in his hand, led-on the maine Body of that Army, in which was the King's owne Regiment, encouraged by the Lord-General *Essex*, who exposed himselfe to all the danger that a Battell could make; first, leading-on his Troope, then his owne Regiment of Foot, and breathing courage into them, till, being dissuaded by divers from engaging himselfe too farre, he returned to the rest of the Army, to draw them on. The chiefe Regiments having begun the Battell, Sir PHILIP STAPLETON, with a brave Troop of Gentlemen (which were the General's Life-Guard, and commanded by him) charged the King's Regiment on their right flanke within their Pikes, and came-off without any great hurt, though those Pikemen stoutly defended themselves, and the Musqueteers, being good firemen, played fiercely upon them. The Battle was hot at that place, and so many of the King's side slaine, that the Parliament-Army began to be victorious there; they tooke the Standard-Royal the bearer thereof, Sir EDMUND VARNEY, being slaine; and the General, the Earle of *Lindsey*, sorely wounded, was taken Prisoner. But the same fortune was not in every part; for the King's right wing, led by Prince RUPERT, charged fiercely upon the left wing of the other (consisting mostly of Horse) and prevailed altogether: for the Parliament-Troops ranne, almost all, away in that Wing; and many of their Foot-Companies, dismayed with their flight, fled all away, before they

they had stood one Charge; Colonel **Essex**, being utterly forsaken by that whole Brigade which he commanded, went himself into the Van, where he performed excellent service, both by direction and execution, till at the last he was shot in the thigh, of which he shortly after died. Some part of their disheartning was caused by the revolt of their owne side; for Sir **FAITHFUL FORTESCUE**, at the beginning of the Fight, instead of charging the Enemy, discharged his Pistoll to the ground, and with his Troope, wheeling-about, ranne to the King's Army, to whom he had before given notice thereof by his Cornet. The Parliament-Army would have undoubtedly been ruined that day, and an absolute Victory gained on the King's side, if Prince **RUPERT** and his pursuing-Troops had been more temperate in plundering so untimely as they did, and had wheeled-about to assist their distressed friends in other parts of the Army; for Prince **RUPERT** followed the chase to *Keynton-Towne*, where the Carriages of the Army were; which they presently pillaged, using great cruelty, (as was afterward related,) to the unarmed Waggoners and labouring-men. A great number of the flying Parliament-Souldiers were slaine in that Chase, which was continued for two miles beyond *Keynton*, and farther, till the Pursuers were forced to retire, having met-with Colonel **HAMBDEN**, who was marching to join the Lord-General with the other Brigado of the Army, that brought-on the Artillery and Ammunition before spoken-of. Colonel **HAMBDEN** discharged five pieces of Cannon against them; some were slaine, and the rest, ceasing the pursuit, retired hastily to the field, where they found all their Infantry, excepting two Regiments, quite defeated. For in the meane time, Sir **WILLIAM BALFORE**, Lieutenant-General of the Horse, with a Regiment of Horse, charged a Regiment of the King's Foot, before any Foot, of his owne side, could come-up to him, and, breaking most bravely into it, had cut most of them off; and afterward, by the assistance of some Foot, who were come-up to him, he defeated another Regiment, and so got-up to the greatest part of the King's Ordnance, taking some of them, cutting-off the Geeres of the Horses that drew them, and killing the Gunners, but was inforced to leave them without any Guard, by reason that he laboured most to make good the day against several Regiments of the King's Foot, who still fought with much resolution, especially that which was of the King's Guard, where his Standard was; by which Sir **WILLIAM BALFORE**'s Regiment rode, when they came-back from taking the Ordnance, and were by them mistaken for their owne side. Their passing without any Hostility, was the cause, that, immediately afterward, Sir **WILLIAM** riding-up toward the Lord-General **Essex**'s Regiment of Horse, they gave fire upon Sir **WILLIAM BALFORE**'s men, supposing them to be Enemies; but, soone discovering each other, they joyned Companies, and were led-up with halfe the Lord-General's Regiment, by his Excellency himselfe, against the King's maine strength, where a terrible and bloody encounter happened: At the same time Colonel **BALLARD**, who led a brigado there of the Lord-General's Regiment and the Lord **BROOKS**'s, forced a stand of the King's Pikes, and broke through two of his Regiments.

Sir Faithful Fortescue
deserts to the King
with a troop of Horse;

Sir William Balfore
defeats two of the
King's Regiments of
Foot.

In this great conflict the Standard-Royal (as aforesaid) was taken, and Sir EDMUND VARNEY slaine, and the Earle of *Lindsey*, with his Sonne, were taken Prisoners, together with Colonel VAVASOR, Lieutenant Colonel of that Regiment; Colonel MUNROE also was there slaine.

The Standard thus taken, and put into the Lord-General's hand, was by him delivered to his Secretary, Master CHAMBERS; but the Secretary, after he had carried it some time in his hand, suffered it to be taken from him by an unknowne person, and so it was privately conveyed-away. There also was great service performed by the Lord GRAY, Sonne to the Earle of *Stamford*, and Sir ARTHUR HASLERIG, and a considerable help given to the turning of the day, by defeating a Regiment of the King's, called the Blew Regiment.

By this time all the King's Foot, excepting two Regiments, were dispersed, and the Parliamentarians had gotten the advantage of the winde, and that ground which their Enemies had fought-upon. Those two Regiments of the King's, retiring themselves, and finding their Ordnance behind them without any guard, took stand there, and made use of their Cannons, discharging many shot against their Enemies. But at that time the Parliament-Foot began to want powder; otherwise (as was observed by a Commander in that Army) they had charged them both with Horse and Foot; which in all probability would have utterly ruined the King's Infantry, consisting in a manner but of two Regiments.

Thus the Parliament-Army, partly for want of Ammunition, and partly being tired with so long a fight (for the whole brunt of the Battell had been susteyned by two Regiments of their Horse, and foure or five of their Foot) made no great haste to charge any more.

The King's Horse, who had been long pillaging about *Keynton*, by this time had leisure to come-about on both hands, and joyne themselves to their Foot; but, as they came-back on the left hand of their Enemies, Sir PHILIP STAPLETON, with his Horse, gave them a terrible Charge, which they were not long able to endure, but, finding a gap in an hedge, got from him upon the Spurre as fast as they could, to the rest of their broken Troops, and so at last joyned with their Foot that stood by the Ordnance. And now on both sides the Horse were gathered to their own Foot, and so stood together both Horse and Foot, one against another, till it was night.

The Parliament-Army, being wholly possessed of the ground which their Enemies had chosen to fight-upon, stood upon it all night, and in the morning returned to a warmer place neere *Keynton*, where they had quartered the night before; for they were much pinched with cold, and the whole Army in extreme want of Victuals.

The Parliament-Army remains master of the field of battel.

The King's Army had withdrawne to the top of the hill, for their more security, where they made great fires all the night long.

About nine of the clock the next morning the Parliament-Army drew-out againe into Battalia, and so stood about three houres, until the other Army was quite gone

gone from the hill, and then they withdrew themselves into their Quarter towards *Keynton*, and to their other Brigado, Artillery, and Ammunition, which being commanded by Colonel *HAMBDEN* and Colonel *GRANTHAM*, (as aforesaid) was now come to *Keynton*, and lodged there. The King had drawne out his Horse upon the further side of the hill, where he stayed till toward night, whilst his Foot were retiring behinde the Hill, and marching-away. A little before night, his Horse also withdrew themselves; and about an houre after, the Parliament-Horse marched quite away, and went with the rest of the Army to *Warwick* to refresh themselves.

That going to *Warwick* was thought by a noble Gentleman of the Parliament-side to be ill designed. For (saith he) had the Army, instead of going to *Warwick*, marched toward *Banbury*, we should have found more Victuals, and had, in probability, dispersed all the Foot of the King's Army, taken his Cannons and Carriages, and sent his Horse farther off: whereas now, because we did not follow them, though they quitted the field whereon they fought, and left their Quarter before us, yet they began soone after to question who had the day. Howsoever it were, true it is, that the King, no lesse than the Parliament, pretended to be victorious in that Battell; and so farre ascribed the Victory to his owne side, that a Prayer of thanksgiving to God was made at *Oxford* for it. A thanksgiving was also on the Parliament-side for the Victory of that day. And it is certaine, that there were many markes of Victory on both Armies; Colours and Cannon were taken on both sides, without any great difference in the number of them. And, though in Speeches made afterwards by either Party, and Bookes printed, there is no consent at all concerning the number of men slain, but so great a discrepancy, as it is almost a shame to insert into an History; yet, surely, by the best account there were more slaine on the King's side than on the other. Those of quality that were lost on both Parties, were, of the King's, the Earle of *Lindsey*, Lord-General of his Army, the Lord *AUBIGNY*, brother to the Duke of *Lenox*, Sir *EDWARD VARNEY* Standard-Bearer, Colonel Sir *EDMUND MONROY*, a Scottish Gentleman, and Colonel *LUNSFORD* his Brother, with other Gentlemen and Commanders, besides common Souldiers, whose number (as is before said) would not be agreed-upon; yet I have heard, that the country people thereabouts, by burying of the naked bodies, found the number to be about six thousand that fell on both sides, besides those which died afterwards of their wounds. There were taken Prisoners of the King's side, the Lord *WILLOUGHBY*, Sonne and Heire to the Earle of *Lindsey*, Colonel *VAVASOR*, Colonel *LUNSFORD*, Sir *EDWARD STRADLING*, with others of lesse note; a George, the Badge of a Knight of the Garter, was found in the field by a Common Souldier (besides that which the Lord-General *Lindsey* wore and had about his neck when he was slaine) and bought of him by a Captaine, which was sent-up to the Parliament, there viewed and restored againe to the Captaine.

The Loss of persons of distinction in the King's Army in this bloody battel.

The Loss of the like persons in the Parliament's Army.

On the Parliament side there were slaine only the following persons of marke and quality: the Lord St. *JOHN*, Eldest Sonne to the Earle of *BULLENBROKE*, Colonel
CHARLES

CHARLES ESSEX, and Lieutenant-Colonel RAMSEY, and none of any great note taken prisoners.

The Battel was fought with great courage on both sides, both by the Generals and other commanders, besides some particular regiments of Souldiers, who were observed to performe their parts with great courage and bravery, such as Colonel HOLLIS's Regiment of Redcoats, and others, too many to be all named in a short Discourse.

It could not but fall into the observation of many men, that the yeare before, upon the same day of the Moneth, namely, the 23d of *October*, that this famous Battel of *Keynton* was fought, the bloody Rebellion of the Irish had broke-out, with that inhumane Massacre of the English Protestants in that Kingdom; by which observation the English, by their owne losse and bleeding in the present battel, were sadly put in minde, that they had too long deferred the revenge of their butchered brethren in *Ireland*.

It was likewise observed by many men of the Parliament-side (who seemed to make no question but that the Victory was on their side,) as a further blessing of God to the Protestant Cause, that on the very same day that this Battel was wonne in *England*, the Sweeds obtained a very great and notable Victory against the Imperialists and those of the Roman Religion in *Germany*.

But the King, supposing himselfe victorious at *Keynton*-field, immediately published a Declaration, *To all his loving Subjects* (for so it is styled) *after his Victory against the Rebels*. Wherein, though the expostulation be very bitter, yet he endeavoureth that it should not seeme to be made against the Parliament itselfe, but against some of them, whom he termeth *malignant*, and *malicious*, with other such-like Epithets, as having laboured to lay aspersions upon him of things, whereof he professeth himselfe altogether innocent. Those aspersions he makes of two sorts; the first is, concerning his favouring of Popery, and employing Papists in his Army; the second, of raising that Army against the Parliament. Both which he labours to wipe-off, with a recrimination against the Parliament. For the first, after a great Protestation of the truth of his Religion, and his past, present, and future care for the better establishing of it in his Dominions, with the extirpation of Popery; though he cannot but acknowledge, that some eminent men of that Religion are armed in his Service, which he thinks excusable in so great a necessity and danger as he was in; yet he tells the Parliament, That, in their Army, there are more Papists, Commanders and others, than in his.

The King publishes a Declaration against the Parliament.

For the second, That he levied his Army against the Parliament. He seemeth to hope, that none of his good Subjects will beleieve it, unlesse they will beleieve that a dozen, or twenty, factious and seditious persons be the high Court of Parliament, which consists of King, Lords, and Commons. As to the Priviledges of Parliament, he averres, That whosoever will not believe "the right to raise an Army to kill their King; To alter the Government and Lawes by extravagant Votes of either or both Houses; To force the Members to submit to their Faction, and to take-away freedome of consultation from them;" to be some of the Priviledges of Parliament; must confesse, That the Army, now raised by the King, is no lesse for the vindication and preservation of Parliaments, than for his own necessary defence.

The

The King chargeth them likewise with uncharity, That they have endeavoured to raise an implacable hatred between the Gentry and Commonalty of the Kingdome, by rendring all persons of Honour odious to the Common People, under the style of *Cavaliers*; and to perswade the people, that there was an intention by the Commission of Array, to take-away a part of their Estates from them. Which he denyes, and concludes with Protestations to the contrary.

The Parliament publishes a full and distinct answer to the said Declaration.

The Parliament returned answer to this Declaration, but not as being the King's (according to their oft-mentioned custome) but as coming from wicked and malicious contrivers of falshood and scandals, Who, (say they) to our unspeakable sorrowes, have gained so much power with his Majesty, as to vent the same under the Title of his owne Royal Name.

For the first objection; They do not affirme that the King favours Popery himselfe, but justifie that things have been carried in the favour of it by some about him, according to the particular instances in many of their former Declarations. They seeme to be amazed at the strange boldnesse of the Contrivers of that Declaration, in averring that there are more Papists in their Army than in the King's; whereas they cannot, or at least, do not name any one; which they desire may be done, if there be any such, that the Parliament may know how to displace them. But the Parliament, in their Answer, name many of greatest ranke and quality of that Religion in the King's Army, who have raised him in some Counties the most considerable Forces which he hath; and many Commissions granted by himselfe to Papists, acknowledged to be so. That it were senselesse to thinke that any Papists favoured the Parliament's Cause at all; whereas it is certaine, that there are none of that Religion, but are, either openly or secretly, assistant to that cause which the King hath taken.

For the second objection; That the King's Forces are not levyed against the Parliament itselfe, but against a few seditious persons. *They thinke it an impossible thing that twelve, or twenty, such seditious persons (as they are termed) should have power to compel the rest of that Body to submit to their Faction, and to have their freedome of consultation taken from them.*

The truth is (say they) not a few persons, but the Parliament itselfe, is the thorne that lyes in these men's sides; which heretofore, when it was wont to prick them, was with much ease, by a sudden dissolution, pulled-out: But now that it is more deeply fastened by an Act of continuance, they would force it out by the power of an Army.

N. B.

That whosoever will read the Speeches and Declarations made upon the breaking-up of all former Parliaments, ever since the beginning of this King's Reigne, will finde the pretences of those unjust dissolutions, to be grounded upon exceptions against particular Members, under the name of a few factious and seditious persons; so that the aspersion and wounding of the Parliament throughout the sides of a few Members, is no new invention.

But (say they) those former Declarations in the King's name, being groundlesse invectives, not against particular Members, but against the Votes and Proceedings of both Houses; and declaring the Earle of *Essex*, General of the Forces raised
by

by them, to be a Traytor ; and that all those who assist him, (thereby comprehending both Houses of Parliament, by whose Command and Authority he bears that place,) are Rebels, and guilty of High Treason, is argument sufficient (no groundlesse accusation) to prove the King's Army to be raised against the Parliament, or to take-away the Priviledges thereof.

Those Priviledges of Parliament, consisting in three things: 1. As they are a Council to advise. 2. A Court to judge. 3. A representative body of the Realme, to make, repeal, or alter Lawes. These Priviledges have (say they) during the sitting of this Parliament, been all apparently broken, to the view of all men, by the King's wicked Council. Their advice scarce at all hearkened-unto by the King, but other counsels of unknowne persons preferred before them. For the second, as a Court to judge ; The Delinquents, so pronounced by the Parliament, have been protected by the King against them ; of which they give many particular instances. Touching the third for making Lawes ; They instance his refusal of many wholsome Bills for Church and State ; besides the breaking of their Priviledges, they produce some attempts utterly to subvert them, as the forementioned endeavour of bringing-up the Northerne Army, to force Conditions upon the Parliament ; the King's Letters and Commands to Members of both Houses to attend him at *Yorke*, leaving their true and legal station ; which commands when they obeyed, it was scandalously alledged that they were driven-away [from the Parliament by tumults of the people].

Of the breaches of the Priviledges of Parliament lately made by the King.

For any violence intended to the King's Person, as they utterly deny it, so they referre it to indifferent men to judge, by all their long sufferings, and humble Petitions to him, to avoid those endangerings of his Person. But for that imputation layed upon them, of an endeavour to raise an implacable malice and hatred betweene the Gentry and Commonalty of the Kingdome ; They conceive it a Charge of a strange nature, that they should endeavour to raise the hatred of the Commonalty against themselves. *For so it must follow, unlesse the Contrivers of that Declaration will deny the Parliament to be Gentlemen. But, though we know (say they) well, there are too many of the Gentry of this Kingdome, who, to satisfy the lusts of their owne ambition, are content to sell their birth-right, to render themselves and their posterity to perpetual slavery, and to submit themselves to any arbitrary and unlimited power of Government, so that they may, for their owne time, partake of that power, to trample and insult over others ; Yet we are certaine that there are many true-hearted Gentlemen, who are ready to lay-downe their lives and fortunes (and of late have given ample testimony thereof) for maintenance of their Lawes, Liberties, and Religion ; with whom, and others of their resolution, we shall be ready to live and dye.*

N.B.

Lastly, they prove, by particular instances, that in the King's Commission of Array, there is not onely an intention to take-away part of men's Estates, but that it hath been put into reall execution ; with many other things in justification of all their proceedings and Declarations ; which may be read more at large in the Records. This was the effect of that verbal Skirmish, which immediately followed the great and bloody Battell of *Keynton*.

CHAP.

 CHAP. II.

The Parliament send to the King, concerning an Accommodation. A fight at Branford. Another Treaty with the King begun, and broken-off. Reading besieged by the Lord General ESSEX, and surrendered to him. A Conspiracy to betray Bristol. A treacherous Plot against the Parliament and City of London, discovered and prevented.

AT the famous Battell of *Edgehill*, the great cause of English Liberty, (with a vast expense of blood and Treasure) was tryed, but not decided; which did therefore prove unhappy, even to that side, which seemed victorious, the Parliament-Army.

Effects of the late Battle on the minds of the English Gen-try who had hitherto remained neutral.

For, though the King's Forces were much broken by it, yet his strength grew, accidentally, greater and more formidable than before; to whom it proved a kinde of victory, not to be easily, or totally, overthrowne.

For the greatest Gentlemen of divers Counties began then to consider of the King, as of one that, in possibility, might prove a Conqueror against the Parliament; and many of them, who before, as Neuters, had stood at gaze, in hope that one quick blow might cleare the doubt, and save them the danger of declaring themselves, came now in, and readily adhered to that side on which there seemed to be least feares and greatest hopes, which was the King's Party. For, on the Parliament-side, the encouragements were only of a publike kind, and nothing promised but the free enjoyment of their native Liberty; no particular honours, preferments, or Estates of Enemies; and, on the other hand, no such total ruine could be threatened from a victorious Parliament, (being abody, as it were, of the people themselves,) as from an incensed Prince, and such hungry followers as usually go along with Princes in those waies. And how much private interest will over-sway publike notions, Books of History, rather than Philosophy, will truly informe you; for concerning humane actions and dispositions, here is nothing under the Sunne which is absolutely new,

N. B.

Looke

Looke upon the Discourse of one Historian on that subject, **DION CASSIUS**, (a Writer of as little biass, in the opinion of all Criticks, as any among the Antients,) when he relates the last Warre about Roman Liberty; after which (as himselfe speaks) that People never againe looked-back toward it: Which was the Warre of **BRUTUS** and **CASSIUS** against **CÆSAR** and **ANTONY**. *Et si ante hanc pugnam civilibus bellis, &c.* Although (saith **DION**) before this War they had many Civil Wars, yet in others they fought who should oppresse the Roman Liberty; in this War, one side fought to vindicate Liberty, the other to bring-in Tyranny; yet the side of Tyranny prevailed, and drew most followers to it. Of what quality they were, the same Historian speaks also: The Armies of **BRUTUS** and **CASSIUS**, that stood for Liberty, consisted of the lower sort of people, and *Ex subditis Romanorum*; the other, that stood for Tyranny, consisted (saith he) *Ex Romanis Nobilibus, & Fortibus*. **BRUTUS** and **CASSIUS**, the two chiefe Commanders of the former army, making Orations to their Souldiers before the Battel, encouraged them to fight for their ancient freedome and the Roman Laws; but **CÆSAR** and **ANTONY** promised to their Souldiers the Estates of their Enemies, *Et imperium in omnes Gentiles suos*, and power to rule over their owne Countrymen; which proved, it seemes, better Oratory than the other, and more persuasive. **BRUTUS** and **CASSIUS** delayed the Battel, as loath to waste so much blood, if by any other stratagem they might have succeeded; because they were (saith **DION**) good men, and pityed their Countrymen, loving the safety, and striving for the Liberty, even of those men who fought against them, to overthrow that Liberty. Yet that delay proved ill; and many Noblemen in that time forsook them, and turned to the other side, to which their private hopes, or feares, inclined them. Whether the parallel will, in some measure, fit this occasion, or not, I leave it to the Reader to determine; and I returne to the Narration.

The Earle of *Essex*, the next day after *Keynton*-Battel, marched with his Army toward *Warwick*, to which Towne he arrived safe, disposing of the Prisoners, Waggons, and Ordnance, which he had taken, into that Castle, with resolution, after some short refreshment of his men there, to march neerer to the King: But the King returned toward *Oxford*, seizing by the way upon *Banbury*, from whence he tooke 1500 Armes, and turned-out the Parliament-Souldiers that were quartered there.

His Army, consisting especially of Horse, was divided into several Bodyes; and Prince **RUPERT**, with part of it, visited the Towns neere adjacent, as *Abingdon*, *Henley*, and other places; from whence he returned with great booty.

Within few daies he made a neerer approach toward *London*, but with a flying Army, resting in no place, and stretching sometimes as farre as *Stanes* and *Egham*: which made the City of *London* careful to provide for their safety against sudden incursions, and send Forces to possesse and fortifie *Windsor*-Castle.

In the mean time, to secure *London*, and free those parts from greater feares, the Earle of *Essex* had marched with his Army neerer to that City, and on the seventh day of *November* came himselfe to *Westminster* (his Army being billited about *Acton*, and other neere places) and was welcomed by both Houses of Par-

The Lord-General Essex comes to London on the 7th of November, 1642.

liament, who presented him with a gift of 5000 *l.* as an acknowledgement of their thanks, in behalfe of the Kingdome, for his care, paines, and valour, in the actions already passed.

A fight at Brainford,
November 12, 1642.

But before the Earle of *Essex* departed from *London*, another bloody tragedy was acted, and the scene no farther than *Brainford*, [or *Brentford*,] about eight miles distance, the King himselfe being there, or not farre-off, in Person. The manner and occasion of it shall be in briefe related.

The Parliament expressing great griefe for this unnatural Warre and bloodshed, that this endangered Kingdome might be saved from ruine, and the better meanes made to recover *Ireland*, had agreed upon a Petition for Accommodation, to be presented to the King, then at *Colebrook*, by the Earles of *Northumberland* and *Pembrooke*, with foure Commons, the Lord *WAINMAN*, Master *PERPOINT*, Sir *JOHN EVELIN*, and Sir *JOHN IPSLEY*; Sir *PETER KILLIGREW* was sent before to procure a safe Conduct. But the King refused to admit of Sir *JOHN EVELIN*, because he was one whom himselfe had named a Traytor the day before. This exception of the King's was extremely distasted by the Parliament; yet so great was their desire of Accommodation, that, although this excepting of Sir *JOHN EVELIN* were voted by them a breach of Priviledge, and a flat denyal from the King, the Petition was sent by the five forenamed Lords and Gentlemen, Sir *JOHN EVELIN* being very willing to be left-out.

The King being then at *Colebrook*, fiftene miles distant, seemed to receive the Petition with great willingnesse, and returned them a faire Answer, calling God to witnesse in many Protestations, that he was tenderly compassionate of his bleeding people, and more desirous of nothing, than a speedy peace; to which purpose he was most willing, at any place where he should reside, not farre from *London*, to receive such Propositions of Peace as they should send, and to treat with them.

As soone as the Parliament-Lords returned with this Answer, the King's Artillery (according to all relations) advanced forwards with divers Troops of Horse, thorow that Towne of *Colebrook*, after them towards *London*; and, taking advantage of a great mist which happened that Friday night, they marched to *Brainford*, and fell upon the Parliament-Forces which were there quartered; which were a broken Regiment of Colonel *HOLLIS*, but stout men, who had before done great service. Of them the King's Forces killed many, and had quite destroyed all in probability, if the Lord *BROOK*'s and Colonel *HAMDEN*'s Regiments, (which were billitted not farre-off,) had not made haste to their reliefe; who, coming-in, maintained a great and bloody fight against the King's Forces, where many were slaine on both sides, and many taken Prisoners; both Parties (as before it happened at *Keynton-Battel*,) esteeming themselves conquerors, and so reporting afterwards. The newes of this unexpected fight was soone brought to *London*, where also the noise of the great Artillery was easily heard.

The Lord-General *Essex*, then sitting at *Westminster*, in the House of Peeres, tooke Horse immediately, and, with what strength he could call-together on such a sudden, came-in to the rescue of his engaged Regiments; but night had parted them,
and

and the King was retired to his best advantages ; all that night the City of *London*, poured-out men toward *Brainford*, who every houre marched thither, and all the Lords and Gentlemen that belonged to the Army, were there ready on the Sunday morning, being the 14th of *November*, a force great enough to have swallowed-up a farre greater Army than the King had. Besides, the King's Forces were encompassed on every side ; insomuch that great hope was conceived by most men, that the period of this sad Warre was now come. But God was not yet appeased toward this Nation ; a fatal doore was opened to let-out the inclosed King : Three thousand of the Parliament-Souldiers were then at *Kingstone* upon *Thames*, a Towne about ten miles distant from the City ; which Souldiers were all (as it happened) commanded to leave that Towne, and march thorow *Surrey*, with what speed they could, and over *London Bridge*, so thorow the City toward *Brainford*, to prevent the enemie's passage to *London*. The reason of that Command was afterward given, for that the Lord-General was not assured of strength enough to stop the Enemy from *London*, nor could before-hand be assured of so great an Army, as came thither before morning. But this was the event of it ; and thorow *Kingstone* thus abandoned the King retreated ; and, leaving some Troops to face his Enemies, brought all his Foot and Artillery over that Bridge, which, drawing-up afterward, he had time enough securely to plunder many places of that Country, and retire safely to *Oxford*, where he intended to take-up his winter Quarters.

The Parliament, upon this Action of the King, began to be out of hope of doing any good by Treaties, and resolved that the Lord-General, with all speed that might be, should pursue the King's Forces, and fall upon them about *Oxford* and *Reading* ; for newes was daily brought them how active his Parties were, under the conduct of Prince *RUPERT* and others, in plundering all the places thereabouts. And the City of *London*, to encourage the Parliament with a free tender of their service, framed a Petition to them, to intreat them, *That they would proceed no further in the businesse of Accommodation, because evil Counsel was so prevalent with the King that he would but delude them ; That they had heard that his Forces were weake, and that, if his Excellency would follow and fall upon them, and that no delays be made for feare of forraigne Forces coming-over, the City, as heretofore, would, with all willingnesse, spend their lives and fortunes to assist the Parliament.*

The City was thanked for their Petition and Protestation, and the Lord-General was moved by the Parliament to advance ; who, though the season of the yeare were not very fit for so great a Body to march, was very desirous to obey their Commands. The best way was thought to be to divide his Army, and send several parties to different places, to restrain the Enemies from annoying the Countries ; as, to *Buckingham*, *Marlow*, *Reading*, and other parts, until himselfe with his whole force could be well accommodated to march from *Windsor* (where he lay that winter) toward the King. But it so fell-out, either by reason of ill weather at some times, or, at others, for want of Money or fit accommodation, that the General himselfe, with his maine Army, marched not forth until the spring : when his first businesse was to lay siege to *Reading*, which was fortified by the King's Forces, and maintained by a

The Lord-General Essex besieges Reading, April 25, 1643.

Garrison of 3000 Souldiers, and 20 Peeeces of Ordnance ; before which Towne he sate downe upon the five and twentieth day of *April*, 1643, with an Army of about 16,000 Foot, and 3000 Horse.

The Parliament sends Commissioners to the King at Oxford, with Propositions of Peace, January 31, 1642-3.

Now (leaving the Lord-General before *Reading* with his Army) in the meane time we will shew one maine reason why he did no sooner advance. The expectation of another Treaty, which the Parliament had desired to have with the King, for settling of the Kingdome's Peace, (which proved fruitlesse,) in debate lasted a long time. Propositions were drawne-up by the Parliament, and sent to *Oxford* on the 31st of *January*, 1642, by foure Lords and eight Commoners, the Earles of *Northumberland*, *Pembrooke*, *Sarum*, and *Holland*, Lord WAINMAN, Lord DUNGARVAN, Sir JOHN HOLLAND, Sir WILLIAM LITTON, Master PERPOINT, Master WALLER, Master WHITLOCK, Master WINHOOD ; the Propositions were :

1. That the King would passe those Bills which the Houses had made ready.
2. To passe a Bill for settling Parliament-Priviledges and Liberties.
3. For bringing to tryal those Delinquents whom the Houses had impeached since *January* last.
4. For clearing the six Members before-mentioned,
5. For restoring all Judges and Officers of State lately removed.
6. To passe a Bill for re-paying the charge of the Kingdome.
7. A Bill for an Act of Oblivion.
8. An Act for a general pardon without exception.
9. That there may be a Cessation of Armes for fourteene daies, to agree upon these Propositions.

The King makes other propositions to the Parliament. In February, 1642.

The King not liking, nor yet utterly refusing, these Propositions, sent the Commissioners home to their Parliament, within a weeke after they came, to carry six Propositions from him to the Houses ; which were :

1. That his Revenue, Magazines, Townes, Forts, and Ships, may be delivered to him.
2. That all Orders and Ordinances of Parliament wanting his assent, may be recalled.
3. That all power exercised over his Subjects by Assesments, and imprisoning their persons, may be disclaimed.
4. That he will yeeld to the execution of the Laws against Papists, provided that the Booke of Common Prayer be confirmed.
5. That such persons as, upon the Treaty, shall be excepted out of the general Pardon, shall be tryed by their Peeres onely.
6. That there be a Cessation of Armes during the Treaty.

The Houses, upon receiving of these Propositions, though at first it were the opinion of many, not to send any Answer at all to them ; yet at last, to shew respect to the King, entred into a further debate about treating with him concerning the Propositions on both sides, and concerning the Cessation of Arms, or disbanding ; with such limitations and restrictions touching the order of treating, as would perchance seeme too tedious to be here related ; and on the 20th of *March* the

the Earle of *Northumberland*, Sir JOHN HOLLAND, Sir WILLIAM ARMINE, Master PERPOINT, and Master WHITLOCK (the Lord SAY should have been one, but the King excepted against him, as formerly against Sir JOHN EVELIN, upon the same ground, which though the Parliament tooke ill at the first, yet they proceeded in the businesse) were sent to *Oxford* as Treaters upon those Propositions. In vaine was this Treaty; so high the demands were judged to be on both sides, that there seemed no possibility of ever meeting. Where the fault lay, I judge not; but the Parliament, after many Messages betweene *London* and *Oxford*, at last sent for their Commissioners home againe; who returned to *London* upon the 17th of *April*; upon which the Lord-General immediately advanced with his Army (as aforesaid) to besiege *Reading*.

The Parliament again sends Commissioners to the King at *Oxford*, to treat of Peace, March 20, 1643-3.

The Earl of Essex besieges *Reading*, April 19, 1643.

Reading was not able to hold-out long; but the Lord-General was loath to storme it for feare of destroying so many innocent people as remained in the Towne; which compassion of his was well-approved of by the Parliament; therefore upon composition it was rendred within sixteene daies to his Excellency; by the Deputy-Governour, Colonel FIELDING; for the Governour, Sir ARTHUR ASTON, was before wounded by an accident, and could not performe the Office. The Termes were easie; for they all marched-out with bagge and baggage. This siege had not at all advantaged the Parliament, if another businesse had not fallen-out during that short siege; which may also be thought a reason, why the Towne was so soone rendred. A good Body of the King's Forces, both Horse and Foot (the King himselfe in Person not farre from them) came to relieve *Reading*, assaulting one Quarter of the Parliament-Army at *Causum* Bridge, within a mile of the Towne, and were beaten-back with great slaughter, which fell especially upon Gentlemen of quality, of whom the King at that encounter lost a considerable number; but how many they were, or their particular names, I finde not mentioned.

Reading is surrendered to the Earl of Essex. In the beginning of May, 1643.

The gaining of *Reading* might seeme an addition of strength to the Parliament-side; it proved otherwise: Nothing was gotten but a bare Towne, which had been happier, had it been onely so: But the Towne was infected, and caused afterwards a great mortality in the Parliament-Army. And, besides, the Souldiers were discontented, because, though their pay was much in arrear, they were not suffered to plunder, or make any benefit of their victory. For the Parliament, before *Reading* was delivered-up, had approved of the Conditions, and promised to the Lord-General's Souldiers, to induce them to forbear plundering, twelve shillings a man, besides their pay. But neither of these promises were then performed; money beginning already to be wanting, and the great Magazine of Treasure in *Guild-Hall* being quite consumed. While they stayed there, expecting money, the sicknesse and mortality daily increased, and the Lord-General, by advice of his Council of War, intended to march thence for better ayre. But such a general mutiny was raised for want of Money, that his Excellency, though with much courage and just severity he began to suppress it, was advised by his Council of Warre to desist, for feare of a general defection, till money might come from the City. Notwithstanding, upon this discontent in the Army, whilst his Excellency removed to *Causum* House to avoid the infection,

A contagious sickness breaks-out at *Reading*, of which many of the Parliament's Soldiers die.

many

many of the Souldiers disbanded, and went-away. Then began a tide of misfortune to flow-in upon the Parliament side; and their strength almost in every place to decrease at one time; for during the time of these six moneths, since the Battel of *Keynton*, until this present distresse of the Lord-General's Army about *Causum*, which was about the beginning of *May*, the Warre had gone-on with great fury and heat, almost thorow every part of *England*; the particulars of which shall hereafter be related by themselves, to avoid confusion in the Story: The Lord-General had at that time intelligence that Sir RALPH HOPTON had given a great defeat to the Parliament-Forces of *Devonshire*; and that Prince MAURICE, and the Marquesse of HARTFORD were designed that way, to possesse themselves wholly of the West.

The King's troops, under Sir Ralph Hopton, are successful in Devonshire.

Leaving therefore the Lord-General awhile, I shall proceed to speak of some things which happened at other places in that Moneth of *May*. The King's Armies were then in faire possibility of gaining the whole West; and seemed of strength enough to atchieve it by open Warre, without the assistance of secret treacheries and conspiracies; which, notwithstanding, were then in agitation, though they proved not successful against the Parliament, but destructive to the contrivers. As at *Bristol*, a place of great import, and much desired by the King's Forces, when the plot of betraying that City to Prince RUPERT was set on foot; which I here relate, as falling-out about the beginning of *May*, 1643.

A Plot at Bristol to betray that city to the King's troops, May 12, 1642.

The City of *Bristol* was then in the Parliament's protection, and governed by Colonel NATHANIEL FIENNES, second Sonne to the Viscount SAY and SEALE, though many of the Inhabitants there, (as appeared by this designe,) were disaffected to the Parliament's side.

This designe was very bloody, and many of that City had perished in it, had not the Conspirators been discovered and apprehended a little before they were to put it in execution.

ROBERT YEOMANS, late Sheriffe of *Bristol*, WILLIAM YEOMANS his brother, GEORGE BOURCHIER, and EDWARD DACRES, were the chiefe managers of this Designe; who, with many others of that opinion, had secretly provided themselves with Armes, intending to kill the Centinels by night, and possesse the maine Guard, (with other particulars, to be found in the Records of their examinations, and the proofes against them) whereby to master the greatest part of the other side within the Towne, to kill the Mayor, and many others that were knowne to stand affected to the Parliament; and by that meanes to betray the City to the King's Forces. In expectation of which act, Prince RUPERT, with other Commanders, and about 4000 Horse. and 2000 Foot, stayed upon *Durdam Downes*, about two miles from the City. But the Plot was discovered, and the Conspirators apprehended, and brought to trial by a Council of warre, where the foure persons forenamed were condemned, and two of them hanged at *Bristol*, namely, ROBERT YEOMANS, and GEORGE BOURCHIER; although great meanes had been made to save them, and Colonel FIENNES to that purpose had been threatened from *Oxford*, by General RIVEN (created by the King Earle of *Forth*) in a Letter unto him; which being of great consequence,

It is discovered and prevented, and two of the conspirators are put to death.

for

for the cleare understanding of this War, and the nature of it, I have thought fit to insert it here, together with the Answer thereunto.

PATRICK Earle of *Forth*, Lord ETTERICK, and Lord-Lieutenant of all His Majesty's Forces.

I, Having been informed, that lately at a Council of Warre you have condemned to death Robert Yeomans, late Sheriffe of Bristol, who hath His Majesty's Commission for raising a Regiment for his Service, William Yeomans his brother, George Bouchier, and Edward Dacres, all for expressing their Loyalty to His Majesty, and endeavouring his Service according to their Allegiance; and that you intend to proceed speedily against divers others in the like manner: Do therefore signifie to you, that I intend speedily to put Master George, Master Stevens, Captaine Huntley, and others, taken in Rebellion against His Majesty at Cicester, into the same condition. I do further advise you, that, if you offer, by that unjust Judgement, to execute any of them you have so condemned; that those here in custody, Master George, Master Stevens, and Captaine Huntley, must expect no favour or mercy.

Given under my hand at *Oxford*,
this 16th of May, 1643.

To the Commander in Chiefe of the
Council of Warre in *Bristol*.

FORTH.

The Answer to this Letter was as followeth:

NATHANIEL FIENNES, Governour, and the Council of War in the City of *Bristol*.

Having received a Writing from your Lordship, wherein it is declared, that, upon information of our late proceedings against Robert Yeomans, William Yeomans, and others, you intend speedily to put Master George, Master Stevens, Captaine Huntley, and others, into the same condition: We are well assured, that neither your Lordship, nor any other mortal man, can put them into the same condition; for, whether they live or dye, they will alwaies be accounted true and honest men, faithful to their King and Country, and such as in a faire and open way have alwaies prosecuted that Cause, which in their judgement, guided by the judgement of the highest Court, they held the justest; whereas the Conspirators of this City, must, both in life and death, carry perpetually with them the brand of Treachery
and

and Conspiracy : And, if Robert Yeomans had made use of his Commission in an open way, he should be put into no worse condition, than others in the like kinde had been; but the Law of nature among all men, and the law of Armes among Souldiers, make a difference betweene open Enemies, and secret Spyes and Conspirators. And, if you shall not make the like distinction, we do signifie unto you, that we will not onely proceed to the execution of the persons already condemned, but also of divers others of the Conspirators, unto whom we had some thoughts of extending mercy. And we do further advertise you, that, if, by any inhumane and un-Souldier-like sentence, you shall proceed to the execution of the persons by you named, or any other of our friends in your custody, that have beene taken in a faire and open way of War; then Sir Walter Pye, Sir William Crofts, and Colonel Connesbey, with divers others taken in open Rebellion, and actual War against the King and Kingdom, whom we have here in custody, must expect no favour or mercy. And, by God's blessing upon our most just Cause, we have powers enough, for our friends security, without taking-in any that have gotten out of our reach and power, although divers of yours, of no mean quality and condition, have been released by us. Given under our hands the 18th of May, 1643.

To Patrick Earle of Forth,
Lord Lieut. General.

Nathaniel Fiennes, President,
Clement Walker, &c.

The King also at that time writ a very sharpe command to the Mayor and Citizens of *Bristol*, to raise what power they could to hinder the execution of those men, which he termes the murder of his loyal Subjects: But nothing availed to save their lives; for the forenamed ROBERT YEOMANS, and GEORGE BOURCHIER, according to the sentence, were both executed. The losse of *Bristol* from the Parliament, a place of great import, was thus by the detection and prevention of this Conspiracy, respited for a while onely. For, not long after, it was surrendered to Prince RUPERT; and happier it was for the Prince himselfe, to gaine that City in a more honourable way, and with lesse effusion of English blood.

Another Plot in
London against the
Parliament, in May,
1643.

At the same time that these Conspirators against *Bristol* were, by sentence of a Council of Warre, put to death; another Plot of a higher nature, and more full of horror, was detected at *London*; a Plot, which, if it had not been discovered, would have quite ruined the Parliament itselfe, and strooke at the very head and chiefe residence of it, the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*; which cannot be omitted in this Relation, though with as much brevity as can be possible, it shall be touched.

The scope of it was to have put in execution the Commission of Array within *London* and *Westminster*, and so to have raised a sufficient force for the King's side to ruine the Parliament. Many Citizens of *London* were in the Plot, together with

with some Gentlemen besides, who had taken an Oath of secrecy among themselves; and were the more animated in it upon promises, which Master WALLER, the chiefe man in eminence among them (a Member of the House of Commons) had made to some of the rest, that many Members of both Houses of Parliament were engaged in the Plot, and would, in due time, be assistants to it: Though it proved in conclusion, that Master WALLER was not able to make good so much as he had promised. The Plot was horrid, and could not possibly have been put in execution without a great effusion of blood, as must needs appeare by the particular branches of it, which were confessed upon the Examinations of Master WALLER, Master TOMKINS, Master CHALLENGOR, Master HASSELL, Master BLINKHORNE, Master WHITE, and others, the chiefe Actors in it.

That which appeared by the Narrative Declaration, published by Authority of Parliament, was to this effect: That

1. They should seize into their custody the King's Children.
2. To seize upon several Members of both Houses of Parliament, and upon the Lord Mayor of *London*, and the Committee of the Militia there, under pretence of bringing them to legal tryal.
3. To seize upon all the Citie's out-Works and Forts; and upon the Tower of *London*; and upon all the Magazines, Gates, and other places of importance in the City.
4. To let-in the King's Forces, in order, with their assistance, to surprize the City; to destroy all those, who should, by Authority of Parliament, be their opposers; and, by force of Armes, to resist all payments imposed by the Authority of both the Houses for the support of the Armies employed in their defence.

Many other particulars there were, too tedious to relate at large; as, what signals should have been given to the King's Forces of Horse, to invade the City; what Colours for difference, those of the Plot should weare, to be knowne to their fellowes, and such like. Much heartened they were in this businesse by a Commission of Array sent from *Oxford* at that time, from the King to them, and brought secretly to *London* by a Lady, the Lady AUBIGNY, Daughter to the Earle of *Suffolke*, a Widow ever since the Battel of *Keynton*; where the Lord AUBIGNY, her husband, was slaine.

That Commission of Array was directed from the King to Sir NICHOLAS CRISPE, Sir GEORGE STROUD, Knights, to Sir THOMAS GARDINER, Knight, Recorder of *London*, Sir GEORGE BINION, Knight, RICHARD EDES, and MARMADUKE ROYDEN, Esquires, THOMAS BROWNE, PETER PAGGON, CHARLES GENNINGS, EDWARD CARLETON, ROBERT ABBOT, ANDREW KING, WILLIAM WHITE, STEVEN BOLTON, ROBERT ALDEM, EDMUND FOSTER, THOMAS BLINKHORNE, of *London*, Gentlemen; and to all such other persons, as, according to the true intent and purport of that Commission, should be nominated and appointed to be Generals, Colonels, Lieutenant-Colonels, Serjeant-Majors, or other Officers of that Council of Warre. The Commission itselfe is to be read at large in the Parliament-Records.

It is detected on the 31st day of May, and two of the conspirators are put to death.

But this Conspiracy was prevented, and proved fatal to some of the Contrivers; being detected upon the last day of *May* (which happened at that time to be the day of the Monethly Fast) and Master *WALLER*, Master *TOMKINS*, with other of the forenamed Conspirators, being apprehended, were that night examined by divers grave Members of the Parliament, of whom Master *PYM* was one; and afterwards reserved in custody for a Tryal. They were arraigned in *Guild-Hall*, and Master *WALLER*, Master *TOMKINS*, Master *CHALLONER*, Master *HASELL*, Master *WHITE*, and Master *BLINKHORNE*, were all condemned; none were executed but Master *TOMKINS*, and Master *CHALLONER*, who were both hanged, Master *TOMKINS* in *Holborne*, and Master *CHALLONER* in *Cornhill*, both within sight of their own dwelling-houses; Master *HASELL* dyed in Prison; *BLINKHORNE*, and the other, were, by the mercy of the Parliament, and the Lord-General *Essex*, reprieved, and saved afterwards; Master *WALLER*, the chiefe of them, was long detained Prisoner in the Tower, and, about a yeare after, upon payment of a Fine of ten thousand pounds, was pardoned, and released to go travel abroad. It was much wondered-at, and accordingly discoursed-of by many at that time, what the reason should be, why Master *WALLER*, being the principal Agent in that Conspiracy, (where Master *TOMKINS* and Master *CHALLONER*, who had been drawn-in by him, as their own Confessions, even at their deaths, expressed, were both executed) did escape with life. The onely reason which I could ever heare given for it, was, that Master *WALLER* had been so free in his Confessions at the first, (without which the Plot could not have been clearly detected;) that Master *PYM*, and others of the Examiners, had engaged their promise, to do whatever they could to preserve his life. He seemed also much smitten in conscience, and desired the comfort of godly Ministers, being extremely penitent for that foule offence; and afterwards, in his Speech to the House, (when he came to be put-out of it) much bewailed his offence, thanking God that so mischievous and bloody a Conspiracy had been discovered, before it could take effect.

CHAP. III.

Matters of State transacted in Parliament, touching the Assembly of Divines. The making of a new Great Scale: Impeaching the Queene of High Treason, and other things. The Lord-General Essex, after some Marches, returneth to quarter his wasted and sick Army about Kingston. The King's Forces are Masters of the West. The Earl of Newcastle's greatnesse in the North. Some mention of the Earle of Cumberland, and the Lord FAIRFAX.

AT the same time that these Conspiracies were closely working to undermine the Parliament, and Warre was raging in highest fury throughout the Kingdome; many State-businesses of an unusual nature had been transacted in the Parliament-sitting. For things were growne beyond any precedent of former ages, and the very foundations of Government were shaken: according to the sense of that Vote, which the Lords and Commons had passed a yeare before, *That, whensoever the King maketh Warre against the Parliament, it tendeth to the dissolution of this Government.*

Three things of that unusual nature fell into debate in one moneth, which was *May, 1643*, and were then, or soone after, fully passed; one was at the beginning of that moneth, concerning the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster*. Among other Bills which had passed both Houses, and wanted onely the Royal Assent, that was one; "That a Synod of Divines should be chosen and established, for the good and right settlement of Religion, with a fit Government for the Church of *England*." This Bill was often tendered to the King to passe, but utterly refused by him: The matter therefore was fully argued, "what in such cases might be done

The Parliament resolves to call an Assembly of Divines for the settlement of Religion.

by Authority of Parliament, when the Kingdome's good is so much concerned, when a King refuseth, and wholly absenteth himselfe from the Parliament." And at last it was brought to this conclusion; "That an Ordinance of Parliament, where the King is so absent, and refusing, is by the Lawes of the Land of as good Authority to binde the people, for the time present, as an Act of Parliament itselfe can be."

It was therefore Voted by the Lords and Commons, That the Act for an Assembly of Divines, to settle Religion, and a forme of Government for the Church of *England*, (which the King had often refused to passe) should forthwith be turned into an Ordinance of Parliament; and that the Assembly thereby called, should debate such things, for the settlement of Religion, as should be propounded to them by both Houses; which, not long after, was accordingly put in execution.

The case seemed to be of the same nature with that of *Scotland* in the year 1639, when the Scottish Covenanters (as is before mentioned in this History) upon the King's delay in calling their National Synod, published a writing to that purpose; "That the power of calling a Synod, in case the Prince be an Enemy to the truth, or negligent in promoting the Church's good, is in the Church itselfe."

They resolve to
make a new Great
Seal.

In the same moneth, and within few daies after, another businesse of great consequence, was, by the Lords and Commons, taken into consideration, which was the making of a new Great Seale, to supply the place of that which had been carried-away from the Parliament, as before is mentioned. This businesse had been fully debated in the House of Commons, and the Moneth following, at a Conference between both Houses, the Commons declared to the Lords what great prejudice the Parliament and whole Kingdome suffered by the absence of the Great Seale; and thereupon desired their speedy compliance in Votes for the-making of a new one.

The matter was debated in the House of Peeres, put to Votes, and carried for the negative. The onely reason which they alledged against the making of a new Seale, was this; That they have hitherto dispatched all businesse, since the absence of the Seale, by vertue of Ordinances of Parliament, and they conceived that the same course might still be kept in what matters soever were necessary to be expedited for the good of the Kingdome, without a Seale. Yet the Lords gave a respective answer, That, if the House of Commons would informe them in any particular cases, wherein the Kingdome's prejudice, by absence of the Great Seale, could not be remedied by vertue of an Ordinance, they would take it into further consideration, to induce compliance accordingly.

Neither was it long before the Lords, upon reasons shewed, concurred with the House of Commons; who about the beginning of *July*, presented to the Lords at a Conference the Votes, which had before passed in their House, together with the reasons for making of a new Great Seale. The Votes were these:

Resolved upon the Question, June 14 & 26.

1. That the Great Seale of England ought to attend the Parliament.

2. That

2. *That the absence of it hath been a cause of great mischief to the Commonwealth.*
3. *That a remedy ought to be provided for these mischiefs.*
4. *That the proper remedy is by making a new Great-Seale.*

The reasons which they gave, were divided into two branches ; The first declaring those mischiefs which were occasioned by conveying-away the Great-Seale from the Parliament : The second expressing those inconveniences and mischiefs which proceeded from the want of the Great-Seale with them. The reasons of the first kinde were thus :

1. It was secretly and unlawfully carried-away by the Lord-Keeper, contrary to the duty of his place, who ought, himselfe, to have attended the Parliament, and not to have departed without leave ; nor should have been suffered to convey-away the Great-Seale, if his intentions had been discovered.

2. It hath been since taken-away from him, and put into the hands of other dangerous and ill-affected persons ; so as the Lord-Keeper, being sent-unto by the Parliament, for the sealing of some Writs, returned answer, That he could not Seale the same, because he had not the Seale in his keeping.

3. Those who have had the managing thereof, have employed it to the hurt and destruction of the Kingdome many waies ; as by making new Sheriffes in an unusual and unlawful manner, to be as so many Generals, or Commanders, of Forces raised against the Parliament ; by issuing-out illegal Commissions of Array, with other unlawful Commissions for the same purpose ; By sending-forth Proclamations against both Houses of Parliament, and several Members thereof, proclaiming them Traytors, against the Priviledges of Parliament, and Laws of the Land ; By sealing Commissions of *Oyer and Terminer* to proceed against them, and other of His Majestie's good Subjects, adhering to the Parliament, as Traytors ; By sending Commissions into *Ireland*, to treat a peace with the Rebels there, contrary to an Act of Parliament made this Session. Besides divers other dangerous Acts passed under it, since it was secretly conveyed-away from the Parliament ; whereby great calamities and mischiefs have ensued, to the prejudice of the Kingdome.

Mischiefes arising through want of the Great-Seal.

1. The Termes have been adjourned ; the course of Justice obstructed.
2. No original Writs can be sued-forth without going to *Oxford* ; which none who holds with the Parliament can do, without peril of his life or Liberty.
3. Proclamations in Parliament cannot issue-out, for bringing-in Delinquents impeached of High Treason, or other crimes ; under paine of forfeiting their Estates, according to the ancient course.

4. No

4. No Writs of Error can be brought in Parliament, to reverse erroneous judgements; nor Writs of Election sued-out for chusing new Members upon death, or removal of any; whereby the number of the Members is much lessened, and the Houses in time like to be dissolved, if speedy supply be not had, contrary to the very Act for continuance of this Parliament.

5. Every other Court of Justice hath a peculiar Seale; and the Parliament, the Supreme Court of *England*, hath no other but the Great-Seale of *England*; which being kept-away from it, hath now no Seale at all; and therefore a new Seale ought to be made.

6. This Seale is *Clavis Regni*, and therefore ought to be resident with the Parliament (which is the representative Body of the whole Kingdome (whilst it continues sitting; the King, as well as the Kingdom, being alwaies legally present in it, during the Session thereof.

The Lords upon these reasons concurred with the House of Commons, and order was given, that a new Great-Seale should forthwith be made; which was accordingly done.

It should seeme the King was not well-pleas'd with this action of the Parliament, as appeared by what was done at *Oxford* above a year after, when the King assembled together the Lords which were with him, and all those Gentlemen that had been Members of the House of Commons, and had deserted the Parliament at *Westminster*, whom the King called his Parliament at *Oxford*, and propounded many things for them to debate-upon; amongst which it was taken into debate, and resolved upon the Question by that assembly at *Oxford*, That this very action (which they style *counterfeiting* the Great-Seale) was Treason, and the whole Parliament at *Westminster*, *eo facto*, guilty of High-Treason. But this was passed at *Oxford* long-after; of which occasion may be to speak further hereafter.

But, at the time when the Parliament made their new Great-Seale, the people stood at gaze, and many wondered what might the consequence of so unusual a thing. Some, that wholly adhered to the Parliament, and liked well, that an action so convenient and useful to the present state, was done by them, looked notwithstanding upon it, as a sad marke of the Kingdome's distraction, and a signe how irreconcilable the difference might grow between the Parliament and the King's Person. For the legality, or justnesse, of making of the Seale, there was little dispute, or argument, among those who were not disaffected to the Parliament; and though there were no direct, or plaine, precedent for it (for the case of a King's being personally in Warre against the Parliament sitting, had never happened before) yet by comparison with other times, when the necessities of State have required such a thing, it was not onely allowed, but thought requisite. I do not know of any thing written against it by any Lawyers, or other of the King's Party; but Master PRYNNE, a learned Lawyer, and great Antiquary, of the Parliament-side hath written a copious discourse in justification of it, both by arguments of reason, and many near-resembling precedents of former times) called, *The opening of the Great-*

Great-Seal of England, which is extant to be read by any that would be satisfied, what power from time to time Parliaments have challenged and been allowed, over that Seale, both in making of it in the infancy or absence of Princes, and disposing of it in the dotage or wilfulness of others.

But before this businesse was fully concluded, another thing, which seemed as great a signe how wide the rent was growne, fell into debate in the House of Commons: Some time was spent in consultation about it, and much arguing on both sides. The matter was about charging the Queene of High-Treason. To that purpose many Articles of an high nature were drawne-up against her; some of them were, That she had pawned the Crowne-Jewels in *Holland*; That she had raised the Rebellion in *Ireland*; That she had endeavoured to raise a Party in *Scotland* against the Parliament; That she had gone in the head of a Popish Army in *England*: For, not long before this time, the Queene, with Armes and Ammunition from the Low-Countries, and Commanders of Warre from thence, had landed in the North of *England*, been entertained there by the Earle of *Newcastle*, and by him and others, with strong Forces, conveyed to the King at *Oxford*; whereof more particulars will be related hereafter. Divers other Articles were framed against the Queene, upon which, within few Moneths after, she was impeached of High-Treason by the House of Commons, and the Impeachment carried-up by Master *PYMME* to the House of Peeres, where it stuck for many moneths, but was afterward passed there also; and may be further discoursed-of in the due time.

The House of Commons impeaches the Queen of High Treason.

It had been likewise before Ordered by both Houses, and was now accordingly put in execution, that the King and Queene's Revenue coming into the Exchequer, should be detained, and employed to the Publike-Service of the Common-wealth; a Committee was chosen of Lords and Commons to dispose of it to the best uses. Divers necessary charges of the State were defrayed by it, and among others (which seemed a kinde of just retaliation) many Members of both Houses of Parliament, whose whole Estates had been seized-upon by the King's Armies, were in some measure relieved at *London*, out of his Revenue, and thereby enabled to subsist in that Publike Service, to which they had been called.

The Parliament takes possession of the King's Revenue to support the Publick expences.

But so exceeding great, by this time, were the charges growne for supportation of so spreading a Warre, that no Contributions nor Taxes whatsoever were thought sufficient, unlesse an Excise were imposed upon Commodities (according to the way of the *Netherlanders*) such as Beere, Wine, Tobacco, and Meat; which was taken into consideration by both Houses, and this Summer agreed-upon. But the Excise was layed with much gentleness, especially upon all Victuals of most common and necessary use, insomuch that it was but little felt either by the rich, or by poore people, and yet amountea monethly to a very considerable summe, though the King's Quarters were then the greatest part of *England*; for the City of *London* was within the Parliament-Quarters.

They also impose an Excise upon Commodities.

To returne againe to the Lord-General *ESSEX*; His Excellency in *May*, 1643, having, as aforesaid, received intelligence of the defeat given to the Parliament-

Of the Earl of Essex and his army.

Army

Army in the West, and in what condition things there stood; not being able with his owne Forces to give them reliefe, sent order to Sir WILLIAM WALLER (whose actions shall be anon mentioned in a Series by themselves): to march thither in assistance of the *Devonshire* Forces; and writ his Command to the Governour of *Bristol*, to aid him with such Horse and Foot, as he could conveniently spare out of his Garrison. But things could not at that time be put in execution according to his desires; and before Sir WILLIAM WALLER could get farre into the West, Prince MAURICE, Marquesse HARTFORD, and Sir RALPH HOPTON, were joynd all-together.

The Earl of Essex marches with his army to Thame.

The Lord-General, since it was much desired by the City of *London*, from whom the supplies of money were to come, that he should move with his whole Army towards *Oxford*, was content, though somewhat against his judgement, to proceed in that designe: and marched with the maine Body to *Thame*, to meet there with the Forces sent from the associated Counties to his assistance; from whence (as a person, whose care and Command extended over the whole Kingdome, which was now overspread with a general Warre, and wasted by many Armies at once) he granted a Commission, by direction of the Parliament, to the Lord FIELDING, (now Earle of *Denbigh*, by the late death of his Father, who was slaine in a Skirmish, fighting against the Parliament) to be General of foure Counties, *Shropshire*, *Worcester*, *Stafford*, and *Warwickshire*; to levy Forces there, and conduct them into any part of the Kingdome, against the King's Power, according to directions from the Parliament, or Lord-General. He granted also, at the same time, another Commission in the like manner to Sir THOMAS MIDDLETON, to raise Forces as General of all North *Wales*.

His army suffers greatly by sickness and bad weather.

At *Thame* the hand of God, in an extreme increase of sicknesse (hundreds in a day desperately ill) did visite the Lord-General's Army; and by strange unseasonableness of weather, and great raine continuing fourteene daies, the place being upon a flat, moist, and clayie ground, made it impossible for him to advance from that Quarter. In which time the Army was, by sicknesse, and departure of most of the Auxiliary Forces, brought to a number utterly unable to attempt the former designe, without certaine ruine, the situation of *Oxford* upon the River of *Thames* being considered; for the Lord-General conceived it impossible (as himselfe expressed it) to block-up the Towne, without a double number to what he then had.

But, when the raine ceased, and the waters were so much abated as to make the waies passable, intelligence was brought that Prince RUPERT had drawne-out his Horse and Foot toward *Buckingham*, with his Cannon also; and had called-in the Country, making open profession before them, that he would give Battel to the General: The General marched with some speed toward *Buckingham*, to fight with him. When he came within two miles of that Towne, he found the case farre otherwise, and had intelligence that the Prince had quitted *Buckingham* in a kinde of disorderly manner; that, the night before, he had horsed his Foot, and marched-away, leaving some of his Provisions behinde him.

The Lord-General understood well, that it was not possible for him with his
Trainee

Traine of Artillery and Foot Companies, to follow the Enemy to any advantage. For, if he had been at that time strong enough in Horse, his desire was to have hindered Prince RUPERT from joyning with the Queene, who then was marching with a good Convoy of Horse from the Northerne parts of *England*, (where she had arrived from the *Netherlands*) towards *Oxford*. But, not being able to follow that designe, he desisted from his march to *Buchingham*, sending into the Town a Party of his Horse, to quarter there that night, and to bring-away that Provision which the Enemy had left there. He himselfe, with the rest of his Army, marched to great *Brichhill*, a place most convenient to lye betweene the Enemy and *London*, to defend the Associated Counties, to assist or joyne with the Forces of the Lord GRAY, of *Grooby*, Sir JOHN MELDRUM, and Colonel CROMWELL, to whom he had before written, that, if they could possibly, they should fight with the Queen's Forces, and stop her passage to the King. But it seemed that the businesse could not be done; so that the Queene and Prince RUPERT were suffered to joyne together with all their Forces. Sir WILLIAM WALLER had bene long victorious in the West: yet now the Parliament's fortune, almost in every place, began to faile; and intelligence was brought to the Lord-General, that Sir William, after having almost gained the whole West, and besieging Sir RALPH HOPTON in the *Devizes*, (a Towne of *Devonshire*,) was on a sudden, by unexpected Forces from *Oxford*, under the conduct of the Lord WILMOT, totally routed and forced into *Bristol*. The Lord-General, at the first report of this newes, intended to have marched, himselfe, for relieving of the West; but, upon more particular information, that Sir WILLIAM WALLER's Forces were so farre broken that no assistance at all could be given by them, was inforced to desist from that enterprize. Considering also that his owne Army was shrunke (through the continual increase of violent sicknesse, and from want of pay, clothing, and other necessaries,) to a most unconsiderable number, he resolved to proceed no further, nor to engage that weake Army to the ruine of itselfe, and danger of the Kingdome; especially, since the Forces of the Associated Counties could not with safety be commanded so farre from home. He therefore returned toward *London*, quartering that poore remainder of an Army, at *Kingston-upon-Thames*, and other places near adjacent. In this distressed condition I must a-while leave that great General, until some few weekes time shall recruit his power, and enable him to make that famous and honourable expedition to the reliefe of *Gloucester*.

So great, at this time, were the successes which, in all parts, crowned the King's Armies, that they seemed to possess an absolute Victory, and the Parliament to be in danger of being quite ruined. On one side, the Lord-General's Army mouldered-away by long sicknesse, and other wants; the long-successeful Sir WILLIAM WALLER, quite broken in the West; and, about the same time, the Lord FAIRFAX, and his Sonne Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX, (though reserved by divine Providence for a transcendant height of honour in the future) with almost all the Gentlemen which served the Parliament in those Northerne parts, being defeated by the Earle of

The King's party are now in a very prosperous condition.

Newcastle; and the Lord FAIRFAX, with his Sonne, driven into the Towne of *Hull*: On the other side, the King's Armies were full and strong; Sir RALPH HOPTON, (whom, for his valour and industry, the King had honoured with the Title of a Baron,) was possessed of a gallant Army in the West, and seemed to want nothing so much as a considerable enemy; the King's other Forces were free to chuse what stage they pleased, to act their parts upon. Prince RUPERT was sent to besiege *Bristol*, where Colonel NATHANIEL FIENNES, second Sonne to the Viscount SAY, was Governour; which City, in this low ebbe of the Parliament, could not long hold-out, but was soone delivered to the Prince,—a place of as much concernment as any in the Kingdome. Prince MAURICE, with another Army, came to besiege the City of *Exeter*, into which the Earle of *Stamford* was retreated after his defeat at *Stretton*, in *Cornwall*;—a Nobleman who had long struggled with various successe, and in sharpe encounters, against Sir RALPH HOPTON, and other Commanders of the King's side in those Westerne Counties, and was ruined at last by the treacherous revolt of some who had taken the same cause with him at the first. This City was, likewise, after a long siege, for want of supplies, delivered, upon Articles, to the Prince that besieged it.

The City of Bristol is taken by Prince Rupert;

And the City of Exeter by Prince Maurice.

The Earle of Newcastle commands a powerful Army for the King in the North of England.

The Parliament desires the brotherly assistance of the Scots.

Great services performed for the Parliament by the Lord Fairfax, and his son Sir Thomas Fairfax.

But the great cloud, which not onely overshadowed the Parliament in the North, but threatened to poure out stormes upon parts farre remote, was the Earle of *Newcastle*, with his mighty Army, who was growne formidable to the Associated Counties, and many other places of the Kingdome. His Army was, at that time, the greatest of any in *England*, which he maintained in brave equipage, by large Contributions levied upon the Country, and seemed of strength enough, not onely to master any opposition of English Forces, but to serve as a Bulwarke against the greatest Army which the Kingdome of *Scotland* could be able to send in aid of the English Parliament. For the Parliament had then sent into *Scotland*, for the brotherly assistance of that Kingdom, and agreed upon entering into a Covenant with them for defence of Religion, and the common Liberty of both Nations.

It pleased the Divine Providence (whose workings are many times beyond the reach of humane conjectures) that this strong Army, before the entrance of the Scots, found an Enemy in *England* worthy of their feare; and were by the personal valour and successfull conduct of Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX, (who seemed lately in a low condition,) so farre broken (together with other defeats given to parts of it sent abroad) that the passage for the Scots into *England* was much facilitated; as shall hereafter appeare in a more particular manner.

But it is worthy of consideration (and therefore cannot but deserve a mention) with what unwearied constancy, and wonderous magnanimity, the two FAIRFAXES, Father and Sonne, did labour to preserve those Northerne parts for the Parliament: especially observing what great Enemies they dealt withall; how many unexpected disadvantages happened to them, and accessions of power to their foes at several times; which, though it cannot be here related with full circumstances, or particulars, yet may be touched in a general way.

The

The Lord FAIRFAX, ever since that there was any appearance of this unhappy Warre; and that the King's Commission of Array began to juttle with the Parliament's Ordinance of Militia, had been very industrious in raising strength; and joynd himselfe most unanimously in that cause with Sir JOHN HOTHAM, and his Sonne Master JOHN HOTHAM, a Member also of the House of Commons, and a Gentleman, not onely active but prosperous, whilst he continued faithful to that side which he had chosen. And, after the Warre broke-out into action, the Lord FAIRFAX, either singly by himselfe, or sometimes joynd with Master HOTHAM, had taken and fortified many Townes and Forts for the Parliament, and made many sharpe and fierce encounters against potent Enemies. The Earle of *Cumberland*, (who was, first, made Lord-Lieutenant of *Yorkshire* by the King,) was not able to suppress them, nor scarce maintaine the Warre against that power which they had raised: Maugre whose Forces, they took and fortified *Cawood-Castle*, and the Towne of *Selby*, in the Moneth of *October*, 1642, and, presently after, surpris'd the Towne of *Leedes*, where part of the Earle's Forces were quartered, of whom they tooke divers Prisoners, Knights and Gentlemen of good quality, one of which was Sir GEORGE DETHERICK, together with his whole Troope.

The Earle of *Cumberland* himselfe, within few daies after, was driven into the City of *Yorke*, and there besieged, and summoned by the Lord FAIRFAX and Master HOTHAM; which happened about the same time that the famous Battel between the King and the Lord-General *Essex*, was fought at *Keynton*.

But the Earle of *Newcastle* with a greater force, entered into *Yorke*, whilst the Lord FAIRFAX and Captaine HOTHAM, lay not farre-off; who, notwithstanding his great strength when he marched out of *Yorke*, was encountered by them at *Tadcaster*, upon the 7th of *December*, the Fight, or several Skirmishes, continuing about five houres; in which the Parliament-Forces did so well take their advantages, that they slew (as was reported to the Parliament) 200 of the Earle's men, with the losse of eight Souldiers of their owne, of whom Captaine LISTER was one, whose death was much lamented in the Country, being esteemed a brave and religious man. After several Skirmishes, the Parliament-Army had the fortune to make a faire retreat to *Cawood-Castle* and *Selby*, and leave all to the Earle, whose Forces were reported to be about eight thousand Horse and Foot, the Lord FAIRFAX and Captaine HOTHAM having not above 2,100 Foot, and seven Troops of Horse; their number would have been greater, if Sir HUGH CHOLMELY and Colonel BAINTON, with their Regiments of Foot, and two Troops of Horse (who were expected) had accordingly come-in to them.

A fight at Tadcaster,
December 7. 1642.

The Earle of *Newcastle* was now growne, not only master of the field there, but formidable to all the adjacent Counties; who did therefore implore aid from the Parliament. The Parliament, upon that occasion, hastened the Association of those Counties which lay neerer to them, that they might be the more able to supply their remoter friends.

The King's side received then an addition of strength in the North, by the landing

Colonel Goring arrives at Newcastle with succours for the King.

The Earle of Newcastle takes the town of Leeds.

But is successfully resisted by Lord Fairfax's forces in an attempt upon Bradford.

landing of Colonel GORING at *Newcastle*, with 200 Commanders from *Holland*, and other Provisions for the Warre.

The Earle of *Newcastle* marching from *Tadcaster*, surprised *Leedes*, in which Towne he tooke many Gentlemen Prisoners, and forced them to ransom themselves at high rates: whereby he was further enabled to pay his great Army. Then also he gave Commissions to Papists in that Country to arme themselves in the King's Service, which he justified by writings published upon that occasion; and at the same time proclaimed the Lord FAIRFAX a Traytor.

The Lord FAIRFAX, notwithstanding, marched with such Forces as he had gotten together, and proved successeful in divers attempts, against several parts of the Earle of *Newcastle's* Forces, one of them happening at *Sherburne*, between *Tadcaster* and *Doncaster*, and another at *Bradford*, against a party of the Earle of *Newcastle's* Army, under the conduct of Colonel GORING, Colonel EVERS, Sir WILLIAM SAVILE, and Sir JOHN GOTHERICK, who came with a good strength of Horse and Dragoners to surprize on a sudden that Towne of *Bradford*; but were by Forces, timely sent to the reliefe of it, forced to retire with some losse; which, though it were not a Victory against Colonel GORING and the rest, may, notwithstanding, be terried a successeful Action, in being able to repel an Enemy too potent for them in all probability.

CHAP. IV.

Some Actions of Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX in the North. The Queene lands in England. The revolt of Sir HUGH CHOLMELY, and the two HOTHAMS. The state of this Warre in the Westerne parts. The condition of the Associated Counties. A short relation of Sir WILLIAM WALLER'S Actions; of Colonel CROMWELL, Sir WILLIAM BRERETON, and Sir JOHN GELL.

GREAT were the achievements of Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX in that moneth of *January*, and the following *February*; for no season of the yeare, nor stormes of winter, could quench the rage of this Civil Fire. Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX on the 23d of *January*, 1642, marched from *Bradford* (six miles distant from *Leedes*) with six Troops of Horse, and three Companies of Dragoones, under the command of Sir HENRY FOULIS, Baronet, his Lieutenant-General of his Horse, and neere 1000 Musqueteers, with 2000 Clubmen, under the Command of Sir WILLIAM FAIRFAX, Colonel, and Lieutenant-General of the Foot. When Sir THOMAS approached the Town of *Leeds*, he dispatched a Trumpeter to Sir WILLIAM SAVILE, Commander in chiefe there, under the Earle of *Newcastle*, requiring the Towne to be delivered to him for the King and Parliament. But receiving a resolute, and seeming-scorneful, answer from Sir WILLIAM SAVILE; he drew neerer, and prepared to make an Assault, though there were great strength in the Towne, namely, 1500 Foot, and 500 Horse and Dragoones, with two Brasse Sakers. Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX drew-out five Companies of his most expert Souldiers, whom he disposed-of at a fit side of the Town, under the command of Major FORBES, Captaines BRIGGS, LEE, FRANKE, and PALMER. Sir WILLIAM FAIRFAX, at the head of his Regiment, and in the face of the Enemy, stormed the Town with great skill and courage, whilst Major FORBES did the like in his place, and Sir THOMAS himselfe, every where eacouraging, and teaching valour by his owne example, brought-

Great and active services of Sir Thomas Fairfax to the Parliament, in January and February, 1642-3.
He takes the town of Leeds in Yorkshire

on

on his men; so that after two houres of hot fight, though the besieged behaved themselves well, the Towne was entered by Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX, Sir WILLIAM FAIRFAX, and Sir HENRY EOWLES, on one side, and Major FORBES, with his fellow-Captaines, on the other. They tooke within the Towne their two Brasse Sakers, with good store of Armes and Ammunition, foure Colours, and 500 Prisoners, among whom were six Commanders: The Common Souldiers, upon taking of an Oath, never to fight in this cause against the King and Parliament, were set at liberty, and suffered to depart, but without their Arms. There were slaine about forty men, of which number the besieged lost the greater halfe. Serjeant-Major BEAMONT, endeavouring in the flight to save his life, by crossing the River, so lost it, being drowned therein; and Sir WILLIAM SAVILE himselfe, crossing in flight the same River, hardly escaped the same fate. Publike thanksgiving to Almighty God was given at *London* for this Victory.

And Wakefield.

Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX with his victorious Forces, immediately marched to another Quarter of the Earle of *Newcastle's* Army at *Wakefield*, from whence the chiefe Commander, Sir GEORGE WENTWORTH, fled, and left it to him. Not long after, he marched to *Tadcaster*; at whose approach the Earle's Forces, though a considerable number, fled-away, and forsooke their Workes.

And Tadcaster.

From that time scarce any one fortnight of all the following Spring, passed without some remarkable addition of strength to the King's side, in those Northerne parts. In *February* General KING, a Scottish Commander, of great experience in Military affaires, came out of *Holland*, landed at *Newcastle*, joyned himselfe with the Earle of *Newcastle*, and passed to *Yorke* with 6000 Armes. In the same Moneth also the Queene, landing from *Holland*, neere to *Sunderland*, with great Provision of Armes and Ammunition, and many Commanders of note in her Retinew, was convoyed by the Earle of *Newcastle* to the City of *Yorke*.

General King comes from Holland with great store of arms for the King's service. And likewise the Queen, in February, 1642-3.

The Earle of *Montrosse* about the same time, a young Lord of great esteeme in *Scotland*, who, before, in the Scottish Warre (as is there mentioned) had shewed himselfe one of the most active and zealous Covenanters of that Nation, forsook his Party there, and, with the Lord OLESBY, fled out of *Scotland* with 120 Horse, to the Queene at *Yorke*. Upon which both those Lords were proclaimed at *Edenburgh* Traytors to their King and Country, for that, contrary to their Covenant, they stole out of *Scotland*, to assist the Popish Army, (for so they called that of the Earle of *Newcastle*) against the Parliament of *England*.

The Earl of Montrosse comes-over to the King.

Another great wound to the Parliament, not long after, was the revolt of Sir HUGH CHOLMELY, a Member of the House of Commons, and one that had carried a good esteeme among them, who had before (as is already mentioned) been employed by the Parliament, as a Commissioner in the North, together with the Lord FAIRFAX, and Sir PHILIP STAPLETON; and was at this time highly entrusted by them; for he was Governour of *Scarborough*, a place of great importance. He falsely betrayed his Trust, and forsooke the Cause he had undertaken, going to the Queene with 300 men. Upon which he was impeached of High Treason by the Parliament; but it was not his fortune to suffer for that offence, as others

And Sir Hugh Cholmely.

others did, who about the same time failed in their Trusts. The Towne of *Scarborough* was left in possession of a Parliament-Captaine, who was usually called *Browne Bushell*, a man that some thought would have kept it to the Parliament's use; but he likewise revolted, and delivered it to their Enemies.

Captain Brown Bushell revolts from the Parliament, and surrenders Scarborough to the King's party.

Upon the landing of General KING, and the Queene presently after, a suspicion began to arise, by some circumstances, that the two unfortunate HOTHAMS, the father and the sonne, were false to the Parliament. Which by the strict observation of some vigilant men on that side, was further discovered, and began at last to be discoursed-of, with as little beliefe for a long time, as CASSANDRAE'S Prophecies; and, when it came more plainly to appeare, with as much, not onely wonder, but sorrow of honest men, that so much unconstanicy should be found. The particulars of this discovery, and how much the Parliament, if it had not been timely prevented, would have suffered by it, there will be time hereafter to discourse of more at large. But they were both accused to the Parliament, seized-upon at *Hull*, and sent-up to *London*, where they long remained Prisoners in the Tower, before the time of their Tryal and Execution.

Sir John Hotham and his son design to revolt from the Parliament, but are discovered and seized-upon at Hull, and sent-up prisoners to London.

Not all these disadvantages, by the growth of Enemies, and revolt of friends, could dishearten the Lord FAIRFAX and his Sonne, who still persisted with great courage, and raising the Clubmen of the Country, to piece-up those small Forces which remained with them, were able for a while to make considerable resistance, and performe divers services against some parts of the Earle of *Newcastle's* vast Army. But one Victory was gained by Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX at *Wakefield*, which may be termed rather miraculous than strange; though I shall relate nothing save knowne truth:—such a Victory, against so much odds, and so many disadvantages, as may serve to teach how much successe may possibly crowne bold attempts, and justifie that old saying, *Audaces fortuna juvat*.

The Lord FAIRFAX, General of the Parliament's Forces in the North, on the 20th of *May*, gave Order for a Party to be drawne-out from the Garrisons of *Leedes*, *Bradford*, *Halifax*, and *Howley*: They marched, 1000 Foot, three Companies of Dragoners, and eight Troops of Horse; Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX commanded in Chiefe; the Foot were commanded by Sir WILLIAM FAIRFAX, and Serjeant Major-General GIFFORD; the Horse divided into two Bodies, foure Troops whereof were commanded by Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX himselfe, the other foure by Sir HENRY FOWLIS. From *Howley*, which was their rendezvouze, they marched-away, and by foure a clock in the morning came before *Wakefield*; Those of the Towne were ready for them, and sent-out some of their Horse to encounter with theirs, and Musqueteers to line some hedges, even to the very Towne. There were in *Wakefield* 3000 Foot, and seven Troops of Horse, besides Colonel LAMP-TON'S Regiment, which came into the Towne after that the Parliament's Forces entered into it. But at the first encounter the Parliament's Forces beat back their Enemy's Horse; and their Foot also drove those Musqueteers from the hedges, even into the Towne, which they assaulted in two places, called *Wrengate*, and *Northgate*, and after an houre and an halfe's fighting, recovered one of their Enemy's Peeces,

Sir Thomas Fairfax gains a glorious victory at Wakefield, May 20, 1643.

Pieces, and turned it upon them; and withal entred the Town in both places at the same time. When the Baracadoes were opened, Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX with the Horse also fell into the Towne and cleared the street, and there was a cruel and fierce encounter; in which place Colonel GORING was taken prisoner by Lieutenant MATTHEW ALURED, (brother to Captaine JOHN ALURED, a Member of the House of Commons;) yet in the Market-place there still remained three Troops of Horse and Colonel LAMPTON'S Regiment; to whom Major-General GIFFORD sent a Trumpet, with proffer of Quarter, if they would lay-down their Arms. To which when they returned a scornful Answer, he fired a Peece of their owne Ordnance upon them, and the Horse also falling-in with great fury, soone beat them out of the Towne, and tooke all their Officers Prisoners. They tooke, withal, 27 Colours of Foot, three Cornets of Horse, and about 1500 Common Souldiers. The King's troops were likewise forced, when they fled, to leave behind them foure Peeces of Ordnance, with Ammunition, which the Parliament-Forces carried away with them. For, when they had thus taken the Towne, they found their number and strength too weak to keepe it and their Prisoners too. And therefore they quitted the place and marched-away with this brave booty.

This great Victory at *Wakefield*, seemed (according to the common saying) like a lightening before death; for not long after, these Forces were quite broken by the Earle of *Newcastle*, whose greatnesse overspread those Countries, and was never encountered by any Enemy, but in parts of his Army. He had managed the whole businesse, and attained his height of power, by great skill and policy; and now, having no neere Enemy in the field, was gone to besiege the Lord FAIRFAX in *Hull*, which was by some talked-of as an errour in him, no lesse than besieging *Gloucester*, soone after, by the King, was censured.

State of the West of
England.

Such a continual and sad Warre had the Northerne parts been forced to endure all the winter. Nor was it their case alone; scarce any County of *England* was free from it. The whole West, consisting of so many rich and flourishing Shires, had been as sad a stage of civil Tragedies. Many Armies and small Parties of either side (too many for one History to describe at large, or do particular justice to the actions of every Gentleman) had been engaged, without any intermission, in those parts.

On the King's side
Sir Ralph Hopton.

Of all Commanders there, that sided with the King against the Parliament, Sir RALPH HOPTON, by his unwearied industry, and great reputation among the people, had raised himselfe to the most considerable height, and continued the longest a Leader of Armies, as the sequel of the Story will hereafter declare: But his successes, through the whole course of his Actions, were very various, and many ebbs and flowes were in his fortune.

And the Marquis of
Hartford.

The Marquesse HARTFORD, though farre higher in Dignity, and greater by power of his large Commission from the King (of which before is spoken) was not able to act so largely in the field as Sir RALPH did, though he were seldom idle, but busie about Townes, and in small Parties. They were both opposed in their beginnings, not so much by any Nobleman, or great Commander, employed by the Parliament's

Parliament's Commissions, as by private Gentlemen of those Counties; the chiefe of which were Sir FRANCIS POPHAM and his Sons, Master STRODE, (a Deputy-Lieutenant there,) with others before-named, besides plaine Freeholders of the Country, who seemed to understand their owne Liberties and the Interest which they had in the Common-wealth. Until, at the last, the Earle of *Stamford*, a stout Gentleman, (who had beene before employed about *Leicester*, against Master HASTINGS, with a Commission from the Parliament, as General of some Counties) was sent into the West.

For the Parliament, Sir Francis Popham and his Sons, Mr. Strode, and the Earl of Stamford.

The Earle of *Stamford* was, by the Parliament, made Lord-General of all *South-Wales*, and the foure next adjacent Counties, to wit, *Glocester, Worcester, Hereford,* and *Cheshire*; with power to raise Forces in all those Counties, to appoint Officers and Commanders over them, to traine and exercise the men, and to fight with all that should oppose him. The Lord GRAY, Sonne and Heire to the Earle of *Stamford*, was appointed to succeed his Father, in his former Charge, and made Lord-Lieutenant of five Counties, *Leicester, Nottingham, Derby, Rutland,* and *Lincolne*; to continue the Warre against Master HASTINGS, the Earle of *Chesterfield*, and others, who opposed the Parliament in those parts.

The Earle of *Stamford*, at his first coming into the West, was successful against Sir RALPH HOPTON, whom he raised from the siege of Plymouth; but Sir RALPH HOPTON, not long after, by a stratagem of feigning flight, entrapped many of the Earle's men, conducted by a Lieutenant of his, and gave an overthrow to the Parliament-Forces; betwixt whom, and the Earle of *Stamford*, upon the fifteenth of *March*, 1642, a Truce was made for twenty daies. The Earle, after the expiration of that Truce, againe taking the field, with a competent Army, was a while prosperous against Sir RALPH HOPTON; but, not long after, was overthrown in consequence of the revolt of young CHUDLEY, Sonne to Sir JOHN CHUDLEY, by whose assistance, on some former occasions, those Parliament-Forces had been victorious. The Earle of *Stamford* was then enforced to betake himselfe to the City of *Exeter*, whither HOPTON and CHUDLEY followed him, to lay siege to the place. But Prince MAURICE was soon after sent thither to command in chiefe; to whom at last (as is before expressed) it was, upon faire articles, surrendered by the Earle of *Stamford*.

Notwithstanding so many misfortunes, as had then fallen upon the Parliament-side; about the end of *May*, 1643, they did not despaire of regaining the whole West, by the active valour of Sir WILLIAM WALLER, who, about that time, was very prosperous in those Counties, and in some Parts of the Principality of *Wales*, and whose name was growne to be a great terrour to his Enemies. Of his actions, and by what degrees he grew into esteeme and strength, it will not be amisse to relate some particulars in a continued series, considering how great a General he became afterwards in these Warres, and in what a low Command he began. He was a Gentleman of faire experience in Military affaires by former travels, and services abroad; of good judgement, and great industry; of which he gave many testimonies to the Kingdome.

Sir WILLIAM WALLER, about the time of the Battel of *Keynton*, received a commission to be Colonel of Horse; and, moving that winter following as occasions

Of Sir William Waller.

the present Warre required, performed many exploits ; he tooke in *Farnham* Castle, and passed Southward, after that *Portsmouth*, by his assistance, had been taken from Colonel GORING, and some other quick services at *Winchester*, and in the Country thereabouts, which he had performed, joyning himselfe with Colonel BROWN, a Citizen of *London* (who tooke-up Armes at the beginning of this Civil Warre, and continued till the very end, in high Commands, and reputation as high ; of whose actions, more must be delivered in the sequel of this History). Colonel HURREY, and some others passing into the Westerne part of *Sussex*, he layed siege to the City of *Chichester* ; in which City many Gentlemen of ranke and quality had fortified themselves, and gathered together a considerable quantity of Armes and Ammunition for service of the King against the Parliament.

He takes Chichester,
December, 23, 1642.

About the middle of *December*, appearing before *Chichester*, he was there met by some Forces, Troops of Horse and Dragoniers, that came to his assistance from *Kent* and *Sussex*, under the conduct of Colonel MORLEY, a Member of the House of Commons, (a Gentleman of good ranke in *Sussex* and great activity in the Parliament-Service,) and Sir MICHAEL LEIVESEY, a Kentish Knight. The Battery was placed by Sir WILLIAM, at fit places, and all things ordered with great skill ; but, before the battery began, to save effusion of blood, Sir WILLIAM, by the consent of all his Officers, summoned the Town by a Trumpet, with such Conditions offered as were judged too high by the besieged, and therefore at first not accepted-of ; yet after eight daies it was rendered to him upon no other Conditions than onely Quarter and faire usage. The prisoners of note, which were taken there were immediately sent toward *London* to the Parliament, who were, Sir EDWARD FORD, High Sheriff of *Sussex*, Sir JOHN MORLEY, Colonel SHELLEY, Master LEAUKNER, Colonel LINDSEY, Lieutenant-Colonel PORTER, Major DAWSON, and Major GORDON, with Doctor KING, then Bishop of *Chichester*, and many other Officers and Commanders in Armes, to the number of 60, about 400 Dragoniers, and almost as many Foot-Souldiers. In the *March* following, his employment was in the Westerne parts of *England*, where he raised Forces. The next in command under him, who continued with him in almost all his actions, was Sir ARTHUR HASLERIG, another Member of the House of Commons, serving as Knight for *Leicestershire*, a man that, in all Battells and Skirmishes, gave great proofs of his prowess and personal valour. Sir WILLIAM WALLER having now raised a competent force, and marching out of *Bristol* on the nineteenth of *March*, within two daies after, approached *Malmesbury*. Colonel HERBERT LUNSFORD, a stout Gentleman, and a good Souldier, (Brother to Sir THOMAS LUNSFORD, that was taken at *Keynton-Battel*,) was then Governour of *Malmesbury* ; who, upon the first approach, sent-out seven Troops of Horse, to begin an encounter with him ; but they were no waies able to endure the force of those Horse which Sir WILLIAM had drawne-out against them, but fled immediately, some of them back into the Towne ; many of them, conceiving that there was small safety in the Towne for them, fled quite away.

And Malmesbury,
March 20, 1642-3.

Sir WILLIAM assaulted the Towne the same day ; but, not prevailing then, he lodged

lodged there all night, preparing the next morning for another, and more fierce, assault. But the besieged, conceiving the place untenable, desired a Parley, and yeelded upon Quarter. He tooke at *Malmesbury* one Peece of Ordnance, about three hundred Prisoners, whereof Colonel LUNSFORD and Colonel COOKE were the chiefe, with almost twenty Officers, great and small: good store of rich prize and Ammunition; the Conquest was bloodlesse, and very few slaine on either side.

Within few daies after he obtained a very considerable Victory neere to *Gloucester* against the Lord HERBERT of *Ragland*, Sonne to the Earle of *Worcester*, who with a great Army of Welchmen lay against that Towne; which, for the manner of it, in briefe, was thus: Sir WILLIAM with his Forces, coming neere to *Cirencester*, made shew (the better to conceale his purpose) as if he intended to fall upon that Towne; but his designe was for *Gloucester*, and he had taken such provident care, that the men in *Gloucester* had notice of this purpose; and that with the help of his flat-bottomed Barges, which thence were brought to him in the nature of Waggonns (useful both by land and water) he would transport his Forces over the River *Severne*, beyond *Gloucester*, and fall upon the Reare of the Lord HERBERT'S Welch Forces, when he was least feared or expected; withal, he gave notice to the *Gloucester* Forces to fall upon the Front of that Army, as he would upon their Reare. The Plot, as it was wisely contrived, was successeful in the event, and tooke so good effect for him, that, when the Lord HERBERT was in skirmish with the Forces of *Gloucester*, and confident to cut them all off, being very few in comparison of his owne; Sir WILLIAM with his Army, neere *Highnam*, their Quarter, fell suddenly upon the Reare of the Lord HERBERT'S men, with such fury, that they were all routed, and would gladly have fled, if they had knowne any way to escape. There were slaine of that Welch Army about 500 upon the place, neere a thousand taken Prisoners, with all their Arms and Ammunition, and the rest wholly dispersed and scattered: the Lord HERBERT himselfe escaped by flight, and got to *Oxford*.

And defeats the King's troops under Lord Herbert near Gloucester.

Sir WILLIAM WALLER, after this great Victory, marched from thence to *Tewkesbury*; at whose approach, those of the King's Souldiers, that were Garrisoned there, fled-away, and left it to him; from whence marching further into the Country, he surprized divers stragglng Troopers of the other side, with some Armes, Pistols, and Carbines, together with sixteene thousand pounds in Money, and carried-away his booty to *Gloucester*.

He then takes Tewkesbury;

Within as short a distance of time, he tooke *Chepstow* in *Monmouthshire*, and seized upon divers of those that were Conspirators for the betraying of *Bristol* (of which Treason I have spoken before) and who, upon the discovery of it, had fled from thence. At that place he tooke a Ship called the *Dragon* of *Bristol*, and great store of wealth in her, belonging to those who were his ENEMIES; which he seized, as a just booty, and much to his advantage.

And Chepstow;

From *Chepstow* he marched with a swift pace to *Monmouth*; the Towne, upon composition, was soone rendered to him; from whence, after he had put a Garrison into

And Monmouth, and raises fresh forces for the Parliament.

into it, he marched to *Uske*, and summoned the Country; where divers Forces came-in to him; among others Sir WILLIAM MORGAN's Sonne, of *Tredegan*, brought him five hundred armed men, and some Money; where also Master HERBERT of *Colebrooke* raised a thousand men, and seized on *Abergaine* for the Parliament.

Sir WILLIAM WALLER in this high career of his fortune, was commanded-back from the West by the Lord-General *Essex*, to come to the chiefe Army: Which being soone understood among those of the King's Army, he was way-lay-ed by Prince MAURICE. The intention of Sir WILLIAM WALLER was to get to *Gloucester* with his Forces; having therefore sent-away his Ordnance and Baggage, with his Foot to guard it over *Wye* to *Aust*; himselfe with his Horse and Dra-goones, resolved to fall upon Prince MAURICE's Army, and force a passage thorow; which he did with great successe, and small losse; and, as he marched afterward, cut-down all the Bridges behinde him; whereby he hindered Prince MAURICE from marching after him. This course, if the Prince had taken before him, Sir WILLIAM WALLER might have been kept in *Wales* to his great disadvantage. But, by that meanes of cutting-down the Bridges, Prince MAURICE's pursuit being hindered, Sir WILLIAM WALLER, by assistance of the Governour MASSEY, re-gained many Townes possessed by the King's Forces, especially *Tewhesbury*, Sir MATTHEW CAREW being fled from thence. But there he took many Prisoners, much Armes and Riches; he placed a Garrison there; and from thence, accord-ing to his first designe, arrived safe at the City of *Gloucester*.

And returns to
Gloucester.

He then takes Here-
ford, and makes
many persons of
quality there his
prisoners.

Sir WILLIAM WALLER continued not long at *Gloucester*, but (being now dis-pensed-with for returning to the Lord-General) according to his usual celerity, he flew to *Hereford*, before any feare, or expectation, of his coming. He tooke that Towne upon Quarter, and in it many Prisoners of great ranke and quality, among whom was the Lord SCUDMORE, with five revolted Members of the House of Commons, viz. The Lord SCUDMORE's Sonne, Colonel HERBERT PRICE, Sir RICHARD CAVE, Lieutenant-Colonel CONISBY, Master CONISBY, and besides them, Sir WALTER PYE, Sir WILLIAM CROFTS, Lieutenant-Colonel THOMAS PRICE, Serjeant-Major MINTRIDGE, Sir SAMUEL AMBY, Serjeant-Major DAL-TON, Captaine SOMERSET, Captaine SCLATER, Doctor ROGERS, Doctor GOOD-WIN, Doctor EVANS, and divers others; who were all carried-away to *Gloucester*.

And soon after takes
Leinster.

Within three daies after that service, he surprised the Towne of *Leinster* in that County, twelve miles distant from *Hereford*, where he tooke good prize, disarmed many of the King's Party there, and placed a Garrison in the Towne.

It was feared at that time by those of the King's side, that Sir WILLIAM WAL-LER, going-on in so prosperous a way, might, perchance, surprize *Worcester* and *Ludlow*. To prevent therefore his further proceedings, Prince MAURICE, with a good strength of Horse, was sent from *Oxford*, with whom also the Marquesse of *Hartford* was joyned, to fall upon him. But Sir WILLIAM, scowring the Countries thereabouts with his active Forces, and having disarmed many of the other side in *Wilts* and *Somersetshire*, came to *Bath* with an Army much encreased of late both

in

in number and reputation ; at which place Sir EDWARD HUNGERFORD, Sir JOHN HORNER, and Master STRODE, joyned with him to oppose Prince MAURICE and the Marquesse *Hartford*. About that part of the Country were frequent and fierce encounters, which lasted for a long time, and many retreats with great skill and courage were made on both sides, when night parted the fury of their fights. But Sir WILLIAM WALLER proved for the most part victorious (whose particular actions there deserve a more peculiar relation) and at last became Master of the field, chasing his Enemies so farre as a Towne called the *Devizes*, to which place he followed and besieged them. The losses in all those several encounters were very uncertaine, and variously reported, by reason that both Parties had many times liberty to bury their dead ; but on the Parliament-side were lost one Major, one Lieutenant, and two Cornets. Sir ARTHUR HASLERIG was there wounded ; but the danger was not very great. On the other side, besides the uncertaine number of Common Souldiers, some of quality were slaine, among whom was Sir BEVILLE GREENVILLE, Lieutenant-Colonel WARD, Major LOWRE, with five or six Captains, Sir RALPH HOPTON, the Earle of *Carnarvan*, and the Lord MOHUN, were reported to be wounded.

He then marches to Bath with his army, and gains many advantages over the King's troops.

Sir RALPH HOPTON was besieged in the *Devizes* by Sir WILLIAM WALLER, and began to treat about the surrender of it ; for Prince MAURICE and the Marquesse of *Hartford* were retired toward *Oxford*, where suddenly the fortune of warre changed, and Sir WILLIAM WALLER'S Army, by an unexpected party of fresh Forces, which came from *Oxford* (for the Lord-General ESSEX'S Army was so-much wasted by sicknesse, and other distresses, that he could not at all straiten *Oxford*, nor hinder any Forces from issuing thence) under the conduct of the Lord WILMOT, was utterly defeated, scattered, and ruined, as was before mentioned. He himselfe, for security at the present, retired into the City of *Bristol* ; from which, within a few daies, he rode, accompanied with some Gentlemen, toward *London*, and was there received with great affection, and many promises of their best endeavour to set him forth with another Army.

But at last is defeated by a fresh army sent against him from Oxford under the command of the Lord Wilmot.

The King's Forces seemed now to have done the greatest part of their worke, being in a manner sole Masters of the West, and most Northerne Counties of *England*, and having ruined the Lord FAIRFAX and Sir WILLIAM WALLER'S Armies. Yet in all Counties the fortune was not alike ; in many places those Gentlemen which adhered to the Parliament were able, not onely to guard themselves, but to get ground upon their enemies, though those actions were for the most part performed in skirmishes betweene small parties, in preserving their owne strengths, or taking Towns from the other side, such as had been in *Cheshire*, *Lancashire*, *Staffordshire*, *Derby*, *Leicester*, *Nottingham*, and other places, which I shall briefly touch anon, after I have related in how contrary a condition to the North and West, (which had beene the seat of a fierce warre, and a prey to the greatest and most potent Armies of either side ;) and how much happier than those other Counties, (which had been alwayes molested with Alarms and Skirmishes, and suffered by pillaging on both Parties ;) the Easterne Counties of *England* had remained

Of the quiet and happy state of the Eastern Counties of England at this time.

remained all the foregoing Winter, and continued so during the whole progresse of this bloody Warre; which were the Counties of *Suffolke, Norfolke, Cambridge, Essex, Hartford, Huntingdon, &c.* who never were made the seat of any part of this civil Warre. These parts of the Kingdome had joyned themselves in an Association by Authority of Parliament, with power to defend each other, and levy Forces against all enemies to that cause; this great happinesse of peace and quiet that they enjoyed, may be supposed to flow from the unanimity of their affections, which carried them all the same way; and true it is, that there was as much unanimity of opinion and affection in those Counties among the people in general, as was to be found in any part of *England*; but it was especially among the common people: for a great and considerable number of the Gentry, and those of highest ranke among them, were disaffected to the Parliament, and were not sparing in their utmost endeavours to promote the King's Cause, and assist his Force against it; which might have throwne those Countries (if not wholly carried them to the other side) into as much distraction, and sad calamity, as any other part of the Land had felt; nor could that Association have been possibly made, if those Gentlemen had not been curbed and suppressed by that timely care which the Parliament tooke, and more particularly by the successfull services of one Gentleman, Master OLIVER CROMWELL, of *Huntington*, a Member of the House of Commons; whose wisdom, valour, and vigilancy, was no lesse available in this important businesse, than remarkable afterwards in the highest services, and greatest battels, of the whole Warre. Of this man's Actions (because it pleased God to raise him afterward into the greatest commands, and prosper in so high a measure all his undertakings, that he became within few yeares one of the chiefe props, on which the Parliament leaned, and greatest scourges of the other side) let it not seeme amisse if I discourse in a continued Series, during those Moneths that intervned between the Battel of *Keynton* and that low ebbe of the Parliament which preceeded the siege of *Gloucester*.

Of Oliver Cromwell.

His great services to the Parliament, in the year 1642.

The first Action that CROMWELL undertooke, was to secure the Towne of *Cambridge* for the Parliament, about the middle of January. Universities were, of all places, most apt to adhere to the King's Party, esteeming Parliaments, and especially this Parliament, to be the greatest depressors of that Ecclesiastical Dignity, in hope of which they are there nurtured.

Upon which reason they were packing-up a large quantity of the Plate that belonged to all the Colledges, to send it away to the King; which would have made a considerable summe. This was foreseene by CROMWELL; who, by a Commission from the Parliament and Lord-General *Essex*, had raised a Troope of Horse, and came-downe into that Country, with authority to raise more Forces, as occasion served; he came to *Cambridge* soone enough to seize upon that plate, which was going to *Oxford*; but, before his arrival there, he performed, by the way, another service: Sir THOMAS CONESBY, lately made High-Sheriffe of *Hartfordshire*, had received a Proclamation from the King, to proclaime the Earl of *Essex*, and all his adherents, Traytors; and was then at *St. Albans*, upon a Market-day, proclaiming

claiming of the same; when CROMWELL, with his Troope, seized-upon him, and sent him up to the Parliament.

Not long after this service, he collected in convenient time the Forces of that County, and invited the neighbour Counties of *Essex*, *Suffolke*, and *Norfolke*, to their assistance, against an invasion of the Lord CAPEL, who should have been seconded by Prince RUPERT also, to invade that place, and hinder the Association; which would have been done, if that timely prevention had not been used. This made them forbear their intended invasion, and retire to other parts.

About the beginning of March CROMWELL, having raised a Regiment of Horse, consisting of 1000 men, marched into *Suffolke* with much celerity, upon intelligence of a great and considerable confederacy held among those Gentlemen which adhered to the King's Party, at a Towne in that County called *Lowerstost*, a place of great consequence: He surprized them unawares, gained the Towne with small difficulty, and no shot at all. In which he tooke Prisoners, Sir THOMAS BARKER, and his Brother Sir JOHN PLTTUS, Master THOMAS KNEVET, two of the CATLINES, Captaine HAMMOND, Master COREY, Master TURRILL, Master PRESTON, and about 20 others of quality and substance. In that Towne he gained good store of Ammunition, Saddles, Pistols, Powder, Shot, and several Engines for Warre, enough to have served a considerable Force. And certaine it was, that, if CROMWELL had not surprized them in that nick of time, it had proved a matter of great danger to the County; for, within one day after, as many more Knights and Gentlemen, that were listed before, would have met at the same place. This was a timely service to the Parliament, and a great discouragement to all that Party in *Suffolke* and *Norfolke*, which adhered to the King's side.

But, when the Spring grew further on, and it was seasonable to make longer Marches, about the beginning of *April*, CROMWELL, having well-settled the businesses of those Associated Counties, for the Parliament's use, and not confining his care and services within those parts onely, raised a greater Force, of such as came freely and heartily in to join them; with whom he marched along towards *Lincolneshire*, with purpose to assist those of his side, that warred against *Newarke*. *Newarke* was one of the strongest Garrisons, which was then held on the King's side, replenished with many Gentlemen of *Lincolneshire*, and other Shires, and some expert Souldiers, who enforced large Contributions from the adjacent Country, and made rodes often times even to the Walls of *Lincolne*. Colonel CROMWELL, in his March thither, as he passed thorow the County of *Huntingdon*, disarmed many that were ill-affected to the Parliament, and increased by that meanes his strength so farre, that he was growne above two-thousand strong: and before he came to *Newarke*, receiving an addition of Horse from Captaine HOTHAM, he also joyned with some Forces of *Lincolneshire*. At his first approach neere to *Newarke*, it was his fortune to performe a good service for his side; for, when Captaine WRAY, with his *Lincolneshire* Horse, had too rashly quartered within a litle of that Town, he was set-upon in the night-time by a strong Party from the Towne; where, after some little-bickering, not being able to resist so great a number, he

was

was surprized with his whole Troope ; but the Alarum coming to CROMWELL, he advanced, and at ten o'clock at night fell upon the Newarkers, rescued Captaine WRAY's Troope, and tooke three Troops of theirs, with the slaughter of many of them.

After this, when he sate-down before the Town, he was so vigilant upon all Sallyes that were made-out, and so successfull, that he tooke many men and Colours at several times ; and, with his Horse, watching all occasions, he once defeated a strong Party of the Newarkers, near to *Grantham*, where the odds of number was so great on their side, that it seemed almost a miraculous Victory. At another time he fell upon a Party of the Earle of *Newcastle's* Army sent toward *Newarke*, and quartering betweene that Towne and *Grantham* ; of whom he slew many, tooke an hundred Horse, and forty Prisoners.

Such things as these were the beginnings of CROMWELL, at his first entrance into the Souldiery ; those that must be called *his deeds*, were in the following yeares of this unhappy Warre, and will require a larger and more full expression.

In those other Counties which were named before this Discourse of the Association, the fortune of Warre, during the aforesaid Moneths, had been very various, and daily contestations happened, being for the most part betwixt small Parties, and in besieging, taking, and re-taking of Townes and Forts. In *Cheshire* Sir WILLIAM BRERETON, (a wise and vigilant man, who, from the beginning of these troubles, had taken charge of that County, serving in Parliament as Knight thereof,) had so well acted his part against the Earle of *Darby* (made by the King Lord-Lieutenant of that County, as well as of *Lancashire*) that he was the chiefe instrument of delivering *Cheshire* out of his hands, and preserving it for the Parliament, though the greater part of the Gentry there adhered to the King : But it pleased God to give many Victories to Sir WILLIAM BRERETON against them.

He obtained, about the beginning of *March*, a great Victory against those of the King's Party at *Middlewich*, in *Cheshire* ; which Towne, after a sharp encounter in the fields before it, he finally tooke, with 500 Prisoners, whereof many were Commanders and Gentlemen of great worth ; which Victory did much advance the Parliament's Cause in those parts.

He resisted with great successe the Lord CHOLMELY, and Sir THOMAS ASTON, two powerful men, and zealous for the King's Party.

Having settled in some measure, by extraordinary care and wisdome, his owne County for the Parliament, and raised many stout and well-armed men there, he was forward to give assistance to other parts ; and advancing into *Shropshire* against the Lord CAPELL, he surprised a Towne called *Dreyton*, in which Sir VINCENT CORBET, a Commander of the King's side, was quartered : But Sir WILLIAM BRERETON, with small opposition, entered the Town, and tooke two compleat Troops of Horse, and six Companies of Dragoners. Sir VINCENT CORBET escaped by flight.

He marched thence along through those Counties, and took some places of great import, as the affaires of both Parties stood at that time.

Sir

Of Sir William
Brereton, in Che-
shire.

Sir WILLIAM went-on prosperously, and, within a short time after, tooke *Whit-church*, upon the edge of *Shropshire*, with great store of Armes and Ammunition, and many Prisoners of the Lord CAPEL's Forces.

But Sir WILLIAM BRERETON, when he joyned Forces with other men, or came-in opportunely to the reliefe, or rescue, of engaged friends, performed divers great and advantageous services to the side he tooke, especially when he joyned in Action with Sir JOHN GELL, of *Derbyshire*, a constant and succesful Actor for the Parliament; of whom, by himselfe, and together with Sir WILLIAM BRERETON, I shall make a further mention.

The County of *Derby*, full of Nobility and Gentry, was much swayed, even from the beginning of these distractions, against the Parliament; for scarce did any Gentleman in all that County, but Sir JOHN GELL, appeare for it at the first. He, with his brother and some of his kindred, by the help of those Freeholders and Yeomen that inclined that way, made a Party to resist those great ones, at such a time as must needs renowne his courage and constancy. And it pleased God to make him prosperous in that great and hazardous undertaking, and to carry it so during the whole Warre.

After the Battel at *Keynton*, he tooke a Commission from the Earle of *Essex*, and, with great care and cost, he provided Arms, and timely seized upon the Town of *Derby*; which Town he so well fortified that it proved a sufficient defence against the assaults of potent Enemies, and a refuge, upon all occasions, to the Parliament's friends; it was likewise, no doubt, a great encouragement to many of the neighbouring Counties, to stand upon their guard in the like kinde.

But the Walls of *Derby* could not immure Sir JOHN GELL, nor hinder him from acting his part abroad. In many Services he joyned himselfe (not without good successe) with Sir WILLIAM BRERETON, and with Colonel CROMWELL, and marched sometimes with the Lord GREY, of *Grooby*, (before-mentioned, Lord-Lieutenant of those Counties) against Master HASTINGS, and against the Towne of *Newarke*.

In the Moneth of *February* he marched with those Forces which he had, under the conduct of the Lord BROOKE, into *Staffordshire*, to take-in *Lichfield*, which was then possessed by a Garrison of the King's side. Having entered the Towne, they found hot and sharpe resistance from a place of great strength, called the Close, or Cathedral-yard, a place famous in the succeeding Warre, as being often gained and re-gained, with the loss of much blood on either side.

Derbyshire.

Sir John Gell does good service to the Parliament in this County.

Lord Brooke acts for the Parliament in Staffordshire, in February, 1642-3.

CHAP. V.

The Death of the Lord BROOKE, and of the Earle of Northampton. A short mention of some Actions in divers Counties. The low condition of the Parliament at that time. The siege of Gloucester.

The Siege of Lichfield-Close, in February, 1642-3.
The Death of Lord Brooke.

WHILE the Parliament-Army continued at the siege of *Lichfield-Close*, their General, the Lord BROOKE, as he looked-out of a window, was unfortunately shot into the head; and dyed immediately; a man as much lamented by the Parliament as any that ever fell on that side, and as much honoured for his Piety, Valour, and Fidelity.

Sir John Gell succeeds to the command, and takes the Close

After his death, Sir JOHN GELL succeeded in that Command, and, about the beginning of *March*, took the Close, with very little losse of blood, though they had their Mines ready prepared to blow-up the Walls of the Close, and had throwne Grenadoes into it; which made the besieged cry-out for Quarter, which they obtained; for the Souldiers thought it not honourable (being in cold blood) to revenge their General's death, by putting them to the Sword. But they tooke a good and rich booty of Money, Bagge, and Baggage, about a thousand Armes, and very considerable Prisoners, the Earle of *Chesterfield*, with his Sonne, and divers other Gentlemen of Ranke.

And in March, 1642-3, obtains a victory at Salt-Heath.

About the middle of that *March*, Sir JOHN GELL, with an Army of fiftene hundred Horse and Foot, advanced from *Lichfield* toward the Towne of *Stafford*; where it was his fortune to meet with the Earle of *Northampton* and his Forces, consisting of about twelve hundred Horse, at a place called *Cranock-Green*, or *Salt-Heath*, almost foure miles from *Stafford*: The Earle gave a brave and furious Charge upon them, and, being stronger in Horse, made Sir JOHN GELL's Horse to retreat in disorder at this first Charge; in which he took divers of them Prisoners, and surprised two Drakes. After that, he wheeled twice about their Foot, seeking his best advantage where to breake them: But Sir JOHN GELL, and his Commanders, did so well order their Battalia, that the Foot kept unbroken, and made good the field againe together with their Horse, and re-saluted their hot Assailants, fighting Pell-mell for a long time.

The Death of the Earle of Northampton.

At this fierce encounter the Earle of *Northampton*, himselfe, was slaine in the place, and one Master LUCY and Captaine BAGOT, with many more, about whose number

number relations did not agree; a Cornet of the King's also was here slain, and his Colours taken, having on it a Crowne, and this Inscription, *Carolus Rex*. Two other Cornets were there taken, of which one was the Prince's; for the King's and the Prince's Troops were both there. They tooke Prisoners one of the Earle of *Chesterfield's* younger Sons; and Sir JOHN GELL, by the timely coming-in of Sir WILLIAM BRERETON to his assistance, before the fight was ended, obtained a great Victory, and drove his Enemies quite out of the field. Among the rest, Master HASTINGS (as was then reported) having been once taken Prisoner, and rescued, fled-away wounded.

Thus it fell-out, that these two Peeres, the Earle of *Northampton*, and the Lord BROOKE, who, first of all the Nobility, at the breaking-out of this Civil Distraction, had personally contested in one County, about the Parliament's Ordinance of the Militia and the King's Commission of Array, within a small distance both of place and time, ended their daies by this unhappy Warre. They were both much lamented by their owne Parties, both men of worth and courage, though much different in the manner of their lives and conversations.

As *Cheshire*, (though a County where many Papists inhabited,) was, by the successful care of Sir WILLIAM BRERETON and other Gentlemen, kept from deserting the Parliament, and able to resist the Earle of *Derby*, the King's Lieutenant there: So, her sister, *Lancashire*, (that was more full of Papists and more fiercely assaulted by that Earle, under the same authority, being the place of his chiefe residence and power,) was able, not only to resist him, but finally beat him out of the Country by the courage and industry of divers Protestant Gentlemen of that Shire; of whom I have named many in the preceedent Book. But it is fit to give a little touch of the chiefe actions.

Success of the Parliament party in Lancashire.

The Parliament, in the midst of winter, when that County was in the greatest distraction, had sent-down Sir JOHN SEATON, a Scottish Knight, (an experienced and stout Commander,) as Major-General of the Forces in that Shire, that he might direct the unskilful valour of that people; though many of those Gentlemen had done great services before, as appeared at *Manchester*, and some other places.

One of his exploits was at *Preston*: Sir JOHN SEATON, having settled himselfe at *Manchester*, marched from thence, about the beginning of *February*, toward *Preston*, with Major-General SPARROW, Colonel HOLLAND, Captain BOOTH, Serjeant-Major BIRCH, Master NOWELL of *Mearkley*, and some others, with about ten Companies and almost two thousand Clubmen, to take-in *Preston*, a Town well-fortified, and very stoutly defended. But it was so furiously assaulted (Captaine BOOTH, in person, first scaling the Walls) by the Parliament-Forces, that, after two houres of extreme hot fighting, the Parliament-Forces were Masters of it: The Town was taken with small losse on the assailant side, which was wonderful; not one Officer, and not above seven or eight Common Souldiers. On the other side many fell; the Mayor of the Town, ADAM MORTE, with his Sonne; and Sir GILBERT HOUGHTON's Brother, a Captaine of Horse; with divers others of quality; Sir GILBERT, himselfe, fled to *WIGHAM*. They tooke two hundred

Sir John Seaton, a Parliament-officer, takes Preston.

hundred Prisoners, whereof many were Gentlemen of good ranke in the Country: They tooke three Pièces of Ordnance, many Muskets, and other Armes, with two or three Colours. The taking of this Town was of great consequence, both toward the maintenance of the Parliament-Forces, and also to stop the passage from *Newcastle to Chester and Shrewsbury.*

They also take Lancaster, and the castle near it;

Shortly after, Serjeant-Major BIRCH was sent from *Preston to Lancaster-Towne;* who, without any great opposition, (for he came suddenly and unexpected) soone entered the Towne with his whole Company; and, being entered, the Townesmen assisted him very freely to winne the Castle there; which he tooke into his possession for the Parliament.

And Wiggon.

Wiggon also, in *Lancashire*, was taken-in, with great store of Armes and Prisoners, by Sir JOHN SEATON, with those Gentlemen that followed him, together with the Townesmen of *Manchester*, and other Clubmen of the Country, whom they had gotten together.

The Earle of *Derby* desisted not from his endeavours to reduce that Country; but marched with a considerable strength to take-in *Whaley*; which he had almost accomplished, but was, notwithstanding, repelled from thence by the Forces of the Country.

The same Earle had likewise possessed himselfe of *Warrington*, a considerable Towne in *Lancashire*; and left a Garrison in it; but, at the beginning of *June*, that Towne was regained by the Forces of *Manchester*, with eight Pièces of Ordnance, and five or six hundred Prisoners: by which all *Lancashire* seemed to be reduced to the obedience of the Parliament, scarce any place of considerable strength being left in the power of the Earle of *Derby.*

Leicestershire.

The Lord GRAY, of *Grooby*, had been long possessed of *Leicester*, as the chiefe-quarter where he resided; and, besides his actions at other parts about that place, with various fortunes had opposed the Forces of Master HASTINGS, who kept a Garrison at *Ashby de la zouch*, and acted with great fervour and constancy for the King's Cause.

Hampshire.

Hampshire had been much distressed by both Parties; but the King's Garrison of *Winchester*, and that of *Basing-House*, (the dwelling-place of Marquesse *Winchester*,) were there predominant, and, at their pleasure, forced Contributions from the adjacent Country. *Wales* was almost wholly at the King's disposal, except very few places, which, with much difficulty, preserved themselves for the Parliament;

Wales.

and some Gentlemen, who, with much hazard, continued their fidelity to that side, such as Colonel GLYNN, Colonel MITTEN, and LAUGHERNE, with other private Gentlemen. But, indeed, the Parliament was then in a low ebbe; and before the end of that *July*, 1643, they had no Forces at all to keep the Field; their maine Armies (as is before touched) being quite ruined, and no hope in appearance left, but to preserve a-while those Forts and Townes which they then possessed; nor could they long hope to preserve them, unless the fortune of the field should change.

The Parliament-Party is in a low condition, in July, 1643.

Thus seemed the Parliament to be quite sunke beyond any hope of recovery, and was so believed by many men. The King was possessed of all the Westerne Counties,

Counties, from the farthest part of *Cornwall*, and from thence Northward, as farre as the Borders of *Scotland*. His Armies were full and flourishing, free to march whither they pleased, and enough to be divided for several exploits; one part was sent to take in *Exeter*, where the Earle of *Stamford* was shut-up, not able long to hold the place. The King in Person, with a gallant Army, designed his March towards *Gloucester*, the onely considerable Towne in those parts, which the Parliament held. What the King's Party conceived then of the other side, was expressed in many Writings; one of which, in the nature of a jeering Epigram, was made at *Oxford*, and is, I think, worthy to be here inserted, on account of the strong expressions it contains of the low Condition of the Parliament at that time. The thing is written in an odde manner, and the names of the Parliament-Commanders, *FAIRFAX* and *WALLER*, are expressed by a *rebus* way of Latine, as likewise those of the King's side, the Mar-quesse of *Hartford*, and the Earle of *Newcastle*. I leave it to the Reader without either Translation or Comment.

*Extincta Castro Fax pulchra novo est ;
Nec Nautæ postea nec militi
Sit nota Pharos ; Auster disparem
Haud tulit casum: Murus, cui addita est
Canina littera, mersa est, suis
Cum turmis, nuper, Leporis vado.
Euri Βαρυτοῦνι Bristonia
Leporinos horrescens vortices.
Anglica Claudii timet pares
Urbs casus ; Herois Teutonici
Myrmidones astant magno cum Duce.
Pacata Thule est ; nec Noto timor
Popello aut Regi. Nihil relictum est
Britannicum domare Cæsarem
Ni νεοματωμῆναι preces Gregis.
Hæc Sphinges raptim Oedipo suo *.
Julii 20, 1643.*

* In the first line of this Epigram the two words *Fax pulchra* denote the *Lord Fairfax*, and his son *Sir Thomas Fairfax*, and the troops under their command; and the words *Castro novo* denote the *Earl of Newcastle* and his army. In the fourth and fifth lines the words *Murus, cui addita est Canina Littera*, denote *Sir William Waller*, or *Waller*, and his army; and in the sixth line the words *Leporis vado* denote the *Marquis of Hertford*, or *Hartford*, or *Harford*, or *Hareford*, or *Hare's-ford*, and his army, which had lately defeated *Sir William Waller's* army. In the ninth and tenth lines the words *Claudii urbs* denote the city of *Gloucester*, which is sometimes in Latin called *Claudii castra*. In the tenth line the words *Herois Teutonici* seem to denote *Prince Rupert*, the German-Hero, who had lately taken the city of *Bristol*, and who was coming with the great army of the King, with the King himself at the head of it, *cum magno Duce*, to lay siege to *Gloucester*. In the eleventh line the words *Pacata Thule est*, mean that *Scotland* is in a state of Peace, and occasions no fright, or alarm, to the neighbouring Southern Kingdom of England, or to it's people, or it's King, *nec Noto timor, popello aut regi*. And the twelfth line seems to mean that the only enemy that threatens the King's cause with ruin is the prayers of the Puritan faction at *London*, who have lately run mad with religious zeal and enthusiasms.

The Editor of this Second Edition.

London

Intrinchments are made round London and its Suburbs, in August, 1643.

London was then altogether unfortified, no Works were raised; nor could they, if their Enemies, (who were then Masters of the field,) had come upon them, have opposed any Walls, but such as old SPARTA used for their Guard, the hearts of courageous Citizens. But at that time *London* began her large intrinchment; which encompassed not onely the City, but the whole Suburbs on every side, containing about twelve miles in circuit. That great work was by many hands compleated in a short time, it being then a custome every day to go-out by thousands to digge, all Professions, Trades, and Occupations, taking their turnes; and not onely inferiour Tradesmen, but Gentlemen of the best quality, Knights, and Ladies themselves, for the encouragement of others, resorted daily to the Workes, not as spectators but assisters in it; carrying, themselves, Spades, Mattoks, and other instruments of digging, so that it became a pleasing sight at *London*, to see them going-out in such order and numbers, with Drums beating before them; and put life into the drooping people (being taken for an happy Omen) that, in so low a condition, they seemed not to despaire. But bootlesse, in probability, had that labour proved, and not timely enough to save *London*, if the King had marched thither instead of laying siege to *Gloucester*.

Many Members of both Houses of Parliament desert the Parliament, and go over to the King's side.

But that storme of Fortune was strong enough to shake-off divers of the loose leaves, that seemed to grow on the Parliament-side, and unsettle the resolutions of such as were not enough rooted in that Cause which they had chosen: For divers men of great quality, and Members of both Houses, some Lords, and many of the Commons, did at that time desert the Parliament, and fly to *Oxford*: Whose names (though the Lords were named, who first deserted it) are here spared, because this latter result must needs carry the face of a crime; as being no matter of opinion or conscience, by which the first justified themselves; but proceeding, in all probability, from weaknesse, and feare for their private fortunes. They therefore lost much of their esteeme on both sides; becoming like a foile to set-off the constancy of those few Members who durst yet continue there, and remaine firm to their first Principles and the Publike Interest; wading thorow more difficulties and dangers than any former Parliament had been enforced to do.

The City of London remains faithful and courageous.

But in the Parliament itselfe there appeared no show of despaire, as they observed who were then witnesses of their proceedings; and the City of *London* expressed much forwardnesse and alacrity in recruiting the Lord-General *Essex* both with their persons and purses; besides their great endeavour to raise another Army for Sir WILLIAM WALLER, to be as a Reserve to the other, upon the great occasion then in hand.

The Earle of Manchester takes a Military Commission under the Parliament.

The Earle of *Manchester*, to his lasting Honour, chose that very time to begin his Martial employment; and, raising Forces thorow the Easterne Associated Counties (of which he was then made General by the Parliament, those Counties having been before prepared for that Association, by the wisdom and activity of the forementioned Colonel CROMWELL) performed, that yeare and the next, great services for the Parliament.

While the Parhament and City of *London* were thus busied in recruiting their decayed Armies, *Gloucester* began to be made the chiefe Scene, on which this
Civil

Civil Tragedy was acted, and place of great concernment in the Kingdome, where the first turne of Fortune grew. The City of *Gloucester* was then governed by Colonel EDWARD MASSEY, a man of excellent skill to defend it; of such a courage, as no threats of a powerful Enemy could shake; and such a fidelity, as no promises of a King could overcome. This MASSEY was brought to *Gloucester* by the Earle of *Stamford*, under whom he had served as Lieutenant-Colonel, and, by deputation from that Earle, had, for many Moneths, governed that City.

Of Colonel Massey,
the Governour of
Gloucester.

Now there was no more expectation of the Earle's returne thither; and therefore MASSEY, as the fittest man, by consent both of Citizens and Souldiers, was appointed Governour, and made a Colonel by Commission from the General.

The surrender of *Bristol* to the King's Forces (which was more sudden than could be feared, and for which afterward the Governour Master FIENNES was questioned, and condemned by a Council of Warre) must needs strike a great terrour and sad amazement into *Gloucester*, which now seemed to stand forlorne, and without hope of any rescue, in the midst of a large Country, possessed by their victorious Enemies.

It cannot be denied, that the resolution which this City had taken-up, of resisting the King at such a time was very admirable, if a man consider the small strength they had within; the many discouragements round about them; the great distance of any aid that could be sent to them. Their strength within was very small; the whole number of Souldiers, Horse, Foot, and Dragoones, together with the Trayned-Bands, and those Horse and Dragoones, which on a sudden they got from *Barclay Castle*, consisting of few more than fifteene hundred; forty Barrels of Powder was all their store, with a very meane and slender Artillery for such a Service: The Works were of a vast compasse, and little more than halfe perfected, when this rough storme did first threaten them.

The Citizens of
Gloucester resolve
to defend the City
for the Parliament,
notwithstanding
many disadvantages.

The whole Country round about them, instead of encouraging this resolution of theirs, did rather endeavour to shake and weaken it, by intimations of the danger, and perswasions to make Peace with such an Enemy: For they had revolted from the Parliament, or resolved so to do; and wished, for their owne private Interests, that the King were quietly possessed of that City; for they conceived (not without reason) that the standing-out of *Gloucester* would be unhappy for that Country; because by the falling-downe of a great Army, they could not but expect a destruction of their Corne, Cattle, and all other Provisions; and at the last, if it should so fall-out, that the King should faile of taking-in that Towne, they must be enforced to stoope perpetually under two burdens, and be cast into a sad condition of poverty and misery. Whereas, if that Army did prevaile, they were sure to rest in the heart of the King's Country, farre from spoile and plunder, and, for an easie Contribution, enjoy free and ample Trade.

The succour which the City could expect, was as farre off as *London*; and in what condition the Parliament-Armies then were, is before related. Notwithstanding all this, the Citizens of *Gloucester*, together with examining what strength they had, examined also the grounds of their perseverance. A Common-Council

was

was held, where the Officers of the Souldiery were present ; their late Protestation was called to remembrance, and read there ; by which they were all obliged, never to act or comply with the adverse Faction. Upon which consideration they heightened their courages, and unanimously resolved to refuse the tender of peace. Private cares were then forgotten, and not onely men, but women and children, acted their parts, in making-up those defects that were in the Fortifications.

In this condition stood *Gloucester*, when the King in Person, attended with a great and gallant Army, full of the flower of English Nobility and Gentry, was come to besiege it, being the tenth of *August*, 1643.

Part of the King's Forces, some daies before, had been discerned hovering on the top of the hills ; and a Summons had been sent from Prince RUPERT to the City : To which the Mayor gave answer, That he kept the Towne for His Majestie's behoofe, and could not render it. Which Answer, though laughed-at by those of the Army, the Mayor conceived very justifiable, and that he did truly hold it for the use of His Majesty, but according to the sense of both Houses of Parliament.

The King was full of indignation, that such a forlorne City should stand-out against him ; yet he desired to gaine it without blood, and losse of time, which seemed then pretious in his full career of Victory. To that purpose he came in Person before it, that the reverence, or terrour, of his presence might prevaile with them ; and, being come before the City, he gave this honourable Summons by two Heralds of Armes.

The King, at the head of his Army, summons the City of Gloucester to surrender, August 10, 1643.

CHARLES REX.

Out of our tender compassion to our City of Gloucester, and that it may not receive prejudice by our Army, which we cannot prevent, if we be compelled to assault it : We are Personally come before it, to require the same, and are graciously pleased to let all the Inhabitants of, and all other persons within, that City, as well Souldiers as others, know, That, if they shall immediately submit themselves, and deliver this City to us, we are contented freely and absolutely to pardon every one of them without exception ; and do assure them in the word of a King, That they, nor any of them, shall receive the least dammage or prejudice by our Army, in their Persons or Estates : But that we will appoint such a Governour, and a moderate Garrison, to reside there, as shall be both for the ease and security of that City, and the whole Country. But, if they shall neglect this offer of Grace and Favour, and compel us by the power of our Army to reduce that place (which, by the help of God, we shall easily and shortly be able to do) they must thank themselves for all the calamities and miseries which shall befall them. To this Message we expect a cleare and positive Answer, within two houres after the publishing hereof ; and by these Presents do give leave

to any persons safely to repaire to, and returne from, us, whom that City shall desire to employ unto us in that businesse. And we do require all the Officers and Souldiers of our Army, quietly to suffer them to passe accordingly.

After some debate upon this Message, an Answer was drawne-up and consented-unto, both by the Citizens and the Souldiers; which was presented to the King by Serjeant-Major PUDSEY and a Citizen; as followeth :

We, the Inhabitants, Magistrates, Officers, and Souldiers within this Garrison of Gloucester, unto his Majestie's Gracious Message returne this humble Answer, That we do keepe this City, according to our Oath and Allegiance, to and for the use of his Majesty and his Royall Posterity; and do accordingly conceive ourselves wholly bound to obey the Commands of His Majesty signified by both Houses of Parliament; and are resolved, by God's helpe, to keepe this City accordingly.

The Answer to the said Summons.

The King received this Answer to his Summons, without any expression of choller or indignation, seeming onely to wonder at their great confidence, and from what hope of reliefe it should proceed, using these words before the Messengers, *WALLER is extinct, and ESSEX cannot come.* But by this time the King's Army was drawne into the fields about *Gloucester*, Prince RUPERT and General RIVEN facing it on one side with about six thousand Horse and Foot, and two thousand Horse on the other; and immediately after this Answer, advanced forward into the Suburbs, on the East side of the City; but were there entertained with an hot Skirmish, and fired-out. For, upon the returne of the Messengers, the Suburbs were set-on fire, and, flaming round-about, became an object of great terror; by which the Citizens seemed more engaged to pursue their resolution; and the King's Army to settle themselves for gaining by force what they perceived would not be yeilded on other termes.

The King besieges the city of Gloucester, August 10, 1642.

That very night the King's Army began their Intrenchments within Musket-shot of the Walls, on two sides of the City, taking advantage, for their security, of the shadow and shelter of some few Houses which the flames had not caught. Which being perceived, the Musketeers plyed them from the Walls, but could do little hurt so against the Pyoneers; which caused the besieged to make several Sallyes by small Parties into those Trenches, and at some places beat them out, gaining both Armes and Prisoners, and retreating safe.

Sir WILLIAM VAVASOR had advanced with his Welch Forces on the West side, and made neere approach that way, intending to joyne with other Forces that came from *Worcester*, and had drawne themselves together on the North-West side. On the South side General RIVEN placed his Leaguer, taking advantage of a rising ground in the midst, to shelter himselfe from the shot of the besieged. Sir JACOB

ASTLEY,

ASHLEY, who in the first Skirmishes had received a wound, was quartered with a strong Brigado at the East side of the City.

Thus was *Gloucester* on all sides blocked-up, and nothing expected but a most furious and bloody businesse. The King's Commanders, being many of them Gentlemen of great skill and experience of Conduct, had made their approaches (by the confession of all) with as much advantage as could be; and placed their Batteries accordingly; the Souldiers on that side had shewed themselves very swift and indefatigable in their Intrenchments, and as bold in all attempts which they made upon the Towne. Nor were the besieged behind-hand in courage, patience and activity; as appeared, not onely in their defences, but in their frequent Sallyes; the Governour MASSEY being admired by his Enemies, for the great skill and dexterity which he shewed upon all occasions: Of which I shall discourse the more particularly and at large, by reason of the great importance of this famous Siege; the condition of the whole Kingdome depending so much upon the successe of it.

Many strange and successful Sallyes were made by the besieged.

Three daies after the Siege was layed, an hundred and fifty Musketeers, commanded by Captaine GRAY, sallyed over the Workes, upon the *Worcester* Forces, with whom the Welch had not yet joyned, fell into their Quarters, marched-up to their Maine Guard, killed a Captaine, with eight or nine Common Souldiers, tooke five Prisoners, divers Armes, burnt their Guard, and retreated without the losse of any. Captaine MALLERY, with the like number of Musketeers, within a day after, was commanded-forth, to surprize some Ordnance of their Enemies, which were suspected to lye at a certaine place; but, finding none, he retreated without losse, having killed some men, taken a few Prisoners, and fired part of their Quarters. Within a weeke after, another Party of an hundred and fifty Musketeers, commanded by Captain CRISPE, sallyed-forth, and fell into their Enemies Trenches under the Towne-Wall, marched above halfe-way thorow them, performed strangely, and killed above an hundred men, (as was confessed by some of that side,) and, by the help of the Musketeers on the City-Walls, retreated safe, without the losse of any, only two men being wounded.

The Besiegers proceeded with great skill and industry in making their Batteries, and undermining at several places; which labour of undermining, at some places was made frustrate by water-springs, and in others by the extreme hardnesse of rocky ground; and where the businesse was more feasible, the skill of the Governour prevented them by countermining. Many Granadoes were shot of great bignesse from their Morterpieces into the Town, but guided by a strange hand of providence into such by-places that they did very little hurt. One thing is worthy the relating; when the Welch and *Worcester* Forces of the King came-up, and foure Peeces of Ordnance were drawne a good distance before the place of their Leaguer, and one of them planted for battery; a Party of about foure hundred Musketeers, commanded by Major PUDSEY and Captaine GRAY, assisted by Captaine FAULKNER and Captaine MASSEY, sallied forth of one of the Gates; meane while a Lieutenant, with fifty Musketeers, was sent over the Works to give them

them an Alarum, whilst the greater Party got behind their Cannon and Breast-Works; fell upon their maine Guard, slew many Officers, two Cannoniers, slew, or mortally wounded, about an hundred Common Souldiers; tooke a Lieutenant, with foure more Prisoners; nayled their Cannon; and retreated with the losse onely of two slaine, and foure taken Prisoners.

Two Sallyes of such Parties were, not long after, made, though not with the same successe altogether (by reason of some mis-guidance) yet with so much as that they retreated without any sensible losse; and were enough to amaze their Enemies, that such small Parties should runne-up to their head-Quarters, force their men, and be able in that manner to recover back. And it was observed by those who well understood Warre, that it was a more than ordinary providence, which did preserve and bring-off those many several Parties, when the vanquishing of any one of them must needs run the City into extreme hazard; whose whole strength remained upon the Workes day and night, except the reserve of an hundred and twenty men at the Maine-Guard. One rare and slender ranke were to receive all the storme without seconds: Yet it was the opinion of the best Souldiers, that the safety of the whole did require those frequent Sallyes, as the best remedies for so desperate a disease: Which did not onely retard their Enemies Preparations, but put them into an Amaze, that the besieged should continue in such an height of resolution; which resolution was to be kept-up by the heat of Action. And it was the Governour's care, to keep his Enemies waking by continual Alarms, to waste and weary them.

The King's Army were still preparing for a general storme, and striving in the meane time to waste the Magazine of the Town, which, they hoped, would soone faile: they spent their owne store, and daily acted to the terrour of the besieged; shooting Granadoes and Fire-balls out of their Morter-Peeces; and from one Battery which they had plantèd, shot in one night above twenty fiery bullets, which flew thorow the ayre like so many falling Stars, some eightene pound weight, others two and twenty; some of them passing thorow Stables and Hay-ricks, did, notwithstanding, by their swift motion, faile of kindling; and, (which seemed strange,) could not set one house on fire. Many Mines and Countermines were, every day, working with great industry on both sides, the Governour MASSEY, striving to animate his men, and prevent the Towne's despairing, by shewing the probability of a sudden reliefe; withal adding, that their so late yeelding would not all mollifie the King's Army. On the other side, the King seemed loath to invite them to yeeld solemnly by publike Summons, least he should detract from the honour of his enterprize. Yet many dealt with them underhand, by advertisements of the King's displeasure, using also perswasions, and some intimations of the possibility of Grace.

 CHAP. VI.

The Expedition of the Lord-General ESSEX for reliefe of Gloucester. The great Battel of Newbury described.

Preparations at London for the reliefe of the City of Gloucester.

WHILEST *Gloucester* was thus besieged, and the Siege so straight, that no intelligence could possibly arrive at it; the Parliament, (who, after serious considerations and debates, had, for the present, resolved upon the reliefe of that City, as the onely meanes to preserve the Kingdome;) were as much straightened how to proceed in the businesse with that expedition which was required. To recruit an Army so much wasted as the Lord-General's was, seemed too slow for this Service; and therefore the Trayned-Bands of *London*, and their Auxiliaries, must of necessity be made use of. Those that were well-affected to the Parliament encouraged each other to the Worke: The disaffected, on the other side, laboured in all discourses to breed despaire of the Atchievement; and, to discourage the Lord-General from marching, false reports were every day raised in *London*, that *Gloucester* was taken. The Lord-General *Essex* was foure-score miles off, with no present, or visible, Army at that time; his March lying thorow those Countries which were already harrowed by the Enemy: Insomuch that all considered, it was a question, which was the more wonderful, "that he undertooke it," or "that he did it." The Parliament was at that time so farre sunke, both in strength and reputation, and so much forsaken by those who followed fortune, that nothing but an extraordinary providence could make it againe emergent. The Cause, and very Being, of the Parliament, was now at stake; by the successe onely of this Expedition, to be redeemed, or quite lost. But it pleased God, that, according to that extremity, the resolutions of men were fitted. The City-Regiments and Auxiliaries came cheerfully in, to performe the Service; and that poore remainder of the Lord-General's old Army was with all speed recruited. An Army was likewise intended to be speedily raised for Sir WILLIAM WALLER to march after, as a Reserve. But that was not so suddenly done as the occasion required; if it had, and Sir WILLIAM could (as was intended) have come-in with a supply at *Newbury*, it was the opinion of most men, that the King's side would have received an irrecoverable Defeat.

On

On the 24th of *August* the Lord-General *Essex* on *Hounslow* Heath, ten miles from *London*, mustered his men; where almost all the Members of both Houses of Parliament rode with him to survey the Army; and toward evening tooke leave of their General, who marched-on, and that night lodged at *Colebrook*.

The Earl of Essex marches with an army to the relief of the City of Gloucester, August 24, 1643.

Upon intelligence of this Armie's advance, Prince RUPERT, with the greatest part of the King's Horse, drew-off from *Gloucester*, to oppose their March, and take what advantages he could against it: But the King with his maine Army continued the Siege, resolving so to do till the last houre; hoping that every moment might worke somewhat for his end; either by failing of the Towne's store of Ammunition, or some other want that might happen. Neither was that hope without reason. And so much more wonderful was the fortune of that Towne, to be relieved at such a nick of time, when their Ammunition was so farre consumed, that but three single Barrels of Powder were left in their Magazine.

On Saturday the 26th of *August* 1643, the Lord-General *Essex* began his March from *Colebrooke* to *Beckensfield*, and so forward to *Beerton*, where he cloathed his Army, and marched-on. The City-Regiments and Auxiliaries joynd not with the Lord-General's Army till the first of *September*, when the general Rendezvouze was on *Brackley* Heath. But before the joyning of all their Forces, a small Party of the King's Army, consisting of 400 Horse, had faced a part of the Parliament-Army, and skirmished with them about *Bicister*, but soone retreated upon the approach of greater numbers. The General taking-up his Head Quarters at *Aynow*, sent a Regiment to quarter that night at *Deddington* under the Conduct of Colonel MIDDLETON; who, hearing there of two Regiments of the King's Horse, sent two Companies of Dragoones and a Party of Horse, to approach the Towne. But the King's Horse retreated to a passage toward *Oxford*, where the Lord WILMOT was with 50 Troops more. The next morning two Parliament-Regiments, conducted by MIDDLETON and Sir JAMES RAMSEY, advanced to that passe; where their Enemies stood in two great Bodies, and, after some Skirmish, gained the passe, placing Dragooneers to maintaine it. But the King's Forces drew-up againe toward it, and were received with a very hot Skirmish, which lasted many houres; till at last the King's Forces made a retreat; but, perceiving that Colonel MIDDLETON marched-back toward the maine Army (which he did by the Lord-General's Command) they sent a Party of Horse to fall-on his Reare, who followed them thorow *Deddington*; but were beaten-back thorow the Towne in some confusion. The losse of men in these Skirmishes was not much on either side; neither could it certainly be knowne, but was imagined by the Parliament-side to be more on their Enemies Party than on theirs.

The Lord-General with his owne Regiment of Horse, and the Lord GRAY, quartering at *Alderbury*, upon intelligence that some of the King's Horse from *Banbury* were abroad, sent-out a Party from both Regiments, who beat them in againe, and pursued them into *Banbury* Towne, whence they tooke divers Horses and Prisoners, those in the Castle not daring to stirre-out. The General marched from

from thence to *Chipping Norton*; where some of the King's Forces appeared againe, but soone retreated, as they did almost every day, during the March of that Army.

On the fourth of *September*, when the Lord-General marched toward *Stow* on the *Old*, he sent Colonel HARVEY, with his Regiment of Horse, and two Regiments of Foot, to advance a little before toward the right-hand, and the City-Regiments upon the left, under the Conduct of Lieutenant-Colonel BALLY, General-Adjutant of the Foot. Prince RUPERT appeared with about 4000 Horse, drawne-up on the Hills, facing the Parliament-Forces, and sent a strong Party of Horse into a bottome near *Stow* on the *Old*, to encompass Colonel HARVEY's Regiments. Which being perceived, three Regiments from the Vanne of the Parliament-Army advanced to his rescue, and made that Party of the King's Forces retreat to their maine Body: Many Skirmishes there happened; but with little losse on either side.

From thence the General marched in the Front of his Infantry, Sir JAMES RAMSEY in the Reare, and Sir PHILIP STAPLETON had the Van Guard. When the King's Horse againe appeared, and were by Sir PHILIP STAPLETON, and others of that Army, encountered with divers Skirmishes; but they retreated in a great Body, and still appeared before the Parliament-Army, as they marched-on, for the space of seven miles.

On the fifth of *September* the Lord-General advanced, and came to *Presbury Hills*; where he drew-up his whole Army in view of the City of *Gloucester*, and discharged foure Peeces of great Ordnance, to give them notice of his approach, Soone after he might discover the King's Quarters on fire: For upon the Lord-General's advance, they deserted the Siege, and marched-away all night. The Reere-Guard of the Lord-General's Army, some Ordnance and Ammunition, stayed on the top of the Hill, by reason of the steepnesse thereof, the darknesse of the night, and the tempestuousness of the weather, whereby (besides a famine of Victuals) the whole Army had, for three daies March before, extremely suffered, through a Country that their Enemies had already destroyed. But the Lord-General marched from thence to *Cheltenham*, though, during his March, the King's Forces skirmished with some Parts of his Army, and divers times beat-up his Quarters whilest he stayed at *Cheltenham*, which was two daies, till the eighth of *September*, when he marched with his whole Army to *Gloucester*; and was there, with great expressions of joy, and much honour, received by that long-besieged, and now-rescued City; The General much extolling the skilful valour and indefatigable industry of Colonel MASSEY, and praising the patient constancy of the City; They, on the other side, highly honouring his Excellency for bringing them this reliefe, thorow so many difficulties, discouragements, and disadvantages; both joyning in thanks to Almighty God, for his divine providence over them, and great mercy in sending so timely a deliverance.

The Lord-General lodged two nights in *Gloucester*, furnishing the City with Ammunition, Money, and other necessaries; and from thence marched to *Teuhsbury*,

The King abandons
the Siege of Glou-
cester, Sept. 6, 1643.

The Lord-General
Essex with his army
enters the City of
Gloucester, Sept. 8,
1643.

Bury, and intended to quarter at *Cheltenham*. But he was advertised, that a Body of the King's Army were then in *Cirencester* (which were reported to be Prince MAURICE's Forces) and had there layed-in great store of Provision for their Army. Upon that advertisement the General, (his want of Victuals and necessaries still continuing, and miserably increasing upon his whole Army,) made a long March with the Van-guard of his Army to fall upon them; which he did about one of the clock in the night, sending-in a Party of Horse to seize upon the Centinels and Guards, whilst himselfe, with the rest of the Horse, begirt the Towne; and a Forlorne hope of Foot, with his owne Foot-Regiment, entered the Towne, and surprized two Regiments of Horse (belonging to Sir NICHOLAS CRISPE, and Colonel SPENCER) which were (by the confession of some Prisoners taken,) intended for raising a Commotion in *Kent*. The Lord-General at that Towne of *Cirencester* tooke forty Loads of Victual, which, under God's providence, was the preservation of his Army, until the day that the great Battel of *Newbury* was fought. He tooke there likewise six Standards, all the Officers, except the two Colonels, which were absent, with divers other gentlemen of quality; above 300 Common Soldiers, and 400 Horse.

He takes *Cirencester* and a great quantity of provision, and makes many prisoners.

The General from *Cirencester*, in short Marches, not above five miles a day, went to *Cricklade*, and to *Swinden*, from thence intending to passe to *Hungerford*. But when the Van and Body of his Army had marched almost all over *Auburne-Chase*, a gallant Body of the King's Horse, consisting of about 6000, approached hard to the Reere-guard of his Army; which, not being a sufficient number to resist them, endeavoured to make an orderly retreat to the Body of their Army. But the King's Horse pursued so hotly both on Reere and Flanke, that those Horse Regiments of the General's Reere-guard could not retreat but with confusion, and some losse. But, being come to the Body of the Foot, they were drawne-up againe into order, and faced their Enemies, until all the Foot were marched. Nevertheless the King's Horse, againe advancing, put their Enemies the second time into the like disorder; till some of the General's Regiments facing-about towards them, charged the Forlorne Hope of the King's Forces, consisting of 500 Horse, and put them wholly into disorder; and then charging the two Regiments which seconded that Forlorne Hope, they routed them likewise; but the King's Horse came-on bravely with fresh Bodies, and stopt their Enemies further pursuit. Immediately followed a brave Charge, made by two of the Parliament's Regiments, which was encountered with as much Gallantry on the other side, so that they both retreated at one time. Another Charge was made by some Regiments of the Parliament-Army, and so answered by the other, that they were forced to retreat to their maine Body; at which time Sir PHILIP STAPLETON (who had the Van-guard of the Parliament Army that day) came purposely back, and drew-up his Regiment to succour his friends, which caused the King's Forces to retire altogether; and the night stopt any further proceedings.

On the King's Party in these hot encounters, were slaine the Marquesse *De Vieuville*, with other Officers of good quality, whose worth and valour appeared highly,

highly, though I finde not their names recorded. Many Common Souldiers were there slaine, and one Lieutenant-Colonel; two Lieutenants and a Cornet taken Prisoners. On the Parliament's side were slaine of Officers, Captaine MIDDLETON, and Captaine HACKET; divers Officers were wounded, some Common Souldiers slaine, and Colonel SHEFFIELD lost a Standard. The Lord-General *Essex* marched that night with his Army to *Hungerford*; Sir PHILIP STAPLETON, who before had the Van, bringing-up the Reere.

The next day the famous Battel of *Newbury* was fought; which Battel may deserve (because the condition of the whole Kingdom so much depended on the succeſſe of it) to be related in a large and particular manner. But, because I have found nothing written of it by those of the King's Party; and that there was a punctual Narrative published by some Colonels of the Parliament-Army, Gentlemen of great and unstained Reputation, concerning this Battel; which Narrative I have heard some of their Enemies confesse to be full, not onely of modesty, but truth in the General, or for the most part; let the Reader be pleased to take it from their Relation. If any thing may hereafter appeare of greater truth, it will not trouble any honest man to see it published. Neither is it a thing unheard-of, for men to describe their owne actions with impartial truth; since JULIUS CÆSAR is acknowledged to have written his owne Commentaries, not onely of the *Gallike*, but also of the Civil, Warre, with so much cleare integrity, that his Enemies had nothing to blame in it. Take it therefore in their Language.

The Battel of Newbury, Sept. 19, 1648.

On Tuesday the nineteenth of *September*, 1648, we marched from *Hungerford* towards *Newbury*; and, when we approached within two miles of the Town, we might discover the Enemies Forces upon an hill; their whole Army, having prevented us, were gotten to *Newbury*, and possest the Towne. But the next morning, being Wednesday, by break of day order was given for our March to an Hill called *Biggs Hill*, neere to *Newbury*, and the onely convenient place for us to gaine, that we might with better security force our passage. But, when his Excellency perceived that the Enemies Forces had possest themselves of that hill, marching himseſſe upon the head of his owne Regiment, Colonel BARCLAY's, and Colonel HOLBOURNE's Brigades, he charged so fiercely, that he beat them from the hill, and kept it (rather gaining than losing ground) the whole day. His Excellencie's Regiment, and those other Brigades, all the while they continued there, were hotly charged by the Enemy's Horse and Foote, whilest much prowesse was shewed on both sides. The General in Person bestirred himseſſe, giving directions where-ever there was occasion, and present in all places of danger, discharged the part of an excellent General, as the Enemies themselves witnessed. But he considered not the danger of his Person, whilest he laboured to maintaine that place, which of all others was most advantageous for his prospect. By this time came-up the two Trayned-Bands of *London*, who, though they were often charged by the Horse and Foot, stood to it with undaunted resolution.

The Battel thus begun by the Foot, Sir PHILIP STAPLETON, with his Excellency's Guard and Regiment of Horse, advanced upon the plaine of the Hill; when

when he had no sooner drawne-up out of the Lane's-end, seconded by Colonel DALBEIRE's Regiment of Horse, (no other Horse being advanced to the place) but the Enemy perceiving this advantage, being all drawne already in several great Bodies of Horse, part of them advanced immediately, and charged our Horse; whom we so well received (giving no fire till we joyned close with them) that the Enemy was wholly routed, and pursued with much execution near to the place where their whole Body of Horse stood. From thence, by order, we drew-back to our first ground; by occasion whereof, opportunity was gained to bring-up the remainder of our Horse, which had the Van-guard that day: whereupon the Enemy drew-out some fresh Regiments of his Horse, and with all possible speed advanced againe upon Sir PHILIP, but received no better entertainment than before, being againe routed by him. By that time that he had drawne-up his Regiment againe into some order, the other Regiments (those of RAMSEY, HARVEY, and GOODWIN,) were come-up to him, when the Enemy, with their whole Body, charged upon them bravely, and were as well received. Sir PHILIP STAPLETON was here charged both in Front and Flanke, (his whole Regiment having spent both their Pistols,) and was so encompassed, that the Enemy and ours, with both our whole Bodies, were all mixed together; and in this confusion many were slaine on both sides, and our men, at last, were forced towards the Lane's-end, where they first came-in; which being near our Foot, the Enemies endeavoured to dis-engage themselves, and drew-back to their owne Forces. Those that entered the Lane with ours were most of them slaine.

We tooke three Colours of Horse compleat, and a piece of another Colours. In the first Charge Colonel DALBEIRE and Commissary COPLEY, charging stoutly, were both wounded. In the third Charge, Captaine HAMOND, Captaine FLEETWOOD, Captaine PYM, and Cornet DOILY, were all wounded. Captaine DRAPER, who had a Forlorn Hope of Sir PHILIP STAPLETON's men, did good Service; as Captaine ABERCROMBY, and Captaine SHIBBORNE, did with their Dragoones. The left-wing of our Horse, commanded by Colonel MIDDLETON, and the right-wing of the Enemy's Horse, could not be engaged, but in small Parties, by reason of the hedges.

The actions of our Horse thus described wholly, (because we were loath to interrupt the Series, for the Reader's clearer understanding) returne we to the Foot. Major-General SKIPPON in the morning, when his Excellency (as aforesaid) was engaged upon the hill, hastened to the top of the hill, where our Van-guard was in fight; having before ordered the March of our Traine of Artillery, and those that attended it (which were the Lord ROBERTS's Brigade, and his owne, Sir WILLIAM SPRINGER's, Colonel MANWARING's, and the red and blew Auxiliary Regiments) to be near to his Excellency. Looking from the Hill toward *Newbury*, he perceived a great strength of the Enemy, both Horse and Foot, in divers great Bodies advancing directly toward the way through which all our Traine was of necessity to march. To prevent, therefore, what he suspected, (which was, that the Enemy would fall upon our Traine, or upon the Reare of those that fought on

the hill, or gaine that hill behinde us, our last night's Quarter, or all;) he speedily disposed (which his Excellency did also send him a Command to do) his Forces in places most convenient: Meanwhile, the General sending for more Foot, that Brigade wherein his Regiment and SPRINGER's were, with the red Auxiliaries, were sent-up; placing the Lord ROBERTS's Brigade, with foure small Pieces, just where the Enemy advanced, who gave them so warme an entertainment, that they made them run; and the Lord ROBERTS possest the ground, which the Enemy came first up unto: His Lieutenant-Colonel was shot in the face.

That Forlorne Hope which he had commanded the night before, being now strengthened with 300 Musketeers, and led by Major FORTESCUE, Major-General SKIPPON placed on the left of the Lord ROBERTS's Brigade, upon the high-way that came from *Newbury* just upon us; upon which four Drakes were likewise placed, and well-defended, though the Enemies came-up so close that they tooke-away a Limmer of one of our Pieces; but it was with losse of many of their lives.

Colonel MANWARING's Regiment was placed on the right-hand, betweene the hill and the Lord ROBERTS's Brigade. This Regiment his Excellency a-while after commanded-away, to the reliefe of his owne Regiment, Colonel BARCLAY's and Colonel HOLBORNE's Brigades, which had been foure houres upon very hot Service. It fortun'd that this Regiment was no sooner brought-on, but they were overcharged with two great Bodies of Horse and Foot, so that they were forced to récrat, and lose that ground which the forenamed Forces had gotten; which Colonel HOLBORNE perceiving, with his Brigade gave the Enemy a *Round Salvo*, and instantly his owne, and Colonel BARCLAY's Brigades, and the General's Regiment againe advancing, beat-back the Enemy, regained the ground, and made good the place during all the remainder of the day.

The blew Auxiliary Regiment was commanded to relieve and assist the Forlorne Hope, which had been three or foure times in their turnes at the point. The Fight all along the Valley (more than half a mile in length) was continued as long as in any other part of the Army, which was till ten a-clock at night; about which time the Enemy gave a good *Round Salvo* upon Colonel BARCLAY, and Colonel HOLBORNE's Posts. These things ordered, the Major-General rode-up to the top of the hill, where he espyed an advantage to bestow eight or nine Demi-Culvering shot upon the Enemy; who, out of an house, pelted the forenamed Gentlemen at a near distance. Then he rallied the two Train-Band Regiments into one Body, drew them up, and placed them before, where the Traine of Artillery did afterwards draw-up to the top of the hill, and desired Major BOTELER to draw the Musketeers of his Regiment on the right-hand before the two Demi-Culverings that were placed at the end of the Lane, on the top of the Hill; and the red Auxiliaries he placed on the left-hand of those Pieces, which before were slenderly guarded. The Artillery was well-ordered that day, by the skill and care of Sir JOHN MERRICK.

While this was acting, two Pieces, which belonged to the Major-General's Regiment,

giment, and one Drake of Sir WILLIAM BROOKE's, were, by the General's Regiment, under the Command of Major BOTELE, with the assistance of 200 Musketeers, recovered; and the Enemy drew-away from their Pikes (which with their Colours kept standing, with many great Bodies of Horse to guard them) five or six hundred Musketeers, besides Dragoones, to encompass our men on the right-hand among the hedges; just at which time his Excellency sent to have 300 Musketeers of the Forlorne Hope, to go to the reliefe of Colonel BARCLAY, and Colonel HOLBORNE's Souldiers. But then the Enemy falling-on upon our right-hand, diverted them, who, with other of our Musketeers thereabouts, beat the Enemy off, who else had done us great mischief. This was about foure o'clock in the afternoone, when all our whole Army of Foot was engaged in the Fight. But then he also caused some of the red Auxiliary Regiment to draw nearer to Colonel BARCLAY's Post, as he himselfe required. At length night drew-on, when the Enemy, both Horse and Foot, stood in good order on the further side of the Greene, where we expected their stay till next morning, and that they were working (as was reported) to place their Cannon, to make use of them against us when day should breake: Against which supposed encounter we encouraged our Souldiers before-hand, and resolved, by God's help, the next day, to force our way through them, or dye. But it pleased God to make our passage without blows; for the Enemy was gone by night; so that the next morning we marched quietly over the same ground where the Battel was fought, and where the Enemy stood; for, on Thursday early, his Excellency gave Command for the Armies to March towards *Reading*; to which purpose it was all drawne-up upon the Heath, where the Battel was fought; and, after that his Excellency had given order for the burying the dead, about ten o'clock we began to march. Colonel MIDDLETON, with his owne, and three Regiments more (Lord GREY, SHEFFIELD, MELDRUM) and 400 commanded Musketeers under Colonel BARCLAY, had the Reere-guard: During which March, the Enemy, at a great distance, shot from several hedges, but troubled us not. When we came to a long Heath, we drew-up the whole Army several times; and no Enemy appeared. But at the entrance of a narrow Lane toward the evening, the Enemy fell upon us with 800 commanded Musketeers, and most of their Horse, who caused our Horse, then in the Reare, to make a very disorderly and confused retreat. But when Colonel MIDDLETON, with the rest of the Commanders in the Reare, hasted to charge the Enemy with our Foot, he made them retreat with as much confusion over the Heath, as they had made us retreat before; the losse not being great on either side. Lieutenant BROWNE was taken Prisoner.

After this, the same evening, the Lord-General drew-up the Army to *Theale*, and, taking some refreshment there, marched the next morning, being Friday, with the whole Army to *Reading*; where he stayed till the Sabbath was past, and gave publike thanks for the great Victory.

The Lord-General and his army march to Reading; Sept. 23, 1645.

This was a Victory not denied to the Parliament, nor at all disputed; although the Lord-General *Essex*, for want of Victuals, marched-away to the necessary reliefe of his Army, and could not stay to pursue the Victory which he had gotten,

The number of slaine in that Battel, were judged to be, by those who speak most moderately, foure times as many of the King's Party as of the Parliament's; but others have spoken of a farre greater difference. Divers Captains, as Captaine MASSY, and Captaine HUNT, with others, were slaine on the Parliament-side; but scarce any of higher ranke. Three of the Nobility fell on 'the King's side, the Earl of *Carnarvon*, the Lord SPENCER (newly-made by the King Earle of *Sunderland*) and the Lord Viscount *Fawkland*.

The Lord-General Essex returns to London, about Sept. 27, 1643.

After this Victory, the Lord-General was received at *London* with great joy and Honour. The Trayned Bands and Auxiliaries of *London* marched home in full Companies, and were welcomed by their friends; and met by the Lord Mayor and Aldermen at *Temple-Barre*: And now the face of things seemed much to change, and the reputation of the Parliament to rise higher.

The King agrees to a cessation of Arms with the Irish Rebels, in Sept. 1643.

At the time of this Expedition for the reliefe of *Gloucester*, a Cessation of Arms was made by the King with the Irish Rebels; of which, together with the great Victories which small numbers of the English Forces obtained over great multitudes of those Irish Rebels, before the time of that Cessation (which was here omitted, as not to interrupt the Relation of proceedings in the English Warres) there may be a larger Discourse in the continuation of this History; as also of the Covenant which the Parliament, and that part of the Nation which adhered to them, about this time entered into with their Brethren of *Scotland*, for maintenance of the Religion, Lawes, and Liberties of both Kingdomes.

HERE ends this full and faithful History of the first three years of this celebrated Parliament, (which has since been generally called *The Long Parliament of King Charles the 1st.*) by Mr. THOMAS MAY. For, though he here speaks of a *Continuation of it* as a work that he then designed speedily to enter-upon, he never carried that design into execution. However, he afterwards published a more summary history of the whole Civil War of England, down to the trial and execution of King Charles in January, 1648-9, about three years after the publication of the present history, to wit, in the year 1650, during the Government of England and Ireland under the form of a *Common-wealth*, or *Republick*, without a King and House of Lords, and before *Oliver Cromwell* had usurped the Supreme authority by military force under the title of *Lord Protector*. This summary history was published with the approbation of the Parliament then sitting, under the authority of an *Imprimatur* signed *Na. Brent*, and dated June 10, 1650, which was about a year before the Author's death. It is written in a clear and easy style, and is full of judicious observations, and seems to be very faithful and impartial. The title of it is as follows:

A BREVIARY OF THE HISTORY OF THE PARLIAMENT OF ENGLAND;

EXPRESSED IN THREE PARTS:

1. *The causes and beginning of the Civil War of England.*
2. *A short mention of the Progress of that Civil War.*
3. *A compendious Relation of the Original and Progress of the Second Civil War.*

Written by THOMAS MAY, Esquire.

The oldest Edition I have seen of this *Breviary of the History of this Parliament* was published in the year 1655. But I suppose there had been a former Edition of it in the year 1650, which is the date of the *Imprimatur*.

F. M.

APPENDIX.

FOR the further satisfaction of the Readers of the foregoing valuable History of the first part of the celebrated Long Parliament of England (from it's beginning on the 3d day of November, 1640, to the 27th of September, 1643,) by Mr. THOMAS MAY, I shall here insert an APPENDIX to it, containing all the papers issued by the King and the Parliament, from the time of the King's return from Scotland to London in November, 1641, to the middle of the following month of March, in the year 1641-2, when the King had retired from his usual residence at his Palace at White-hall in consequence of some tumults in the City of London, and was gone to Huntingdon in his way to the City of York, where he afterwards resided for some time, and began to raise soldiers as a Guard to his Person, which he declared he apprehended to be in danger: which measure was, in a few months after, followed by an open war between him and the Parliament. The papers here re-published form the first part of the large Collection (mentioned above in the Note in page 129.) which was published by Mr. HUSBANDS in the year 1642-3; and they relate to the principal subjects of dispute in these unfortunate dissensions between the King and the Parliament; and therefore will, as I conceive, be sufficient to gratify the curiosity of the greater part of the Readers of this History. But they are followed in that Collection by a great body of other papers, which, on account of
their

their great number, and the great length of many of them, I have not thought it necessary to reprint on this occasion, though they contain much important matter that may be interesting to very diligent inquirers into the foundations of our Laws and Government; Mr. HUSBANDS's whole Collection extending to no fewer than 954 pages.

F. M.



*A View of the two Houses of the Parliament of England,
with King Charles the First on the Throne;
on the 3^d day of November, 1640. being the first day of the meeting of the said Parliament.*

APPENDIX,

CONTAINING ALL THE PAPERS IN HUSBANDS'S COLLECTION, FROM THE BEGINNING
OF DECEMBER, 1641, TO THE 16th OF MARCH, 1641-2.

HIS MAJESTIE'S SPEECH, to both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT,
December 2, 1641.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

I THINK it fit, after so long absence, at this first occasion, to speak a few words unto you ; but it is no ways in Answer to Master Speaker's learned Speech. Albeit I have staid longer than I expected to have done when I went-away, yet in this I have kept my promise with you, that I have made all the haste back again, that the settling of my *Scotch* Affaires could any ways permit : in which I have had so good successe, that I will confidently affirme to you, that I have left that Nation a most peaceable and contented People ; so that, although I have a little misreckoned in time, yet I was not deceived in my end.

But, if I have deceived your expectations a little in the time of my return, yet I am assured that my expectation is as much, and more, deceived in the condition wherein I hoped to have found businesse at my return. For, since that, before my going, I settled the Liberties of my Subjects, and gave the Laws a free and orderly course, I expected to have found my People reaping the fruits of these benefits, by living in quietnesse, and satisfaction of minde : But, instead of this, I finde them disturbed with Jealousies, Frights, and Alarms of dangerous Designes and Plots ; in consequence of which, Guards have been set to defend both Houses : I say not this as in doubt that my Subjects affections are any way lessened to me in this time of my absence ; (for I cannot but remember, to my great comfort, the joyful reception I had now at my entry into *London* ;) but rather as I hope that my presence will easily disperse these fears. For I bring as perfect and true affections to my people as ever Prince did, or as good Subjects can possibly desire. And I am so far from repenting me of any Act I have done this Session for the good of my people, that I protest, if it were to do again, I would do it, and will yet grant what else can be justly desired for satisfaction in point of Liberties, or in maintenance of the true Religion that is here established.

Now

Now I have but one particular to recommend unto you at this time. It is *Ireland*: for which though I doubt not your care, yet me-thinks the preparations for it go but slowly on. The occasion is the fitter for me now to mention it, because of the Arrival of two Lords from *Scotland*, who come instructed from my Council there (who now, by Act of Parliament, have full power for that purpose,) to answer that Demand which it pleased both Houses to make me by way of Petition, that met me at *Barwick*, and which the Duke of *Richmond* sent-back by my command to my *Scotch-Council*: Therefore my desire is, That both Houses would appoint a select Committee, to end this businesse with these Noblemen. I must conclude in telling you, that I seek my people's happinesse; for their flourishing is my greatest glory, and their affections my greatest strength.

By the KING.

A PROCLAMATION for obedience to the LAWES ordained for establishing of the true RELIGION in this KINGDOM of ENGLAND.

HIS Majestie, considering that it is a dutie most beseeching, and that most obligeth Sovereign Authoritie in a Christian King, to be careful (above all other things) of preserving and advancing the Honour and Service of Almighty God, and the Peace and Tranquillitie of the Church, (to which end His Majestie, with his Parliament, hath it under consideration, how all just scruples might be removed :) And being, in the mean time, sensible that the present division, separation, and disorder about the Worship and Service of God, as it is established by the Laws and Statutes of this Kingdom, in the Church of *England*, tendeth to great distraction and confusion, and may endanger the subversion of the very essence and substance of true Religion: Hath resolved, for the preservation of Unitie and Peace (which is most necessary at this time for the Church of *England*) to require Obedience to the Lawes and Statutes ordained for establishing of the true Religion in this Kingdom, whereby the Honour of God may be advanced, to the great comfort and happinesse both of his Majestie and His good Subjects.

His Majestie doth therefore charge and command, That Divine Service be performed in this His Kingdom of *England*, and Dominion of *Wales*, as is appointed by the Laws and Statutes established in this Realm, and that obedience be given by all His Subjects, Ecclesiastical and Temporal, to the said Laws and Statutes concerning the same; And that all Judges, Officers, and Ministers, Ecclesiastical and Temporal, according to Justice and their respective duties, do put the said Acts of Parliament in due execution against all wilfull Contemners and Disturbers of Divine Service, contrary to the said Laws and Statutes.

His Majestie doth further command, That no Parsons, Vicars, or Curates, in
their

their several Parishes shall presume to introduce any Rites, or Ceremonies, other than those which are established by the Laws and Statutes of the Land.

Given at His Majestie's Palace of White-hall, the tenth day of
December, in the seventeenth yeer of his Majestie's Reign,
God save the King.

By the KING.

A PROCLAMATION *for the Attendance of the MEMBERS in both
HOUSES in PARLIAMENT.*

HIS Most Excellent Majestie, having summoned this present Parliament in His princely care of the good and welfare of His loving Subjects ; In the continuance of the same care, doth, with advice of his Privie-Council, by this His Royal Proclamation, declare His Royal Will and Pleasure to be ; That all the Members of both Houses of Parliament doe repair to the Parliament at *Westminster* at, or before, the twelfth of *January* next, and give their due and diligent attendance in Parliament: To the end that this Kingdom may fully enjoy the benefit and happinesse which His Majestie intendeth unto them by Summoning and continuing of this Parliament. And of this His Majestie's Will and Command they are to take notice by this His Proclamation, and to give a just observance thereunto, upon such pains and penalties as by Law and Justice may be inflicted upon them.

Given at his Majestie's Palace of Whitehall, the twelfth day of
December, in the seventeenth yeer of His Majestie's Reign.
God save the King.

HIS MAJESTIE'S SPEECH *delivered to both HOUSES in PARLIAMENT,
the fourteenth of December, 1641.*

My Lords and Gentlemen,

THE last time that I was in this place, and the last thing that I recommended unto you was the businesse of *Ireland* ; whereby I was in good hope that I should not have had need again to put you in minde of that businesse. But, still seeing the slow proceedings therein, and the daily Dispatches that I have out of *Ireland* of the lamentable estate of my Protestant Subjects there, I cannot but again earnestly recommend the dispatch of that Expedition unto you : for it is the chiefe Businesse that at this time I take to heart ; and there cannot, (almost) be any businesse that I can have more care of. I might now take-up some of your time in expressing my detestation of Rebellions in general, and of this in particular: But, knowing that Deeds, and not Declarations, must suppress this great Insolency, I do here, in

a word, offer you whatsoever my power, pains, or industry, can contribute to this good and necessary work of reducing the Irish Nation to their true and wonted obedience.

Concerning a Bill in the House of Lords for pressing Soldiers.

And, that nothing may be omitted on my part, I must here take notice of the Bill for pressing of Souldiers, now depending among you, my Lords; concerning which I here declare, That, in case it come so to Me as it may not infringe, or diminish, my Prerogative, I will passe it: And, further, seeing there is a dispute raised (I being little beholding to him whosoever at this time began it) concerning the bounds of this ancient and undoubted prerogative, to avoid further debate at this time, I offer, that the Bill may passe with a *Salvo jure*, both for King and People, leaving such debates to a time that may better bear it. If this be not accepted, the fault is not mine that this Bill passe not; but of those that refuse so fair an offer.

To conclude, I conjure you by all that is, or can be, deare to you or me, that, laying-away all Disputes, you goe on cheerfully and speedily for the reducing of Ireland.

To the King's Most Excellent Majestie.

The humble PETITION of the LORDS and COMMONS in PARLIAMENT, concerning his MAJESTIE'S SPEECH of the 14th of December, 1641.

Most Gracious Sovereign,

YOUR Majestie's most humble and loyal Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament, doe, with all faithfulness and zeale to your Majestie's Service, acknowledge your Royal favour and protection to be a great blessing and security to them for the enjoying and preserving of all those publick and private Liberties and Priviledges which belong unto them; and, whensoever any of those Liberties or Priviledges shall be invaded or broken, they hold themselves bound, with humility and confidence, to resort to your Princely Justice for redresse and satisfaction. And, because the rights and Priviledges of Parliament are the Birth-right and Inheritance, not only of themselves, but of the whole Kingdom, wherein every one of your Subjects is interested; the maintenance and preservation whereof doth very highly conduce to the publick peace and prosperity of your Majesty and all your people; they conceive themselves more especially obliged, with all humbleness and care, yea, with all earnestnesse and constancy of resolution and endeavour, to maintain and defend the same. Amongst other the Priviledges of Parliament; They do, with all dutiful reverence to your Most Excellent Majesty, declare that it is their ancient and undoubted Right; "That your Majesty ought not to take notice of any matter in agitation and debate in either of the Houses of Parliament, but by their information and agreement; and that your Majesty ought not to poun-
d any Condition, Provision, or Limitation, to any Bill, or Act, in debate, or preparation, in either House of Parliament; or to manifest, or declare, your consent,

Priviledges of Parliament.

" or

“ or dissent, approbation, or dislike, of the same, before it be presented to your Majesty in due course of Parliament: and that every particular Member of either House hath free libertie of speech to propound, or debate, in any matter according to the order and course of Parliament: and that your Majesty ought not to conceive displeasure against any man for such opinions and propositions as shall be delivered in such debate, it belonging to the severall Houses of Parliament respectively to judge and determine such errors and offences in words or actions as shall be committed by any of their Members in the handling, or debating, any matters depending.”

They doe further declare, that all the Priviledges above-mentioned have been lately broken, to the great sorrow and grievance of your most humble and faithful Subjects, in that Speech which Your Majestie made in Parliament, to both Houses, upon Tuesday last the fourteenth of this present moneth of *December*, in that your Majesty did therein take notice of a Bill for impressing of Souldiers being in agitation in the said Houses, and not agreed-upon: and that your Majesty did therein offer a *Salvo jure*, or provisional Clause, to be added to that Bill before it was presented to your Majesty by the consent of both Houses, and did at the same time declare your displeasure against such persons as had moved some doubt, or question, concerning the same Bill. All which they doe affirm and declare to be against the ancient, lawful, and undoubted Priviledges and Libertieꝛ of Parliament.

And therefore they most humbly beseech your Majesty, by your Royal Power and Authority, to maintain and protect them in these and all other the Priviledges of your High Court of Parliament, and that you will not, for the time to come, break, or interrupt, the same. And that none of your loyal Subjects may suffer, or sustain, any prejudice in your Majestie's favour, or good opinion, for any thing done, or spoken, in Parliament. And, for the reparation of your loyal Subjects in this their just grievance and complaint, for the breaches of their Priviledges above-mentioned, and prevention of the like for the time to come; That your Majesty will be pleased to declare and make known the name or names of the person, or persons, by whose misinformation and evil counsel your Majesty was induced to the same; that so he, or they, may receive such condigne punishment as shall appertain to justice in that behalfe. And this they most humbly desire, and, as your greatest and most faithful Council, shall advise your Majesty to perform, as being that which will be not only a comfort to themselves, but likewise a great advantage to your Majesty, by procuring and confirming such a confidence and unity betwixt your Majesty and the People, as may be a foundation of Honour, safety, and happinesse to your Person and Throne, which they stand bound always to pray-for and endeavour.

The PETITION of the HOUSE of COMMONS, which accompanied the DECLARATION of the STATE of the KINGDOM, when it was presented to his MAJESTY at Hampton-Court.

Most Gracious Sovereign,

YOUR Majestie's Most humble and faithful Subjects, the Commons in this present Parliament assembled, do, with much thankfulnesse and joy, acknowledge the

great mercy and favour of God, in giving your Majesty a safe and peaceable return out of *Scotland* into your Kingdom of *England*, where the pressing dangers and distempers of the State have caused us with much earnestness to desire the comfort of your gracious presence, and likewise the Unitie and Justice of your Royal Authority to give more life and power to the dutifull and loyal Counsels and endeavours of your Parliament, for the prevention of that eminent ruine and destruction wherein your Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland* are threatened. The duty which we owe to your Majesty and our Country, cannot but make us very sensible and apprehensive, that the multiplicity, sharpnesse, and malignity, of those evils under which we have now many yeeres suffered, are fomented and cherished by a corrupt and ill-affected party, who, amongst other their mischievous devices for the alteration of Religion and Government, have sought, by many false scandals and imputations, cunningly insinuated and dispersed amongst the people, to blemish and disgrace our proceedings in this Parliament, and to get themselves a party and faction amongst your Subjects, for the better strengthening of themselves in their wicked courses, and hindering those provisions and Remedies which might, by the wisdome of your Majesty and Counsel of your Parliament, be opposed against them.

The Necessity of making to the King a Declaration of the State of the Kingdom.

For preventing whereof, and for the better information of your Majesty, your Peers, and all other your loyal Subjects, wee have been necessitated to make a Declaration of the state of the Kingdom, both before and since the Assembly of this Parliament, unto this time ; which we do humbly present to your Majesty without the least intention to lay any blemish upon your Royal Person, but only to represent how your Royal Authority and trust have been abused, to the great prejudice and danger of your Majesty, and of all your good Subjects.

And, because we have reason to believe that those malignant parties whose proceedings evidently appear to be, mainly for the advantage and encrease of Popery, are composed, set-up, and acted by the subtile practice of the Jesuits, and other Engineers and Factors for *Rome* ; and, to the great danger of this Kingdom, and most grievous affliction of your loyal Subjects, have so far prevailed as to corrupt divers of your Bishops, and others in prime places of the Church, and also to bring divers of these Instruments to be of your Privy Council, and [to be advanced to] other employments of trust and neernesse about your Majestie, the Prince, and the rest of your Royal children : And, by this means, they have had such an operation in your Council, and the most important affaires and proceedings of your Government, that a most dangerous division and chargeable preparation for war betwixt your Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*, the increase of Jealousies betwixt your Majesty and your most obedient Subjects, the violent distraction and interruption of this Parliament, the insurrection of the Papists in your Kingdom of *Ireland*, and bloody Massacre of your people, have been not only endeavoured and attempted, but, in a great measure, compassed and effected :

For

For preventing the final accomplishments whereof, your poor Subjects are enforced to engage their persons and estates to the maintaining of a very expenceful and dangerous War, notwithstanding they have already, since the beginning of this Parliament, undergone the charge of 150,000 pounds sterling, or thereabouts, for the necessary support and supply of your Majesty in these present and perilous designs. And, because all our most faithful endeavours and engagements will be ineffectual for the peace, safety, and preservation of your Majesty and your people, if some present, real and effectual course be not taken for suppressing this wicked and malignant party;

We, your most humble and obedient Subjects, doe, with all faithfulness and humility, beseech your Majesty ;

1. That you will be graciously pleased to concur with the humble desires of your people in a Parliamentary way, for the preserving the peace and safety of the Kingdom from the malicious Designes of the Popish party.

For depriving the Bishops of their Votes in Parliament, and abridging their immoderate power, usurped over the Clergy and other your good Subjects, which they have most perniciously abused, to the hazard of Religion, and great prejudice and oppression of the Laws of the Kingdom, and the just liberty of your people.

For the taking-away such oppressions in Religion, Church-government, and Discipline, as have been brought-in and fomented by them.

For uniting all such of your loyal Subjects together as join in the same fundamental truths, against the Papists, by removing some oppressions and unnecessary Ceremonies, by which divers weak consciences have been scrupled, and seeme to be divided from the rest ; for the due execution of those good Laws which have been made for securing the liberty of your Subjects.

2. That your Majesty will likewise be pleased to remove from your Council all such as persist to favour and promote any of those pressures and corruptions wherewith your people have been grieved ; and that, for the future, your Majestie will vouchsafe to employ such persons in your great and publick Affairs, and to take such to be neere you in places of trust, as your Parliament may have cause to confide-in ; and that, in your Princely goodnesse to your people, you will reject and refuse all mediation and solicitation to the contrary, how powerful and neere soever.

3. That you will be pleased to forbear to alienate any of the forfeited and escheated Lands in *Ireland* which shall accrue to your Crown by reason of this Rebellion ; that, out of them, the Crown may be the better supported, and some satisfaction may be made to your Subjects of this Kingdom for the great expences they are like to undergo by this War.

Which humble desires of ours being graciously fulfilled by your Majesty, we will, by the blessing and favour of God, most cheerfully undergo the hazard and expences

expences of this War, and apply ourselves to such other courses and counsels as may support your Royal estate with honour and plenty at home, with power and reputation abroad, and, by our loyal affections, obedience, and service, lay a sure and lasting foundation of the greatnesse and prosperity of your Majesty, and your Royal posterity in future times.

A REMONSTRANCE of the STATE of the KINGDOM,

Die Mercurii, 15 December, 1641.

THE *Commons* in this present Parliament assembled, having with much earnestnesse, and faithfulness of affection, and zeal to the publike good of this Kingdom, and His Majestie's honour and service, for the space of twelve moneths, wrestled with the great dangers and fears, the pressing miseries and calamities, the various distempers and disorders, which had not only assaulted, but even overwhelmed and extinguished, the liberty, peace, and prosperity of this Kingdom, and the comfort and hopes of all His Majestie's good Subjects, and exceedingly weakened and undermined the foundation and strength of his own Royal Throne; Do yet finde an abounding malignity and opposition in those parties, and factions, who have been the cause of those evils, and do still labour to cast aspersions upon that which hath been done, and to raise many difficulties for the hinderance of that which remains yet undone, and, to foment Jealousies betwixt the King and the Parliament; That so they may deprive him, and his people, of the fruit of his own gracious Intentions, and their humble desires of procuring the publike peace, safety, and happinesse of this Realme. For the preventing of those miserable effects, which such malicious endeavours may produce, We have thought good to declare.

That there is a malignant Party in the Kingdom that endeavours to disappoint the measures proposed by the Parliament for the Publick Good.

1. *The Root, and the growth of these mischievous designs.*
2. *The Maturity and Ripenesse, to which they had attained before the beginning of the Parliament.*
3. *The effectual means which hath been used for the extirpation of those dangerous evils, and the Progressse which hath therein been made by His Majestie's goodness, and the Wisdom of the Parliament.*
4. *The ways of obstruction and opposition, by which that Progressse hath been interrupted.*
5. *The courses to be taken for the removing those Obstacles, and for the accomplishing of our most dutiful and faithful intentions and endeavours, of restoring and establishing the Ancient Honour, Greatnesse, and Security of this Crowne and Nation.*

The

The Root of all this mischief, We finde to be a malignant and pernicious designe, of subverting the Fundamental Laws, and Principles of Government, upon which the Religion and Justice of this Kingdom are firmly established. The Actors and Promoters hereof have been;

1. *The Jesuited Papists, who hate the Laws, as being the Obstacles of that change and Subversion of Religion which they so much long-for.* The persons who compose the said Party.
2. *The Bishops, and the corrupt part of the Clergy, who cherish formality and superstition, as the natural effects, and more probable supports, of their own Ecclesiastical Tyranny and Usurpation.*
3. *Such Counsellors and Courtiers as, for private ends, have engaged themselves to further the interests of some foreign Princes, or States, to the prejudice of His Majesty and the State at home.*

The common Principles, by which they moulded and governed all their particular Counsels and Actions, were these. The Principles, and Counsels, by which the said persons are governed.

First, To maintain continuall differences and contentions betwixt the King and the People, upon Questions of Prerogative and Liberty; that so they might have the advantage of finding, with him, and under the notion of men addicted to his service, gain to themselves and their parties, and the places of greatest trust and power in the Kingdom.

A second, To suppress the purity and power of Religion, and such as were best-affected to it; as being contrary to their own ends, and the greatest impediment to that change which they thought to introduce.

A third, To conjoin those parties of the Kingdom which were most propitious to their own ends, and to divide those who were most opposite to them; which consisted in many particular Observations; namely, to cherish the Arminian party in those points wherein they agree with the Papists; to multiply and enlarge the differences between the common Protestants and those whom they call Puritans; to introduce and countenance such opinions and Ceremonies as are fittest for accommodation with Popery; to encrease and maintain ignorance, loosenesse, and prophanenesse, in the people: That of those three parties, Papists, Arminians, and Libertines, they might compose a body fit to act such Counsels and resolutions as were most conducible to their owne ends.

A fourth, to disaffect the King to Parliaments by slanders and false imputations

putations, and by putting him upon other ways of supply, which, in shew and appearance, were fuller of advantage than the ordinary course of Subsidies, though, in truth, they brought more losse than gain, both to the King and the People, and have caused the distractions under which we both suffer.

The Counsels of Jesuits in favour of the Popish Religion.

As in all compounded bodies, the Operations are qualified according to the predominant Element ; So in this mixt party, the Jesuited Counsels, being most active and prevailing, may easily be discovered to have had the greatest sway in all their determinations, and, if they be not prevented, are likely to devour the rest, or to turn them into their own nature.

In the beginning of His Majestie's Reign, the party began to revive and flourish again, having been somewhat damp't by the breach with *Spain* in the last year of King *James*, and by his Majestie's Marriage with *France* ; the interests and Counsels of that State being not so contrary to the good of Religion, and the prosperity of this Kingdome, as those of *Spain* ; and the Papists of *England*, having been ever more addicted to *Spain* than to *France* : yet they still retained a purpose and resolution to weaken the Protestant parties in all parts, and even in *France*, whereby to make way for the change of Religion, which they intended at home.

The effects of those Counsels.

The first effect and evidence of their recovery and strength was the dissolution of the Parliament at *Oxford*, after there had been given two Subsidies to His Majesty, and before they had received relief in any one Grievance : many other more miserable effects followed.

The destruction of the Rochell Fleet.
N. B.

The losse of the *Rochell* Fleet, by the help of our shipping, set-forth and delivered-over to the *French*, in opposition to the advice of Parliament : which left that Town without defence by Sea, and made way not only to the losse of that important place, but likewise to the losse of all the strength and security of the Protestant Religion in *France*.

The diverting of His Majestie's course of wars from attacks on the *West-Indies*, (which was the most facile and hopeful way for this Kingdom to prevail against the Spaniard,) to an expenceful and successesse attempt upon *Cales* ; which was so ordered as if it had rather been intended to make us weary of the Warre than to prosper in it.

The precipitate breach with *France*, by taking their Ships to a great value ; without making recompence to the English, whose goods were thereupon imbar'd and confiscated in that Kingdom.

The Peace with *Spain* without consent of Parliament, contrary to the promise of King *James* to both Houses ; whereby the *Palatine* Cause was deserted, and left to chargeable and hopelesse Treaties ; which, for the most part, were managed by those who might justly be suspected to be no Friends to that Cause.

The charging of the Kingdom with Billited Souldiers in all parts of it, and that Concomitant designe of Germane Horse ; that the Land might either submit with
fear

fear, or be enforced, with rigour, to such Arbitrary Contributions as should be required of them.

The dissolving of the Parliament in the second year of His Majestie's Reign, after a Declaration of their intent to grant five Subsidies.

The untimely Dissolution of a second Parliament.

The exacting of the like proportion of five Subsidies, after the Parliament was dissolved, by Commission of Loan; and divers Gentlemen, and others, imprisoned for not yielding to pay that Loan; whereby many of them contracted such sicknesses as cost them their lives. Great summes of Money required, and raised by Privy-Seals. An unjust and pernicious attempt to extort great payments from the Subject, by way of Excise; and a Commission issued under Seale to that purpose. The Petition of Right, (which was granted in full Parliament,) blasted with an illegal Declaration, to make it destructive to itself, to the power of Parliament, and to the Liberty of the Subject, and to that purpose printed with it; and the Petition made of no use, but to shew the bold and presumptuous injustice of such Ministers as durst break the Laws, and suppress the Liberties of the Kingdom, after they had been so solemnly and evidently declared.

Another Parliament dissolved, 4 Car. and the priviledge of Parliament broken by imprisoning divers Members of the House, detaining them close prisoners for many moneths together, without the liberty of using Books, Pen, Inke, or Paper, denying them all the comforts of life, all means of preservation of health, not permitting their wives to come unto them even in time of their sicknesse. And, for the compleating of that cruelty, after yeers spent in such miserable durance, depriving them of the necessary means of Spiritual consolation; not suffering them to go-abroad to enjoy God's Ordinances in God's House, or God's Ministers to come to them, to administer comfort unto them in their private Chambers: and, to keep them still in this oppressed condition, not admitting them to be bailed according to Law, yet vexing them with Informations in inferiour Courts, sentencing and fining some of them for matters done in Parliament, and extorting the payments of those Fines from them; and enforcing others to put-in security of good behaviour, before they could be released.

A third Parliament dissolved with harshness; followed by illegal and cruel imprisonments of several of the most eminent Members of it.

N. B.

The imprisonment of the rest, who refused to be bound, still continued; which might have been perpetual, if necessity had not, the last yeer, brought another Parliament to relieve them; of whom, one* died, by the cruelty and harshnesse of his imprisonment, which would admit of no relaxation, notwithstanding the imminent danger of his life did sufficiently appeare by the declaration of his Physician; And his release, or, at least, his refreshment, was sought by many humble Petitions. And his blood still cries either for vengeance, or repentance of those Ministers of State, who are, at once, obstructors of the course, both of his Majestie's Justice and his Mercy.

Upon the dissolution of both these Parliaments, untrue and scandalous Declarations were published, to asperse their proceedings, and some of their Members, unjustly to make them odious, and colour the violence which was used against them.

* Sir John Elliot. See above, page 9.

Proclamation set-out to the same purpose ; and, to the great dejecting of the hearts of the people, forbidding them even to speak of Parliaments.

The King governs the Nation during several years without a Parliament, and raises money by various illegal and oppressive methods.

After the breach of the Parliament, in the fourth yeer of His Majesty, Injustice, Oppression, and Violence, broke-in upon us, without any restraint, or moderation. And yet the first project, (which was the great summes exacted throughout the whole Kingdom for default of Knighthood,) seemed to have some colour and shadow of a Law : But, if it be rightly examined by that obsolete Law which was pretended for it, it would be found to be against all the rules of Justice, both, in respect of the persons charged, the proportion of the Fines demanded, and the absurd and unreasonable manner of their proceedings. Tonnage and Poundage hath beene received without colour, or pretence, of Law : many other heavy impositions continued against Law ; and some so unreasonable, that the summe of the charge exceeds the value of the Goods. The Booke of Rates lately enhanced to a high proportion ; and such Merchants as would not submit to their illegal and unreasonable payments, were vexed and oppressed above measure ; and the ordinary course of Justice, the common Birth-right of the Subject of *England*, wholly obstructed unto them. And, although all this was taken upon pretence of guarding the Sea, yet a new and unheard-of Tax of Ship-money was devised, upon the same pretence. By both which, there was charged upon the Subject near 700,000 pounds some yeers ; and yet the Merchants have been left so naked to the violence of the Turkish Pirates, that many great Ships of value, and thousands of His Majestie's Subjects, have been taken by them, and do still remain in miserable slavery.

Ship-money.

The enlargement of Forests, contrary to *Charta de Forestâ*, and the composition thereupon. The exactions of Coat and Conduct-money, and divers other Military charges. The taking-away the Armes of the Trained-Bands of divers Counties. The desperate designe of engrossing all the Gun-powder into one hand ; keeping it in the Tower of *London*, and setting so high a Rate upon it that the poorer sort were not able to buy it ; nor could any have it without License ; thereby to leave the several parts of the Kingdome destitute of their necessary defence ; and, by selling so dear that which was sold, to make an unlawful advantage of it, to the great charge and detriment of the Subject, the general destruction of the King's Timber, especially that in the Forrest of *Dean*, sold to Papists, which was the best Store-house of this Kingdome, for the maintenance of our Shipping. The taking-away of men's right, under colour of the King's title, to Land between high and low-water-Marks. The Monopolies of Soape, Salt, Wine, Leather, Sea-cole, and, in a manner, of all things of most common and necessary use. The restraint of the Liberties of the Subjects in their habitation, Trades, and other Interest. Their vexation and oppression by Purveyors, Clerks of the Market, and Salt-Petermen. The sale of pretended Nuzances, as Buildings in and about *London*, conversion of Arable into Pasture, continuance of Pasture, under the name of depopulation, have drawn many Millions out of the Subjects Purses, without any considerable

Monopolies.

derable profit to his Majesty. Large quantities of Common, and several Grounds, have been taken from the Subject, by colour of the Statute of Improvement, and by abuse of the Commission of Sewers, without their consent, and against it, And not only private Interest, but also the publike Faith hath been broken, in seizing of the Money and Bullion in the Mint; and the whole Kingdom like to be robbed at once, in that abominable project of Brasse-Money. Great numbers of His Majesty's Subjects, for refusing those unlawful charges, have been vexed with long and expensive suits; some fined and censured, others committed to long and hard imprisonments and confinements, to the losse of health of many, of life in some; and others have had their houses broken-up, their goods seized; some have been restrained from their lawful Callings: Ships have been interrupted in their Voyages, surprized at Sea in an Hostile manner by Projectors, as by a common Enemy: Merchants prohibited to unlade their goods in such Ports as were for their own advantage, and forced to bring them to those places which were most for the advantages of the Monopolizers and Projectors. The Court of Star-chamber hath abounded in extravagant censures, not only for the maintenance and improvement of Monopolies, and other unlawful taxes; but for divers other Causes, where there hath been no offence, or very small; whereby His Majesty's Subjects have been oppressed by grievous Fines, Imprisonments, Stigmatizings, Mutilations, Whippings, Pillories, Gags, Confinements, Banishments; after so rigid a manner as hath not only deprived men of the society of their friends, exercise of their professions, comfort of Books, use of Paper or Ink, but even violated that near Union which God hath established betwixt Men and their Wives, by forced and constrained separation; whereby they have been bereaved of the comfort and conversation one of another, for many yeers together without hope of relief; if God had not by his over-ruling Providence, given some interruption to the prevailing power and Counsell of those who were the Authors and Promoters of such peremptory and heady courses.

Oppression of the people by cruel sentences of the Court of Star-Chamber.

Judges have been put out of their places, for refusing to do against their Oaths and consciences: Others have been so awed, that they durst not do their duties, and, the better to hold a rod over them, the Clause *Quam diu se bene gesserit*, was left out of their Patents, and a new Clause, *Durante bene placito*, inserted. Lawyers have been checked, for being faithful to their clients; Solicitors and Attorneys have been threatened, and some punished for following lawful Suits: And by this means all the approaches to Justice were interrupted and forecluded. New Oaths have been forced upon the Subject against Law; new Judicatories erected without Law: The Council-Table have, by their Orders, offered to bind the Subjects in their Freeholds, Estates, Suits, and Actions. The pretended Court of the Earl-Marshal was Arbitrary, and illegal in its being, and proceedings. The Chancery, Exchequer-chamber, Court of Wards, and other English Courts have been grievous in exceeding their Jurisdictions. The estates of many Families have been weakened; and some ruined by excessive Fines, exacted from them for Compositions of Wardships. All Leases of above a hundred years have been made to draw-on

The Courts of Justice were employed as instruments of oppression,

Wardship contrary to Law. Undue proceedings used in the finding of Offices, to make the Jury finde for the King. The Common-law Courts, seeing all Men more inclined to seek Justice there, where it may be fitted to their own desire, are known frequently to forsake the Rules of the Common-law, and straining beyond their bounds, under pretence of equity, to do Injustice. Titles of Honour, Judicial places, Serjeantships at Law, and other Offices, have been sold for great summes of money; whereby the common Justice of the Kingdom hath been much endangered, not only by opening a way of employment, in places of great trust and advantage, to Men of weak parts; but also by giving occasion to Bribery, Extortion, and Partiality; It seldom happening that places ill-gotten are well-used. Commissions have been granted for examining the excesse of Fees: and, when great exactions have been discovered, Compositions have been made with Delinquents, not only for the time past, but likewise for immunity and security in offending for the time to come; which, under colour of remedy, hath but confirmed and encreased the Grievance to the Subject. The usual course of pricking Sheriffs hath been not observed, but many times Sheriffs have been made in an extraordinary way; some-times as a punishment and charge unto them; sometimes such were pricked-out as would be Instruments to execute whatsoever they would have to be done.

Fees.

The Bishops and the rest of the Clergy did triumph in the Suspensions, Excommunications, Deprivations, and Degradations, of divers painful, learned, and pious Ministers, in the vexation and grievous oppression of great numbers of His Majestie's good Subjects. The High-Commission grew to such excesse of sharpnesse and severity as was not much lesse than the Romish Inquisition; and yet in many cases, by the Archbishop's power, was made much more heavy, being assisted and strengthened by authority of the Council-Table.

The High Commission Court.

The Bishops, and their Courts, were as eager in the Country; and, although their Jurisdiction could not reach so high in rigour and extremity of punishment, yet were they no lesse grievous, in respect of the generality and multiplicity of vexations, which, lighting upon the meaner sort of Tradesmen and Artificers, did impoverish many thousands, and so afflict and trouble others, that great numbers, to avoid their miseries, departed out of the Kingdome, some into *New-England* and other parts of *America*, and others into *Holland*, where they have transported their Manufactures of Cloth; which is not only a losse by diminishing the present stock of the Kingdom, but a great mischief by impairing and endangering the losse of that peculiar Trade of Cloathing, which hath been a plentiful Fountain of Wealth and Honour to this Nation. Those were [thought] fittest for Ecclesiastical preferments, and soonest obtained them, who were most officious in promoting Superstition, and most virulent in rayling against Godlinesse and Honesty.

The Bishops Courts.

The most publike and solemne Sermons before His Majesty were, either to advance Prerogative above Law, and Decry the property of the Subject, or were full of such kind of invectives whereby they might make those odious who sought to maintain the Religion, Laws, and Liberties of the Kingdome; and such men were sure to be weeded out of the Commission of the Peace, and out of all other employments

employments of power in the government of the Country. Many noble Personages were Councillors in name; but the power and authority remained in a few of such as were most addicted to this party; whose resolutions and determinations were brought to the Table for countenance and execution and not for debate and deliberation; and no man could offer to oppose them, without disgrace and hazard to himself: Nay all those that did not wholly concur and actively contribute to the furtherance of their designes, (though otherwise persons of never so great Honour and Abilities) were so far from being employed in any place of Trust and power, that they were neglected, discountenanced, and, upon all occasions, injured and oppressed. This Faction was grown to that height and entireness of power, that now they began to think of finishing their Work, which consisted of these three parts.

1. *The Government must be set-free from all restraint of Laws, concerning our Persons and Estates.*

2. *There must be a Conjunction betwixt Papists and Protestants in Doctrine, Discipline, and Ceremonies; only it must not yet be called Poperie.*

3. *The Puritans, (under which name they include all those that desire to preserve the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdome, and to maintain Religion in the power of it;) must be either rooted-out of the Kingdome with force, or driven-out with feare. For the effecting of this it was thought necessary to reduce Scotland to such Popish Superstitions and Innovations as might make them apt to joyne with England in that great change which was intended. Whereupon new Canons, and a new Liturgie, were pressed upon them; and, when they refused to admit of them, an Army was raised to force them to it, towards which the Clergie and the Papists were very forward in their contributions. The Scots likewise raised an Army for their defence; And, when both Armies were come together, and ready for a bloody encounter, His Majestie's own gracious disposition and the Counsel of the English Nobilitie, and dutiful submission of the Scots, did so far prevail against the evil Counsel of others, that a Pacification was made, and His Majestie returned with Peace and much honour to London.*

The King attempts to introduce a new Liturgy into Scotland, in the year 1637. And raises an English Army to enforce it.

The Scots raise an Army for their defence.

The unexpected reconciliation was most acceptable to all the Kingdom, except ^{A Pacification.} to the malignant party, whereof the Archbishop and the Earle of *Stafford* being heads, they and their faction begun to inveigh against the Peace, and to aggravate the proceedings of the States, which so incensed his Majesty that he forthwith prepared again for War. And such was their confidence, that, having corrupted and distempered the whole frame and Government of the Kingdom, they did now hope to corrupt that which was the only means to restore all to a right frame and temper

temper again: to which end they perswaded His Majesty to call a Parliament, not to seeke counsel and advice of them, but to draw countenance and supply from them, and engage the whole Kingdom in their Quarrel: and, in the mean time, continued all their unjust Levies of Money, resolving either to make the Parliament pliant to their Will, and to establish mischief by a Law, or else to break it; and with more colour to go-on by violence, to take what they could not obtain by consent. The ground alledged for the justification of this War was this.

The King breaks the Pacification, and makes war upon the Scots.

The Earle of Strafford raises an Army in Ireland, consisting principally of Papists, to be employed against the Scots.

The King called a Parliament at London on the 13th of April, 1640, hoping to receive Subsidies from them to be employed against the Scots.

That the undutiful demands of the Parliament of *Scotland*, was a sufficient reason for His Majesty to take Arms against them, without hearing the Reason of those Demands; And thereupon a new Army was prepared against them, their Ships were seized in all Ports, both of *England* and *Ireland*, and at Sea; Their Petitions were rejected, and their Commissioners refused Audience. This whole Kingdom was most miserably distempered with Levies of Men and Money, and Imprisonments of those who denied to submit to those Levies. The Earle of *Strafford* past into *Ireland*, caused the Parliament there to declare against the *Scots*, to give four Subsidies towards that War; and to engage themselves, their lives and fortunes, for the prosecution of it, and gave directions for an Army of eight thousand foot, and one thousand horse, to be levied there, which were, for the most part, Papists. The Parliament met upon the thirteenth of *April*, one thousand, six hundred, and forty. The Earle of *Strafford*, and the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, with their Party, so prevailed with His Majesty, that the *House of Commons* was pressed to yield to a Supply for maintenance of the War with *Scotland*, before they had provided any reliefe for the great and pressing Grievances of the people, which, being against the fundamental Priviledge and proceeding of Parliament, was yet, in humble respect to his Majesty, so far admitted as that they agreed to take the matter of Supply into consideration, and two several days it was debated. Twelve Subsidies were demanded for the release of Ship-money alone; A third day was appointed for Conclusion, when the Heads of that Party began to feare the people might close with the King in satisfying his desire of Money: But that, withal, they were likely to blast their malicious designes against *Scotland*, finding them very much indisposed to give any countenance to that War.

Thereupon they wickedly advised the King to break-off the Parliament, and to return to the ways of Confusion, in which their owne evil intentions were most like to prosper and succeed.

But dissolved it on the following 5th of May:

After the Parliament ended the fifth of *May*, one thousand, six hundred, and forty, this Party grew so bold, as to counsel the King to Supply Himself out of His Subjects' estates by his own Power, at his own Will, without their consent. The very next day, some *Members of both Houses* had their Studies and Cabinets, yea their Pockets, searched: Another of them, not long after, was committed close prisoner, for not delivering some Petitions which he received by authority of that *House*, and, if harsher courses were intended, (as was reported) it is very probable that the sicknesse of the Earle of *Strafford*, and the Tumultuous rising in *Southwarke*, and about *Lambeth*, were the causes that such violent intentions

were

were not brought to execution. A false and scandalous Declaration against the *House of Commons*, was published in His Majesty's Name, which yet wrought little effect with the people, but only to manifest the impudence of those who were Authors of it.

A forced Loan of money was attempted in the City of *London*.

The Lord Mayor and Aldermen, in their several Wards, were enjoined to bring in a List of the Names of such persons as they judged fit to lend, and of the sums they should lend. And such Aldermen as refused so to doe, were committed to prison. The King and the Bishops again resolve to make war upon the Scots.

The *Archbishop* and the other *Bishops* and *Clergie* continued the *Convocation*, and, by a new Commission, turned it to a *Provincial-Synod*, in which, by an unheard-of presumption, they made *Canons* that containe in them many matters contrary to the King's Prerogative, to the fundamental Laws and Statutes of the Realme, to the right of *Parliaments*, to the Property and Liberty of the Subject, and matters tending to sedition, and of dangerous consequence, thereby establishing their own Usurpations, justifying their Altar-worship, and those other superstitious Innovations, which they formerly introduced without warrant of Law. The Convocation of the Clergie continued to sit after the dissolution of the Parliament, and made new Canons of the Church.

They imposed a new Oath upon divers of His Majesty's Subjects both *Ecclesiastical* and *Lay*, for maintenance of their own Tyranny; and laid a great Tax upon the Clergie for Supply of his Majesty; and generally they shewed themselves very affectionate to the War with *Scotland*, which was, by some of them, styled *Bellum Episcopale*; and a Prayer was composed, and enjoined to be read in all Churches, calling the *Scots Rebels*, to put the two Nations into blood, and make them irreconcilable. All those pretended *Canons* and *Constitutions* were armed with the several Censures of *Suspension*, *Excommunication*, and *Deprivation*, by which they would have thrust-out all the good Ministers, and most of the well-affected people of the Kingdom, and left an easy passage to their owne Designe of Reconciliation with *Rome*. The *Popish* party enjoined such Exemptions from the *Penal Laws*, as amounted to a Toleration, besides many other encouragements, and Court-favours: They had a Secretary of State, *Sir Francis Windibank*, a powerful Agent for the speeding of all their desires; and a *Pope's Nuncio*, residing here, to act and governe them according to such influences as he received from *Rome*, and to intercede for them with the most powerful concurrence of the forreigne Princes of that Religion. By his authority the *Papists* of all sorts, Nobility, Gentry and Clergy, were convocated after the manner of a *Parliament*; new Jurisdictions were erected of *Romish Archbishops*, Taxes levied, another State moulded within this State, independant in Government, contrary in interes and affection, secretly corrupting the ignorant, or negligent, professors of our Religion, and closely uniting and combining themselves against such as were sound; in this posture waiting for an opportunitie by force to destroy those whom they could not hope to seduce. For the effecting whereof, they were streng-hend with Armes and Munition, encouraged by superstitious Prayers, enjoined by the *Nuncio* to be weekly made for the prosperity

Dangerous meetings of the Papists by the authority of the Pope's Nuncio.

prosperity of some great designe. And such power had they at Court, that secretly a Commission was issued-out, intended to be issued to some great Men of that profession for the levying of Souldiers, and to command and employ them according to private Instructions, which, we doubt, were framed for the advantage of those who were the contrivers of them: His Majestie's Treasure was consumed, his Revenue anticipated, His Servants and Officers compelled to lend great sums of money; Multitudes were called to the *Council-Table*, who were tired with long attendance there, for refusing illegal payments. The *Prisons* were filled with their Commitments; many of the Sheriffs summoned into the *Star-Chamber*, and some imprisoned for not being quick enough in levying the Ship-money; the people languished under grief and feare, no visible hope being left, but in desperation. The Nobility began to be weary of their silence and patience, and sensible of the duty and trust which belongs to them: and thereupon some of the most eminent of them did petition His Majesty at such a time, when evil Counsels were so strong that they had reason to expect more hazard to themselves than redresse of those publick evils for which they interceded. Whilest the Kingdom was in this agitation and distemper, the *Scots*, who were restrained in their trades. impoverished by the loss of many of their Ships, and bereaved of all possibility of satisfying His Majesty by any naked Supplication,) entered with a powerful Army into the Kingdom, and, (without any hostile Act, or spoile, in the Country, as they passed, more than forcing a passage over the *Tyme at Newborne* near *Newcastle*,) possessed themselves of *Newcastle*, and had a faire opportunitie to presse-on further upon the King's Army: But duty and reverence to His Majesty, and brotherly love to the *English Nation*, made them stay there: whereby the King had leisure to entertain better Counsels; wherein God so blessed and directed him, that he summoned the great Council of Peers to meet at *Yorke*, upon the twenty-fourth of *September*, and there declared a *Parliament* to begin the third of *November* then following. The *Scots*, the first day of the great Council, presented an humble Petition to His Majesty; whereupon the Treaty was appointed at *Rippon*, a present Cessation of Armes agreed-upon, and the full Conclusion of all differences referred to the wisdom and care of the *Parliament*. At our first meeting all Oppositions seemed to vanish; the mischiefs were so evident, which those evil Counsellors had produced, that no Man durst stand-up to defend them. Yet the worke itself afforded difficulty enough. The multiplied evils and corruption of sixteene yeeres, strengthened by custome and authority, and the concurrent interest of many powerful Delinquents, were now to be brought to judgement and reformation. The King's Household was to be provided-for: they having brought him to that want that he could not supply his ordinary and necessary expences, without the assistance of his people. Two Armies were to be payed, which amounted very neer to eighty thousand pounds a moneth; the people were to be tenderly charged, having been formerly exhausted with many burthensome Projects.

The difficulties seemed to be insuperable, which by the Divine Providence wee have overcome. The Contrarieties incompatible, which yet in a great measure we have

The Scots enter England with an Army, and take possession of Newcastle.

The King then agreed upon a cessation of arms with the Scots, and called the present Parliament, which met at Westminster on the 3d of November, 1640.

have reconciled. Six Subsides have been granted, and a Bill of Poll money, which, if it be duely levied, may equal six Subsides more; in all six hundred thousand pounds. Besides we have contracted a Debt to the *Scots* of 220 thousand pounds; and yet God has so blessed the endeavours of this *Parliament*, that the Kingdom is a great gainer by all these charges. The Ship-money is abolished, which cost the Kingdom above two hundred thousand pounds a-year. The Coat and Conduct-money, and other military charges, are taken-away. which, in many Countries, amounted to little lesse than the Ship-money. The Monopolies are all suppressed, whereof some few did prejudice the Subject, above a Million yearly. The Soap an hundred thousand pounds; the Wine three hundred thousand pounds; the Leather must needs exceed both: and Salt could be no lesse than that; besides the inferiour Monopolies, which, if they could be exactly computed, would make up a great summe. That which is more beneficial than all this is, that the root of these evils is taken-away; which was "the arbitrary power, pretended to be in his Majesty, of taxing the Subjects, or charging their estates, without consent in *Parliament*," which is now declared to be against Law, by the Judgement of both *Houses*, and likewise by an Act of *Parliament*. Another step of great advantage is this; the living Grievances, the evil Counsellors and Actors of these mischiefs, have been so quelled, by the justice done upon the Earle of *Strafford*, the flight of the Lord *Finch* and Secretary *Windibank*, the accusation and imprisonment of the Archbishop of *Canterbury* and of Judge *Bartlet*, and the impeachment of divers other Bishops and Judges, that it is like not onely to be an ease to the present times, but a preservation to the future.

The discontinuance of *Parliaments* is prevented by the Bill for a *Triennial Parliament*; and the abrupt dissolution of this *Parliament* is prevented by another Bill; by which it is provided, that it shall not be dissolved, or adjourned, without the consent of both *Houses*.

Which two Laws, well-considered, may be thought more advantageous than all the former; because they secure a full operation of the present remedy, and afford a perpetual Spring of remedies for the future.

N. B.

The Star-chamber, the High-Commission, and the Court of the President and Council in the North, were so many forges of misery, oppression, and violence; and are all taken-away: whereby men are more secured in their persons, liberties, and estates, than they could be by any Law, or Example, for the regulation of those Courts, or Terrour of the Judges.

The immoderate power of the *Council-Table*, and the excessive abuse of that power, is so ordered and restrained, that we may well hope that no such things as were frequently done by them, to the prejudice of the publick liberty, will be known in future times any otherwise than by history, to give us and our posterity more occasion to praise God for His Majestie's goodness, and the faithful endeavours of this *Parliament*. The *Canons*, and the *Canon-making*, are blasted by the Vote of both *Houses*.

The exorbitant power of *Bishops*, and their Courts, are much abated, by some Provisions in the Bill against the *High Commission-Court*. The Authors of the many Innovations in Doctrine and Ceremonies, and the Ministers that have been scandalous in their lives; have been so terrified by just complaints and accusations,

that we may well hope they will be more modest for the time to come; either inwardly convicted by the sight of their own folly, or outwardly restrained by the fear of punishment.

The *Forests* are, by a good Law, reduced to their right bounds; The encroachments and oppressions of the *Stannarie Courts*; The Extortions of the *Clerke* of the Market; and the compulsion of the Subject to receive the Order of Knighthood against his will, by paying of Fines for not receiving it, and the vexatious proceedings thereupon for levying of those Fines, are by other beneficial Laws reformed and prevented

Many excellent Lawes and provisions are in preparation for removing the inordinate power, vexation, and usurpation of *Bishops*; for reforming the pride and idleness of many of the *Clergie*; for easing the people of unnecessary Ceremonies in Religion; for censuring and removing unworthy and unprofitable Ministers; and for maintaining godly and diligent Preachers through the Kingdom.

Other things of main importance for the good of this Kingdom, are in proposition, though little could hitherto be done in regard of the many other more pressing businesses; which yet, before the end of this Session, we hope, may receive some progress and perfection.

The establishing and ordering the King's Revenue, that so the abuse of Officers, and superfluity of expences, may be cut-off, and the necessary disbursements for his Majestie's Honour, and the defence and government of the Kingdom, may be more certainly provided-for.

The regulating of Courts of Justice, and abridging both the delays and charges of Law-suits; The settling of some good courses for preventing the exportation of Gold and Silver, and the inequality of exchanges betwixt us and other Nations; for the advancing of native Commodities, the increase of our Manufactures, and the well-ballancing of Trade, whereby the Stock of the Kingdom may be increased, or, at least, kept from impairing, as, through neglect hereof, it hath done for many years last past: For improving the Herring-fishing upon our own Coasts; which will be of mighty use in the employment of the poore, and a plentiful Nursery of Mariners for enabling the Kingdome in any great Action.

The oppositions, obstructions, and other Difficulties, wherewith we have been encountered, and which still lie in our way, with some strength and much obstinacy, are these: The malignant Party (whom we have formerly described to be the Actors and Promoters of all our misery) have taken heart again; They have been able to prefer some of their own Factors and Agents to degrees of honour, to places of trust and employment, even during the *Parliament*. They have endeavoured to work in his Majesty ill impressions and opinions of Our Proceedings, as if we had altogether done our own work and not His, and had obtained from him many things very prejudicial to the Crown, both in respect of Prerogative and Profit. To wipe-out this slander, Wee think good only to say thus much: That all that Wee have done, is for His Majesty, His Greatnesse, Honour, and Support: when Wee yield to give twenty-five thousand pounds a moneth for the reliefe of the Northern Countries, this was given to the King: for he was bound to protect his Subjects. The persons who made it necessary for us to incur these enormous expences were his Majestie's evil Counsellours, and their ill instruments, that were

Actors

The obstructions which the Parliament has met-with in their work of reformation.

Actors in those grievances which brought-in the *Scots*: and, if His Majesty should please to force those who were the Authors of this War to make satisfaction, (as he might justly and easily do,) it seems very reasonable that the people might well be excused from taking upon them this burthen, being altogether innocent and free from being any causes of it.

When we undertook the charge of the Army, which cost above 50,000*l.* a moneth, was not this given to the King? was it not His Majesty's Army? were not all the Commanders under contract with His Majesty at higher rates and greater wages than ordinary? and have not we taken upon us to discharge all the brotherly assistance of three hundred thousand pounds, which we gave the *Scots*? was it not toward the repaire of those damages and losses which they received from the King's ships, and from his Ministers? These three particulars amount to above eleven hundred thousand pounds. Besides, his Majesty hath received, by impositions upon Merchandise, at least, four hundred thousand pounds; so that His Majesty hath had out of the Subjects purse, since the Parliament began, one Million and an half: and yet these men can be so impudent, as to tell his Majesty that we have done nothing for him. As to the second branch of this slander, we acknowledge, with much thankfulness, that His Majesty hath passed more good Bills to the advantage of his Subjects in this Parliament than have been passed in many ages; but, withal, we cannot forget, that these venomous counsels did manifest themselves, in some endeavours to hinder these good Acts from being passed: and, for both Houses of Parliament, we may with truth and modesty say thus much: "That we have ever been careful not to desire any thing that should weaken the Crown, either in just profit, or useful power." The triennial Parliament, for *the matter of it*, doth not extend to so much as by Law we ought to have required, there being two Statutes still in force for a Parliament to be once a-year; and for *the manner of it*, it is in the King's power, that it shall never take effect, if he, by a timely summons, shall prevent any other way of assembling. In the Bill for continuance of this present Parliament, there seems to be some restraint of the Royal Power in dissolving of Parliaments: but it is not to take it out of the Crown, but to suspend the execution of it for this time and occasion onely; which was so necessary for the King's own security, and the public Peace, that without it we could not have undertaken any of these great charges, but must have left both the Armies to disorder and confusion, and the whole Kingdome to blood and rapine. The Star-chamber was much more fruitful in oppression than in profit, the great fines being for the most part given-away, and the rest stalled at long times. The fines of the High-Commission were in themselves unjust, and seldome, or never, came into the King's Purse. These four Bills are particularly and more specially instanced: in the rest there will not be found so much as a shadow of prejudice to the Crown.

They have sought to diminish our reputation with the people, and to bring them out of love with Parliaments: the aspersions which they have attempted this way, have been such as these; "That we have spent much time, and done little, especially in those grievances which concerne Religion. That the Parliament is a burthen to the Kingdom by the abundance of Protections, which hinder Justice and Trade; and, by the many Subsidies granted, which are much more heavy than any taxes they formerly endured;" to which there is a ready answer: If the time spent in this Parlia-

N. B.

N. B.

N. B.

ment be considered in relation backward to the long growth and deep root of those grievances which we have removed,—to the powerful supports of those Delinquents whom we have pursued,—to the great necessities and other charges of the Commonwealth, for which we have provided: or, if it be considered in relation forward to the many advantages, which not only the present, but future ages, are like to reap by the good Laws, and other proceedings, in this Parliament; we doubt not but it will be thought by all indifferent Judgements, that our time hath been much better employed than a far greater proportion of time in many former Parliaments put-together; and the charges which have been laid upon the Subject, and the other inconveniences which they have borne, will seem very light in respect of the benefit they have and may receive. And with respect to the matter of protections, the Parliament is so sensible of it, that therein they intend to give them whatsoever ease may stand with Honour and Justice: and are in a way of passing a Bill to give them satisfaction.

Thesamemalignant party have sought, by many subtle practices, to cause jealousies and divisions betwixt us and our brethren of *Scotland*, by slandering their proceedings and intentions towards us, and by secret endeavours to instigate and incense them and us one against another. They have had such a party of Bishops and Popish Lords in the House of Peeres as hath caused much opposition and delay in the prosecution of Delinquents, and hindered the proceedings of divers good Bills passed in the Commons-House, concerning there formation of sundry great abuses and corruptions both in Church and State.

They have laboured to seduce and corrupt some of the Commons-House, to draw them into conspiracies and combinations against the liberty of the Parliament: And, by their instruments and agents, they have attempted to disaffect and discontent His Majestie's Army, and to engage it for the maintenance of their wicked and traitorous designes, the keeping-up of Bishops in votes and functions, and, by force, to compel the Parliament to order, limit, and dispose their proceedings in such a manner as might best concur with the intentions of this dangerous and potent faction: And, when one mischievous designe, and attempt, of theirs, to bring-on the Army against the Parliament and the City of *London*, had been discovered and prevented, they presently undertook another of the same damnable nature, with this addition to it, to endeavour to make the Scottish Army neutral, whilst the English Army, (which they had laboured to corrupt and envenome against us by their false and slanderous suggestions,) should execute their malice, to the subversion of our Religion, and the dissolution of our government.

Thus they have been continually practicing to disturb the peace, and plotting the destruction, even of all the King's Dominions, and have employed their Emissaries and Agents in them-all, for the promoting of their devilish Designes; which the vigilancy of those who were well-affected hath still discovered and defeated before they were ripe for execution in *England* and *Scotland*: onely in *Ireland*, (which was farther-off,) they have had time and opportunity to mould and prepare their work, and had brought it to that perfection, that they would have possessed themselves of that whole Kingdome, totally subverted the government of it, rooted-out Religion,

Religion, and destroyed all the Protestants, whom the conscience of their duty to God, their King, and Country, would not have permitted to join with them, if, by God's wonderful providence, their main enterprise upon the City and Castle of *Dublin* had not been detected and prevented upon the very Eve before it should have been executed. Notwithstanding this detection, they have, in other parts of that Kingdom, broken-out into open Rebellion, surprising Townes and Castles, and committed murders, and rapes, and other villanies; and shaken-off all bonds of obedience to His Majesty, and the laws of the Realm; and, in general, have kindled such a fire as nothing but God's infinite blessing upon the wisdom and endeavours of this State will be able to quench. And certainly, had not God, in his great mercy unto this Land, discovered and confounded their former designes, we should have been the Prologue to this Tragedy in *Ireland*, and have, by this time, been made a lamentable spectacle of misery and confusion to the World.

And, now, what hope have we but in God, whenas the only means of our subsistence, and power of reformation, is, under him, in the Parliament? But what can we, the Commons, do without the conjunction of the House of Lords? and what conjunction can we expect there, when the Bishops and Recusant Lords are so numerous and prevalent, that they are able to cross and interrupt our best endeavours for Reformation, and, by that means, give advantage to this malignant Party to traduce our proceedings? They infuse into the people, that we mean to abolish all Church-government, and leave every man to his own fancy for the service and worship of God, absolving him of that obedience which he owes, under God, unto His Majesty, whom we know to be entrusted with the Ecclesiastical Law as well as with the temporal, to regulate all the members of the Church of *England* by such rules of Order and Discipline as are established by Parliament, which is his great Council, in all affairs both in Church and State. We confess our intention is, and our endeavours have been, to reduce within bounds that exorbitant power which the Prelates have assumed unto themselves, so contrary both to the word of God and to the Laws of the Land; to which end we past the Bill for removing them from their temporal power and employments; that so they might the better apply themselves, with meekness, to the discharge of their Functions; which Bill themselves opposed, and were the principal instruments of crossing it.

And we do here declare, that it is far from our purpose, or desire, to let loose the golden reins of Discipline and Government in the Church, to leave private persons, or particular Congregations, to take-up what forme of divine Service they please: For we hold it requisite that there should be, throughout the whole Realme, a conformity to that Order which the Laws enjoin, according to the Word of God. And we desire to unburthen the consciences of men with respect to the observance of needless and superstitious Ceremonies, and to suppress Innovations, and take-away the monuments of Idolatry. And, the better to effect the intended Reformation, we desire that there may be a general Synod of the most grave, pious, learned, and judicious Divines of this Island, assisted by some from foreign parts professing the same Religion with us; who may consider of all things necessary for the peace and good government of the Church, and represent the results of their consultations

unto

unto the Parliament, to be there allowed-of and confirmed, and receive the stamp of authority, thereby to find passage and obedience through-out the Kingdome.

They have maliciously charged us, "that we intend to destroy and discourage Learning;" whereas it is our chiefest care and desire to advance it, and to provide a competent maintenance for conscionable and preaching Ministers throughout the Kingdome; which will be a great encouragement to Scholars, and a certain means whereby the want, meannesse, and ignorance, to which a great part of the Clergy is now subject, will be prevented. And we intend likewise to reforme and purge the Fountains of Learning, the two Universities; that the streams flowing from thence may be cleere and pure, and an honour and comfort to the whole Land.

They have strained to blast our proceedings in Parliament by wresting the interpretations of our Orders, from their genuine intention. They tell the people that our meddling with the power of Episcopacy, hath caused Sectaries and Conventicles; when Idôlatory and Popish Ceremonies, introduced into the Church by the command of the Bishops, have not onely debarred the people from thence, but expelled them from the Kingdome. Thus, with *Elah*, we are called, by this Malignant party, the troublers of the State; and still, while we endeavour to reforme their abuses, they make us the Authors of those mischiefs we study to prevent.

Measures necessary to be taken to avoid dangers from the Papists.

For the perfecting of the work begun, and removing all future impediments, we conceive these courses will be very effectual; seeing the Religion of the Papists hath such principles as do certainly tend to the destruction and extirpation of all Protestants, when they shall have opportunity to effect it.

It is necessary, in the first place, to keep them in such condition, as that they may not be able to do us any hurt, and for avoiding of such connivance and favour as hath heretofore been shewed unto them "That His Majesty be pleased to grant a standing Commission to some choice men named in Parliament, who may take notice of their increase, their counsels, and proceedings, and use all due means, by execution of the Laws, to prevent any mischievous designes against the peace and safety of this Kingdom; and that some good course be taken to discover the counterfeit and false conformity of papists to the Church, by colour whereof persons very much disaffected to the true Religion have been admitted into places of greatest authority and trust in the Kingdom."

Measures necessary for the preservation of the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom.

For the better preservation of the Lawes and Liberties of the Kingdom, that all illegal grievances and exactions be presented and punished at the Sessions, and Assizes: and that Judges and Justices be careful to give this in charge to the Grand-Jury, and both the Sheriffe and Justices to be sworne to the due execution of the Petition of Right, and other Laws: That his Majesty be humbly petitioned by both Houses to employ such Counsellours, Ambassadors, and other Ministers, in managing his business at home and abroad, as the Parliament may have cause to confide-in, without which we cannot give His Majesty such supplies for support of his own estate, nor such assistance to the Protestant party beyond the Sea, as is desired.

It may often fall-out, that the Commons may have just cause to take exceptions at some men for being Counsellors, and yet not charge those men with crimes. For there be grounds of diffidence which lye not in proof; there are others which,

which, though they may be proved, yet are not legally criminal. To be a known favourer of Papists; or to have been very forward in defending, or countenancing, some great offenders questioned in Parliament; or to speake contemptuously of either of the Houses of Parliament, or of Parliamentary proceedings; or such as are Factors, or Agents, for any foreign Prince of another Religion; or such as are justly suspected to get Counsellours places, or any other places of trust, concerning public Employment, for money. For all these, and divers others, we may have great reason to be earnest with His Majesty not to put his great affairs into such hands, though we may be unwilling to proceed against them in any legal way of charge, or impeachment.

That all Counsellours of State may be sworne to observe those Laws which concern the Subject in his liberty; that they may likewise take an Oath not to receive any gift, reward, or Pension, from any foreign Prince, but such, as they, within some reasonable time, discover to the Lords of His Majestie's Council: and, although they should wickedly forswear themselves, yet it may herein doe good to make them known to be false and perjured to those who employ them, and thereby bring them into as little credit with them as with us.

That His Majesty may have cause to be in love with good counsel and good men, by shewing him, in an humble and dutiful manner, how full of advantage it would be to himself, to see his own estate settled in a plentiful condition to support his honour, to see his people united in ways of duty to him, and endeavours of the public good; to see happiness, wealth, peace, and safety derived to his own Kingdom, and procured to his Allies, by the influence of his own power and government.

That all good courses may be taken to unite the two Kingdomes of *England* and *Scotland*, to be mutually aiding and assisting to one another for the common good of the Island, and honour of both.

To take-away all differences amongst ourselves for matters indifferent in their own nature concerning Religion, and to unite ourselves against the common enemies; who are the better enabled by our divisions to destroy us all, as they hope, and have often endeavoured, to do.

To labour by all offices of friendship to unite the foreign Churches with us in the same cause, and to seek their liberty, safety, and prosperity; as bound thereunto both by charity to them, and by wisdom for our own good. For by this means our own strength shall be increased, and, by a mutual concurrence to the same common end, we shall be enabled to procure the good of the whole body of the Protestant Profession.

If these things may be observed, we doubt not but God will crown this Parliament with such successe as shall be the beginning and foundation of more honour and happinesse to his Majesty than ever yet was enjoyed by any of his Royal Predecessors.

End of the Grand Remonstrance, or Declaration of the State of the Kingdom, from the beginning of the Reign of King Charles the First to December, 1641, by the House of Commons. Presented to the King at Hampton Court.

HIS MAJESTIE'S ANSWER to the PETITION which accompanied the DECLARATION presented to Him at Hampton-Court, Dec. 1, 1641.

WE, having received from you, soone after Our returne out of *Scotland*, a long Petition, consisting of many desires, of great moment, together with a Declaration, of a very unusual nature, annexed thereunto, We should have taken some time to consider of it, as befitted Us in a matter of that consequence, being confident, that your own reason and regard to Us, as well as Our expresse intimation by Our Comptroller to that purpose, would have restrained you from the publishing of it, till such time, as you should have received Our Answer to it. But, much against Our expectation, finding the contrary, that the said Declaration is already abroad in Print, by directions from your House, as appears by the printed Copy: We must let you know that We are very sensible of this disrespect. Notwithstanding, it is Our Intention, that no failing on your part shall make Us faile, on Ours, of giving all due satisfaction to the desires of Our People, in a Parliamentary way; And therefore we send you this Answer to your Petition; reserving Our-selfe, in point of the Declaration, which We think unparliamentary, and shall take a course to do that which We shall thinke fit in prudence and honour.

To the Petition, We say; that, although there are divers things in the Preamble of it, which We are so far from admitting, that We professe We cannot at all understand them, as, *Of a wicked and malignant party prevalent in the Government; Of some of that party admitted to Our Privie-Council, and to other Employments of trust and neerest to Us and Our Children; Of Endeavours to sowe among the People false scandals and imputations to blemish and disgrace the Proceedings of the Parliament*: All, or any, of which did we know of, We should be as ready to remedie and punish, as you to complaine-of. That the Prayers of your Petition are grounded upon such Premisses as we must in no wise admit; yet, notwithstanding, We are pleased to give this answer to you.

To the first, concerning Religion, consisting of several branches, We say, that for the preserving the Peace and Safety of the Kingdome from the designes of the Popish Party, We have, and will still concur with all the just desires of Our People, in a Parliamentary way; That for the depriving of the Bishops of their Votes in Parliament, We would have you consider, that their right is grounded upon the Fundamental Law of the Kingdome, and constitution of Parliament. This We would have you consider: But, since you desire Our concurrence herein in a Parliamentary way, We will give no further answer at this time.

As for the abridging of the inordinate power of the Clergy, We conceive that the taking-away of the High-Commission-Court, hath well moderated that: But, if there continue any Usurpations, or Excesses, in their Jurisdictions, We therein neither have, nor will, protect them.

Unto

Unto that Clause which concerneth Corruptions (as you style them) in Religion, in Church-government, and in Discipline, and the removing of such unnecessary Ceremonies as weake Consciences might check-at; [We answer] That, for any illegal Innovations which may have crept-in, We shall willingly concur in the removal of them. And, if Our Parliament shall advise Us to call a National Synod, which may duly examine such Ceremonies as give just cause of offence to any, We shall take it into consideration, and apply Our Selfe to give due satisfaction therein. But We are very sorry to hear, in such general terms, Corruption in Religion objected; since We are perswaded in our conscience, that no Church can be found upon the earth, that professeth the true Religion with more purity of Doctrine than the Church of *England* doth, nor where the Government and Discipline are jointly more beautified, and free from superstition, than as they are here established by Law, which (by the grace of God) We will, with Constancy, maintain (while We live) in their Purity and Glory, not only against all invasions of Popery, but also from the irreverence of those many Schismaticks and Separatists, wherewith, of late, this Kingdom and this City abounds, to the great dishonour and hazard both of Church and State; for the suppression of whom We require your timely and active assistance.

Concerning Religion and Church-government.

To the second prayer of the Petition, concerning the removal and choice of Counsellors, [We answer] that We know not any members of Our Council to whom the Character set-forth in the Petition can belong: That, by those of them whom We had exposed to trial, We have already given you sufficient testimony, that there is no man so near unto Us in place, or affection, whom We will not leave to the Justice of the Law, if you bring a particular charge, and sufficient proofs, against him; and of this We do again assure you. But, in the mean time, We wish you to forbear such general aspersions as may reflect upon all Our Council, since you name none in particular.

Concerning the removal of Counsellors.

That, for the choice of Our Counsellours, and Ministers of State, to deprive us of that would be to debar Us that natural liberty all Free-men have: And, as it is the undoubted right of the Crowne of *England*, to call such persons to Our Secret Councils, to publick employment, and Our particular service, as We shall think fit, So We are, and ever shall be, very careful to make election of such persons in those places of trust, as shall have given good testimonies of their abilities and integrity, and against whom there can be no just cause of exception, whereon reasonably to ground a diffidence: and to choices of this nature, We assure you that the mediation of the persons nearest unto Us hath always concurred.

To the third prayer of your Petition, concerning *Ireland*, [We answer], That We understand your desire of not alienating the forfeited Lands thereof, to proceed from your much care and love; And, likewise, we agree that it may be a Resolution very fit for Us to take. But, whether it be seasonable to declare a Resolution of that nature before the events of a War be seen, that We much doubt-of. Howsoever, We cannot but thank you for this care, and your cheerful engagement for the suppression of that Rebellion; upon the speedy effecting whereof, the glory of God in the Pro-

Concerning the forfeited estates in Ireland.

testant Profession, the safety of the British there, Our honour, and that of the Nation, so much depend. All the Interests of this Kingdom being so involved in that businesse, We cannot but quicken your affections therein, and shall desire you so to frame your Counsels, and to give such expedition to the work, as the nature thereof, and the pressure, in point of time, requires, and whereof you are put in mind by the daily insolence and increase of those Rebels.

For Conclusion, your promise to apply yourselves to such courses as may support Our Royal Estate with Honour and Plenty at home, and with Power and Reputation abroad, is that which We have ever promised ourself, both from your loyalties and Affections, and also for what We have already done, and shall daily go adding unto, for the comfort and happiness of our people.

HIS MAJESTIE'S DECLARATION, *to all His loving SUBJECTS, in Answer to the REMONSTRANCE or DECLARATION of the STATE of the KINGDOM, made by the House of COMMONS.*

Published with the advice of His Privy-Council.

ALTHOUGH We do not believe that Our House of Commons intended, by their Remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom, to put Us to any Apology, either for Our past or present Actions; Notwithstanding, since they have thought it so very necessary (upon their Observation of the present Distemper) to publish the same for the satisfaction of all Our loving Subjects, We have thought it very suitable to the duty of Our place, (with which God hath trusted Us) to do Our part to so good a Work; in which We shall not think it below Our Kingly dignity to descend to any particular which may compose and settle the affections of Our meanest Subjects, since We are so conscious to Our Selfe of such upright Intentions and endeavours, and onely of such (for which We give God thanks) for the Peace and happiness of Our Kingdom (in which the prosperity of Our Subjects must be included,) that We wish from Our heart, that even Our most secret thoughts were published to their view and examination; Though We must confesse We cannot but be very sorry in this conjuncture of time (when the unhappiness of this Kingdom is so generally understood abroad) that there should be such a necessitie of publishing so many Particulars; from which, We pray, that no inconveniences may ensue, that were not intended.

We shall, in few words, passe-over that part of the Narrative, wherein the Misfortunes of this Kingdom from Our first entering to the Crown, to the beginning of this Parliament, are remembred in so sensible expressions; And that other, which acknowledgeth the many good Lawes passed by our Grace and Favour this Parliament, for the Security of Our people; of which We shall only say thus much, That, as We have not refused to passe any Bill presented to Us by our Parliament, for redresse of those Grievances mentioned in the Remonstrance, so We have not had a greater Motive for the passing those Lawes than our own Resolution,
(grounded

(grounded upon Our Observation and understanding of the State of Our Kingdom) to have freed Our Subjects, for the future, from those Pressures which were grievous to them, if those Laws had not been propounded: which therefore We shall as inviolably maintain as We look to have Our own Rights preserved; not doubting but that all Our loving Subjects will look-on those Remedies with that full gratitude and affection, that even the memory of what they have formerly undergone, by the Accidents and necessities of those times, will not be unpleasant to them. And possibly, in a pious sense of God's blessing upon this Nation (how little share soever We shall have of the acknowledgement,) they will confesse they have enjoyed a great measure of happiness (even in these last sixteen yeeres) both in peace and plenty, not onely comparatively in respect of their Neighbours, but even of those times which were justly accounted Fortunate.

The Feares and Jealousies which may make some impression in the mindes of Our People, We will suppose may be of two sorts; either for Religion, or for Liberty and their civil Interests. The Feares for Religion may haply be not only as Ours, here established, may be invaded by the Romish partie, but as it is accompanied with some Ceremonies, at which some tender Consciences really are, or pretend to be, scandalized: for of any other ceremonies which have been used without any legal Warrant, or injunction, and already are, or speedily may be, abolished, We shall not speake.

Concerning Religion, as there may be some suspicion of favour, or inclination, to the Papists, We are willing to Declare to all the world, That, as We have been, from Our childhood, brought-up in, and practised, the Religion now established in this Kingdom; so it is well known, that We have (not contented simply with the Principles of Our Education) given a good proportion of Our time and paines to the examination of the grounds of this Religion, as it is different from that of *Rome*, and are, from Our soule, so fully satisfied and assured, that it is the most pure, and agreeable to the Sacred Word of God, of any Religion now practised in the Christian world: That, as We believe that we can maintain the same by unanswerable reasons, so We hope We should readily seale to it by the effusion of Our Blood, if it pleased God to call us to that sacrifice. And therefore nothing can be so acceptable unto Us, as any proposition which may contribute to the advancement of it here, or the propagation of it abroad, being the only means to draw-downe a blessing from God upon ourselves and this Nation. And We have been extremely unfortunate, if this profession of Ours be wanting to Our people: Our constant practice in our owne Person having alwayes been (without ostentation) as much to the evidence of Our care and duty herein, as We could possibly tell how to express.

For differences amongst ourselves as to matters indifferent in their own nature, concerning Religion, We shall, in tendernesse to any number of Our loving Subjects, very willingly comply with the advice of Our Parliament, that some Law may be made for the exemption of tender consciences from punishment, or prosecution

The King declares himself to be sincerely and zealously attached to the Protestant Religion after a careful examination of the grounds of it.

for such Ceremonies, and in such cases, which, by the judgement of most men, are held to be matters indifferent, and, of some, to be absolutely unlawful. Provided, that this case be attempted and pursued with that modesty, temper, and submission, that, in the mean time, the peace and quiet of the Kingdom be not disturbed, the decency and comeliness of God's service discountenanced, nor the pious, sober, and devout actions of those Reverend Persons who were the first labourers in the blessed Reformation, or of that time, be scandaled and defamed. For We cannot, without griefe of heart, and without some tax upon Our selfe, and Our Ministers, for the non-execution of Our Laws, look upon the bold Licence of some men, in Printing of Pamphlets, and in Preaching and Printing of Sermons, so full of bitterness and malice against the present Government, against the Laws established, so full of sedition against Ourself, and the peace of the Kingdom, that We are many times amazed to consider by what Eyes these things are seen, and by what Ears they are heard: And, therefore, We have good cause to command, as We have done, and hereby do, all Our Judges and Ministers of Justice, Our Attorney and Solicitor-General, and the rest of Our learned Counsel, to proceed with all speed against such, and their Abettors, who, either by writing, or words, have so boldly and maliciously violated the Laws, disturbed the peace of the Common-wealth, and, as much as in them lies, shaken the very foundation upon which that peace and happiness is founded and constituted. And we doubt not but all Our loving Subjects will be very sensible that this busie, virulent, demeanour, is a fit Prologue to nothing but confusion; and, if not very seasonably punished and prevented, will not only be a blemish to that wholesome accommodation We intend, but an unspeakable scandal and imputation, even upon the profession and Religion of this Our Kingdom of *England*.

Concerning the Civil Liberties and Interest of Our Subjects, We shall need to say the less, having erected so many lasting Monuments of Our Princely and fatherly care of Our People, in those many excellent Lawes passed by Us in this Parliament; which, in truth, (with very much content to Ourself) We conceive to be so large and ample, that very many sober men have very little left to wish-for.

We understood well the Right, and pretences of Right, We departed from in the consenting to the Bills of the Triennial Parliament and for the continuance of this present Parliament, and in the preamble to the Bill of Tonnage and Poundage; the matter of which (having begot so many disturbances in late Parliaments,) We were willing to remove, that no interest of Ours might hereafter break that correspondence; abundantly contenting Ourself with an Assurance (which We still have) that We should be repaired and supplied by a just proportion of confidence, bounty, and obedience, of Our people. In the Bills for the taking-away the High-Commission and Star-Chamber Courts, We believed We had given that real satisfaction, that all jealousies and apprehensions of Arbitrary pressures under the Civil or Ecclesiastical state, would easily have been abandoned, especially when they saw all possible doubts secured by the visitation of a Triennial Parliament.

These, and others of no mean consideration, We had rather should be valued
in

in the hearts and affections of Our people, than in any mention of Our own, not doubting, but that, as We have taken all these occasions to render their condition most comfortable and happy, so they will always, in a grateful and dutiful relation, be ready, with equal tenderness and alacrity, to advance Our Rights, and preserve Our Honour, upon which their own security and subsistence so much depends. And We will be so careful, that no particular shall be presented unto Us for the compleating and establishing that security, to which We will not, with the same readiness, contribute Our best assistance.

If these resolutions be the effects of Our present Counsels, (and We take God to witness that they are such, and that all Our loving Subjects may confidently expect the benefit of them from Us,) certainly no ill design upon the Publick can accompany such Resolutions, neither will there be greater cause of suspicion of any Persons preferred by Us to degrees of Honour, and places of trust and employment, since this Parliament; and, We must confess, that, amongst Our misfortunes, we reckon it not the least, That, having not retained in Our Service, nor protected, any one Person, against whom Our Parliament hath excepted, during the whole sitting of it, and having, in all that time, scarce vouchsafed to any man an instance of Our Grace and Favour, but to such who were under some eminent Character of Estimation amongst Our people, there should so soon be any misunderstanding, or jealousy of their fidelity and uprightness, especially in a time when We take all occasions to declare, That We conceive Ourselves only capable of being served by honest Men, and in honest ways. However, if, in truth, We have been mistaken in such Our election of our publick servants, the particulars shall be no sooner discovered to Us, either by Our own observation, or other certain information, than We will leave them to Publick Justice, under the marks of Our displeasure.

If, notwithstanding this, any malignant Party shall take heart, and be willing to sacrifice the Peace and Happiness of their Country to their own sinister ends and ambitions, under what pretence of Religion and Conscience soever;—If they shall endeavour to lessen Our Reputation and Interest, and to weaken Our lawful Power and Authority with our good Subjects;—if they shall go-about, by discountenancing the present Laws, to loosen the Bonds of Government, that all disorder and confusion may break-in upon Us;—We doubt not, but God, in his good time, will discover them unto Us; and the wisdom and courage of Our High-Court of Parliament will join with Us in their suppression and punishment.

Having now said all that We can, to expresse the clearness and uprightness of Our Intentions to Our people, and done all We can to manifest those Intentions, We cannot but confidently believe that all Our good Subjects will acknowledge Our part to be fully performed, both in deeds past, and in present Resolutions to do whatsoever, with Justice, may be required of Us, and that their quiet and prosperity depends now wholly upon themselves, and is in their own power, by yielding all obedience and due reverence to the Law, which is the inheritance of every subject, and the only security he can have for his Life, Liberty, or Estate; and the which
being

being neglected, or dis-esteemed, (under what specious shews soever) a great measure of infelicity, if not an irreparable confusion, must, without doubt, fall upon them. And, We doubt not, it will be the most acceptable Declaration a King can make to His Subjects, that, for Our part, We are resolved not only duly to observe the Laws of Ourself, but to maintain them against what opposition soever, though with the hazard of Our being.

Of the necessity of relieving the distressed Protestants of Ireland.

And Our hope is, that not only the Loyalty and good Affections of all Our loving Subjects will concur with Us in the constant preserving a good understanding between Us and Our people; but, at this time, their own, and Our, interest, and compassion of the lamentable condition of Our poor Protestant Subjects in *Ireland*, will invite them to a faire intelligence and unity amongst themselves, that so We may, with one heart, intend the relieving and recovering that unhappy Kingdom, where those barbarous Rebels practice such inhumane and unheard-of Outrages upon Our miserable people, that no Christian ear can hear without horror, nor any story parallel. And, as we look upon this as the greatest affliction it hath pleased God to lay upon Us, so Our unhappiness is encreased, in that, by the distempers at home, so early remedies have not been applied to those growing evils as the expectation and necessity there requires; though, for Our part, as We did, upon the first notice, acquaint Our Parliament of *Scotland* (where We then were) with that Rebellion, requiring their aid and assistance; and gave like speedy intimation and recommendation to Our Parliament here; so, since Our return hither, We have been forward to all things which have been proposed to Us towards that work, and have lately Ourself offered (by a Message to Our House of Peers, and communicated to Our House of Commons) to take upon Us the care to raise speedily ten thousand English Volunteers for that service, if the House of Commons shall declare, that they will pay them; which particulars We are (in a manner) necessitated to publish, since, We are informed, that the malice of some persons hath whispered it abroad, That: the no speedier advancing of this business hath proceeded from some want of alacrity in Us to this great work; whereas We acknowledge it would be a high crime against Almighty God, and inexcusable to Our good Subjects of Our three Kingdoms, if We did not, to the utmost, employ all Our powers and faculties, to the speediest and most effectual assistance and protection of that distressed people.

And We shall now conjure all Our good Subjects (of what degree soever) by all the Bonds of Love, Duty, or Obedience, that are precious to good men, to join with Us for the Recovery of the Peace of that Kingdom and the preservation of the Peace of this, to remove all their Doubts and Fears, which may interrupt their affection to Us, and all their Jealousies and apprehensions, which may lessen their Charity to each other: and then (if the sins of this Nation have not prepared an inevitable Judgement for us all) God will yet make Us a Great and glorious King over a Free and Happy People. *

* This Declaration of the King to his subjects, in answer to the foregoing grand Remonstrance, or Declaration, of the House of Commons, is generally supposed to have been drawn-up by *Mr. Edward Hyde*, who was afterwards Lord Chancellor of England and Earl of Clarendon

A COMMON

A COMMON COUNCIL held at GUILDHALL, in the City of LONDON,
the 31st of December, 1641.

Commune Concilium tentum in Camerâ Guild-hall, Civitatis Londoniæ, tricesimo primo die Decembris 1641, post meridiem, Anno Regni Domini Nostri Caroli, nunc Regis Angliæ, &c. decimo septimo, coràm Ricardo Gurney, Milite et Baro-netto, Majore Civitati Londoniæ, Thomâ Gardiner, Milite, ejusdem Civitatis Recordatore, Ed. Bromfield, Milite, et Ed. Wright, Milite, et Aldermanno dictæ Civitatis, Johanne Cordell, Milite, Johanne Gayer, Milite, Jacobo Garrad, Milite, ac Aldermanno, Thomâ Atkin, Aldermanno, Johanne Wallaston, Milite et Alder-manno, Thomâ Adams, Johanne Warner, Johanne Towse, Abrahamo Reynardson, et Thomâ Austin, prædictæ Civitatis Aldermannis, ac Georgio Garret et Georgio Clark, Militibus et Aldermannis ac Vicecomitibus Civitatis prædictæ, nec non majore parte Conciliariorum de Communi Concilio ejusdem Civitatis, tunc et ibidem assem-blatorum.

AT this Common-Council Master Recorder declared, That, by the direction of the Right Honourable the Lord Mayor, he was to signifie to them the cause of their now Assembling, how that his Lordship had yesterday received a Letter from Sir *Edward Nicholas*, Knight, one of His Majestie's principal Secretaries, intimating that it was His Majestie's pleasure, that his Lordship should call a Common-Council against this time, and then his Lordship should be advertised of His Majestie's further pleasure: And that there was now at this present in the Council-Chamber an honourable person, being the Lord *Newburgh*, Chancellour of His Majestie's Court of the Dutchy, and one of His Majestie's most honourable Privy-Council, come hither to deliver His Majestie's Messsage, or Request, to this Court: And thereupon the Right Honourable the Lord *Newburgh* was desired to come into this Court, who, being here, declared and said in this manner; "Gentlemen, His Majesty, out of His good affection towards the City, and acknowledging of your great loves lately shewed unto His Highnesse, hath sent me on a Message unto you," assuring it to be the same contained in a Paper, which he presented and desired to be read to this Common-Council, which was accordingly done, the tenour whereof followeth in these words, *viz.*"

There having been of late many tumultuary and riotous Assemblies of people about Our Palaces of White-hall and Westminster, to the great disturbance of Us and Our Parliament: and We having received information, that some ill-affected persons do still endeavour to incite the like tumults again, We have thought fit to recommend to your especial care the preventing them, as far as in you lies, especially during the ensuing Holidays, at which time the idlenesse of many may make them apter to such disorders. We have thought fit likewise to let you know, that We are so well-assured of the
good

good affections of our City of London, by the great expressions which it hath made unto Us of late, that We can in no wise understand it to have any share in the fault of these tumults and distempers, but that they proceed meerly from the mean, unruly, people of the Suburbs. And, as We are most confident of the hearts and good affections of Our Citie of London towards Us and Our Government, and will not entertain any other opinion; so We do desire them not to be disturbed by any jealousies that ill-affected persons may endeavour to sowe, but to rest most confident and assured, that the safetie, the protection, and the prosperity of the City, shall ever be with Us a princijal care.

After the reading of which most gracious Message, whereby is fully manifested and expressed His Majestie's gracious goodnesse and great care for the safety and prosperity of this City (the Lord *Newburgh* having withdrawn himself,) this Common-Council tooke the same into their serious consideration, and how for the present to return, by this Honourable person, unto His Majesty an answer with all humility and thankfulness; And, after much debate, it was fully agreed and resolved-of by this Common-Council, That, in the first place, should be returned and rendered unto His Majestie from this Common-Council, as the Representative Body of the whole City; their humble duty in all thankful manner, for His goodnesse and gracious love and care manifested to this City.

Secondly, that it should besignified unto His Majesty, that neither This Court, nor any particular member thereof, hath had any hand in these Tumultuous and Riotous proceedings, and that they, and every of them, do disavow and disclaime the same.

Thirdly, That it may be likewise signified, That this Court (as the Representative Body of the whole City) doth promise from hence-forth their best endeavours to prevent and suppress in time to come (as far as in them lyeth), all such, or the like, Tumultuous Assemblies, and all Mutinous and Rebellious persons.

And lastly, That the humble desire of this Court may be presented unto His Majesty, to be graciously pleased, that all the Delinquents and causers of these Tumults, whatsoever they be, being apprehended, may be brought into examination, and receive condigne punishment according to the Law.

And these foure things thus agreed upon, were, by direction of this Common-Council, here openly declared and delivered, by the mouth of Master Recorder, unto that Honourable Person, the Lord *Newburgh*, here present, with desire that the same should be, by his Lordship, accordingly presented unto His Majesty; the which he promised to perform with trust.

And afterwards this Court entred into further consultation and debate, touching the tumultuous and riotous Assemblies lately spread, night and day, in several parts of this City, to the great trouble and affrightment of His Majestie's good Subjects, and also touching the great neglect of that due respect which ought to be given by
the

the Inhabitants of this City, to the several Precepts lately issued-out by my Lord Mayor for a continual Watch and Ward day and night, for prevention and suppression of such Tumults and Distempers.

And likewise touching the great neglect in appearance of the Trained Bands of this City to their Colours at the beat of the Drum, especially in these times of danger, in contempt of Authority, being a matter of exceeding great consequence, and not fit to be suffered. And thereupon this Common Council, taking much to heart, that such disobedience should grow and be found in the Inhabitants of this City, to the great disrespect of Magistracy and contempt of Government; And that such Disorders and Tumultuary Assemblies should be permitted in such a City as this, (formerly famous for the good and quiet Government thereof,) hath thought it very expedient and Behoveful, for redresse and remedy to be had in these abuses, (being not fit to be any longer endured,) That every Member of this Common-Council, now assembled, shall, in their several Precincts, spread it abroad, and make it known, That, if any person, or persons, shall from henceforth neglect his duty and service to be performed, as aforesaid, and shall not doe his best endeavour to suppress, or prevent, any Tumults or Riotous Assemblies, that shall hereafter be attempted within this City, or Liberties thereof, that then he, or they, offending shall receive condigne punishment, according to his or their demerits.

And it is further thought fit, and so agreed by this Common-Council, that my Lord Mayor may send-out his Precepts in such manner, and to such purpose, as his Lordship, and his Brethren the Aldermen, shall think fit, for Watch and Ward, raising of Arms, or otherwise, for the safety and preservation of this City; to which this Court, and all the Members thereof, promise all due and cheerful obedience.

HIS MAJESTIE'S MESSAGE, *sent by the Lord CHAMBERLAIN to the House of PEERS, the 28th of December, 1641.*

HIS Majestie, being very sensible of the great Miseries and Distresses of His Subjects in the kingdom of *Ireland*, which go daily increasing so fast, and the Blood which hath been already spilt by the crueltie and barbarousness of those Rebels, crying-out so loud; and, perceiving how slowly the Succours designed thither go on, His Majesty hath thought fit to let your Lordships know, and desires you to acquaint the House of Commons therewith, That His Majestie will take care, that by Commission which He shall grant, ten thousand English Voluntiers shall be speedily raised for that Service, if so the House of Commons shall declare that they will pay them.

By the KING.

A Proclamation
against the Irish
Rebels, January 1,
1641-42.

WHEREAS divers lewd and wicked persons have, of late, risen in Rebellion in Our Kingdom of *Ireland*, surprised divers of Our Forts and Castles, and possessed themselves thereof; surprised some of our Garrisons; possessed themselves of some of Our Magazines of Arms and Munition; dispossessed many of Our good and loyal Subjects of the British Nation, and Protestants, of their Houses and Lands; robbed and spoiled many thousands of Our good Subjects of the British Nation, and Protestants, of their goods, to great values; massacred multitudes of them, imprisoned many others, and some who have the honour to serve Us as privie Councillours of that Our Kingdom: We therefore, having taken the same into Our Royal consideration, and abhorring the wicked disloyaltie and horrible acts committed by those persons, do hereby, not only declare Our just indignation thereof, but also do declare them and their Adherents, and Abettors, and all those who shall hereafter join with them, or commit the like acts on any of Our good Subjects in that Kingdom, to be Rebels and Traitors against Our Royal Person, and enemies to Our Royal Crown of *England* and *Ireland*.

And we do hereby strictly charge and command all those persons, who have so presumed to rise in Arms against Us and our Royal authority (which We cannot otherwise interpret than as Acts of high Rebellion and detestable disloyaltie, when therein they spoil and destroy our good and Loyal Subjects of the British Nation, and Protestants) That they immediately lay-down their Arms, and forbear all further Acts of Hostility; wherein if they faile, We do let them know, That We have authorised Our Justices of *Ireland*, and other Our chief Governour or Governours, and General, or Lieutenant-General, of Our Army there; And do hereby accordingly require and authorise them, and every-of them, to prosecute the said Rebels and Traitours, with fire and sword, as persons who, by their disloyalty against Us, their lawful and undoubted King and Sovereign, have made themselves unworthy of any mercy or favour: wherein Our said Justices, or other chief Governour, or Governours, and General or Lieutenant-General of Our said Army, shall be countenanced and supported by Us and by Our powerfull succours of Our good Subjects of *England* and *Scotland*, that so they may reduce to obedience those wicked disturbers of that Peace, which, by the blessing of God, that Kingdom hath so long and so happily enjoyed, under the government of Our Royal father and Us. And this Our Royal pleasure, We do hereby require Our Justices, or other chief Governour, or Governours, of that Our Kingdom of *Ireland*, to cause to be published and proclaimed, in and throughout Our said Kingdom of *Ireland*.

Given under Our Signet, at Our Palace at Westminster, the first day of *January*, in the seventeenth yeer of Our Reign, 1641*.

God save the King.

Articles

* This date is more than two months after the 23d of October, 1641, when the Irish rebellion and massacre began. And it is remarkable, that with this Proclamation, a warrant signed by Secretary Nicholas,

Articles of HIGH TREASON, and other Misdemeanours, against the Lord KYMBOLTON, Mr. PYM, JOHN HAMPDEN, DENZILL HOLLIS, Sir ARTHUR HASLERIG, and WILLIAM STRODE, being all MEMBERS of the House of COMMONS.

1. THAT they have traiterously endeavoured to subvert the Fundamental Lawes and Government of this Kingdome, and deprive the King of his Legall power, and to place on Subjects an arbitrary and tyrannical power.

2. That they have endeavoured, by many foule aspersions upon his Majesty and his Government, to alienate the affections of his people, and to make his Majesty odious to them.

3. That they have endeavoured to draw his Majestie's late Army to disobedience to his Majestie's command, and to side with them in their Trayterous design.

4. That they have Trayterously invited and encouraged a foreign power to invade his Majestie's Kingdome of England.

5. That they have Traiterously endeavoured to Subvert the very Rights and Beings of Parliaments.

6. That, for the compleating of their Traiterous designs, they have endeavoured, as far as in them lay, by force and terror, to compel the Parliament to join with them in their Traiterous designs, and to that end, have actually raised and countenanced Tumults against the King and Parliament.

7. That they have Traiterously conspired to Levy, and actually have Levied, war against the King.

Die Lunæ, 3 Januar. 1641.

IT is this day ordered upon the question, by the Commons House of Parliament, That, if any persons whatsoever, shall come to the Lodgings of any Member of this House, and there do offer to Seal the Trunks, Doors, or Papers of any Members of this House, or to seize upon their persons; That then such Members should require the aid of the Constable, to keep such Persons in safe custody, till this House do give further Order. And this House doth further declare, That, if any person whatsoever, shall offer to arrest, or detain, the person of any Member of this House, without first acquainting this House therewith, and receiving further Order from this House; That it is lawful for such Member, or any person willing to assist him, to stand upon his, and their, guard of defence, and to make resistance, according to the Protestation taken to defend the Priviledges of Parliament.

H. Elsynge, Cler. Parl. D. Com.

las, was sent to the Printer, importing, "That it was His Majestie's Pleasure he should forthwith print, on good Paper, forty copies of the same for the King's use, and that no more be printed, till his Pleasure be further notified." See Rushworth's Historical Collections abridged, Vol. IV. page 234.

HIS MAJESTIE'S SPEECH *in the House of Commons*, Jan. 4, 1641.

Gentlemen,

I AM sorry for this occasion of coming unto you: yesterday I sent a Sergeant at Arms upon a very important occasion, to apprehend some that, by my command, were accused of High Treason, whereunto I did expect Obedience, and not a Message. And I must declare unto you here, that, albeit no King that ever was in *England*, shall be more careful of your PRIVILEGES, to maintain them to the uttermost of his power, than I shall be; yet you must know, that in cases of Treason, no person hath a priviledge; and therefore I am come to know, if any of those persons, that were accused, are here. For I must tell you, Gentlemen, that, so long as those persons that I have accused (for no slight crime, but for Treason) are here, I cannot expect that this House can be in the right way that I do heartily wish it: Therefore I am come to tell you, that I must have them, wheresoever I find them. Well;—since I see all the Birds are flown, I do expect from you that you shall send them unto me as soon as they return hither: But I assure you, in the word of a King, I never did intend any force, but shall proceed against them in a legal and fair way: for I never meant any other.

And now, since I see I cannot do what I came for, I think this no unfit occasion to repeat what I have said formerly; That, whatsoever I have done in favour, and to the good, of my Subjects, I do mean to maintain it.

I will trouble you no more, but tell you, I do expect, as soon as they come to the House, you will send them to me: otherwise I must take my own course to find them.

Die Mercurii, 5 January, 1641.

COMMONS *House of* PARLIAMENT.

WHEREAS his Majesty, in his Royal Person, yesterday, being the fourth of *January*, 1641, did come to the House of Commons, attended with a great multitude of men, armed in a warlike manner, with Halberts, Swords, and Pistols, who came up to the very door of the House, and placed themselves there, and in other places and passages near to the House, to the great terrour and disturbance of the Members thereof, then sitting, and according to their duty, in a peaceable and orderly manner, treating of the great affairs of both Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*; And his Majesty, having placed himself in the Speaker's Chair, did demand the Persons of divers Members of the House to be delivered unto Him.

It is this day declared, by the House of Commons, that the same is a high breach of the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament, and inconsistent with the Liberty

Liberty and Freedom thereof: and therefore this House doth conceive they cannot, with the safety of their own Persons, or the indemnity of the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament, sit here any longer, without a full vindication of so high a breach, and a sufficient Guard wherein they may confide; for which both Houses jointly, and this House by itself, have been humble Suitors to his Majestie, and cannot as yet obtain.

Notwithstanding which, this House, being very sensible of the greatest trust reposed in them; and especially at this time of the manifold distractions of this Kingdom, and the lamentable and distressed condition of the Kingdom of *Ireland*; doth Order, that this House shall be Adjourned until Tuesday next at one of the clock in the afternoon, and that a Committee be named by this House, and all that will come shall have voices, and shall sit at the Guildhall in the City of *London*, to-morrow morning at nine of the clock; and shall have power to consider and resolve of all things that may concern the good and safety of the City and Kingdom, and particularly how our Priviledges may be vindicated, and our Persons secured. And to consider of the affairs and reliefe of *Ireland*; and shall have power to consult and advise with any person or persons, touching the premises, and shall have power to send for parties, witnesses, papers, and records.

The House of Commons resolve to remove the place of their meeting, to the Guild hall in the City of London.

And it is further ordered, that the Committee for the Irish Affairs, shall meet at the Guildhall aforesaid, at what time they shall think fit; and consult and do touching the affairs of *Ireland*, according to the power formerly given them by this House; and both the said Committees shall report the results of their consideration and Resolution to this House.

Master *Chancellour* of the Exchequer. *M. Glyn.* *M. Whitlock.* Lord *Faulkland.* Sir *Phil. Stapleton.* *M. Nath. Fiennes.* Sir *Ralph Hopton.* Sir *John Hotham.* Sir *Walter Earl.* Sir *Robert Cook.* Sir *Tho. Walsingham.* Sir *Samuel Roll.* *M. Perpoint.* *M. Walt. Long.* Sir *Rich. Cave.* Sir *Ed. Hungerford.* *M. Grimston.* Sir *Christ. Wray.* Sir *Ben. Rudyard.* Sir *John Heppsley.* *M. Herbert Price.* Sir *John Wray.* Sir *Thomas Barrington.* *M. Wheeler.* Sir *Wil. Litton.*

This is the Committee appointed by the former Order, and are to pursue the directions of the former Order; And all that will come are to have voices at this Committee.

A DECLARATION of the House of COMMONS, touching a late Breach of their PRIVILEGES; and for the Vindication thereof, and of divers MEMBERS of the said House.

WHEREAS the Chambers, Studies, and Truncks of Master *Denzil Hollis*, Sir *Arthur Haslerigg*, Master *John Pym*, Master *John Hampden*, and Master *William Strode*, Esquires, Members of the House of Commons, upon Monday the third

third of this instant *January*, by colour of his Majesty's Warrant, have been sealed-up by Sir *William Killigrew*, and Sir *William Flemen*, and others, which is not only against the Priviledge of Parliament, but the Common Liberty of every subject: Which said Members afterwards, the same day, were under the like colour, by Serjeant *Francis*, one of His Majesty's Serjeants at Arms, contrary to all former Presidents demanded of the Speaker sitting in the House of Commons, to be delivered unto him, that he might Arrest them of High Treason. And whereas, afterwards the next day, His Majesty, in His Royal Person, came to the said House, attended with a great multitude of men, armed in warlike manner, with Halberts, Swords, and Pistols, who came-up to the very door of the House, and placed themselves there, and in other places, and passages near to the said House, to the great terrour and disturbance of the Members then sitting; and according to their duty, in a peaceable, and orderly manner, treating of the great Affairs of *England* and *Ireland*. And his Majesty, having placed himself in the Speaker's Chair, demanded of them the Persons of the said Members to be delivered unto him; which is a high Breach of the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament, and Inconsistent with the Liberties and Freedom thereof. And, whereas, afterwards his Majesty did issue-forth several Warrants to divers Officers, under his own hand, for the apprehension of the Persons of the said Members, which by Law he cannot do: there being not all this time, any Legal charge or accusation, or due Process of Law issued against them, nor any pretence of charge made known to that House; all which are against the Fundamental Liberties of the Subject, and the Rights of Parliament: Whereupon we are necessitated, according to our duty, to declare, And we do hereby declare, that, if any Person shall arrest Master *Hollis*, Sir *Arthur Haslerigg*, Master *Pym*, Master *Hampden*, and Master *Strode*, or any of them, or any other Member of Parliament, by pretence or colour of any Warrant issuing-out from the King only, he will be guilty of a Breach of the Liberties of the Subject, and of the Priviledge of Parliament, and will be a publick enemy to the Common-wealth. And that the Arresting of the said Members, or any of them, or of any other Member of Parliament, by any Warrant whatsoever, without a legal Proceeding against them, and without consent of that House, whereof such Person is a Member, is against the Liberty of the Subject, and a Breach of Priviledge of Parliament; and the Person which shall Arrest any of these Persons, or any other Member of the Parliament, is declared a publick enemy of the Common-wealth. Notwithstanding all which, we think fit further to declare, that we are so far from any endeavours to protect any of our Members, that shall be in due manner prosecuted according to the Laws of the Kingdom, and the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament, for Treason, or any other misdemeanors, That none shall be more ready and willing than we ourselves to bring them to a speedy and due trial, being sensible that it equally imports us, as well to see Justice done against them that are criminous, as to defend the just Rights and Liberties of the Subjects and Parliament of *England*.

And whereas, upon several Examinations, taken the seventh day of this instant
January,

January, before the Committee appointed by the House of Commons, to sit in *London*, it did fully appear, that many Souldiers, Papists, and others, to the number of about five hundred, came with His Majesty on Tuesday last, to the said House of Commons, armed with Swords, Pistols, and other Weapons; and divers of them pressed to the door of the said House, thrust-away the Door-keepers, and placed themselves between the said doore and the ordinary Attendants of his Majesty, holding-up their Swords, and some holding-up their Pistols, ready-cock'd, neer the said doore; and saying, "I am a good Marksman; I can hit right, I warrant you;" and they not suffering the said door, according to the custome of Parliament, to be shut, but saying they would have the doore open, and, if any opposition were made against them, they made no question, but they should make their party good, and that they would maintain their party; and, when several Members of the House of Commons were coming into the House, their Attendants desiring that Room might be made for them, some of the said Souldiers answered, A Pox of them, "God confound them," and others said, "A Pox take the House of Commons, let them come and be hanged; what an a-do is here with the House of Commons?" and some of the said Souldiers did likewise violently assault and, by force, disarme, some of the Attendants and Servants of the Members of the House of Commons, waiting in the Roome next the said House; and, upon the King's return out of the said House, many of them, by wicked Oaths, and otherwise, expressed much discontent, that some members of the said House, for whom they came, were not there; and others of them said, "When comes the word?" and, no word being given at his Majestie's coming-out, they cryed "A lane, a lane." Afterwards some of them, being demanded, what they thought the said company intended to have done, answered, "That, questionlesse, in the posture they were set, if the word had been given, they should have fallen upon the House of Commons, and have cut all their throats." Upon all which we are of opinion, that it is sufficiently proved, that the coming of the said Souldiers, Papists, and others with his Majesty to the House of Commons, on Tuesday last, being the fourth of this instant *January*, in the manner aforesaid, was to take-away some of the Members of the said House; and, if they should have found opposition or denial, then to have fallen upon the said House in a hostile manner: And we do hereby declare, that the same was a traiterous designe against the King and Parliament. And, whereas the said Master *Hollis*, Sir *Arthur Haslerigge*, Master *Pym*, Master *Hampden*, and Master *Strode*, upon report of the coming of the said Souldiers, Papists, and others, in the warlike and hostile manner aforesaid, did, with the approbation of the House, absent themselves from the service of the House, for avoiding the great and many inconveniences, which otherwise apparently might have happened: Since which time, a Printed Paper, in the form of a Proclamation, bearing date the sixth day of this instant *January*, hath issued-out for the apprehending and imprisoning of them; Therein suggesting, that, through the conscience of their owne guilt, they were absent and fled, not willing to submit themselves to Justice; We do further declare, that the said Printed Paper is false, scandalous, and illegal, and that, notwithstanding the said Printed Paper, or any

A description of the violent and insolent behaviour of several of the attendants of the King, when he forcibly entered the House of Commons, on the 4th day of *January*, 1641-42.

N. B.

any Warrant issued-out, or any other matter yet appearing against them, or any of them, they may and ought to attend the service of the said House of Commons, and the several Committees now on foot, And that it is lawful for all persons whatsoever to lodge, harbour, or converse with them, or any of them : And whosoever shall be questioned for the same, shall be under the protection and privilege of Parliament.

And we do further declare, That the publishing of several Articles, purporting a form of a charge of high Treason, against the Lord *Kymbolton*, one of the Members of the Lord's House, and against the said Master *Hollis*, Sir *Arthur Hasle-ridge*, Master *Pym*, Master *Hampden*, and Master *Strode*, by Sir *William Killigrew*, Sir *William Flemen*, and others in the Innes of Court, and elsewhere, in the King's Name, was a high Breach of the Privilege of Parliament, a great scandal to his Majesty and his Government : A seditious Act, manifestly tending to the subversion of the Peace of the Kingdom, and an injury and dishonour to the said Members, there being no legal charge, or accusation, against them.

That the privileges of Parliament, and the Liberties of the Subject, so violated and broken, cannot be fully and sufficiently vindicated, unlesse his Majesty will be graciously pleased to discover the names of those persons, who advised his Majesty to issue-out Warrants for the sealing of the Chambers and Studies of the said Members, to send a Serjeant at Arms to the House of Commons, to demand their said Members, to issue-out several Warrants under his Majesty's own hand, to apprehend the said Members ; His Majesty's coming thither in his own Royal Person ; The publishing of the said Articles, and Printed Paper, in the forme of a Proclamation, against the said Members, in such manner as is before declared ; To the end that such persons may receive condigne punishment.

And this House doth further declare, That all such persons as have given any Counsell, or endeavoured to set, or maintain, division or dislike, between the King and Parliament, or have listed their names, or otherwise entred into any combination or agreement, to be aiding, or assisting, to any such counsell or endeavour, or have perswaded any other so to do, or that shall do any the things above-mentioned ; And shall not forthwith discover the same to either House of Parliament, or the Speaker of either of the said Houses respectively, and disclaim it, are declared publike enemies of the State and Peace of this Kingdome, and shall be enquired-of, and proceeded-against, accordingly.

Die Lunæ, 17 Januarrii, 1641. It is this day ordered, by the Commons assembled in Parliament, that this Declaration shall be forthwith published in Print.

Hen. Elsing. Cler. Parl. de Com.

To

*To the KING's Most Excellent MAJESTY, and the LORDS and PEERS
now assembled in PARLIAMENT.*

*The humble Petition and Protestation of all the Bishops and Prelates, now called
by his Majestie's Writs to attend the Parliament, and present about London and
Westminster, for that service.*

THAT, whereas the Petitioners are called-up by several and respective Writs, and under great penalties, to attend in Parliament, and have a cleere and indubitate Right to Vote in Bills, and all other matters whatsoever, debateable in Parliament, by the ancient Customes, Laws, and Statutes of this Realm, and ought to be protected by your Majesty, quietly to attend and prosecute that great Service.

They humbly remonstrate and protest before God, your Majesty, and the Noble Lords and Peers now assembled in Parliament, That, as they have an indubitate Right to sit and Vote in the House of the Lords, so are they (if they may be protected from force and violence) most ready and willing to performe their Duties accordingly. And that they do abominate all Actions, or Opinions, tending to Popery, and the mayntenance thereof; as also, all propension and inclination to any malignant party, or any other side, or party, whatsoever, to the which their own Reasons and Consciences shall not move them to adhere.

But, whereas they have been at several times violently Menaced, Affronted, and Assaulted, by multitudes of people, in their coming to performe their Services in that Honourable House; and lately chased-away, and put in danger of their lives, and can find no redresse, or protection, upon sundry complaints made to both Houses in these particulars.

They likewise humbly protest before your Majesty, and the Noble House of Peers, That, saving unto themselves, all their Rights and Interests of Sitting and Voting in that House at other times, they dare not Sit, or Vote, in the House of Peers, until your Majesty shall further secure them from all Affronts, Indignities, and dangers in the premisses.

Lastly, Whereas their fears are not built upon Phantasies and Conceits, but upon such Grounds and Objects, as may well terrifie men of good Resolutions, and much Constancy: They do, in all duty and humility, protest before your Majesty, and the Peers of that most Honourable House of Parliament, against all Laws, Orders, Votes, Resolutions, and Determinations, as in themselves Null, and of none effect; which in their absence, since the 27th of this instant Moneth of *December*, 1641, have already passed; as, likewise, against all such as shall hereafter passe in that most Honourable House, during the time of this their forced and violent absence from the said most Honourable House; not denying, but, if their absenting of themselves were wilful and voluntary, that most Honourable

House might proceed in all these premises, their absence, or this their Protestation notwithstanding.

And humbly beseeching your Most Excellent Majesty to command the Clerk of that House of Peers, to enter this their Petition and Protestation amongst his Records.

They will ever pray to God so blesse and preserve, &c.

Jo. Eborac, Thomas Duresme, Robert Co. Lich, Jos. Norwich, Jo. Asaphen, Guil. Ba. & Wels, Geo. Hereford, Rob. Oxon, Ma. Ely, Godfr. Glouc., Jo. Peterburg, Mor. Llandaff.

Vera Copia Jo. Brown Cleric. Parliament.

THE House of Lords was pleased on the thirtieth of *December*, to send a Message to the House of Commons, by Sir *John Banks*, and Judge *Reeves*, to desire a present Conference, by a Committee of both Houses touching matters of dangerous and high consequence.

And at the Conference, the Lord-Keeper, in the name of the House of Peers, delivered as followeth :

That this Petition and Protestation of the twelve Bishops, containing matters of high and dangerous Consequence, and such as my Lords are very sensible of, and such as require a speedy and sudden Resolution ; it extending to the deep entrenching upon the Fundamental Priviledges and Being of Parliament : Therefore the Lords have thought fit that this matter, concerning the whole Parliament, may be communicated to the House of Commons ; it being a thing of so great and so general Concernment.

This being thus communicated to the House of Commons, they came to this Resolution, To accuse these twelve Bishops of high Treason, for endeavouring to subvert the fundamental Laws and Being of Parliaments.

And Master *Glyn* was ordered to goe to the Lords, and at their Bar, in the name of the House of Commons, and all the Commons of *England*, To accuse these 12 Prelates of high Treason for endeavouring to subvert the Fundamental Laws of the Realm, and the very Being of Parliaments, manifested by Preferring that Petition and Protestation ; And to desire the Lords that they may be forthwith sequestred from Parliament, and put into safe Custody ; and that their Lordships would appoint a speedy day for the Commons to charge them, and for them to answer : for that the Commons were ready to make good their Charge.

He was further ordered to give the Lords thanks for communicating this Petition, with so much affection and speed, and for expressing their sense thereof.

After Master *Glyn* had delivered this at the Bar, the Lords sent the Black Rod instantly, to find-out these Bishops, and apprehend them ; and by eight of the clock at night, they were all taken, and brought upon their knees to the Bar, and

ten of them committed to the Tower ; and two (in regard of their Age, and indeed of the worthy parts of one of them, the learned Bishop of *Durham*) were committed to the Black Rod.

*A Proposition or Message, sent the 31st of December, 1641, to His
MAJESTIE,*

By the HOUSE of COMMONS, for a GUARD.

Most gracious Sovereign,

WE are sent by the Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses of the House of Commons, your faithful and loyal Subjects (who are ready to lay-downe their lives and fortunes, and spend the last drop of their blood, to maintaine your Crowne and Royal Person, in greatnesse and glory, and do, by us, cast themselves downe at your Royal feet,) to present unto your Majestie their humble desires, upon their great apprehensions, and just fears, of mischievous designes and practises, to ruin and destroy them. There have been several attempts heretofore to bring destruction upon their whole Body at once, and threats and menaces against particular persons. There is a malignant party bitterly envenomed against them, daily gathering strength and confidence, and now come to such height as they have given boldnesse to some to imbrue their hands in the blood of your Subjects, in the face, and at the doors of the Parliament, and at your Majestie's own gates, and have given-out insolent and menacing speeches against the Parliament itselfe. This causeth great distractions among the people in general, and much feare and apprehension in the House of Commons ; That they conceive they cannot, with the safetie of their persons, (upon which the safetie and peace of the whole Kingdome doth now depend,) sit any longer unarmed and unguarded, as they are. They have therefore their recourse unto your Majestie, most humbly beseeching you, that it may stand with your good liking, if they provide for their own safetie, which the very law of Nature and Reason doth allow unto them ; It is their humble desire, that they may have a Guard out of the City of *London*, commanded by the Earle of *Essex*, Lord Chamberlaine of your Majestie's Houshold, of whose fidelity to your Majestie, and the Commonwealth, they have had long experience. By this, your Majestie's Grace and Favour, you will remove their fears, fill them with comfort and assurance, and enable them to serve your Majesty in such a way as shall render your Majesty and your Government happy and glorious. And to this they do most humbly desire your Majestie's gracious and speedy Answer, because their safetie, and the safetie of the whole Kingdome, depends upon it, and will not admit of any delay.

His MAJESTIE'S Answer to the Message, or Proposition, sent the last of December past, by the House of COMMONS, for a GUARD.

WE have taken the last Message from you, touching your desire of a Guard, into serious consideration, and truly with great grief of heart (that, after a whole yeer's sitting of this Parliament, wherein you have obtained those things, for the happinesse and security of yourselves, and the rest of Our Subjects, as no age can equal) instead of reaping in Peace and tranquillity the fruits of your Labours, and of Our Grace and affection to Our People, We should finde Jealousies, Distrusts, and Fears, still so prevalent amongst you, as to induce you to declare them unto Us in so high a measure as you have done at this time.

We are wholly ignorant of the Grounds of your Apprehensions: but this We do Protest before Almighty God, (to whom We must be accountable for those whom he hath intrusted to Our care and Protection,) that had we any knowledge, or belief, of the least design in any, of Violence, either formerly, or at this time, against you, We would pursue them to condigne punishment, with the same severity and detestation, that We would do the greatest attempt upon Our Crown.

We know the duty of that place where God hath set Us, the Protection We owe to all Our Loyal Subjects, and most particularly to you, called to Our Service by Our Writs; And We do engage unto you solemnly the word of a King, That the security of all and every one of you from violence, is, and shall ever be, as much Our care, as the Preservation of Us and Our Children.

And, if this general Assurance shall not suffice to remove your Apprehensions, We will command such a Guard to wait upon you, as We will be responsible for to Him, who hath encharged Us with the Safetie and Protection of Our Subjects.

WHITEHALL, 3d Jan. 1641.

To the KING'S Most Excellent MAJESTY.

The humble Petition of the MAYOR, ALDERMEN, and COMMON COUNCIL, of the City of LONDON.

MAY it please Your Most Excellent Majesty; The often expressions of Your most gracious acceptance of the manifestation of the Petitioners duty and loyalty, and the frequent Declarations of Your Majestie's great care of the good and welfare
of

of this City, and of the true Protestant Religion, and of protecting and preserving the Persons and Priviledges of your great Council, assembled in the High Court of Parliament: Each encouraged the Petitioners to represent the great Dangers, Fears, and Distractions wherein the City now is, by reason of the prevailing progress of the bloody Rebels in *Ireland*, fomented, and Acted by the Papists and their Adherents, and want of Aid to suppress them, and the several intimations they have had both Foreign and at Home, of the driving-on of their Designs, tending to the utter ruin of the Protestant Religion, and of the Lives and Liberties of Your Majestie's loyal Subjects, the putting-out of Persons of Honour and Trust from being Constable and Lieutenant of the Tower, especially in these times, and the preparations there lately made, the fortifying of *Whitehall* with men and munition in an unusual manner: Some of which men, with provoking language and violence, abused divers Citizens passing-by, and the drawing divers swords, and therewith wounding sundry other Citizens in *Westminster-Hall*, that were unarmed: the late endeavours used to the Innes of Court, the calling-in divers Cannoniers, and other assistance, into the Tower, the late discovery of divers fire-works in the hands of a Papist, and the misunderstanding betwixt Your Majesty and Parliament, by reason of misinformation, as they humbly conceive.

Besides all which, the Petitioners fears are exceedingly increased by your Majestie's late going to the House of Commons, attended with a great multitude of armed men, besides Your ordinary Guard, for the apprehending of divers Members of that House, to the endangering of Your Sacred Person, and of the Persons and Priviledges of that Honourable Assembly.

The effects of all which Fears tend, not only to the overthrow of the whole Trade of this City and Kingdom, which the Petitioners already feel in a deep measure; but also threaten the utter ruin of the Protestant Religion, and the Lives and Liberties of all Your Loyal Subjects.

The Petitioners therefore most humbly pray Your Sacred Majesty, That, by the advice of Your great Council in Parliament, the Protestants in *Ireland* may be speedily relieved, The Tower put into the hands of Persons of trust: That, by removal of doubtful and unknown Persons from about *Whitehall* and *Westminster*, a known and approved Guard may be appointed for the safety of Your Majesty and Parliament, and that the Lord *Mandevill*, and the five Members of the House of Commons lately accused, may not be restrained of liberty, or proceeded-against, otherwise than according to the Priviledges of Parliament.

And the Petitioners (as in all duty bound) shall pray for Your Majestie's most long and happy Reign, &c.

HIS

HIS MAJESTIE'S *Answer to the Petition of the MAYOR, ALDERMEN,
and COMMON COUNCIL of the City of LONDON.*

HIS Majesty having fully considered the matter of this Petition, is graciously pleased to declare, That being unalterably resolved to make good all His Expressions and Declarations of His care of this City, Of the true Protestant Religion, and of the Priviledges of Parliament; His Majesty takes in good part, the intimation given by the Petitioners, of the fears and distractions wherein the City now seems to be. And though He conceives He did on Wednesday, at the Guildhall, satisfy most of those particulars, is pleased to add this further Answer.

1. That for the sad business of *Ireland*, His Majesty cannot possibly express a greater sense than He hath done, there being nothing left on His Majestie's part unoffered or undone. And He hoped, by the speedy advice and assistance of His Parliament, that great and necessary Work would be put in a just forwardness, to which His Majesty will contribute all His power: And how zealous He is, and hath been therein, will appear in a Declaration speedily to be set-forth by His Majesty.

2. For the Tower: His Majesty wonders, that having removed a Servant of good Trust and Reputation, from that Charge, only to satisfy the fears of the City, and put in another of unquestionable Reputation, and known ability, the Petitioners should still entertain those fears; and whatever preparation of Strength is there made, is with as great an eye of safety and advantage to the City, as to His Majestie's own Person, and shall be equally employed to both.

3. For the fortifying of *Whitehall* with Men and Munition in an unusual way: His Majesty doubts not, but the Petitioners have observed the strange provocation He hath received to entertain that Guard: That by the disorderly, and tumultuous conflux of people at *Westminster* and *Whitehall*, his Majestie's great Council was not only disquieted, but his own Royal Person in danger, most seditious language being uttered even under His own windows, whilst the examination and punishing such Tumults by the course of Law were interrupted and stopped. And if any citizens were wounded or ill-intreated, His Majesty is confidently assured, that it happened by their own evil and corrupt demeanours.

4. His Majesty knows no other endeavours to the Innes of Court, then a gracious Intimation, That He received the tender of their loyal and dutiful Affections, with very good Approbation and acceptance, and an encouragement given them to continue the same upon all occasions. Neither doth His Majesty know, what discovery hath been lately made of Fire-works in the hands of any Papist.

5. For his going to the House of Commons (when his attendants were no otherwise armed than, as Gentlemen, with swords,) his Majesty is verily persuaded, That, if the Petitioners knew the clear grounds upon which those Persons stand accused of high Treason, and what will be proved against them, (which in due
time

time they shall be acquainted with,) and considered the gentle way his Majesty took for their apprehension (which he preferred before any course of violence, though that way had been very justifiable; for his Majesty is very well assured, that it is notoriously known, That no privilege of Parliament can extend to Treason, Felony, or breach of the Peace,) the Petitioners would believe his Majesty's going thither, was an act of grace and favour to that House, and the most peaceable way of having that necessary service, for the apprehension of those persons, performed; especially, if such Orders have been made (which his Majesty is not willing to believe) for the resistance of all lawful Authority, as are discoursed-of.

6. And for the Proceedings against those Persons mentioned in the Petition; his Majesty ever intended the same should be, with all justice and favour according to the Laws and Statutes of the Realm; to the which all innocent men would cheerfully submit.

And this extraordinary way, of satisfying a Petition of so unusual a nature; his Majesty is confidently persuaded, will be thought the greatest instance can be given of his Majesty's clear intention to his Subjects, and of the singular estimation he hath of the good affections of this City, which he believes in gratitude will never be wanting to his just Commands and Service.

By the KING.

A PROCLAMATION for a General FAST throughout this REALM of ENGLAND.

HIS Majesty, taking into His Princely and Pious consideration, the lamentable and distressed estate of His good Subjects, in His Majesty's kingdom of *Ireland*, and conceiving it to be a just and great occasion calling upon Him, and His people of this His kingdom of *England*, for a general humiliation of all estates of this kingdom before Almighty God, in Prayer and Fasting, for drawing-down His Mercy and Blessing upon that kingdom: His Majesty doth therefore by this His Proclamation, straightly charge and command, that a General, Publick, and Solemn, Fast be kept and holden, as well by abstinence from food as by publick Prayers, Preaching, and hearing of the Word of God, and other Sacred duties, in all Cathedrall, Collegiate, and Parish-Churches and Chapels within this His Majesty's kingdom of *England*, and dominion of *Wales*, (His Majesty's Cities of *London* and *Westminster* only excepted, where it hath already been observed,) on the twentieth day of this present Month of January.

And His Majesty doth further, by this His Proclamation, straightly charge and command, that a General, Publick, and Solemn Fast be kept and holden, as well
by

by abstinence from food, as by publick Prayers, Preaching, and hearing of the Word of God, and other sacred Duties, in all Cathedral, Collegiate, and Parish Churches, and Chapels, within this kingdom of *England*, and dominion of *Wales*, (without any exception) on the last Wednesday of the month of February next following the date hereof, and from thenceforth to continue, on the last Wednesday of every Month, during the Troubles in the said kingdom of *Ireland*. All which, His Majesty doth expressly charge and command, shall be reverently and devoutly performed by all His loving Subjects, as they tender the favour of Almighty God, and would avoid His just indignation against this Land, and upon pain of such punishments as His Majesty can justly inflict, upon all such as shall contemn or neglect so religious a Work.

Given at the Court at Whitehall the eighth day of January, in the seventeenth year of His Majesty's Reign of Great Britain, France, and Ireland.

God save the King.

The KING'S MESSAGE to both Houses, January 12, 1641.

HIS Majesty, taking notice that some conceive it disputable whether His proceedings against my Lord *Kymbolton*, Master *Hollis*, Sir *Arthur Haslerigg*, Master *Pym*, Master *Hampden*, and Master *Strode*, be legal and agreeable to the Priviledges of Parliament, and being very desirous to give satisfaction to all men, in all matters that may seem to have relation to Priviledge; is pleased to wave his former Proceedings: and, all doubts by this means being settled, when the minds of men are composed, his Majesty will proceed thereupon in an unquestionable way: And assures his Parliament, that upon all occasions he will be as careful of their Priviledges, as of his Life or his Crown.

To the KING'S Most Excellent MAJESTY.

The humble PETITION of the INHABITANTS of the County of BUCKINGHAMSHIRE.

Sheweth,

THAT your Petitioners, having, by virtue of your Highness's Writ, chosen *John Hampden* Knight for our Shire, in whose loyalty We, his Countrymen and Neighbours, have ever had good cause to confide: However, of late, to our no less amazement than grief, we find him with other Members of Parliament, accused of Treason: And having taken to our serious consideration, the manner of their

their Impeachment, we cannot but (under your Majestie's favour) conceive that it doth so oppugne the Rights of Parliament, to the maintainance whereof our Protestation binds us, that we believe it is the malice, which their zeal to your Majestie's Service and the State, hath contracted in the enemies to your Majesty, the Church, and Common-wealth, hath occasioned this foul Accusation, rather than any deserts of theirs, who do likewise, through their sides, wound the Judgment and Care of us your Petitioners, and others, by whose choice they were presented to the House.

Your Petitioners therefore most humbly pray, that Master Hampden, and the rest that lie under the burden of that Accusation, may enjoy the just Priviledges of Parliament.

And your Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

Windsor, 13 Jan. 1641.

HIS Majesty being graciously pleased to let all his Subjects understand his care, not knowingly to violate, in the least degree, any of the Priviledges of Parliament, hath therefore (lately) by a Message sent by the Lord-Keeper, signified, That he is pleased, because of the doubt that hath been raised of the manner, to Wave his former proceedings against Master *Hampden* and the rest, mentioned in this Petition; concerning whom, his Majesty intends to proceed in an unquestionable way. And then, his Majesty saith, It will appear, that he had so sufficient grounds to question them, as he might not in Justice to the kingdom, and honour to himself, have forborn: And yet his Majesty had much rather, that the said Persons should prove innocent than be found guilty: However, he cannot conceive that their Crimes can in any sort reflect upon those his good Subjects who elected them to serve in Parliament.

Die Jovis, 13. Januarii, 1641.

WHEREAS Information hath been given to the Parliament, that the Lord *Digby* (son to the Earl of *Bristol*) and Colonel *Lunsford*, with others, have gathered Troops of Horse, and have appeared in a warlike manner, at *Kingston upon Thames*, in the County of *Surry*, (where the Magazine of Arms for that part of the County lies) to the terrour and affright of His Majestie's good Subjects, and disturbance of the publick weal of the Kingdom:

It is this day ordered, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That the Sheriffs of the severall Counties of *England* and *Wales*, calling to their assistance the Justices of the Peace, and the Trained-Bands of those severall Counties, (or so many of them as shall be necessary for the service) shall suppress all unlawful Assemblies gathered-together, to the disturbance of the publick peace of the

Kingdom, in their several Counties respectively: And that they take care to secure the said Counties, and all the Magazines in them.

Die Veneris, viz. 14. die Jun. 1641.

Ordered by the Lords in Parliament, that this Order be printed and published in all the Market-towns in this Kingdom.

John Brown, Cler. Parliament.

HIS MAJESTY'S *Profession and Addition to His last MESSAGE to the PARLIAMENT, January 14, 1641.*

HIS Majesty (being no less tender of the Priviledges of Parliament, and thinking himself no less concerned, that they be not broken, and that they be asserted and vindicated whensoever they are broken, than the Parliament itself,) hath thought fit to add to his last Message this Profession, "That in all his proceedings against the Lord *Kymbolton*, Master *Hollis*, Sir *Arthur Haslerig*, Master *Pym*, Master *Hampden*, and Master *Strode*, He had never the least intention of violating the least Priviledge of Parliament; And, in case any doubt of Breach of Priviledges remain, will be willing to clear that, and assert those, by any reasonable way that His Parliament shall advise Him to." Upon confidence of which, He no way doubts His Parliament will forthwith lay by all Jealousies, and apply themselves to the publick and pressing Affairs, and especially to those of *Ireland*, wherein the good of this Kingdom, and the true Religion, (which shall ever be His Majesty's first care) are so highly and so nearly concerned: And His Majesty assures himself, that His care of their Priviledges will increase their tenderness of His lawful Prerogative, which are so necessary to the mutual defence of each other; and both which will be the foundation of a perpetual perfect-Intelligence between His Majesty and his Parliaments, and of the happiness and prosperity of his people.

The Questions propounded to Master ATTORNEY GENERAL, by the House of COMMONS, and his Answer thereunto.

Question 1.

WHETHER did you contrive, frame, or advise, the said Articles, or any of them?

Answer.

I will deal ingenuously and freely, and shall say the same which before I did to your Lordships; I need no longer time to answer this: I did none of these three, neither contrive, frame, or advise these Articles, or any of them, and will be content to die if I did it.

Question

Question 2.

Whether do you know the truth of the said Articles, or any of them, in your own knowledge, or by information?

Answer.

I doe know nothing of my own knowledge of the truth of this, nor of any particular, nor have heard by information; This I speake upon the truth of an honest man, and nothing was ever said unto me of this, but by my Master, the King.

Question 3.

Whether will you undertake to make good the said Articles, or any of them, when you shall be thereunto called by due course of Law?

Answer.

By my former expression you may discern what answer I can make to this; I cannot undertake to make one tittle good in them, otherwise than my Master shall command me and enable me: for of myself I cannot, nor will not, no more than one that never heard of them.

Question 4.

From whom received you these Articles; and by whose direction and advice did you exhibit them.

Answer.

It was by my Master the King, his expresse command, I did exhibit them; from his hand I did receive them.

Question 5.

Whether had you any testimony, or proof, of these Articles, before the exhibiting of them.

Answer.

For the exhibiting of these Articles I received His Majestie's command.

To which Answer Master Serjeant *Wilde* replied, "The House of Commons desires you to answer, whether you had any prooffe, or testimony, or any information of any proof of these Articles; they in no kind desire to know *what* you had." To this Master Attorney answered, "There is nothing in this world that I shall not be most ready to; but this I desire time to consider of, in regard of a trust between a Master and Servant."

Die. Sab. 15 Jan. 1641.

It is resolved by the House of Commons, since the said Answer of Master Attorney-General, That he hath broken the priviledge of Parliament, in preferring the said Articles, and that the same is illegal, and he criminous for so doing; and that a charge be sent-up to the Lords in the name of the House of Commons, against Master Attorney, to have satisfaction for this great scandal and injury to the Members thereof, unlesse, by Thursday next, he bring-in his prooffe, and make good (if he can) the said Articles against the said persons, or any of them.

HIS MAJESTIE'S LETTER to the Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal of
ENGLAND, concerning Sir Edward Herbert, Knight, &c.

CHARLES REX.

RIGHT trusty and well-beloved Counsellor, We greet you well, and have thought good hereby to certifie that We did the third of *January* last, deliver to Our Attourney certain Articles of Accusation ingrossed in *paper*, a Copy whereof We have sent here inclosed, and did then command him in Our Name, to acquaint Our House of Peers, that divers great and Treasonable designs and practices against us and the State had come to *Our knowledge*; for which We commanded him, in Our Name, to accuse the six persons in the said paper mentioned of High Treason, and other high misdemeanors, by delivering the paper to Our said House, and to desire to have it read, and further to desire in Our name, that a Select Committee of Lords, might be appointed to take the examination of such Witnesses as We would produce, and as formerly had been done in cases of like Nature, according to the Justice of the House, and the Committee to be under a command of *secresie* as formerly, and further in Our Name to ask liberty to add and alter, if there should be cause: We do further declare, that Our said Attorney, *did not advise*, or contrive the said Articles, nor had any thing to do with them, or in advising any breach of Priviledge that followed after. And for what he did in obedience to our commands, We conceive he was bound by oath and the duty of his place, and by the trust by Us reposed in him so to do: And, if he had refused to obey Us therein, We would have questioned him for breach of Oath, Duty, and Trust.

But now, having declared, that we find cause wholly to desist from proceeding against the persons accused, We have commanded him to proceed no further therein, nor to produce nor *discover* any proof concerning the same.

Given at *Royston*, the fourth of *March*, 1641.

HIS MAJESTIE'S MESSAGE, sent to both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT,
20 *January*, 1641.

HIS Majestie, perceiving the manifold distractions which are now in this Kingdom, which cannot but bring great inconvenience and mischiefs to this whole Government; In which as His Majestie is most chiefly interested, so He holds himselfe, by many Reasons, most obliged to do what in Him lies, for the preventing thereof; Though he might justly expect (as most proper for the duty of Subjects) that Propositions for the remedies of these Evils ought rather to come to Him than *from* him; yet (His fatherly care of all His people being such, that He will rather lay-by any particular respect of His owne Dignity than that any time should be lost for prevention of these threatening Evils, which cannot admit the
- delays

delays of the ordinary proceedings in Parliament) doth think fit to make this ensuing Proposition to both Houses of Parliament: "That they will, with all speed, fall into a serious consideration of all those particulars, which they should hold necessary, as well for the upholding and maintaining of His Majestie's just and Regal Authority, and for the settling of His Revenue, As for the present and future establishment of their Priviledges; The free and quiet enjoying of their Estates and Fortunes; The Liberties of their Persons; The security of the true Religion now professed in the Church of *England*; And the settling of Ceremonies in such a manner as may take-away all just offence." Which when they shall have digested, and composed into one entire body, that so His Majestie and themselves may be able to make the more cleare Judgement of them; it shall then appeare, by what his Majestie shall do, how far He hath been from intending, or designing, any of those things, which the too great Feares and Jealousies of some Persons seem to apprehend; And how ready He will be to equal and exceed the greatest Examples of the most indulgent Princes in their Acts of Grace and Favour to their people. So that, if all the present Distractions (which so apparently threaten the ruine of this Kingdom) do not (by the blessing of Almighty God) end in an happy and blessed accommodation; His Majesty will then be ready to call Heaven and Earth, God and Man, to wnesse, that it hath not failed on His part.

The King's Proposition to both Houses of Parliament.

Die Iovis, 20 Januarii, 1641.

Lords House,

WHEREAS the Lords in the Upper House of Parliament, do find that there are many Petitions concerning private persons depending now before their Lordships, and conceive that many more may be brought into that House, if timely advertisement be not given to the contrary; which may occasion the Repair and Attendance, of divers of His Majestie's loving Subjects upon their Lordships, who cannot give a dispatch to private businesses, by reason of the many publick and great Affaires that now lie before them, concerning the Safety and Weale of His Majestie's Kingdomes:

It is therefore thought fit, and so Ordered by the Lords in Parliament, That all private businesses shall be hereby deferred and put-off, until the 21st of *March* next; Whereof this House doth hereby give notice to all His Majestie's loving people, to prevent the charge and trouble which otherwise the Petitioners might be put unto, in repairing unto this House, at this time.

The consideration of Petitions concerning private Persons is put-off to the 21st day of next March, 1641-42.

HIS MAJESTIE'S LETTER, *January 24, In ANSWER to the PETITION of both Houses of PARLIAMENT, as it was presented by the Earl of NEWPORT, and the Lord SEYMER, January 21, 1641.*

HIS Majesty having seen and considered the Petition presented unto Him, the one and twentieth of this instant, by the Earl of *Newport*, and the Lord *Seymer*, in

in the Names of both Houses of Parliament, Is pleased to return this Answer. That He doth well approve of the desire of Houses, for the speedy proceeding against the persons mentioned in the Petition; whereof His Majestie, finding the great inconveniences by the first mistake in the way, hath endured some delayes, that He might be informed in what Order to put the same. But, before that that be agreed-upon, His Majesty thinks it unusual, or unfit, to discover what prooffe is against them, and therefore holds it necessary, (lest a new mistake should breed more delayes; which His Majesty, to His power, will avoid,) “ That it be resolved “ whether His Majesty be bound, in respect of Priviledges, to proceed against them “ by Impeachment in Parliament; Or whether He be at liberty to prefer an Indtment at the Common Law, in the usual way, or have His choice of either:” Whereupon His Majesty will give such speedy directions for Prosecution, as shall shew His Majestie’s desire to satisfie both Houses, and to put a determination to the business.

SCOTS COMMISSIONERS PROPOSITION, 24 January 1641, Touching
the sending of the 2500 Men into IRELAND.

CONCERNING the Proposition made to Us, the 22nd of January, from the Committees of both Houses for the Transporting presently to *Ireland* of the 2500 Men now on foot in *Scotland*; We, having no Instruction for that end, cannot, by Ourselves, condescend otherwise than upon the closure of the Treatie: but shall most heartily represent it to the Council of *Scotland*, and second the same with our earnest desires, that every thing may be done, which may contribute to the preservation of that Kingdom, and may testifie our Brotherly affection to this. And, that we may be the more able to move the Council to condescend to the same, We desire the Propositions following to be granted.

1. That provision of Victuals be presently sent to *Carrickfergus*, to be sold to our souldiers at reasonable rates, answerable to their Pay.
2. That an Order be set-downe how they shall be paid there, and from whom they may require the same.
3. That they have the Command and keeping of the Towne and Castle of *Carrickfergus*, with power to them to remain still within the same, or to enlarge their Quarters, and to go abroad in the Countrey upon such occasions, as their Officers in their discretion shall think expedient for the good of that Kingdome. And, if it shall be thought fit that any Regiments, or Troops, in that Province, shall joine with them, that they shall receive Orders from the Commanders of our Forces.
4. That provision of Match, Powder, and Ball, be presently sent to *Carrickfergus*; and that, whatever Armes, Ammunition, or Artillery, shall be sent-over with them from *Scotland*, the like quantitie shall be sent from hence to *Scotland*, whensoever the same shall be demanded.

5. That

5. That a part of the 30,000 pounds of the Brotherly-Assistance be presently advanced to Us, which although, in a just proportion to these men, it will amount but to 7500 pounds, yet, for the better furthering of the Service, we desire 10,000 pounds, if it may stand with your convenience.

6. That their Pay, which was condescended unto from the eighth of *December*, be presently advanced to the eighth of *February* next, against which time we are confident they shall be ready to march.

7. That a man of warre, or some Merchants Ships, be sent from *Bristol, Westchester, or Dublin*, to *Lochryan*, for a safe Convoy and Guard of the Passage, because they being in open Boats, may be subject to inconveniences from the Enemy, whose Frigates we hear are towards that coast.

8. That the sending-over of these men be without prejudice to the proceeding of the Treaty, which we desire may go-on without any delay.

Westm. 24 Jan. 1641.

Ia. Prymrose.

Resolved, that the House of Commons doth agree unto these particular Propositions now presented from the Scots Commissioners.

Ordered, that the House of Peeres, agreeth with the House of Commons, unto these Propositions from the Scots Commissioners, in every particular.

HIS MAJESTIE'S ANSWER to the Proposition above-mentioned, given the 26th of Jan. 1641, at Windsor.

HIS Majestie, having perused and considered these eight Propositions presented by the Scots Commissioners, doth willingly consent to them all, except only the third, which His Majesty doth not approve, and wisheth the Houses to take that Article again into consideration, as a business of very great importance, which His Majesty doubts may be prejudicial to the Crown of *England*, and the service intended: And, if the Houses desire it, His Majesty shall not be unwilling to speak with the Scots Commissioners, to see what satisfaction He can give them therein.

HIS MAJESTIE'S further ANSWER to the third Article of the said Proposition of the Scots-Commissioners, resolved on the 26th, and given on the 27th of January, 1641, at Windsor.

AFTER that His Majesty had (yesterday) sent His opinion concerning the Articles which the Scots Commissioners gave-in, touching the present supplies to be sent for *Ireland*, they themselves waited on him, their chief Errand being the self-same business; Whereupon His Majesty thought it fit to persuade them (as much

much as he could) to alter the third Article, because he conceived it might be a prejudice to the Crown of *England*, the particulars whereof were too long to relate: Their only Argument that weighed with him, being, That (since it was agreed upon by both Houses of Parliament, and that the strength of His Majesty's Argument was, that Article implied too great a Trust for Auxiliary Forces) they were in good hope that His Majesty, being their native King, would not shew less trust in them, than their Neighbour Nation. So that the Question being (merely) of Trust, and that both Houses of Parliament have thought fit to grant it (though His Majesty could wish that that third Article were drawn more for the advantage of the Crown of *England* than he conceives it is) His Majesty cannot but wholly admit of the Advice of his Parliament in this particular, especially since His Majesty perceives, that insisting upon the same would breed a great delay in the necessary supply of his Kingdom of *Ireland*.

To the KING'S Most Excellent MAJESTY.

The humble PETITION of the KNIGHTS, CITIZENS, and BURGESSES,
of the COMMONS HOUSE, now in PARLIAMENT assembled January
26, 1641-42.

Humbly sheweth,

THAT, whereas the Houses of Parliament have received a grievous Message from your Majesty, dated the twentieth day of this instant January, your Petitioners return to your Majesty most humble thanks, resolving to take it into speedy and serious consideration. And, to enable them, with security, to discharge their Duties therein, they desired the House of Peers to join with them, in humbly beseeching your sacred Majesty to raise-up unto them a sure ground of safety and confidence, by putting the Tower, and other principal Forts of the Kingdom, and the whole Militia thereof, into the hands of such Persons as your Parliament might confide-in, and as should be recommended unto your Majesty by both Houses of Parliament, that (all Fears and Jealousies being laid-aside,) they might, with all cheerfulness, proceed to such resolutions as, they hoped, would lay a sure foundation of Honour, Greatness, and Glory to your Majesty, and your Royal Posterity; and of Happiness and Prosperity unto your Subjects throughout all your Dominions. Wherein the House of Peers have refused to join with your Petitioners. They, notwithstanding, no way discouraged, but confiding in your Majesty's Goodness to your people, do therefore make their humble address to your Majesty, to beseech you, That the Tower of *London*, and other principal Forts, and the whole Militia of the Kingdom, may be put into the hands of such persons as shall be recommended unto your Majesty by your Petitioners; not doubting but they shall receive a gracious and speedy Answer to this their humble desire; without which, in all humane Reason, the great distractions of this Kingdom must needs overwhelm it with misery and ruin.

And your Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

His

That the Tower of London, and the other Fortresses of the Kingdom, and the whole Militia thereof, be put into the hands of Persons recommended by the two Houses of Parliament.

HIS MAJESTY'S ANSWER to the PETITION of the COMMONS HOUSE,
January 28, 1641.

HIS Majesty having seriously considered of the Petition presented to Him from the House of Commons, on Wednesday, the twenty-sixth of this Month, Returns this Answer :

THAT he was in good hope His gracious Message, of the twentieth of this Month, to both Houses, would have produced some such overture, which, by offering what is fit on their parts to do, and asking what is proper for His Majesty to grant, might beget a mutual confidence in each other.

Concerning the Tower of *London*, His Majesty did not expect, that, having preferred a person * of a known Fortune, and unquestionable Reputation, to that Trust, He should be pressed to remove him, without any particular charge objected against him ; and, therefore, returns this Answer :

That, if, upon due examination, any particular shall be presented to His Majesty, whereby it may appear, that His Majesty was mistaken in His opinion of this Gentleman, and that he is unfit for the Trust committed to him, His Majesty will make no scruple of discharging him : But, otherwise, His Majesty is obliged, in justice to himself, to preserve his own work, lest his favour, and good Opinion, may prove a disadvantage and misfortune to his Servants, without any other Accusation : Of which, His Majesty doubts not, His House of Commons would be so tender (as of a business wherein His Majesty's honour is so much concerned), that, if they find no material exception against this Person, they will rather endeavour to satisfy and reform the fears of other men, than, by complying with them, press His Majesty to any Resolution which may seem so much to reflect upon his Honour and Justice.

For the Forts and Castles of the Kingdom, His Majesty is resolved that they shall always be in such hands (and only such) as the Parliament may safely confide in ; but the nomination of any Persons to those Places (being so principal and inseparable a Flower of his Crown, vested in Him, and derived unto Him from His Ancestors, by the fundamental Laws of the Kingdom) He will reserve to Himself ; in bestowing whereof, as His Majesty will take care that no corrupt, or sinister, courses shall prevail with Him : so He is willing to declare, That He shall not be induced to express that favour so soon to any persons, as to those whose good demeanour shall be eminent in, or to His Parliament. And if He now hath, or shall, at any time, by mis-information, confer such a Trust upon an undeserving Person, He is, and will always be, ready to leave him to the Wisdom and Justice of His Parliament.

For the Militia of the Kingdom, (which, by the Law, is subject to no command, but of His Majesty, and of Authority lawfully derived from Him) when any particular course, for the ordering the same (which His Majesty holds very

* Sir John Byron.

necessary for the peace and security of His Kingdom) shall be considered and digested by His Parliament, and proposed to His Majesty; His Majesty will return such an Answer, as shall be agreeable to His Honour, and the safety of His People, His Majesty being resolved only to deny those things, the granting whereof would alter the fundamental Laws, and endanger the very foundation, upon which the publick happiness, and welfare of his People, is founded and constituted, and would nourish a greater, and more destructive, Jealousy between the Crown and the Subject, than any of those which would seem to be taken-away by such a satisfaction.

And His Majesty doth not doubt, that his having granted more than ever King hath granted, will ever persuade his House of Commons to ask more than ever Subjects have asked. And if they shall acquaint His Majesty with the particular Grounds of their Doubts and Fears, He will very willingly apply Remedies proportionable to those Fears; For His Majesty calls God to witness, that the preservation of the publick peace, The Law, and the Liberty of the Subject, is, and shall always be, as much His Majestie's care and industry, as of his life, or the Lives of his dearest children.

And, therefore, His Majesty doth conjure his House of Commons, by all the Acts of Duty and favour they have received from him this Parliament; By their hopes of future happiness in His Majesty, and in one another; By their love of Religion, and the peace of this Kingdom, (in which that of *Ireland* cannot be forgotten) That they will not be transported by Jealousies and Apprehensions of possible dangers, to put themselves, or His Majesty, into real and present inconveniences, but that they will speedily pursue the way proposed by His Majestie's former Message, which, in human Reason, is the only way to compose the Distractions of the Kingdom, and, with God's blessing, will restore a great Measure of felicity to King and People.

Die Sabbathi, 29 Januarii, 1641.

An ORDER made by both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT, to prevent the going-over of POPISH COMMANDERS into IRELAND, and also to hinder the transportation of Arms, Ammunition, Money, Corn, Victuals, and all other provision to the REBELS, and for the sending-back of the IRISH PAPISTS lately come-over.

WHEREAS great numbers of Papists, both English and Irish, (some whereof have been, and are, Commanders in the Wars; and others, such as have Estates in *England*;) have gone-out of this Kingdom into *Ireland*, immediately before, and during, the barbarous and bloody Rebellion there, and traiterously joined themselves with the Rebels of that Nation against His Majesty, and the Crown of *England*; and, likewise, divers other Popish Commanders, and such as have Estates in *England*, are daily preparing to go thither, to the same wicked ends:

And

And great store of Armes, Ammunition, Money, Corn, and other Victuals; and Provisions, have been sent, and are daily preparing to be sent to that Kingdom, for the assistance, and encouragement of those Rebels: for prevention whereof, the Lords and Commons, in this present Parliament assembled, Do hereby Order, and straightly charge, and command, all Sheriffs, Justices of the Peace, Mayors, Bailiffs, Constables, and other His Majestie's Officers, within the Realm of *England*, and Dominions of *Wales*; That they apprehend, and examine all such persons, as they shall suspect to be Papists, and going-out of this Kingdom, or the Dominion of *Wales*, into *Ireland*. And that they also make stay of all Arms, Munition, Money, Corn, and other Victuals, and Provisions, which they shall suspect to be preparing for transportation into *Ireland*, for the aid, and relief of the Rebels there; and to give speedy notice thereof, unto the Parliament.

And whereas, Also, divers poor People, Men, Women, and Children, of the Irish Nation, and Papists, have lately come, in great numbers, out of *Ireland*, into *Cornwall*, *Devon*, and other parts of this Kingdom, where they have been, and are very disorderly, and much terrify the Inhabitants, where they come, and due care is not taken in all places, for the suppressing, and punishing of them: The Lords and Commons in this Parliament Assembled, Do hereby further Order, and require, all Officers before-mentioned, That they put the Laws in due execution, against such wandering Irish Papists, before expressed, and that they cause them to be forthwith conveyed-Back into that Kingdom.

This Order was read, and by Vote upon the Question, assented-unto, and ordered to be fair-written, and sent-up to the Lords, by Master Carew.

Master *Carew* brings answer, That the Lords do fully agree with the House in this Order.

Hen. Elsing, Cler. Parl. Dom. Com.

To the KING's Most Excellent MAJESTY,

The humble Petition of the LORDS and COMMONS assembled in PARLIAMENT.

Most gracious Sovereign,

THE present Evils and Calamities, wherewith your Kingdomes are most miserably entangled, the imminent dangers which threaten your Royal Person, and all your People, have caused us, your most faithful and obedient Subjects, the Lords and Commons in this present Parliament, with thankfulness to entertaine, and with all earnestnesse of affection and endeavour, to pursue the gracious Proposition and Direction, which, not long since, we have received from your Majesty: And we have thereupon taken into our most serious consideration, the ways and means of securing the safety of your Royal Person, Preserving the Honour and Authority

of your Crowne, Removing all Jealousies betwixt your Majesty and your People, Suppressing the Rebellion in *Ireland*, Preventing the Fears and Dangers in this Kingdome, and the mischievous Designs of those who are Enemies to the Peace of it. And that we may with more Comfort and Security, accomplish our duties herein, we most humbly beseech your Majesty, That you will be pleased forthwith, to put the Tower of *London*, and all other Forts, and the whole *Militia* of the Kingdome, into the hands of such Persons as shall be recommended unto your Majesty by both Houses of Parliament, which they assure themselves will be a hopeful entrance into those Courses, which, (through God's blessing,) shall be effectual for the removing all diffidence and mis-apprehension, betwixt your Majesty and your People, and for Establishing and Enlarging the Honour, Greatnesse, and Power of your Majesty and Royal Posterity, and for the restoring and confirming the Peace and Happinesse of your loyal Subjects, in all your Dominions.

And to this our most necessary Petition, we in all humility expect your Majestie's speedy and gracious Answer, the great Distractions and Distempers of the Kingdome not admitting any delay.

To the KING's Most Excellent MAJESTY.

*The humble Petition of the LORDS and COMMONS now assembled in
PARLIAMENT.*

Sheweth,

THAT whereas your Majestie, by a Message sent to both Houses of Parliament, signified an Apprehension of some Treasonable matter, to have been committed by the Lord *Kymbolton*, Master *Hollis*, Sir *Arthur Haslerigg*, Master *Pym*, Master *Hampden*, and Master *Strode*; and thereby declared your Majestie's intention to proceed against them in an unquestionable way: We the Lords and Commons in this present Parliament assembled, did make our humble Petition to your Majesty, to beseech your Majesty to give directions, that your Parliament might be informed, before Tuesday then next ensuing, what prooffe there was against them, that accordingly there might be a Legal and Parliamentary proceeding against them, whereby they might be brought to condigne punishment, if guilty; or discharged from so heavy an Accusation, if innocent: And whereas your Majesty was graciously pleased, in Answer to that Petition, to expresse Your good approbation of the desire of both Houses, for the speedy proceeding against the Persons in that Petition mentioned; yet your Majesty gave no other satisfaction to their desire than this, That Your Majestie held it necessary, lest a new mistake should breed more delays, "that it should be resolved, whether your Majesty were bound, in respect of Priviledges, to proceed against them by impeachment in that Parliament, or to be left at liberty to prefer an Indictment at the Common Law, in the usual way, or to have your choice of either;" and we finding
still,

still, that there is no Legal Parliamentary proceeding against them, and that they still lie under the burden of that high Charge, We think it our duty, once again to beseech your Majesty to give directions, that your Parliament may be informed before Friday next, what proof there is against them, that accordingly they may be called to a Legal Trial, it being the undoubted Right, and Priviledge of Parliament, that no Member of Parliament can be proceeded against, without the consent of Parliament: And this we most humbly conceive ourselves obliged to ask, it being no less agreeable with justice, to have the innocency of Parties unjustly charged, manifested, then to bring the Nocent to their just punishment.

His MAJESTIE'S Answer to two Petitions of the LORDS and COMMONS, delivered 2d February, 1641.

HIS Majesty, having well considered of the two several Petitions, presented unto him on Wednesday, the second of this moneth, from both Houses of Parliament, and being desirous to expresse how willing He is to apply a remedy, not only to your Dangers, but even to your Doubts and Fears; He, therefore, to that Petition, which concerns the Forts and Militia of this Kingdom, returns this Answer; That, when he shall know the extent of Power which is intended to be established in those persons, whom you desire to be the Commanders of the Militia, in the several Counties; And likewise to what time it shall be limited, that no power shall be executed by His Majestie alone, without the advice of Parliament;

Then He will declare, That (for the securing you from all Dangers, or Jealousies of any,) His Majesty will be content to put in all the places, both of Forts, and Militia, in the several counties, such persons as both the Houses of Parliament shall either approve, or recommend unto Him, so that you declare before unto His Majesty, the names of the persons whom you approve, or recommend: unless such persons shall be named, against whom he shall have just, and unquestionable exceptions.

To the other Petition, concerning the members of either House, His Majesty returns this Answer, That as He once conceived, that He had ground enough to accuse them, so now His Majesty finds as good cause, wholly to desert any prosecution of them.

The King gives up his intention, of prosecuting the accused members of Parliament, for High Treason.

And, for a further testimony of His Majestie's real Intention towards all His loving Subjects, (some of whom, happily, may be involved in some unknowing and unwilling Errors,) For the better composing, and settling of all Feares and Jealousies, of what kind soever, His Majesty is ready

to

to grant as free and general a Pardon, for the full contentment of all His loving Subjects, as shall, by the approbation of both Houses of Parliament, be thought convenient for that purpose.

His MAJESTIE'S Consent, for the Princessc MARIE'S going to HOLLAND, and Her MAJESTY to accompany Her thither.

HIS Majesty, being very much pressed by the States Ambassadour, to send the Princessc His Daughter, immediately into *Holland*: And, being likewise earnestly desired by His Royal Consort the Queen, to give her Majesty leave to accompany Her Daughter thither; Hath thought fit to consent to both desires, and to make this his Majestie's Consent, and her Majestie's Resolution, knowne to His Parliament.

Her MAJESTIE'S Answer, to a Message of both HOUSES.

THE Queen, having received a Message from both Houses of Parliament, by the Earle of *Newport*, and the Lord *Seymor*, intimating unto her, that she had been told that the House of Commons had an intention to accuse Her of high Treason, and that Articles to that purpose had been shewed unto her, Returns this Answer.

That there was a general report, of an Accusation, intended against her, but she never saw any Articles in writing, and having no certain Author, either for the one, or for the other, she gave little credit thereunto, and much lesse now, being assured from the House of Commons, that never any such thing came into their thoughts.

Nor will she believe they would lay an Aspersion upon her, who hath ever been very unapt so farre to misconstrue the Actions of any one person, and much more the proceedings of Parliament, and shall, at all times, wish a happy understanding between the King and his people.

His MAJESTIE'S Message, sent to the House of COMMONS, concerning LICENCES, granted by His MAJESTY, to several persons, to passe into IRELAND, February 7, 1641-42.

HIS Majesty, taking notice of a Speech, pretending in the Title, to have been delivered by Master *Pym*, in a Conference: and Printed by Order of the House of Commons, in which it is affirmed, That, since the stop upon the Ports, against all Irish Papists, by both Houses, many of the chief Commanders, now in the head of the Rebels, have been suffered to passe by his Majestie's immediate Warrant;
And

And, being very certain of having used extreme Caution in the granting of Passports into *Ireland*; So that, He conceives, either this Paper, not to have been so delivered and Printed as it pretends, or this House to have received some misinformation :

His Majesty would be resolved, whether this Speech were so delivered, and Printed; and, if it were, would have this House to review, upon what Informations that particular was grounded; that either that may be found, upon re-examination, to have been false, and both this House, and His Majesty, injured by it; Or that His Majesty may know, by what means, and by whose fault, His Authority hath been so highly abused as to be made to conduce to the assistance of that Rebellion, which He so much detests and abhors, and that He may see Himself fully vindicated from all reflections of the least suspicion of that kind.

The Answer of the House of COMMONS.

YOUR Majestie's most loyal and faithful Subjects, the Commons, now assembled in Parliament, have taken into their serious consideration the Message received from Your Majesty, the 7th of this instant, *February*, and do acknowledge, that the Speech therein mentioned to be delivered by M. *Pym*, in a Conference, was printed by their Order, and that what was therein delivered, was agreeable to the sense of the House. And touching that passage, wherein it is affirmed, that, since the stop upon the Ports, against all Irish Papists, by both Houses, many of the chief Commanders, now in the head of the Rebels, have been suffered to passe by your Majestie's immediate Warrants, they present your Majesty with this, their humble Answer.

That they have received divers advertisements, concerning the several persons, (Irish papists and others,) which have obtained your Majestie's immediate Warrants, for their passing into *Ireland*, since the Order of Restraint, of both Houses, some of which, (as they have been informed,) since their coming into *Ireland*, have joined with the Rebels, and been Commanders amongst them, and some others have been stayed, and are yet in safe custody; particularly the Lord *Delwin*, and four other persons in his company, whereof one is thought to be a Priest, one Colonel *Butler*, brother to the Lord *Minyart*, now in Rebellion, and Sir *George Hamilton*, all which are papists; And one other (as is reported) being son of the Lord *Netersfield*, whose father, and brother, are both in Rebellion: the particular names of others, we have not yet received, but doubt not, but upon examination, they may be discovered.

And your Majestie's most faithful Subjects, are very sorry, that the Extream Caution which your Majesty hath used, hath been so ill seconded with the diligence and faithfulness of your Ministers, and that your Royal Authority should be so highly abused; Although, (as it was exprest in that Speech by Master *Pym*.) we believe it was by the procurement of some evil Instruments, too neer your
Royal

Royal person, without your Majestie's knowledge, and intention. And we beseech your Majesty, to take such course, that not only your Honour may be vindicated for the time past, but your Kingdome may be secured from the like mischief for the time to come.

Read, and, by vote upon the Question, assented-unto, Feb. 10, 1641-2.

His MAJESTIE'S Reply to the House of COMMONS Answer.

Concerning LICENCES, granted by the KING, to several persons, to go into IRELAND.

AS his Majesty hath expressed a great desire, to give his House of Commons all possible satisfaction to all their just Requests, and a readiness to rectifie, or retract, any thing done by himself, which might seem to trench upon their Priviledges, by any mistake of his; So he doubts not, they will be ready, upon all occasions, to manifest an equal tenderness and regard of his Majestie's Honour and Reputation, with his good Subjects; and therefore his Majesty expects, they should review his Message, of the seventh of this moneth, concerning a passage, in Master *Pym's* Speech, and their Answer sent to his Majesty, by some of their Members, on the tenth of the same; with which his Majesty can by no means rest satisfied.

His Majestie's Exception to that Message was, that it was affirmed in that Speech, That, since the stop upon the Ports against all Irish Papists, by both Houses, many of the chiefe Commanders, now in the head of the Rebels, have been suffered to pass by his Majestie's immediate Warrant.

To this, the Answer is :

THAT the Speech, mentioned in that Message, to be delivered by *M. Pym*, was Printed by their Order, and that what was therein delivered was agreeable to the sense of the House: that they have received divers Advertisements, concerning several persons, Irish Papists, and others, who have obtained his Majestie's immediate Warrant, for their passing into *Ireland*, since the Order of Restraint, of both Houses; some of which, they have been informed, since their coming into *Ireland*, have joined with the Rebels, and been Commanders amongst them.

His Majesty is most assured, no such person hath passed by his Warrant, or Privity: and then he desires his House of Commons, to consider, whether such a general Information and Advertisement, (in which there is not so much as the name of any particular person mentioned,) be ground enough for such a direct and positive Affirmation as is made in that Speech, which, in respect of the place and Person, and, being now acknowledged to be agreeable to the sense of the House, is of that authority, that his Majesty may suffer in the Affections of many of his good Subjects, and fall under a possible construction, (considering many scandalous

scandalous Pamphlets to such a purpose,) of not being sensible enough of that Rebellion, so horrid and odious to all Christians, by which, in this distraction, such a danger might possibly ensue to his Majesty's Person and Estate, as he is well assured, his House of Commons, will use their utmost endeavours to prevent. And therefore his Majesty, thinks it very necessary, and expects, that they name those persons, who, by his Majesty's Licence, have passed into *Ireland*, and are now there in the head of the Rebels; Or that, if, upon their re-examination, they do not find particular Evidence to prove that Assertion, (as his Majesty is confident they never can;) then, as this Affirmation, (which may reflect upon his Majesty,) is very publike, so they will publish such a Declaration, whereby that mistake may be discovered; his Majesty being the more tender in that particular, which hath Reference to *Ireland*, as being most assured; that He hath been, and is, from his Soul, resolved to discharge his Duty, (which God will require at his hands,) for the relief of his poor Protestant Subjects there, and the utter rooting-out that Rebellion; So that Service hath not suffered any but necessary delays, by any act of his Majesty's, or for the want of any thing proposed to his Majesty, within his Majesty's power to do.

For the persons named in the Answer, his Majesty saith, that Colonel *Butler*, and the son of the Lord *Nettersfield*, obtained his Warrants for their passage into *Ireland*, during the time of his Majesty's being in *Scotland*, which was long (as his Majesty thinks,) before the Order of both Houses: His Majesty, knowing the former of them to be one who hath always made Professions to his Service, and to be Uncle to the Earle of *Ormond*, of whose affection to the Protestant Religion and his Majesty's Service His Majesty hath great cause to be assured; And, the latter being a person of whom, at that time, there was no suspicion to his Majesty's knowledge. For the others, it may be, they have obtained Warrants from his Majesty since the said Order; but his Majesty assures the Parliament, that he had no intimation of such an Order, till after stay made of Sir *George Hamilton*, who was the last that had any Licence from his Majesty to pass for *Ireland*.

And his Majesty, having, since this Answer from the House of Commons, used all possible means, by the examining his own memory and the Notes of his Secretaries, to find what Warrants have been granted by him, and to what persons, doth not find, That he hath granted any to any Irish but those who are named by the House of Commons, and, in *December* last, to the Earl of Saint *Albans*, and to two of his servants, and to one *Walter Terrel*, a poor man; they being such as, his Majesty is assured, are not with the Rebels, and, much less, chief Commanders over them. And, though it may be, the Persons named by the House of Commons are Papists, yet his Majesty, at that time, thought it not fit, (in respect of their Alliance in that Kingdom to such Persons of great power, of whom his Majesty hoped well,) to discover any suspicion of them; the Lords-Justices having declared by their Letters, (which Letters were not disapproved of by the Parliament here,) that they were so far from owning a publike jealousy of all Papists there, that they had thought fit to put Arms into the hands of divers

Noblemen of the Pale [that were] of that Religion, who made Professions to His Majesty's Service, and desired the same. And, since so great a trust reposed in some of the Lords of that Religion, was not disapproved by the Parliament here, His Majesty could not imagine it unsafe, or unfit, for him to give Licences to some few to passe into that Kingdom, who, though Papists, professed due Allegiance and Loyalty to His Majesty.

And therefore, unlesse the first Affirmation of the House of Commons can be made good by some particulars, His Majesty doth not know that his Ministers have failed in their diligence and faithfulness to His Majesty in this point, or that his Honour hath suffered so much by any Act of his own, as that it needs be vindicated for the time past by any other way than such a Declaration which he expects from this house, as in Duty and Justice due to His Majesty.

A Message from HIS MAJESTY to the HOUSE of PEERS, on Friday the 11th of February, 1641, concerning his acceptance of Sir JOHN CONIERS, in the place of Sir JOHN BYRON, to be Lieutenant of the TOWER.

ALTHOUGH His Majesty conceives that he is not obliged to give an Answer in any particular concerning the Forts and *Militia* of the Kingdom, until he shall know and consent to the Power and the time, how and to whom, the Forts and *Militia* shall be disposed; Yet to shew his real intention to satisfie the feares of his People, He is content to accept of Sir *John Coniers*, in the place of Sir *John Byron*, for to be Lieutenant of the Tower of *London*, having already, at his earnest desire, received the surrender of the said Place from him.

A true and exact List of those Persons, nominated and recommended by the HOUSE of COMMONS to HIS MAJESTY, As persons fit to be entrusted with the MILITIA of the KINGDOM: wherein they desire the concurrence of the HOUSE of PEERS, Feb. 12, 1641.

BERKSHIRE, Earl of *Holland*. *Bedfordshire*, Earl of *Bullingbroke*. *Buckinghamshire*, Lord *Paget*. *Cambridgeshire* and the Isle of *Ely*, Lord *North*. *Cheshire*, and the County and City of *Chester*, Lord *Strange*. *Cornwall*, Lord *Robarts*. *Cumberland*, Lord *Gray of Wark*. *Derby*, Earl of *Rutland*. *Devonshire*, and of the County and City of *Exon*, Earl of *Bedford*. *Dorsetshire*, and the County of the Town of *Poole*, Earl of *Salisbury*. For the Isle of *Purbeck* Com. *Dorset*, Sir *John Banks*, Knight, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, and Constable of *Corffe* Castle. *Durham*, Sir *Henry Vane*, the Elder. *Essex*, Earl of *Warwick*. *Gloucestershire*, and of the County and City of *Gloucester*, Lord
: *Chandois*.

Chandois. *Hampshire*, and of the Town and County of *Southampton*, and of the Isle of *Wight*, Earl of *Pembroke*. *Hartfordshire*, Earl of *Salisbury*. *Herefordshire*, Lord *Dacres*. *Huntingdonshire*, Lord *Mandevile*. *Kent*, and the City and County of *Canterbury*, Earl of *Leicester*. *Com. Lancaster*, Lord *Wharton*. *Leicester*, Earl of *Stamford*. *Middlesex*, Earl of *Holland*. *Com. Northampton*, Lord *Spencer*. *Nottingham*, and of the Town and County of *Nottingham*, Earl of *Clare*. *Northumberland*, and of the Town and County of *Newcastle*, and of the Town of *Barwick*, Earl of *Northumberland*. *Norfolk*, and of the County and City of *Norwich*, Earl of *Warwick*. *Oxfordshire*, Lord Viscount *Say and Seale*. *Rutland*, Earl of *Exon*. *Salop*, Lord *Littleton*, Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal of *England*. *Somerset*, Marquis *Hertford*.

That the Lieutenant of the County of *Worcester* shall be nominated before *Somerset*.

Staffordshire, and of the County of the City of *Lichfield*, Earl of *Essex*. *Suffolk*, Earl of *Suffolk*. *Surrey*, Earl of *Nottingham*. *Sussex*, Earl of *Northumberland*. *Warwick*, and of the County of the City of *Couventry*, Lord *Brooke*. *Westmerland*, Earl of *Cumberland*. *Wilts*, Earl of *Pembroke*. *Wigorn*, and of the County of the City of *Worcester*, Lord *Edward Howard of Eserig*. For the County and City of *Bristol*, Master *Denzil Hollis*. *Yorkshire*, and of the County of the City of *York*, and of the County of the Town of *Kingston on Hull*, Earl of *Essex*. Of the parts of *Kestaven* and *Holland*, and the County of the City of *Lincolne*, Earl of *Lincolne*. For the parts of *Lindsay*, in the County of *Holland*, Lord *Willoughby of Parham*. *Monmouth*, Lord *Philip Herbert*. *Isle of Anglesey*, Earl of *Northumberland*. *Brecknock*, Lord *Philip Herbert*. *Cardigan*, Earl of *Carbery*. *Carmarthen*, and *Carmarthen-Town*, Earl of *Carbery*. *Carnarvon*, Earl of *Pembroke*. *Denbigh*, Lord *Fielding*. *Flintshire*, Lord *Fielding*. *Glamorgan*, Lord *Philip Herbert*. *Montgomery*, Earl of *Essex*. *Merioneth*, Earl of *Pembroke*. *Pembroke*, and the Towne of *Haverford West*, Earl of *Northumberland*. *Radnor*, Lord *Littleton*, Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal of *England*.

That for the levying, ordering, and exercising the Militia of the City of *London*, power is given unto Sir *John Gaire*, Sir *Jacob Garret*, Knights and Aldermen, *Thomas Atkins*, Alderman, Sir *John Wollastone*, Knight and Alderman, *John Warner*, Alderman, and *John Towse*, Alderman, Serjeant-Major General *Skippon*, or any three, or more, of them, *Randolph Manwaring*, *William Gibs*, *John Fowke*, *James Bunce*, *Francis Peck*, *Samuel Warner*, *James Russell*, *Nathaniel Wright*, *William Barkley*, *Alexander Normington*, *Stephen Estweeke*, *Owen Rowe*, Citizens of *London*, or any six, or more, of them.

HIS MAJESTIE'S MESSAGE to both Houses of PARLIAMENT: *February*
14, 1641.

THOUGH His Majesty is assured, that His having so suddenly passed these two Bills, being of so great importance, and so earnestly desired by both Houses, will serve to assure His Parliament, That He desires nothing more than the satisfaction of His Kingdom; yet, that He may further manifest to both Houses how impatient He is, till he find-out a full remedie to compose the present Distempers, He is pleased to signifie:

That His Majesty will, by Proclamation, require, that all Statutes made concerning Recusants be, with all Care, Diligence, and Severity, put in execution.

That His Majesty is resolved, That the seven Condemned Priests shall be immediately Banished, if His Parliament shall consent thereunto: And His Majesty will give present Order (if it shall be held fit by both Houses) that a Proclamation issue, to require all Romish Priests within twenty days to depart the Kingdom; and, if any shall be Apprehended after that time, His Majesty assures both Houses, in the Word of a King, That He will grant no pardon to any such without consent of His Parliament.

And, because His Majesty observes great and different Troubles to arise in the hearts of His People concerning the Government and Liturgie of the Church, His Majesty is willing to declare, That He will referre that whole Consideration to the Wisdom of His Parliament, which He desires them to enter-into speedily, that the present Distractions about the same may be composed. But he desires not to be pressed to any single Act on His Part, till the whole be so digested and settled by both Houses, that His Majesty may cleerly see what is fit to be left, as well as what is fit to be taken-away.

For *Ireland* (in behalf of which His Majestie's heart bleeds) as His Majesty hath concurred with all Propositions made for that Service by His Parliament, so He is resolved to leave nothing undone for their Relief, which shall fall within His possible Power, nor will refuse to venture His owne Person in that Warre, if His Parliament shall thinke it convenient for the reduction of that miserable Kingdome.

And, lastly, His Majesty, taking notice, by several Petitions, of the great and general decay of Trade in this Kingdome, and more particularly of that of Clothing, and new Draperies (concerning which He received lately at *Greenwich* a modest, but earnest, Petition from the Clothiers of *Suffolke*) of which decay of Trade, His Majesty hath a very deep sense, both in respect of the extreme want and poverty it hath brought, and must bring, upon many thousands of His loving Subjects; and of the influence it must have in a very short time upon the very subsistence of this Nation: Doth earnestly recommend the consideration of that great and weighty Businesse to both Houses; Promising them, that He will most readily concur

in any Resolution their Wisdomes shall find-out, which may conduce to so necessary a Work.

THE Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, do, with much Joy, receive and with Thankfulness acknowledge, Your Majestie's Grace and Favour, in giving your Royal Assent to a Bill, intituled, *An Act for disabling all Persons in Holy Orders, to exercise any Temporal Jurisdiction or Authority*: And also Your Majestie's Care for *Ireland*, expressed in the dispatch of the Bill of Pressing, so much importing the safety of that, and this, Kingdom.

To the KING's Most Excellent MAJESTY.

The humble PETITION of the LORDS and COMMONS now Assembled in PARLIAMENT.

Sheweth,

THAT Your Majesty, in answer to their late Petition touching the proceedings against the Lord *Kimbolton*, *Master Hollis*, Sir *Arthur Haslerig*, *Master Pym*, *Master Hamden*, and *Master Strode*, Members of the Parliament, was pleased to signifie, That, as Your Majesty once conceived that you had ground enough to accuse them, So now Your Majesty findes as good cause wholly to desert any further prosecution of them. Notwithstanding which, they remaine still under that heavy charge so imputed unto them, to the exceeding prejudice not only of themselves, but also of the whole Parliament. And, whereas, by the express Laws and Statutes of this Your Realm, that is to say, by two Acts of Parliament, the one made in the 37th, and the other in the 38th, year of the Reign of your most Noble Progenitor, King *Edward the Third*: "If any person whatsoever make suggestion to the King himself, of any Crime committed by another, the same person ought to be sent with the suggestion, before the Chancellor or Keeper of the Great Seal, Treasurer, and the Great Council, there to find surety to pursue his suggestion; which if he cannot prove, he is to be imprisoned till he hath satisfied the Party accused of his damages and slander, and made fine and ransom to the King:" The said Lords and Commons humbly beseech Your Majesty, That, not only in point of Justice to the said Members in their particulars, but for the Vindication of the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament, Your Majesty will be pleased to send the Person or Persons, that in this case made the suggestions, or informations, to Your Majesty, against the said Members of Parliament, Together with the said suggestions or informations, to Your Parliament, That so such fruits of the said good Laws may be had as were intended by them, and the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament may be Vindicated: which of right and justice ought not to be denied.

An

An ORDINANCE of both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT, for the safe-guard of the PARLIAMENT, TOWER, and City of LONDON, under the Command of Serjeant-Major General SKIPPON.

WHEREAS upon the 12th of *January* last past, (amongst other things in that Order;) It is ordered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, in these words: "And for the better safeguard of the Tower, It is further Ordered by both Houses of Parliament, That the Sheriffs of *London* and *Middlesex* shall appoint and place a sufficient Guard about the Tower, both by Land and Water, under the Command of Serjeant-Major General *Shippin*, Commander of the Guards of the Parliament, And that those Guards be careful to see the former Order observed." Now, whereas the said Serjeant-Major having (in his great care and faithfulness) given his advice to the said Sheriffs, concerning what Guards he conceived to be fitting, and how the same Guards ought to have been Ordered by Water and Land, as he thought most advantageous for the said service.—Whereas also the said Serjeant-Major hath given his further advice and Order, to divers other persons, concerning the timely discovery and preventing of any thing that might have been attempted, or done, contrary to the intent of the said Order of both Houses of Parliament.

And whereas the said Serjeant-Major *Shippin* hath, according to the trust reposed in him by the City of *London*, placed the Trained-Bands of the said City, at the further end of Tower-Street, and in such other places within and about the City, as he conceived to be most for the safety of the City: All and every particular of the which premisses, and whatsoever else in the same kind, and to the same ends, that he the said Serjeant-Major hath advised, or done, or shall advise or do, according to the Order aforesaid, is hereby well-approved-of and fully warranted by both Houses of Parliament, as being for the real good service of His Majesty, and the Common-wealth; as also for the safety of the Parliament and City. And is in all and every part thereof, according to his Duty, the last Protestation, and the Laws of this Kingdom. And, if any person shall arrest, or any other way trouble, him for so doing, he doth break the Priviledge of Parliament, Violate the Liberty of the Subject, and is hereby declared an Enemy to the Common-wealth.

A Message from a Committee of both Houses of PARLIAMENT, to the SPANISH AMBASSADOR, to make stay of Ships at DUNKIRK, intended for the supply of the Rebels in IRELAND.

THE Lords and Commons have commanded us to intimate to the Spanish Ambassadour the advertisement, that they have received, of certaine Ships lying in *Dunkerke*, laden with Ammunition, ready to take sail, intended for the relief of the Rebels of *Ireland*. This they hold contrary to the Articles agreed-upon, in
the

the Treaties of Peace between the two Crowns; And therefore the Ambassadour is to be moved from both Houses, to send speedily to *Dunckerke*, and to all other His [Spanish, or Catholick] Majestie's Dominions, and unto the King his Master, to make stay of those, and all such Ships as may carry any supply of Men, Victuals, Money, or any other aid, to His Majestie's Subjects, that at this present are in Rebellion in *Ireland*; Which otherwise will be understood to be a Breach of the Treaties between the Crowns of *England* and *Spain*, and so resented by the Parliament.

The SPANISH AMBASSADOUR'S ANSWER to the MESSAGE from a COMMITTEE of both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT.

THE Lord Ambassadour of *Spain*, *Don Alonso de Cardenas*, having understood what the Lord *Fielding*, of the Lords House, and Sir *Thomas Barrington*, Baronet, and Sir *John Holland*, Baronet, of the House of Commons, All three Commissaries from the Parliament, have said in behalf of both Houses, concerning the advertisement given them, that in the Haven of *Dunckerke*, there were certain Ships laden with Ammunition, ready to take sail, intended for the relief of the Rebels of *Ireland*, which they hold contrary to the Articles of Peace between the two Crowns; And that they required he should send to *Dunckerke*, and all other His Majestie's Dominions, and that he should write unto the King His Master, to make stay of those and all such Ships as may carry supply of Powder, Victuals, Money, or any other aid, to His Majestie's Subjects, that at this present are in Rebellion in *Ireland*; because, otherwise, it would be understood to be a Breach of the Treaties between the two Crowns, and so resented by the Parliament:—The said Ambassadour of *Spain* answered, That, besides the understanding which he hath of the King his Master's mind and intention to conserve the friendship which he professeth with His Majesty of *Great-Britain*, he hath express and most particular notice, that the Ships which are now in *Dunckerke*-Haven, laden with Souldiers and Ammunition and ready to sail, neither are for *Ireland*, nor were they provided for any such purpose; And that this notice was given him by *Don Francisco de Mello*, Earl of *Assumar*, Governour and Captain-General of the States of *Flanders*, whom the Resident of His Majesty of *Great Britain*, that assists in *Brussels*, assured that he is fully satisfied of their not going for *Ireland*, as is also his King, who signified so much unto him in a letter, in which he likewise commanded him to thank the said *Don Francisco de Mello*, for denying leave, which certain Irish, serving in those States, had asked to return to their Country, which he denied, to avoid all suspicion; Notwithstanding their end for asking it was unknown. The same assurance did the same Ambassadour give unto the Commissaries aforesaid of the Parliament, concerning the mentioned Ships in *Dunckerke*, laden with Ammunition and Souldiers, “that they are not for *Ireland*;” And he proffered to write to *Dunkirh*, and all other Parts of *Flanders*, and Dominions of the King his Master; and particularly to His Catholick Majesty,

to

to the end, That the observance of the Articles of Peace, (which hitherto have been so religiously observed of the King his Master's part, and his Subjects,) may be continued; and that new and strait Orders be given, That no Subject of His Catholick Majesty shall dare to violate them, by sending any kind of aids to foster the Insurrection in *Ireland*, under pain of the punishment imposed upon the transgressors. And the said Ambassadour, to manifest the sincerity of his heart, proffered to sollicite it with the readiest and most forcible means that lay in his power, hoping (as in reason he should,) that His Majesty of *Great-Britain*, and the Parliament, will, for their part, punctually observe the same in the aforesaid conformity towards the Rebels of the King his Master, not permitting any kinds of succour or assistance, in whatsoever quality, to be afforded them, from these Kingdoms. Renewing for this effect, all requisite Orders unto the Officers and Ports of the said Kingdoms, chastising the transgressors of what is settled in the Peace, with the punishments contained in the Articles of it; that so, by reciprocal observance, the good correspondency, which is at this present between the two Crowns of *Spain* and *England*, may be assuredly maintained.

HIS MAJESTIE'S MESSAGE to both HOUSES, concerning the
MILITIA.

HIS Majesty, having received an humble Petition of the Lords and Commons, by the hands of the Earls of *Carlisle* and *Monmouth*, returns this Answer; That his dearest Consort the Queen, and his dear Daughter the Princess *Mary*, being now upon their departure for *Holland*, He cannot have so good time to consider of a particular Answer, for a matter of so great weight as this is: therefore he must respite the same until his return.

To the KING'S Most Excellent MAJESTY.

The humble PETITION of the LORDS and COMMONS, concerning this
MESSAGE.

May it please your Most Excellent Majesty,

YOUR humble and loyal Subjects, the Lords and Commons, have, with a great deal of grief, received Your Majestie's Answer, to their just and necessary Petition, concerning the Militia of the Kingdom; which, Your Majesty, by a gracious Message formerly sent unto them, was pleased to promise, should be put into such hands as your Parliament should approve-of, or recommend unto you; the extent of their power, and the time of their continuance, being likewise declared. That being done, and the persons by both Houses nominated, Your Majesty, nevertheless, refers Your resolution herein, to a longer, and a very uncertain, time, which (the present dangers and distractions being so great and pressing) is

as unsatisfactory and destructive, as an absolute denial. Therefore we once again beseech Your Majesty, to take our desire into Your Royal thoughts, and to give us such an answer as may raise in us a confidence, that we shall not be exposed to the practices of those who thirst after the ruin of this Kingdom, and the kindling of that combustion in *England*, which they have, in so great a measure, effected in *Ireland*; from whence (as we are daily informed) they intend and endeavour to invade us, with the assistance of the Papists here amongst us.

Nothing can prevent these evils, nor enable us to suppress the Rebellion in *Ireland*, and secure ourselves, but the instant granting of that our humble Petition; which we hope Your Majesty will not deny to those who must, in the discharge of their duties both to your Majesty and the Common-wealth, represent unto your Majesty, what they find so absolutely necessary, for the preservation of both; which the Laws, both of God and man, enjoin them to see put in execution, as several Counties, by their daily Petitions, have desired of us, and in some places, have begun already to do it of themselves, Feb. 22, 1641.

Resolved, upon the question, and assented-unto, and ordered, That Master Hollis carry it up to the Lords, to desire their concurrence herein.

A MESSAGE from both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT, sent to the KING and QUEEN'S MAJESTIES, Touching certain LETTERS, lately intercepted, and, (as it may be conjectured), sent from the Lord DIGBY, to the QUEEN'S MAJESTY.

Most gracious Sovereign,

YOUR Majesty's most Loyal and faithful Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament, have received Your Message of the sixteenth of this instant *February*, sent at the instance of the Queen's Majesty; and, upon consideration thereof, to our great joy and content, find therein clear expressions of Grace and Favour, from both Your Majesties; for which we return our most humble thanks: and have herewithall sent the Transcript of that Letter required by Your Majesty, as likewise of two other Letters, directed to Master Secretary *Nicholas*, and Sir *Lewes Dives*, all which were brought to us under one cover, indorsed to Master Secretary, with information, that they were written by the Lord *Digby*; who, being a person who had fled from the Justice of Parliament, and one who had given many evidences of the dis-affection to the public good; we conceived it necessary to open the two former, and finding sundry expressions in them full of Asperity and Malignity to the Parliament, We thought it very probable, That the like may be contained in that to her Majesty, and that it would be dishonourable to her Majesty, and dangerous for the Kingdom, if it should not be opened, wherein we were no whit deceived, as Your Majesty may well perceive by the Contents thereof.

And although we cannot but be very sensible of the great dishonour therein

done to your Majesties, and the malicious endeavours of fomenting and increasing the Jealousy betwixt Your Majesty and Your people; Yet we are far from reflecting any thing upon the Queen, or expecting any satisfaction from Her Majesty; But impute all to the bold and envenomed spirit of the man. Only we most earnestly beseech your Majesty, to persuade the Queen, that she will not vouchsafe any countenance to, or correspondency with, the Lord *Digby*, or any other of the Fugitives, or Traitors, whose offences now depend under the examination and judgement of Parliament; which we assure ourselves will be very effectual, to further the removal of all Jealousies and Discontents, betwixt Your Majesty and Your People, and the settling the great affairs of Your Majesty, and the Kingdom, in an assured State and condition of Honour, safety, and prosperity.

A MESSAGE from both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT unto HIS MAJESTY,
concerning the PRINCE, His SON.

THE Lords and Commons in Parliament, humbly desire his Majesty, That the Prince may not be removed from *Hampton-Court*; and that for these ensuing Reasons.

1. They conceive his Majesty had resolved, that the Prince should stay at *Hampton-Court*, until his Majestie's Return.

2. That the Lord Marquess *Hertford*, appointed by his Majesty to be Governour of the Prince, and approved-of, and commanded by the Parliament to give his personal attendance on the Prince, is now so indisposed in his health, that he is not able to attend the Prince to any other place.

3. That the Prince's removal at this time from *Hampton-Court* may be a cause to promote Jealousies and fears in the hearts of his Majestie's good Subjects; which, they conceive, it is very necessary to avoid.

Die Jovis, 24 Febr. 1641.

Ordered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, that the Lord Howard of Char. shall attend upon the King, and present these Reasons unto his Majesty.

John Brown, Cler. Parliament.

HIS MAJESTIE'S ANSWER to the REASONS He Received by way of
MESSAGE from both HOUSES, concerning the PRINCE, his SON.

THAT his Majesty intended, at his remove from *Hampton-Court*, with his Royal Consort the Queen, towards *Dover*, That the Prince, his Son, should stay at *Hampton-Court*, till his Majesty returned to some of his Houses; and thereupon, as soon as his Majesty resolved upon a certain day to be at *Greenwich*, he commanded

commanded that his Son should attend him there, which was no way contrary to his former intention.

2. That his Majesty was very sorry to hear of the Indisposition of the Marquess *Hertford*, being the Person upon whom he principally relies for the Care of his dearest Son; But, if that indisposition should have lasted, his Majesty could no ways think fit, that his want of health should have hinder'd the Prince from waiting upon his Majesty, according to his command; and therefore would have been much offended, if the Prince had failed of meeting his Majesty, according to his appointment.

3. To the Fears and Jealousies, his Majesty knows not what Answer to give, not being able to imagine from what grounds they proceed. But, if any Information have been given to that purpose, His Majesty much desires that the same may be examined to the bottom; and then he hopes that their Fears and Jealousies will be hereafter continued only with reference to his Majesty's Rights and Honour.

The VOTES of the LORDS, and COMMONS, Upon the Propositions, made by divers worthy and well-affected persons, for the speedy and effectual reducing of the Kingdom of IRELAND.

THE Lords and Commons, taking into their serious considerations, as well the necessity of a speedy reducing of the Rebels of *Ireland* to their due obedience, as also the great sums of money, that the Commons of this Realm have, of late, paid for the publick and necessary Affairs of the Kingdom; whereof, the Lords and Commons are very sensible, and desirous to embrace all good and honourable ways, tending to his Majesty's greatness and profit, the settling of that Realm, and the ease of his Majesty's Subjects of *England*; And whereas, divers worthy and well-affected persons, perceiving that many millions of Acres of the Rebels Lands of that Kingdom, which go under the name of profitable Lands, will be confiscated and to be disposed-of, and that in that case two millions and a halfe of those Acres, to be equally taken out of the four Provinces of that Kingdom, may be allotted for the satisfaction of such persons as shall disburse any sums of money, for the reducing of the Rebels there, which would effectually accomplish the same, have made these Propositions ensuing.

1. That two millions and an half, of those Acres, may be assigned, allotted, and divided amongst them, after this proportion: *viz.*

For each Adven- ture of	}	200 li. 1000 Acres in <i>Ulster</i> .
		300 li. 1000 Acres in <i>Conaght</i> .
		450 li. 1000 Acres in <i>Munster</i> .
		600 li. 1000 Acres in <i>Leinster</i> .

All according to the English measure, and consisting of Meadow, Arable, and profitable

profitable Pasture; the Bogs, Woods, and barren Mountains, being cast-in, over and above. These two millions and a half of Acres, to be holden, in free and common Soccage, of the King, as of his Castle of *Dublin*.

2. That out of those two millions and an half of Acres, a constant Rent, shall be reserved to the Crown of *England*, after this proportion, *viz.*

Out of each Acre thereof in	}	<i>Ulster</i>	1d—
		<i>Conaght</i>	1d—ob.
		<i>Munster</i>	2d—q;
		<i>Leinster</i>	3d—

Whereby his Majesty's Revenue, out of those Lands, will be much improved, besides the advantages that he will have, by the coming to his hands of all other the Lands of the Rebels, and their personal Estates, without any charge unto his Majesty.

3. That for the erecting of Manors, settling of Waste and Commons, maintaining of Preaching Ministers, creating of Corporations, and regulating of the several Plantations, one or more Commissions be hereafter granted by Authority of Parliament.

4. That monies for this great occasion may be the more speedily advanced, All the Undertakers, in the City of *London*, and within twenty miles distant thereof, shall under-write their several sums, before the twentieth day of *March*, 1641, and all within sixty miles of *London*, before the first day of *April*, 1642. And the rest of the Kingdom, before the first day of *May*, 1642.

5. That the several sums to be under-written, shall be paid-in at four payments, *viz.* one fourth part, within ten days, after such under-writing, and the other three parts, at three moneths, three moneths, and three moneths: all to be paid into the Chamber of *London*.

6. That, for the better securing of the said several sums accordingly, every one that doth so under-write, shall, at the time of his Subscription, pay-down the twentieth part of the total sum that shall be by him then under-written.

And in case that the residue of his first fourth part be not paid-in to such person, or persons, as shall be appointed to receive the same, within the ten days before limited; then such a Party shall not only forfeit the twentieth part of the Sum total, formerly deposited, but so much more of his first fourth payment, to be added thereunto, as shall make-up the one moiety of the said first payment. And, if the same person shall fail in any other of the three payments, he shall then forfeit his entire first fourth part, and all the benefit of his Subscription; which forfeiture shall accrue to the common benefit of the rest of the Undertakers.

The Lords and Commons, upon due and mature deliberation of these Propositions, have approved of them, and given their consent unto the same, and will become humble Petitioners to his Majesty for his Royal approbation thereof; and that hereafter he will be pleased, upon the humble suit of both Houses of Parliament,

ment, to give his Royal Assent to such Bills as they shall tender unto Him, for the settling of those Propositions and all other things necessarily conducing thereunto.

By vertue of an Order of the Honourable House of Commons, made on Monday, the seventh of this present Moneth of *February*, 1641; We (the Committee appointed to receive the moneys given by the Members of the House of Commons, for the Relief of the poor, distressed, people that are come out of *Ireland*,) are to require you to send unto us, or any one of us, a Certificate, what sums of money are collected within your Parish, for the relief of the poor, distressed, people of *Ireland*, and to require you to bring-in such sums of money as you have received, to that Committee; who are authorized by the House to receive the same.

Dated at Westminster, the fifteenth day of February, 1641.

The Committee appointed by the House for the said Collection, are,
Sir *Edward Aiscough*, Knight, *Francis Rowse*, *Henry Martin*, and *William Wheeler*, Esquires.

To the Minister, and Churchwardens, of the Parish of—

His MAJESTIE'S gracious Answer and Assent, Declared unto both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT, February 24, 1641, was as followeth.

HIS Majesty, being very glad to receive any Proposition that may repair the calamity of his distressed Kingdom of *Ireland*, especially when it may be without burthen, or imposition, and for the ease of his good Subjects, of this Kingdom, hath graciously considered the Overture, made by both Houses of Parliament, to that purpose, and returns this Answer:

THAT, as he hath offered, and is still ready, to venture his own Royal Person, for the Recovery of that Kingdom, if his Parliament shall advise him thereunto, so he will not deny to contribute any other assistance he can, to that Service, by parting with any profit, or advantage, of his own there: And therefore, (relying upon the wisdom of his Parliament,) doth consent to every Proposition now made to him, without taking time to examine, whether this course may not retard the reducing of that Kingdom, by exasperating the Rebels, and rendering them desperate of being received into Grace, if they shall return to their Obedience.

And his Majesty will be ready to give his Royal assent to all such Bills as shall be tendered unto him by his Parliament, for the confirmation of every particular of this Proposition.

Die Veneris, 25th Feb. 1641.

Ordered, by the Lords in Parliament, That the Propositions concerning Ireland, and

and his Majesty's gracious Answer thereunto, together with the Directions, shall be forthwith Printed and published.

And for the better effecting of this WORK, the LORDS and COMMONS have thought fit to Publish these ensuing Directions.

1. WHEREAS, according to the proportion of Lands in the Propositions mentioned, (being two millions and a half of Acres,) the Sums to be under-written, will not exceed one million of money. It will be requisite that, together with the Sums under-written, the day and time of each Subscription be likewise set-down; to the intent, that those who do under-write before the million of money shall be made-up, may not be excluded from the benefit of their respective Subscriptions, in case they make payment of the respective Sums according to the Propositions.

Nevertheless, if any shall under-write after the million of money shall be made-up, they shall be admitted to the shares of such as (having under-written to the million,) shall fail of payment according to the Propositions, or else (at their election,) shall be forthwith repayed, all such Sums as they shall have paid-in, upon hope of taking benefit of the Propositions.

2. The places to be appointed for the several under-writings, to be, for the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Counties of *Surry*, and *Middlesex*, the Chamber of *London*: for all other Counties in *England* and *Wales*, the Towns where the last Assises were kept: But any of those Counties that shall desire to under-write in *London*, may be at liberty to do it there.

3. The persons to be employed in taking the under-writings, and receiving the monies, for *London* and *Westminster*, *Middlesex* and *Surry*, are to be such, as upon further consultation with the Citizens of *London*, shall be appointed.

And in all other Counties, the Sheriffs of the several Counties respectively: who are to give Acquittances for such Sums as they shall receive.

4. That printed Books of the Propositions, and his Majesty's Answer there-unto, and of the Instructions, shall be sent, and Letters written from the Speaker, to the several Sheriffs of the said Counties, who shall publish the Books, and Letters at the next Assises, and shall then likewise give publike notice of the times and places by them to be appointed, as well for the several under-writings, as for the payment of the Sums that shall be under-written: And for the better publishing of those Books, the several Citizens and Burgesses of the House of Commons, shall forthwith send-down several Books and Letters to the head-Officers of their Cities and Boroughs, respectively.

5. That the several Sheriffs shall, from week to week, send-up to the Chamber of *London*, a true List of the names and Sums subscribed, and of the time of the Subscription.

6. For the better encouragement of such persons as shall be employed for the
City

City of *London* and the parts adjoining, as likewise of the said Sheriffs, and such other persons, as shall be by them employed herein, it shall and may be lawful, for the said Sheriffs, and for the said persons, appointed for the City of *London*, respectively, to deduct, and retain to his or their use, after the rate of one penny in the pound, for their pains and charges, in receiving the said Sums, and in returning the same.

7. That, together with the Printed Propositions and Letters from the Speaker, Paper-Books, with Titles prefixed, shall be sent-down to the Sheriffs of each County, in the beginning of which Books, next under the Titles, the Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses respectively, that serve for the same, and who shall underwrite any Sum, according to the said Propositions, shall subscribe their names and Sums in the first place.

An Ordinance of both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT, for the ordering of the MILITIA, of the Kingdom of ENGLAND, and Dominion of WALES.

WHEREAS there hath been of late, a most dangerous and desperate Design upon the House of Commons, which we have just cause to believe to be an effect of the bloody Counsels of Papists, and other ill-affected persons, who have already raised a Rebellion in the Kingdom of *Ireland*: And, by reason of many discoveries, we cannot but fear they will proceed, not only to stir-up the like Rebellion and Insurrections in this Kingdom of *England*, but also to back them with Forces from abroad:

For the safety, therefore, of His Majestie's Person, the Parliament, and Kingdom, in this time of imminent danger;

It is ordained by the King, the Lords and Commons, now in Parliament assembled, that shall have power to assemble and call-together all and singular his Majestie's Subjects, within the County of as well within Liberties as without, that are meet and fit for the Wars, and them to traine, exercise, and put in readiness, and them after their abilities, and faculties, well and sufficiently, from time to time, to cause to be Arrayed, and Weaponed, and to take the muster of them in places most fit for that purpose.

And shall have power, within the said County, to nominate, and appoint such persons of quality, as to him shall seem meet, to be his Deputy-Lieutenants, to be approved-of by both Houses of Parliament. And that any-one, or more, of the said Deputies, so assigned and approved-of, shall, in the absence, or by the command, of the said have power and authority to do and execute, within the County all such powers and authorities, before in this present Ordinance contained: And shall have power to make Colonels and Captains, and other Officers, and to remove them out of their places, and to make others, from time to time, as he shall think fit for that purpose. And

his

his Deputies, Colonels, and Captains, and other officers, shall have further power and authority, to lead, conduct, and employ the persons aforesaid, Arrayed, and Weaponed, as well within the County of as within any other part of this Realm, of *England*, or Dominion of *Wales*, for the suppression of all Rebellions, Insurrections, and invasions that may happen, according as they, from time to time, shall receive Directions, by his Majestie's Authority, signified unto them by the Lords and Commons, assembled in Parliament.

And it is further ordained, that such persons, as shall not obey in any of the premisses, shall answer their neglect and contempt, to the Lords and Commons, in a Parliamentary way, and not otherwise, nor elsewhere; and that every the powers granted, as aforesaid, shall continue, until it shall be otherwise ordered, or declared by both Houses of Parliament, and no longer.

This to go also to the Dominion of Wales.

John Brown, Cler. Parliament.

CHARLES REX.

To Our Trusty, and Right well-beloved COUNSELLOUR, EDWARD,
Lord LITTLETON, KEEPER of the GREAT SEALE.

Right

TRUSTY, and Right well-beloved Counsellour, We greet you well. Our will and pleasure is, that you deliver, to be read in the House of Peers, this, Our answer to the desire from both Houses concerning the Militia; and, for so doing, this shall be your sufficient warrant. Given at Our House at *Greenwich*, the 28th of *February*, 1641.

HIS MAJESTIE'S ANSWER to both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT, concerning the MILITIA, *February 28, 1641.*

HIS Majesty having, with his best care and understanding, perused and considered, that which was sent him from both Houses, for the ordering of the Militia, (presented unto him, to be made an Ordinance of Parliament, by the giving of his Royal Assent,) as he can by no means do it for the reasons hereafter mentioned, so he doth not conceive himself obliged, by any promise made in his Answer of the second of this month to the Petition of both Houses, to yield the same.

His Majesty finds great cause to except against the Preface, or Introduction, to that Order, which confesseth a most dangerous and desperate design upon the House of Commons of late, supposed to be an effect of the bloody counsels of Papists and other ill-affected persons; by which many may understand (looking upon other Printed Papers to that purpose) his coming, in Person, to the House of Commons on the fourth of January, which begot so unhappy a misunderstanding

ing

ing between him and his People: and, as to that, (though he now believes it, upon the information since given him, to have been an apparent breach of their privilege; and hath offered, and is ready, to repair the same for the future by any Act that shall be desired of His Majesty;) yet he must declare, and require to be believed, that he had no other design upon that House, or any Member of it, than to require, as he did, the surrender of the persons of those five Gentlemen whom His Majesty had the day before accused of High Treason, and to declare that he meant to proceed against them legally and speedily; upon which he believed that House would have delivered them up. And His Majesty calls the Almighty God to witness, that he was so far from any intention, or thought, of force, or violence, although that House had not delivered them according to his demand, or, in any case whatsoever, that he gave those his Servants, and others who then waited on His Majesty, express charge and command, that they should give no offence to any man; nay, if they received any provocation, or injury, that they should bear it without return: and His Majesty neither saw nor knew, that any person of his train had any other weapons, but such as were suitable to their several conditions, that is, his Pensioners and Guards, those weapons with which they usually attend his person to Parliament, and the other Gentlemen their swords. And, therefore, His Majesty doubts not but his Parliament will be regardful of his honour herein; that he shall not undergo any imputation by the rash, or indiscreet, expressions of any young men then in his Train, or by any desperate words uttered by others, who might mingle with them without his consent, or approbation.

For the persons nominated to be Lieutenants of the several Counties of *England* and *Wales*, His Majesty is contented to allow that recommendation. Onely concerning the City of *London*, and such other Corporations as, by ancient Charters, have, granted unto them, the power of the Militia, His Majesty doth not conceive, that it can stand with justice, or policy, to alter their government in that particular.

And His Majesty is willing forthwith to grant every of them, (that of *London* and those other Corporations excepted,) such Commissions as he hath done this Parliament to some Lord-Lieutenants by your advice. But, if that power be not thought enough, but that more shall be thought fit to be granted to these persons named than by the Law is in the Crown itself, His Majesty holds it reasonable, that the same be, by some Law, first vested in him, with power to transferre it to these persons; which he will willingly do. And, whatever that power shall be, to avoid all future doubts and questions, His Majesty desires it may be digested into an Act of Parliament, rather than an Ordinance, so that all his loving subjects may thereby particularly know both what they are to do, and what they are to suffer for their neglect; that there be as little latitude as possible for his good subjects to suffer under any Arbitrary power whatsoever.

As to the time desired for the continuance of the powers to be granted, His Majesty giveth this Answer, "That He cannot consent to divest Himselfe of the just power which God and the Lawes of this Kingdom have placed in Him for the defence

fence of His people, and to put it into the hands of others for any indefinite time. And, since the ground of this Request from his Parliament was, to remove their present feares and jealousies, that they might with safety apply themselves to the matter of his Message of the 20th of January, His Majesty hopeth that His Grace to them since that time in yielding to so many of their desires, and in agreeing to the Persons now recommended to him by his Parliament, and the power before expressed to be placed in them, will wholly dispell those feares and jealousies, and assureth them, that, as His Majesty hath now applyed this unusual remedy to their doubts, so (if there shall be cause) He will continue the same to such time as shall be agreeable to the same care he now expresseth towards them.

And, in this Answer, His Majesty is so far from receding from any thing he promised, or intended to grant, in his Answer to the former Petition, that His Majesty hath hereby consented to all that was then asked of him by that Petition concerning the Militia of the Kingdom (except that of *London*, and those other Corporations) which was to put the same into the hands of such persons as should be recommended unto Him by both Houses of Parliament: And His Majesty doubts not, but the Parliament, upon well weighing the particulars of this His Answer, will find the same more satisfactory to their ends, and the peace and welfare of all His good Subjects, than the way proposed by this intended Ordinance, to which, for these Reasons, His Majesty cannot consent.

And, whereas His Majesty observes, by the Petition of both Houses, presented to Him by the Earl of *Portland*, Sir *Thomas Heale*, and Sir *William Savile*, That in some places, some persons begin already to intermeddle, of themselves, with the Militia, His Majesty expecteth that His Parliament should examine the particulars thereof, it being a matter of high Concernment and very great Consequence.

And His Majesty requireth, that, if it shall appear to His Parliament, that any persons whatsoever have presumed to command the Militia without lawful Authority, they may be proceeded against according to Law.

A Copy of the PETITION of both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT, concerning the MILITIA, &c. Presented to HIS MAJESTY at Theobalds, 1st Martii, 1641.

Most Gracious Sovereignte,

YOUR Majestie's most loyal and obedient Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament, doe find their just apprehensions of sorrow and feare, in respect of the publick dangers and miseries like to fall upon Your Majesty and the Kingdom, to be much increased, upon the receipt of Your unexpected denial of their most humble and necessary Petition concerning the Militia of the Kingdom; especially grieving, that wicked and mischievous Counsellours should still have that power with Your Majesty, as in this time of imminent and approaching Ruine, rather to incline Your Resolutions to that which is apt to further the accomplishment of the desires

desires of the most malignant enemies of God's true Religion, and of the peace and safety of Your Self, and Your Kingdom, than to the dutiful and faithful Counsel of Your Parliament.

Wherefore they are enforced in all humility to Protest, That, if Your Majesty shall persist in that denial, the dangers and distempers of the Kingdom are such as will endure no longer delay: But, unlesse You shall be graciously pleased to assure them by these Messengers, that you will speedily apply Your Royal Assent to the satisfaction of their former desires, they shall be enforced, for the safety of Your Majesty and Your Kingdomes, to dispose of the Militia by the Authority of both Houses, in such manner as hath been propounded to Your Majesty, and they resolve to doe it accordingly.

They likewise most humbly beseech Your Majesty to believe, That the dangerous and desperate Designe upon the House of Commons, mentioned in their Preamble, was not inserted with any intention to cast the least aspersion upon Your Majesty, but therein they reflected upon that malignant party, of whose bloody and malicious practices they have had so often experience, and from which they can never be secure, unlesse Your Majesty will be pleased to put from You those wicked and unfaithful Counsellours, who interpose their own corrupt and malicious Designs betwixt Your Majesty's Goodness and Wisdome, and the prosperity and contentment of Your Selfe and of Your people: And that for the dispatch of the great affaires of the Kingdom, the safety of Your Person, the protection and comfort of Your Subjects, You will be pleased to continue Your abode near to *London* and the Parliament, and not to withdraw Your Selfe to any the remoter parts; which if Your Majesty should doe, it must needs be a cause of great danger and distraction.

That Your Majesty will likewise be graciously pleased to continue the Prince's Highnesse in these parts, at Saint *James's*, or any other of Your houses neere *London*, whereby the Designes which the enemies of the Religion and Peace of this Kingdom may have upon his Person, and the jealousies and feares of Your People, may be prevented.

And they beseech Your Majesty to be informed by them, That, by the Lawes of the Kingdom, the power of raising, ordering, and disposing of the Militia within any City, Town, or other place, cannot be granted to any Corporation by Charter, or otherwise, without the Authority and consent of Parliament: And that those parts of the Kingdom which have put themselves in a posture of defence against the common danger, have therein done nothing but according to the Declaration and direction of both Houses, and what is justifiable by the Lawes of this Kingdom.

All which their most humble counsell and desires, they pray Your Majesty to accept as the effect of that Duty and Allegiance which they owe unto You, and which will not suffer them to admit of any thoughts, intentions, or endeavours, but such as are necessary and advantageous for Your Majesty's Greatnesse and Honour,

Honour, and the safety and prosperity of the Kingdom, according to that Trust and Power which the Lawes have reposed in them.

HIS MAJESTIE'S ANSWER, to the PETITION of both HOUSES, Presented the first of March, 1641.

I AM so much amazed at this Message, that I know not what to Answer: You speak of Jealousies and Feares: Lay you hands to your hearts, and ask yourselves whether I may not likewise be disturbed with Feares and Jealousies: And, if so, I Assure you this Message hath nothing lessened them.

For the Militia, I thought so much of it before I sent that Answer, and am so much assured that the Answer is agreeable to what in Justice or Reason you can ask, or I in Honour grant, that I shall not alter it in any point.

For my Residence neere you, I wish it might be so safe and Honourable, that I had no cause to absent my Selfe from *White-hall*; Aske your selves whether I have not.

For my Son, I shall take that care of him, which shall justify me to God as a Father, and to my Dominions as a King.

To conclude, I assure you, upon my Honour, that I have no thought but of Peace and Justice to my People, which I shall, by all faire meanes, seek to preserve and maintain, relying upon the Goodness and providence of God, for the preservation of my Selfe and Rights.

Divers Questions upon HIS MAJESTIE'S last Answer, concerning the MILITIA, Resolved-upon by the House of COMMONS.

RESOLVED, &c. That this Answer of His Majesty, is a denial to the desires of both Houses of Parliament, concerning the Militia.

Resolved, &c. That those that advised His Majesty to give this Answer, are Enemies to the State, and mischievous Projectors against the defence of the Kingdom.

Resolved, &c. That this denial is of that dangerous Consequence, that, if His Majesty shall persist in it, It will hazard the Peace and safety of all his Kingdoms, unlesse some speedy remedy be applyed by the Wisdome and Authority of both Houses of Parliament.

Resolved, &c. That, such Parts of this Kingdom as have put themselves into a Posture of defence against the common danger, have done nothing but what is justifiable, and is approved by the House.

Resolved, &c. That, if His Majesty shall remove into any remote Parts from his Parliament, it will be a great hazard to the Kingdom; and a great prejudice to the Proceedings of the Parliament.

Resolved,

Resolved, &c. That this House holds it necessary, That His Majesty may be desired, That the Prince may come unto Saint *James's*, or to some other convenient place near about *London*, and there to continue.

Resolved, &c. That the Lords be desired to join with this House in an humble request unto His Majesty; That he will be pleased to reside neere his Parliament; That both Houses may have a convenience of Accesses unto him upon all occasions.

Resolved, &c. That the Lords be moved to join with this House in some fit course of examination, to find "who were the Persons that gave His Majesty this advice;" That they may be removed from His Majesty, and brought to condigne punishment.

Resolved, &c. That no Charter can be granted by the King to create a power in any Corporation over the Militia of that place, without consent of Parliament.

Resolved, &c. That the Lords shall be moved to join with this House in these Votes.

Resolved, &c. That the Lords shall be desired to appoint a select Committee, that may join with a Committee of a proportionable number of this House; to consider, and prepare, what is fit to be done upon these Votes, or upon any thing else that may arise upon this Answer of His Majesty concerning the Militia and concerning the Prince.

March 2.

Questions resolved upon by both Houses of PARLIAMENT, with an Order for the speedy Rigging of the NAVY, for the defence of the KINGDOM.

RESOLVED, &c. That the Kingdom be forth-with put into a Posture of defence, by authority of both Houses, in such a way as is already agreed-upon by both Houses of Parliament.

Resolved, &c. That the Lords be desired to join with the House of Commons in this Vote.

Resolved, &c. That a Committee shall be appointed to prepare a Declaration upon these two Heads, *viz.*

1. To lay-down the just causes of the feares and jealousies given to these Houses: and to clear these Houses from any jealousies conceived against them.

2. And to consider of all matters that may arise upon this Message of His Majesty, and to declare their opinions what is fit to be done thereupon.

Die

Die Mercurii, 2 Martii.

THE Lords and Commons in this present Parliament assembled, having received advertisement of extraordinary preparations made by the neighbouring Princes, both by Land and Sea; the intentions whereof have been so represented as to raise an apprehension in both Houses, That the publick Honour, Peace, and Safety of His Majesty and his Kingdom, cannot be secured, unlesse a timely course be taken for the putting of this Kingdom into a Condition of defence, at Sea, as well as Land: It is therefore Ordered by the Lords and Commons aforesaid, That the Earl of *Northumberland*, Lord-High Admiral of *England*, do forth-with give effectual direction and order, that all and every the Ships belonging to His Majesty's Navy, which are fit for service, and not already abroad, nor designed for this Summer's Fleet, be with all speed rigged, and put in such a readinesse, as that they may soon be fitted for the Sea; And that his Lordship do also make knowne unto all the Masters and Owners of such Ships as now are in, or about, any of the Harbours of this Kingdome, and may be of use for the publick defence thereof, That it will be an acceptable service to the King and Parliament, if they likewise will cause their Ships to be Rigged, and so far put in a readinesse as that they may be, at a short warning, set-forth to Sea, upon any emergent occasion: Which will be a means of great security to His Majesty and his Dominions.

The DECLARATION.

May it please your Majesty,

ALTHOUGH the Expressions in your Majesty's Message, of the second of this instant, *March*, do give just cause of sorrow to us, your faithful Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament, yet it is not without some mixture of confidence and hope, considering they proceeded from the mis-apprehension of our Actions and Intentions; which, (having no ground of Truth, or reality,) may, by your Majesty's Justice and Wisdom, be removed, when your Majesty shall be fully informed, that those Feares and Jealousies of ours, which your Majesty thinks to be causeless and without any just ground, do necessarily and cleerly arise from those dangers and distempers, into which the mischievous and evil Counsels about you have brought this Kingdom; And that those other Feares and Jealousies, by which your favour, your Royal Presence, and confidence, have been withdrawn from your Parliament, have no foundation, or subsistence, in any action, intention, or miscarriage, of ours, but are meerly grounded upon the falshood and malice of those, who, (for the supporting and fomenting their own wicked designs, against the Religion and Peace of the Kingdom,) do seek to deprive your Majesty of the Strength and Affection of your People, and them of your Grace and Protection, and thereby to subject both your Royal Person and the whole Kingdom to ruin and destruction.

To,

To satisfy your Majesty's judgement and conscience in both these points, we desire to make a cleer and free Declaration of the causes of our fears and jealousies; which we offer to your Majesty in these particulars:

1. That the designe of altering Religion, in this, and in your other Kingdoms, hath been potently carried-on by those in greatest Authority about you, for divers yeers together. The Queen's Agent at *Rome*, and the Pope's agent, or Nuncio, here, are not only evidences of this design, but have been great Actors in it.

2. That the War with *Scotland* was procured to make way for this intent, and chiefly invited and fomented by the Papists, and others Popishly-affected: whereof we have many evidences, and especially their free and general contribution to it.

3. That the Rebellion in *Ireland* was framed and contrived here in *England*; and that the English Papists were expected to have risen about the same time, we have several testimonies and advertisements from *Ireland*; and that it is a common speech amongst the Rebels: wherewith concur other Evidences, and observations, of the suspicions, meetings, and consultations, the tumultuary and seditious carriage, of those of that Religion, in divers parts of this Kingdom, about the time of the breaking-out of the Irish Rebellion. The deposition of *O'Connelly*,—the Information of Master *Cole*, Minister,—the Letter of *Trestram Whitcombe*,—the deposition of *Thomas Crant*,—and many others which we may produce, do all agree in this. The publike Declaration of the Lords, Gentlemen, and others of the Pale, that they would join with the Rebels, (whom they call *the Irish Army*,) or any other, to recover unto his Majesty his Royal Prerogative, wrested from him by the Puritan Faction in the Houses of Parliament in *England*, and to maintain the same against all others, as also to maintain Episcopal Jurisdiction, and the lawfulness thereof; these two being Quarrels, upon which his Majesty's late Army in the North should have been incensed against us.

N. B.

N. B.

The great cause we have to doubt, that that late design, styled, *The Queen's pious Intention*, was for the alteration of Religion in this Kingdom; for the success whereof, the Pope's Nuncio, the Count *Rosetti*, enjoined Fasting and Praying to be observed every Week by the English Papists; which appeared to us by one of the Original Letters directed by him to a Priest in *Lancashire*.

The boldness of the Irish Rebels, in affirming that they do nothing, but by Authority from the King: That they call themselves *the Queen's Army*: That the prey, or booty, which they take from the *English*, they mark with *the Queen's Mark*: That their purpose was to come to *England*, after they had done in *Ireland*, and sundry other things of this kind, proved by *O'Connelly*, and divers others, especially in the fore-mentioned Letter from *Trestram Whitcombe*, the Mayor of *Kinsale*, to his Brother *Benjamin Whitcombe*, wherein there is this passage, "That many other strange speeches they utter about Religion and our Court of *England*, which he dares not commit to paper."

N. B.

The manifold attempts to provoke Your Majesty's late Army, and the Army of the *Scots*, and to raise a faction in the City of *London* and other parts of the Kingdom:

Kingdom:

Kingdom : That those who have been Actors in those businesses, have had their dependance, their countenance, and encouragement from the Court ; Witness the Treason whereof Master *Jermin* and others stand accused, who was transported beyond Sea by Warrant under Your Majestie's Hand, after Your Majesty had given Assurance to your Parliament, that Your Majesty had laid a strict command upon all your Servants, that none of them should depart from Court : And that dangerous Petition, delivered to Captain *Leg* by your Majestie's own Hand, accompanied with a direction, Signed with *C. R.*

N. B. The false and scandalous accusation against the Lord *Kimbolton* and the five Members of the House of Commons, tender'd to the Parliament by your Majestie's own command,—endeavoured to be justified in the City by your own presence and perswasion, and to be put in execution upon their persons, by your Majestie's demand of them, in the House of Commons, in so terrible and violent a manner as far exceeded all former breaches of Priviledges of Parliament, acted by your Majesty, or any of your Predecessors : And (whatsoever your own intentions were,) divers bloody and desperate persons, which attended your Majesty, discovered their affections and resolutions to have massacred and destroyed the Members of that House, if the absence of those persons accused had not, by God's providence, stopt the giving of that *word*, which they expected, for the setting them upon that barbarous and bloody act :—The Listing of so many Officers, Souldiers, and others,—putting them into pay and under command of Colonels,—feasting and caressing them in an unusual manner at *Whitehall* ;—thereby maintaining them in the violent assaults, and other injuries, which they offered to divers of your Subjects who were coming that way in a lawful and peaceable manner :—the carrying them out of Towne ; after which, they were told by the Lord *Digby*, That the King removed on purpose, that they might not be trampled in the dirt :—And keeping them so long in pay, and endeavouring to engage the Gentlemen of the Innes of Court in the same course :—The plotting and designing of a perpetual Guard about your Majesty :—The labouring to infuse into your Majestie's Subjects an evil opinion of the Parliament thorow the whole Kingdom ;—and other Symptoms of a disposition of raising Arms and dividing your people by a Civil War ; in which combustion, *Ireland* must needs be lost, and this Kingdom miserably wasted and consumed, if not wholly ruined and destroyed.

N. B. That,—after a Vote had passed in the House of Commons, declaring, That the Lord *Digby* had appeared in a warlike manner at *Kingston* upon *Thames*, to the terrour and affright of your Majestie's good Subjects, and the disturbance of the public peace of the Kingdom ; and that, therefore, the Lords should be moved to require his attendance ;—he should, nevertheless, be of that credit with your Majesty, as to be sent-away by your own Warrant to Sir *John Pennington* to land him beyond the Sea ; from whence he vented his own traiterous conceptions, “ That your Majesty should declare yourself, and retire to a place of strength in this Kingdom,” as if your Majesty could not be safe among your people : And, withall, took that transcendent boldness, to write to the Queen, offering to entertain correspondency,

respondency with her Majesty by Cyphers, intimating some service which he might do in those Parts, for which he desired your Majesty's instructions; whereby, in probability, he intended the procuring of some foreign Force, to strengthen your Majesty in that condition into which he would have brought you: Which false and malicious counsel and advice, we have great cause to doubt, made too deep an impression on your Majesty, considering the course you are pleased to take, of absenting yourself from your Parliament, and carrying the Prince with you; which seems to express a purpose in your Majesty, to keep yourself in a readiness for the acting of it.

N. B.

The manifold Advertisements, which we have had from *Rome, Venice, Paris*, and other parts, that they still expect, that your Majesty has some great design in hand, for the altering of Religion, and the breaking the neck of your Parliament:—That you will yet find means to compass that Design;—that the Pope's *Nuncio* hath solicited the Kings of *France* and *Spain*e to lend your Majesty four thousand men a-piece, to help to maintain your Royalty against the Parliament. And this Foreign force, as it is the most pernicious and malignant Design of all the rest, so we hope it is, and shall always be, farthest from your Majesty's thoughts; because no man can believe that you will give-up your people and Kingdom to be spoiled by strangers, if you did not likewise intend to change both your own Profession in Religion and the publick Profession of the Kingdom, that so you might still be more assured of the assistance of those Foreign States who are attached to the Popish Religion, for your future support and defence.

These are some of the grounds of our fears and Jealousies, which made us so earnestly to implore your royal Authority and Protection for our defence and security, in all the ways of Humility and submission: which being denied by your Majesty, seduced by evil Counsel, we do (with sorrow for the great and unavoidable misery and danger which thereby is like to fall upon your own person and your Kingdoms,) apply ourselves to the use of that power, for the security and defence of both, which, by the fundamental Laws and Constitutions of this Kingdom, resides in us; yet still resolving to keep ourselves within the bounds of faithfulness and allegiance to your sacred Person and your Crown: so that, as to the second sort of Jealousies and fears of Us, express by your Majesty, we shall give a shorter, but as true and as faithful an Answer.

Whereas, Your Majesty is pleased to say, that, as to your residence neere the Parliament, you wish it might be so safe and honourable that you had no cause to absent yourself from *Whitehall*.—This we take as the greatest breach of Privilege of Parliament that can be offered;—As the heaviest misery to yourself, and imputation upon us, that can be imagined;—And the most mischievous effect of evil Counsels. It roots-up the strongest foundation of the safety and honour which your Crown affords; It seems, as much as may be, to cast upon the Parliament such a charge as is inconsistent with the nature of that great Council, being the Body whereof your Majesty is the Head: it strikes at the very being, both of King and Parliament; depriving your Majesty, in your own apprehension, of

their Fidelity, and them of your Protection; which are the mutual bands and supports of Government and Subjection,

We have, according to your Majesty's desire, laid our hands upon our hearts; we have asked ourselves, in the strictest examination of our Consciences; we have searcht our affections, our thoughts; considered our Actions: and we find none that can give your Majesty any just occasion to absent yourself from *Whitehall* and the Parliament; but that you may, with more honour and safety, continue there than in any other place.

Your Majesty lays a general tax upon us. If you will be graciously pleased to let us know the particulars, we shall give a clear and satisfactory Answer: But what hope can we have of ever giving your Majesty satisfaction, when those particulars which you have been made to believe were true, did, nevertheless, when they were produced and made known to us, appear to be false; and your Majesty, notwithstanding, will neither punish nor produce the Authors, but go-on to contract new Jealousies and Fears, upon general and uncertain grounds, affording us no means, or possibility, of particular Answer, to the clearing of ourselves: For proof whereof, we beseech your Majesty to consider these Instances.

The Speeches alledged to be spoken in a meeting of divers Members of both Houses at *Kensington*, concerning a purpose of restraining the Queen and Prince: which, after it was denied and disavowed, yet your Majesty refused to name the Authors, though humbly desired by both Houses.

The report of Articles framed against the Queen's Majesty, given-out by some of near relation to the Court: but, when it was publickly and constantly disclaimed, the credit seemed to be withdrawn from it. But the Authors, being kept safe, will always be ready for exploits of the same kind, wherewith your Majesty, and the Queen, will be often troubled, if this course be taken to cherish and secure them in such wicked and malicious slanders.

The heavy charge and accusation of the Lord *Kimbolton*, and the five Members of the House of Commons, who refused no trial or examination which might stand with the Priviledge of Parliament: yet no Authors, no witnesses, have been produced; against whom they may have reparation for the great injury and infamy cast upon them, notwithstanding three several Petitions of both Houses, and the authority of two Acts of Parliament vouched in the last of those Petitions.

We beseech your Majesty to consider, in what State you are; how easy and fair a way you have to happiness, honour, greatness, plenty, and security; if you will join with the Parliament and your faithful Subjects, in defence of the Religion and publick good of the Kingdom. This is all we expect from you; and for this we shall return to you our lives, fortunes, and uttermost endeavours, to support your Majesty, your just Sovereignty and power over us. But it is not words that can secure us, in these our humble desires. We cannot but too well and sorrowfully remember, what gracious Messages we had from you the last Summer, when, with your privity, the bringing-up the Army was in agitation. We cannot, but with the like affections, recal to our minds, how, not two days before you gave directions,

N B.

rections for the above-mentioned accusation, and your own coming to the Commons House, that House received from your Majesty a gracious Message, that you would always have as great care of their Priviledges as of your own Prerogative ; and of the safety of their persons, as of that of your own children. That which we expect ;—which will give us assurance, that you have no thought, but of peace and justice to your People ;—must be some real effect of your goodness to them, in granting those things which the present necessities of the Kingdom do enforce us to desire : And, in the first place, that your Majesty will be graciously pleased to put from you those wicked and mischievous Counsellors which have caused all these dangers and distractions, and to continue your own Residence, and the Prince's, near *London* and the Parliament : which, we hope, will be a happy beginning of contentment and confidence betwixt your Majesty and your People, and be followed with many succeeding blessings of Honour and Greatness to your Majesty, and of security and prosperity to them.

The Additional REASONS.

THE Lords and Commons have commanded us, to present unto your Majesty this further Addition to their former Declaration.

That your Majesty's return and continuance near the Parliament, is a matter, in their apprehension, of so great necessity and importance, towards the preservation of your Royal Person and your Kingdoms, that they cannot think they have discharged their duties, in the single expression of their desire, unless they add some further Reasons to back it with.

I. *Your Majesty's absence will cause men to believe, that it is out of design to discourage the undertakers, and hinder the other Provisions, for raising money for the defence of Ireland.*

II. *It will very much hearten the Rebels there, and disaffected persons in this Kingdom, as being an evidence and effect of the jealousy and division betwixt your Majesty and your People.*

III. *That it will much weaken and withdraw the affection of the Subject from your Majesty ; without which a Prince is deprived of his chiefest strength and lustre, and left naked to the greatest dangers and miseries that can be imagined.*

IV. *That it will invite and encourage the Enemies of our Religion and the State, in foreign Parts, to the attempting and acting of their evil designs and intentions towards us.*

V. *That it causeth a great interruption in the proceedings of Parliament.*

These considerations threaten so great danger to your Majesty's Person, and to all your Dominions, that, as your Majesty's great Council, they hold it necessary to represent to You this their faithful Advice, that so, whatsoever followeth, they may be excused before God and man.

His MAJESTIE'S Speech to the COMMITTEE, on the ninth of March, 1641, when they presented the DECLARATION of both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT, at NEWMARKET.

I AM confident that you expect not that I should give you a speedy Answer to this strange and unexpected Declaration; And I am sorry that, (in the Distraction of this Kingdom,) you should think this way of Address to be more convenient than that proposed by my Message, of the 20th of January last, to both Houses.

As concerning the grounds of your Fears and Jealousies, I will take time to answer particularly, and doubt not but I shall do it to the satisfaction of all the World. God, in his good time, will, I hope, discover the secrets and bottoms of all Plots and Treasons; and then I shall stand right in the eyes of all my People. In the mean time, I must tell you, That I rather expected a Vindication, for the Imputation laid on me in Master *Pym's* Speech, than that any more general Rumours and Discourses should get credit with you.

For my Fears and Doubts, I did not think they should have been thought so groundless, or trivial, while so many Seditious Pamphlets, and Sermons, are looked-upon, and so great Tumults are remember'd, unpunished, uninquied-into. I still confess my Fears, and call God to witness, That they are greater for the true Protestant Profession, my People, and the Laws, than for my own Rights or Safety; though I must tell you, I conceive that none of these are free from danger.

What would you have? Have I violated your Laws? Have I denied to pass any one Bill, for the ease and security of my Subjects? I do not ask you, what you have done for Me.

Have any of my People been transported with Fears and Apprehensions? I have offered as free and general a Pardon as yourselves can devise. All this considered, There is a Judgement from Heaven upon this Nation, if these Distractions continue.

God so deal with Me and Mine as all my thoughts and Intentions are upright for the maintenance of the true Protestant Profession, and for the Observation and Preservation of the Laws of this Land: And I hope God will bless and assist those Laws for my Preservation.

As for the Additional Declaration, you are to expect an Answer to it, when you shall receive the Answer to the Declaration itself.

Some Passages, that happened the 9th of March, between the KING'S MAJESTY; and the Committee of both HOUSES, when the DECLARATION was delivered.

WHEN His Majesty heard that Part of the Declaration which mentioned Master *Jermin's* Transportation, His Majesty interrupted the Earl of *Holland* in reading, and said, "That's false." Which being afterwards touched-upon again,
His

His Majesty then said, " 'Tis a lye." And when he was informed, that it related not to the Date, but to the Execution, of the Warrant, His Majesty said, " It might have been better expressed then, and that it was a high thing to tax a King with breach of Promise." As for this Declaraton, His Majesty said, " I could not have believed that the Parliament would have sent me such a one, if I had not seen it brought by such persons of honour. I am sorry for the Parliament; but glad I have the Declaration: For by *that* I doubt not to satisfy my People; though I am confident the greater part is so already."

Ye speak of ill Counsels: but I am Confident the Parliament hath had worse Informations than I have had Counsels. His Majesty asking, what he had denied the Parliament, The Earl of *Holland* instanced that of the *Militia*. His Majesty replied, " That was no Bill;" the Earl of *Holland* then said, " it was a necessary *request* at this time;" and his Majesty also then said, " he had not denied it."

What passed the next day, when HIS MAJESTY delivered his ANSWER.

WHICH was read by the Earl of *Holland* to the rest of the Committee; And that being done, His Lordship endeavoured to perswade his Majesty to come near the Parliament. Whereunto his Majesty answered, " I would you had given me cause; but I am sure this Declaration is not the way to it. And in all *Aristotle's Rhetoricks*, there is no such Argument of Perswasion." The Earl of *Pembroke*, thereupon, telling him that the Parliament had humbly besought his Majesty, to come near them aforesaid, His Majesty replied, " He had learnt by Our Declaration, that words were not sufficient." His Majesty being then again moved, by the said Earl of *Pembroke*, to express what he would have; said, " He would whip a boy in *Westminster* School, that could not tell that by his Answer." And further said, " They were much mistaken, if they thought his Answer of that *a dental*:" And, being also asked by the said Earl of *Pembroke*, " Whether the *Militia* might not be granted, as was desired by the Parliament, for a time?" His Majesty swore, " By God, not for an hour; you have askt that of me in this, which was never askt of a King, and with which I will not trust my Wife and Children."

His Majesty said, The Businesse of Ireland will never be done in the way that you are in; Foure hundred will never doe that Work. It must be put into the hands of One. If I were trusted with it, I would pawn my head, to end that Work. And, though I am a beggar my-selfe, yet (speaking with a strong asseveration) I can find money for that.

HIS MAJESTIE'S DECLARATION to both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT,
(Which He likewise recommends to the consideration of all His
loving Subjects) in Answer to that presented to Him at *Newmarket*,
the ninth of March, 1641.

THOUGH the Declaration lately presented to Us at *New-market*, from both Our Houses of Parliament, be of so strange a nature, in respect of what We expected

pected (after so many Acts of Grace and Favour to Our People) and some expressions in it so different from the usual Language to Princes, that We might well take a very long time to consider it; Yet the cleerness and uprightnesse of Our Conscience to God, and love to Our Subjects, hath supplied Us with a speedy Answer, and Our unalterable Affections to Our People have prevailed with Us to suppress that passion which might have well-enough become Us upon such an Invitation.

We have reconsidered Our Answer of the first of this moneth at *Theobalds*, which is urged to have given just cause of sorrow to Our Subjects. Whosoever looks over that Message (which was in effect to tell Us, That, if We would not join with them in an Act which, We conceived, might prove prejudicial and dangerous to Us and the whole Kingdome, they would make a Law without Us, and impose it upon Our People) will not think that sudden Answer can be excepted-to.

We have little encouragement to Replies of this nature, when We are told of how little value Our words are like to be with you, though they come accompanied with all the Actions of Love and Justice, where there is room for such Actions to accompany them. Yet We cannot but disavow the having any such evil Counsel, or Counsellours, about Us, to Our knowledge, as are mentioned; and, if any such be discovered, We will leave them to the Censure and Judgement of Our Parliament. In the mean time, We could wish, that Our owne immediate Actions, which We avow, and Our own Honour, might not be so roughly censured and wounded, under that common style of Evil Counsellours.

For Our Faithful and zealous affection to the true Protestant Profession, and Our resolution to concur with Our Parliament in any possible course for the propagation of it and the suppression of Popery, We can say no more than We have already expressed in our Declaration to all Our loving Subjects, published in January last, by the advice of Our Privy-Council; in which We endeavoured to make as lively a Confession of our Self in this point, as we were able, being most assured, that the constant Practise of Our Life hath been answerable thereunto: And therefore We did rather expect a Testimony and acknowledgment of such Our Zeal and Piety, than those Expressions which We meet-with in this Declaration, of any designe of altering Religion in this Kingdom. And We doe (out of the innocency of Our Soul) wish, that the Judgements of Heaven may be manifested upon those who have, or had, any such Designe.

As for the *Scots* troubles, We had well thought that those unhappy differences had been wrapt-up in perpetual silence, by the Act of Oblivion; which, being solemnly past in the Parliaments of both Kingdoms, stops Our mouth from any other Reply than to shew Our great dislike to the reviving the memory thereof.

If the Rebellion in *Ireland*, (so odious to all Christians) seems to have been framed and maintained in *England*, or to have any countenance from hence, We conjure both Our Houses of Parliament, and all Our loving Subjects whatsoever, to use all possible meanes to discover and find such out, that We may join in the
most

most exemplary vengeance upon them that can be imagined : But We must thinke Our-self highly and causelessly injured in Our Reputation, if any Declaration, Action, or Expression, of the Irish Rebels, any Letter from Count *Rosetti* to the Papists for Fasting and Praying, or from *Trestram Whitcombe*, of strange speeches uttered in *Ireland*, shall beget any jealousy, or misapprehension, in our Subjects, of Our Justice, Piety, and Affection, it being evident to all understandings, That those mischievous and wicked Rebels are not so capable of great advantage, [by any other circumstance] as by having their false discourses so far believed as to raise Fears and Jealousies to the distraction of this Kingdom, which is the onely way to their security : And We cannot expresse a deeper sense of the sufferings of Our poor Protestant Subjects in that Kingdom than We have done in our often-repeated Messages to both Houses, by which We have offered, and are still ready, to venture Our Royal Person for their Redemption ; well knowing, that, as We are (in Our own Interest) more concerned in them, so We are to make a strict Account to Almighty God for any neglect of Our duty for their preservation.

For the manifold attempts to provoke Our late Army, and the Army of the *Scots*, and to raise a Faction in the City of *London*, and other parts of the Kingdom : If it be said, as relating to Us, We cannot, without great indignation, suffer Our-Self to be reproached, to have intended the least Force, or threatenng, to Our Parliament ; as the being privy to the bringing-up of the Army would imply : Whereas, We call God to witness, We never had any such thought, or knew of any such resolution, concerning Our late Army.

For the Petition shewed to Us by Captain *Legge*, We well remember the same, and the occasion of that Conference. Captain *Legge* being lately come out of the North, and repairing to Us at *White-hall*, We asked him of the state of Our Army, and (after some relation made of it) he told Us, That the Commanders and Officers of the Army had a mind to petition the Parliament, as others of Our people had done, and shewed Us the Copy of a Petition : which We read, and (finding it to be very humble, desiring that the Parliament might receive no interruption in the Reformation of the Church and State to the model of Queen *Elizabeth's* days ;) We told him, We saw no harm in it : Whereupon he replied, That he believed all the Officers of the Army would like it ; onely he thought that Sir *Jacob Ashley* would be unwilling to sign it, out of feare that it might displease Us. We then read the Petition over again ; and then (observing nothing in it, either in matter or forme, that, as We conceived, could possibly give just cause of offence,) we delivered it to him againe, bidding him give it to Sir *Jacob Ashley*, for whose satisfaction We had written *C. R.* upon it, to testify Our approbation. And We wish that the Petition might even now be seen and published ; and then, We believe, it will appear to have been of no dangerous tendency, nor a just ground for the least jealousy or misapprehension.

For Master *Jermin*, it is well known that he was gone from *White-hall* before We received the desire of both Houses for the restraint of Our servants : neither did he return thither, or pass-over, by any Warrant granted by Us after that time.

For

An account of the Petition of the English Army, in the North of England to the Parliament, brought-up by Captain *Legge*, and shewn to the King.

For the breach of Priviledge in the Accusation of the Lord *Kimbolton*, and the five Members of the House of Commons, We thought We had given so ample satisfaction in Our several Messages to that purpose, that it should be no more pressed against Us, being confident that, if the breach of Priviledge had been greater than hath been ever before offered, our acknowledgement and retraction hath been greater than ever King hath given ;—besides the not examining how many of Our Priviledges have been invaded in defence and vindication of the other. And therefore We hoped that Our true and earnest Protestation in Our Answer to your Order concerning the Militia, would so far have satisfied you of Our intentions there, that you would no more have entertained any imagination of any other designe than We there expressed.

But, why the listing of so many Officers, and entertaining them at *White-hall*, should be misconstrued, We much marvel, when it is notoriously known that the tumults at *Westminster* were so great, and their demeanours so scandalous and seditious, that We had good cause to suppose Our owne Person, and those of Our Wife and Children, to be in apparent danger, and therefore We had great reason to appoint a Guard about Us, and to accept the dutiful tender of the services of any of Our loving Subjects ; which was all We did to the Gentlemen of the Innes of Court.

For the Lord *Digby*, We assure you, in the word of a King, that he had Our Warrant to passe the Seas, and had left Our Court, before We ever heard of the Vote of the House of Commons, or had any cause to imagine that his absence would have been excepted-against.

What your Advertisements are from *Rome*, *Venice*, *Paris*, and other parts,—or what the *Pope's Nuntio* solicits the Kings of *France* or *Spain* to do,—or from what persons such Informations come to you,—or how the credit and reputation of such persons have been sifted and examined,—We know not; but we are confident no sober, honest, man in Our Kingdoms can believe, that We are so desperate, or so senselesse, as to entertain such Designes as would not only bury this Our Kingdom in sudden distraction and ruine, but Our owne Name and Posterity in perpetual Scorn and Infamy. And therefore We could have wished, that, in matters of so high and tender a nature (wherewith the minds of Our good Subjects must needs be startled) all the expressions were so plain and easy, that nothing might stick with them with reflection upon Us, since you thought fit to publish it all.

And, having now dealt thus plainly and freely with you by way of Answer to the particular grounds of your Feares, We hope (upon a due consideration and weighing both together) you will not find the grounds to be of that moment to beget, or longer to continue, a misunderstanding betwixt Us, or force you to apply yourselves to the use of any other power than what the Law hath given you; the which We alwayes intend shall be the measure of Our own power, and expect it shall be the rule of Our Subjects obedience.

Concerning Our Feares and Jealousies, as We had no intention of accusing you, so are We sure no words spoken by Us (on the sudden) at *Theobalds* will beare that
that

that Interpretation. We said, as to Our Residence neere you, "We wished it might be so safe and Honourable that We should have no cause to absent Our-Selfe from *Whitehall*:" and how this can be a breach of Priviledge of Parliament, We cannot understand. We explained Our meaning in Our Answer at *New-Market*, at the Presentation of this Declaration, concerning the Printed seditious Pamphlets and Sermons, and the great tumults at *Westminster*: And We must appeal to you and to all the world, whether We might not justly suppose Our Self in danger of either. And, if We were now at *White-hall*, what security have We, that the like shall not happen againe, especially if any Delinquents of that nature have been apprehended by the Ministers of Justice, and been rescued by the People, and so have, as yet, escaped unpunished? If you have not been informed of the seditious words used in, and the circumstances of, those Tumults, and will appoint some way for the examination of them, We will require some of Our learned Counsel to attend with such evidence as may satisfy you. And till that be done, or some other course taken for Our security, you cannot (with reason) wonder that We intend not to be where We most desire to be.

And can there yet want evidence of Our hearty and importunate desire to join with Our Parliament and all Our faithful Subjects in defence of the Religion and publick good of the Kingdom? Have We given you no other earnest but words, to secure you of those desires? The very remonstrance of the House of Commons (published in *November* last) of the State of the Kingdom, allows Us a more real testimony of Our good Affections than words: that Remonstrance valued Our Acts of Grace and Justice at so high a rate, that it declared the Kingdome to be then a gainer, though it had charged itself, by Bills of Subsidies and Poll-money, with the leavy of 600,000 pounds, besides the contracting of a Debt to Our Scots Subjects of 220,000 pounds.

Are the Bills for the Triennial Parliament, For relinquishing Our Title of Imposing upon Merchandize, and Power of Pressing of Souldiers,—for the taking-away the Star-Chamber and High-Commission Courts,—for the Regulating the Council-Table,—nothing more than words? Are the Bills for the Forests,—The Stannary-Courts,—The Clerke of the Market,—And the taking-away the Votes of Bishops out of the Lords House,—nothing but words?—Lastly, what greater Earnest of Our trust and reliance on Our Parliament could, or can, We give, than the passing of the Bill for the continuance of this present Parliament? The length of which, we hope, will never alter the nature of Parliaments and the Constitution of this Kingdome, or invite Our Subjects so much to abuse Our Confidence, as to esteem any thing fit for this Parliament to doe, which would not be as much so if it were in our power to dissolve the Parliament to-morrow. And, after all these, and many other, Acts of Grace on Our part (that We might be sure of a perfect Reconciliation betwixt Us and all Our Subjects) We have offered, and are still ready to grant, a free and general Pardon, as ample as yourselves shall think fit. Now, if these be not real expressions of the

Affections of Our Soule, for the publick good of Our Kingdom, we must confesse that We want skill to manifest them.

To conclude (although we think Our Answer already full to that point) concerning Our Returne to *London*: We are willing to Declare, that We looke upon it as a matter of so great weight, as with reference to the Affaires of this Kingdom, and to our own inclinations and desires, that, if all We can say, or doe, can raise a mutual Confidence (the onely way, with God's blessing, to make us all happy) and, by your encouragement, the Lawes of the Land, and the government of the City of *London*, may recover some life for Our Security, We will overtake your desires, and be as soon with you as you can wish. And, in the mean time, We will be sure, that neither the businesse of *Ireland*, or any other advantage for this Kingdom, shall suffer through Our default, or by our absence: We being so farre from repenting the Acts of Our Justice and Grace, which We have already performed to Our People, that We shall, with the same Alacrity, be still ready to adde such new ones as may best advance the Peace, Honour, and Prosperity of this Nation.

A Letter sent from both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT, to all the High-Sheriffs of this KINGDOM, concerning the late Propositions for IRELAND.

Master Sheriff,

THE Lords and Commons; being deeply sensible of the unspeakable calamities which his Majestie's good Subjects of the Kingdom of *Ireland* doe now suffer, by the barbarous cruelties and massacres committed by the Rebels there; and conceiving these printed Propositions herewith sent (which are ratified by His Majestie's Royal Assent, and the unanimous approbation of both Houses of Parliament) doe undoubtedly tend to the speedy and effectual reducing of those bloody Rebels, the propagating of the Protestant Religion, the augmenting of the greatnesse and the Revenue of the Crowne of *England*, and the establishing of an happy and firm Peace for the future in his Majestie's three Kingdoms; and all this to be effected (by God's gracious assistance) without the general charge of the Subject, and to the great advantage of those that shall under-write;—have thought fit to require you to publish these printed Propositions and Instructions at this Lent-Assizes, to the intent that all His Majestie's good people within your County may take notice of the benefit which they may receive by under-writing in due time; And that so many of them as shall be then present and willing to subscribe, may give-up a Note of their Names, Sums, and dates of their Subscriptions, to you, to be entred in the Paper-book mentioned in the printed Instructions, which is forthwith to be sent unto you. And you are further directed hereby, at this Lent-Assizes (if they be not past) by the advice and assistance of the Justices of Peace for your County then present, to appoint certaine days and places most convenient for this service; when and where your
selfe,

selfe, and the Justices of Peace within each division, will be present, to receive the Names, Sums, and times of Subscription, of such of His Majestie's well-affected Subjects within your County as shall not have subscribed at this Lent-Assizes, their Names, Sums, and times of Subscription, to be likewise entred in the Paper-book. And, if this Letter come to your hands after the Assizes, then to appoint such times and places as may best speed this service, And further, your selfe, and the Justices of Peace, the Ministers of God's Word, and persons of quality within your County, are hereby earnestly desired to shew themselves active and exemplary in advancing this great and pious work; 'Tis a service tending so much to the glory of God, the honour and profit of His Majesty, and the peace and tranquillity of his three Kingdoms for the future. And you are likewise to informe those that shall under-write, that the Act of Parliament (which His Majesty hath promised to passe for the settling of those two Millions and a halfe of Acres) is already in hand, and that the Lands are to be divided so indifferently by Lot amongst them that under-write, that no one man whatsoever shall have more respect, or advantage, than another, in division. And, lastly, You are to give a speedy account to the Parliament of your proceedings herein, and of those that doe really advance this service. Thus, not doubting of your utmost care and diligence herein, we bid you heartily farewell.

Several Votes Resolved-upon by both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT, concerning the securing of the Kingdom of ENGLAND and Dominion of WALES.

Resolved, upon the Question, by the Lords in Parliament, nemine contradicente.

THAT the Ordinance of the Lords and Commons in Parliament, for the safety and defence of the Kingdom of *England*, and Dominion of *Wales*, is not any way against the Oath of Allegiance.

Resolved, &c. That the several Commissions granted, under the Great-Seal, to the Lieutenants of the several Counties, are illegal and void.

Resolved, &c. That whosoever shall execute any Power over the *Militia* of this Kingdom, and Dominion of *Wales*, by colour of any Commission of Lieutenancy, without consent of both Houses of Parliament, shall be accounted a disturber of the Peace of the Kingdom.

Die Martis, 15 Martii, 1641.

RESOLVED, &c. That the Kingdom hath been of late, and still is, in so evident and imminent danger, both from enemies abroad and a Popish and discontented

tented party at home; That there is an urgent and inevitable necessity of putting His Majestie's Subjects into a posture of defence, for the safeguard both of His Majesty and his People.

That the Lords and Commons, fully apprehending this danger, and being sensible of their own duty to provide a suitable prevention, Have, in several Petitions, addressed themselves to His Majesty, for the ordering and disposing of the *Militia* of the Kingdom, in such a way as was agreed-upon by the wisdom of both Houses, to be most effectual and proper for the present Exigences of the Kingdom; yet could not obtain it; but His Majesty did several times refuse to give his Royal assent thereunto.

Ordered, that the House of Peers agrees with the House of Commons in this Proposition.

Resolved, &c. That in this case of extreme danger, and of His Majestie's refusal, the Ordinance agreed-on by both Houses, for the *Militia*, doth oblige the people, and ought to be obeyed, by the Fundamental Laws of this Kingdom.

Resolved, &c. That these shall be the Heads of a Declaration.

Resolved, &c. That such persons as shall be nominated Deputy-Lieutenants and approved-of by both Houses, shall receive the commands of both Houses, to take upon them to execute their Offices.

Ordered, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That these several Votes shall be forthwith Printed and Published.

John Brown, Cler. Parliament.

HUNTINGTON, 15 *Martii*, 1641.

HIS MAJESTIE'S *Message to both Houses of PARLIAMENT, upon His removal to the City of YORK.*

HIS Majesty, being now upon His Remove to His City of *York*, where he intends to make His Residence for some time, thinks fit to send this Message to both Houses of Parliament.

That He doth very earnestly desire, that they will use all possible industry in expediting the businesse of *Ireland*, in which they shall find so cheerful a concurrence by His Majesty, that no inconvenience shall happen to that Service by His absence, He having all that Passion for the reducing of that Kingdom, which He hath expressed in his former Messages, and being unable by words to manifest more affection to it than He hath endeavoured to do by those Messages (having likewise done all such Acts as he hath been moved unto by his Parliament). Therefore, if the Misfortunes and Calamities of His poore Protestant Subjects there shall grow upon them (though His Majesty shall be deeply concerned in, and sensible
of

of their sufferings) he shall wash his hands before all the World from the least imputation of slacknesse in that most necessary and pious work.

And, that His Majesty may leave no way unattempted, which may beget a good understanding between him and his Parliament, he thinks it necessary to Declare, That, as he hath been so tender of the Priviledges of Parliament that he hath been ready and forward to retract any Act of his own, which, he hath been informed, hath Trencht upon their Priviledges, so he expects an equal tendernesse in them of His Majestie's known and unquestionable Priviledges (which are the Priviledges of the Kingdom) amongst which, he is assured, it is a fundamental One, "That His Subjects cannot be Obliged to Obey any Act, Order, or Injunction to which His Majesty hath not given his consent:" And therefore he thinks it necessary to publish, That he expects, and hereby requires, Obedience from all his loving Subjects, to the Laws established, and that they presume not, upon any pretence of Order or Ordinance (to which His Majesty is no Party) concerning the *Militia*, or any other thing, to doe or execute what is not warranted by those Laws; His Majesty being resolved to keep the Lawes himselfe, and to require obedience to them from all His Subjects.

And His Majesty once more recommends to his Parliament the substance of his Message of the twentieth of *January* last, that they compose and digest, with all speed, such Acts as they shall think fit, for the present and future establishment of their Priviledges; the free and quiet enjoying their Estates and Fortunes; The Liberties of their Persons; the security of the true Religion now professed in the Church of *England*; The maintaining His Majestie's Regal and just Authority, and settling his Revenue; His Majesty being most desirous to take all fitting and just ways, which may beget a happy understanding between him and his Parliament, in which he conceives His greatest power and riches doth consist.

The Votes of both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT, concerning the KING's last Message, sent from Huntington, to both HOUSES, on Wednesday the sixteenth of March, 1641.

RESOLVED, &c. That this House shall insiſt upon their former Votes concerning the *Militia*.

Resolved, &c. That the King's absence so far remote from his Parliament, is not only an obstruction, but may be a destruction, to the affaires of *Ireland*.

Resolved, &c. That, when the Lords and Commons in Parliament, (which is the supreme Court of Judicature in the Kingdom,) shall declare what the Law of the Land is, to have this declaration, not only questioned and controverted, but contradicted, and a command issued that it should not be obeyed, is a high breach of the priviledge of Parliament.

Resolved,

Resolved, &c. That a Committee shall be appointed by this House to join with a Committee of the Lords, to enquire where this Message was framed.

Resolved, &c. That those persons that advise His Majesty to absent himselfe from the Parliament, are enemies to the peace of this Kingdom, and may justly be suspected to be favourers of the Rebellion in *Ireland*.

Resolved, &c. That those that advised His Majesty to this Message are enemies to the peace of this Kingdom, and justly to be suspected to be favourers of the Rebellion in *Ireland*.

A new Declaration of both HOUSES of PARLIAMENT, sent to the KING's Most Excellent MAJESTY, the sixteenth of March, upon His Removal from Huntington to YORK.

May it please your Majesty,

YOUR Majestie's most humble and faithful Subjects, the Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses of the Commons House of Parliament, having considered Your Majestie's Reply to their Answer, touching such persons as have been licensed by Your Majesty to pass into *Ireland*, do most humbly beseech Your Majesty to believe, that they shall always with thankfulness and joy receive from Your Majesty any satisfactory Answer to their just requests; And, as they hope, they shall find in Your Majesty a readinesse to rectifie those things which have been done to their prejudice, so will they be careful to remove all apprehensions of their Actions, or Speeches, which may seem to cast any dishonour upon Your Majesty.

For Your Majestie's better satisfaction concerning the positive affirmation, that many of the chief Commanders now in the head of the Rebels (after the Ports were stopped by Order of both Houses) have been suffered to passe by Your Majestie's immediate Warrant: May it please Your Majesty to consider that therein they have affirmed nothing but what they had cause to believe was true; the grounds whereof they humbly present to Your Majesty.

The first ground is this, that both Houses of Parliament, (having, upon Your Majestie's commendation, taken into their care the suppression of the Rebellion of *Ireland*) had reason to be especially watchful over the Ports, because the Rebels, abounding in numbers of men for the most part ignorant of the use of their Armes, could by no means become dangerous or formidable to this Kingdome, but by the access of Souldiers and Commanders, wherewith they were like to be furnished either out of *France* or *Flanders*; from both which places the passage into *Ireland* is speedy and easy through this Kingdome. And therefore they could not choose but be very sensible of whatsoever gave liberty, or opportunity, to such a passage, as of a very hurtful and dangerous grievance: for prevention whereof they did, upon the seventh of *November*, agree upon an Order, and restrain all pas-
sage

sage into *Ireland*, but upon due and strict examination by such persons as were trusted to make those Licences.

A second ground, that the other Licences granted to the Lord *Delwin*, and then acknowledged by Your Majestie's Answer, were such (both in regard of the persons to whom they were granted, and the extent of the words in which they were granted,) as were apt to produce such an effect as is mentioned in that positive Affirmation, that is, to open a way for the passage of Papists, and other dangerous persons, to join with the Rebels, and to be Heads and Commanders amongst them: which is thus proved.

The Warrant granted to Colonel *Butler*, since the order of restraint by both Houses of Parliament, did extend to all Ports of *England* and *Scotland*, and did give free passage to himself and to his Company, without any qualification of persons, or Limitations of Number: and this Colonel (who was himselfe a Papist, and had a Brother who was in Rebellion, and was a General of the Rebels in *Munster*;) was expected and very much desired by those Rebels; who, for a long time, kept a Regiment to be commanded by him, as we have been credibly informed.

The second was granted to a Son of the Lord *Nettersfield*; which Lord had four Sons in *England* since the Rebellion, one of which is settled in *England*, and the three others intended to passe into *Ireland*; and who were all dangerous persons, being Papists, bred in the Wars, in the service of the King of *Spain*; and one of them was lately become a Jesuit.

The third, granted to the Lord *Delwin*, extends to himselfe and foure persons more, unnamed. One of those who should have past with him, is taken to be a Jesuit; and another, who calls himself *Ploncket*, seems to be a man of some breeding and quality, and like to have been serviceable to the Rebels, and to have done mischief, if he had gone-over.

The fourth granted to Sir *George Hamilton*, and three more persons unnamed. This Gentleman is likewise a profest Papist, and may be doubted to be of the party of the Rebels, one of that Name being mentioned in the instructions of *Sempill* the Jesuit, amongst divers other dangerous persons of the Popish party in *Scotland* and *Ireland*; which instructions were found in a ship stayed in *Cornwall*, which was going into *Ireland* with divers Jesuits, Souldiers, and others, for the encouragement of the Rebels.

A third ground is this, That, by virtue and authority of these Licences, several persons have passed-over, who are now in Actual Rebellion, and joynd with the Rebels; and some have command amongst them: which is thus proved.

One Captain *Sutton* did, by virtue and authority of your Majestie's licence, embark at *Whitehaven*, in the company of Colonel *Butler*, and was driven-back by foul weather; Whereupon the Colonel stayed, and went to *Chester*; but that Captain re-embarked himself in the same Bottom, and passed into *Ireland*, where he went into Rebellion, with the Lord *Dunsany*, and hath since obtained the place of a Colonel amongst the Rebels; as we are very credibly informed.

Two

Two of the Sons of the Lord *Nettersfield*, one a Jesuite, and the other a Soldier, passed into *Ireland*, in *December* last; both of them by virtue of your Majesty's Warrant, as we have cause to believe; for that they went both together in one Ship, and the Licence, acknowledged to be granted by your Warrant, must needs be granted to one of them, seeing that the other Brother, who lately endeavoured to pass-over, did produce no Licence, and, upon his Examination, doth absolutely deny that he had any.

A fourth ground, (which we humbly offer to your Majesty,) is this, That your Majesty cannot be assured, that no other did pass upon your Licence, as your Majesty doth conceive, and is pleased to express in your Answer, and that we had great cause to believe, that divers others had passed-over by your Warrant, besides the persons afore-mentioned, and that, for these reasons;

1. Because we received such a general information, that divers, now in the head of the Rebels, were passed by your Majesty's Licence, which (being true in part, and easy to be effected, in regard of the Nature and extent of the Warrants, and probable to be attempted, in regard of the subtilty and vigilancy of that party, to make use of all advantages,) seemed to deserve credit; which we should not have given to it, if it had been a naked information, without such circumstances.

2. Because we had concurring Advertisements, from *Ireland* and *Chester*, that divers Priests, Jesuits, and Popish Commanders, had passed-over, and were landed there; and particularly some of Colonel *Bulter's* Company; and that the officers of the Ports had kept no Entry of the names of these persons, or of the Warrants by which they were transported.

These Instances, we hope, will be sufficient to perswade your Majesty to believe, that, as we had some cause to give credit to the said Informations, so we had no intention to make any ill use of them to your Majesty's dishonour, but did impute the blame to your Ministers, who might have been more careful to have informed your Majesty of the Quality of those persons, named in your Licences, and so to have limited them, that they might not have extended to others, as they did, how many and dangerous soever.

And they pray your Majesty to rest assured, that they shall always be tender of your Honour and Reputation with your good Subjects; and for this cause have made this true Declaration of the full state of this matter, that they may think no otherwise of it than the truth: and in all things they shall labour to establish a good understanding and confidence betwixt your Majesty and your people; which they heartily desire and pray for, as the chiefest means of preserving the honour, safety, and prosperity of your Majesty and your Kingdom.

His

His MAJESTIE'S Answer to a Message sent to Him by the House of COMMONS, concerning Licences granted by Him to persons to goe into IRELAND.

HIS Majesty hath seen and considered the Message presented to Him by the Lord *Compton* and Master *Baynton*, the nineteenth of *March*, 1641, at *York*, Touching such persons as have been Licensed by His Majesty to passe into *Ireland*.

Though He will not insist upon what little Reason they had to suspect that some ill-affected persons had passed into *Ireland*, under colour of His Majesty's Licence (Inferences, slender Proofs to ground belief upon) yet He must needs avow, That, for any thing that is yet declared, He cannot see any ground why Master *Pym* should so boldly affirme before both Houses of Parliament, *That, since the stop upon the Ports by both Houses against all Irish Papists, many of the Commanders now in the head of the Rebels have been suffered to passe by His Majesty's immediate Warrant*; For as yet there is not any particular person named that is now so much as in Rebellion (much lesse in the head of the Rebels) to whom His Majesty hath given Licence.

And therefore, according to His Majesty's Reply upon that Subject, His Majesty expects, That His House of Commons should publish such a Declaration, whereby this mistaking may be cleared: That so all the World may see His Majesty's Caution in giving of Passes; and likewise, That His Ministers have not abused His Majesty's Trust, by any surreptitious Warrants.

And lastly, His Majesty expects, That hence-forth there be more Warinesse used, before such publick Aspersions be laid, unless the Grounds be before-hand better warranted by sufficient Proofs.

END OF THE APPENDIX.

1880
1881
1882

1883
1884
1885

1886
1887
1888
1889
1890

1891
1892
1893
1894
1895
1896
1897
1898
1899
1900

DIRECTIONS TO THE BINDER.



The Portrait to front the Title.

The Plate representing the two Houses of Parliament to be placed before the Appendix.

THREE TRACTS

PUBLISHED AT AMSTERDAM, IN THE YEARS 1691 AND 1692,

UNDER THE NAME OF

LETTERS OF GENERAL LUDLOW

TO

SIR EDWARD SEYMOUR,

AND OTHER PERSONS,

COMPARING THE OPPRESSIVE GOVERNMENT OF

KING CHARLES I.

IN THE FIRST FOUR YEARS OF HIS REIGN,

WITH THAT OF THE FOUR YEARS OF THE REIGN OF

KING JAMES II.

AND VINDICATING THE CONDUCT OF THE PARLIAMENT THAT BEGAN IN NOVEMBER, 1640.

LONDON:

REPRINTED BY ROBERT WILKS, 89, CHANCERY-LANE,

AND SOLD BY WHITE, COCHRANE, AND CO. FLEET-STREET, LONDON.

1812.

L

THREE TRACTS

PUBLISHED AT AMSTERDAM, IN THE YEARS 1691 AND 1692,

ENTITLED

LUDLOW'S LETTERS.

P R E F A C E

TO THE

PRESENT EDITION OF THESE THREE TRACTS,

INTITLED

LUDLOW'S LETTERS.

THESSE three Letters were published at Amsterdam, in Holland, in the years 1691 and 1692, in the name of *Major-General Ludlow*, who was then living in a state of banishment in Switzerland, where he died at a place called *Vevay* in the following year 1693, at the age of seventy-three years. But, whether they were really written by him, or by some other person in his name, I do not know. But, by whomsoever they may have been written, they contain an admirable vindication of the conduct of the famous Parliament of England that met at Westminster on the 3d of November, in the year 1640, and obtained from King Charles the First several important Acts of Parliament for reviving and confirming the antient Laws of the Kingdom for the protection of the personal liberty of English subjects against arbitrary imprisonment at the pleasure of the Crown, and of their property against arbitrary taxation, by Forced Loans, Ship-money, Coat and Conduct-money, and other such exactions, without the consent of Parliament; and for redressing

other heavy grievances under which they had laboured throughout the whole course of his reign.

In the endeavours made to obtain these excellent Acts of Parliament great majorities of both Houses had concurred with ardour. But, when they had been obtained, about the end of the month of November, 1641, a great division of opinion began to appear in both Houses of Parliament concerning the further measures which were to be adopted. For a great many Members in both Houses alledged, "that the King had now made a sufficient number of concessions and confirmations of the rights and liberties of his subjects, to satisfy all reasonable men;" and expressed an apprehension that, if the powers of the Crown were to be reduced still further, they would not be sufficient to support the dignity of the Monarchical, or Executive, branch of the Constitution, and that the nation would be in danger of falling into the confusions of a democratical, or republican, form of Government." These were, as I conceive, the sentiments of that party in the two Houses, which now appeared in favour of the King, and was therefore called *the Royal Party*. And of this party the Marquis of Hertford, the Earl of Southampton, and the Earl of Lindsey, in the House of Lords, and Lord Falkland, Sir John Colepepper, and Mr. Edward Hyde, (who was afterwards Earl of Clarendon and Lord Chancellor,) in the House of Commons, were eminent members. And Lord Clarendon, in the History of his own life, (which was published in the year 1759, more than fifty years after the publication of his History of the Civil War, between the King and his Parliament, which he calls *the Grand Rebellion*,) informs us that, at this time of a division of opinion in the Parliament upon the further measures to be insisted-on by them for the settlement of the Nation, the King consulted with those three latter Gentlemen, and employed them as his confidential agents to support his Interests and Dignity in
the

the further proceedings of the House of Commons ; and that, of those three Gentlemen, the King was most inclined to listen to the advice of the last, Mr. Edward Hyde himself. The opposite party in both Houses was also very numerous, and especially in the House of Commons, where Mr. Pym Mr. Hampden, and Mr. Denzil Holles, seem to have been the principal leaders. This Party made answer to the Royal Party, “ that they also should be satisfied with the several useful Acts to which the King had already given his consent; if they could be confident that the King would constantly observe them ; but that,—from the reluctance with which the King had been seen to grant them,—and from his former practice of breaking and setting-aside some acts of the same beneficial tendency in the first years of his reign, and more especially that very important act, called *The Petition of Right*, (to which he had, with great difficulty, and after shewing great unwillingness to pass it, been prevailed-upon to give his royal assent,)—and from his having totally laid-aside the use of Parliaments for eleven years together, and governed the nation without them, as an Absolute Monarch over his people, which he had declared himself to be ;—they could not but think it necessary to require him to give his assent to one more Act of Parliament that might be a security to the Nation for his observance of all the rest. And the Act that they required for that purpose seemed to be the most simple and natural measure that could be resorted-to on that occasion ; namely, An Act to vest the command of the Militia of the several Counties of England and Wales (which was the only legal military power allowed by the English Laws and Constitution in time of Peace with foreign Nations,) in the hands of several Lords and Gentlemen, of known good affections towards Publick Liberty, who were to be named in the Act that was to be passed for that purpose, and were to be therein appointed Lords-Lieutenants of the said Counties, with a power to
appoint

appoint their several Deputy-Lieutenants, Colonels, Captains, and other Officers under them, in their respective Counties. And this proposal was thought so reasonable, and even necessary, that a majority of the House of Commons voted for it, notwithstanding the opposition of the new royal party under the direction of Mr. Edward Hyde and his two associates above-mentioned. But the King, when requested by the two Houses of Parliament to agree to this proposal, refused to do so; and, when the Earl of Pembroke (who was one of the Commissioners sent by the two Houses of Parliament to make this proposal to him,) asked him, "whether he might not grant the regulation of the Militia, in the manner that was desired by the Parliament, *for a limited time,*" the King, in answer, swore by God, "that he would not grant it even for a single hour;" adding these words, "You have asked that of me in this, which was never asked of a king, and with which I will not trust my wife and children." These words were spoken on the 9th day of March, 1641-42, when a Declaration of both Houses of Parliament was delivered to the King at Newmarket. And, soon after this refusal, the two Houses of Parliament issued an Ordinance by their own authority for the levying and regulation of the Militia, and the King raised an armed force at York under the name of a *Life-guard* for the defence of his person; and, in a few months after, the whole nation was engaged in a furious civil war.

It seems, therefore, to have been a measure of absolute necessity in the two Houses of Parliament,—after the King's refusal to settle the Militia in the hands of persons known by them to be true friends of Publick Liberty, and of the good Laws lately obtained for its protection,—to take upon themselves to do it by their own authority; though, in times of Peace and Harmony between the King and the People, the right of raising the Militia and appointing the Commanders of it, belonged to the King alone. And, if they

they had not done so, it is almost certain that the King would have raised a Militia composed of men devoted to his own principles of arbitrary government, and under the command of Lords-Lieutenants and Deputy-Lieutenants, and Colonels, and Captains, and other officers, of the same way of thinking; with which he would have dissolved his Parliament, (as he had done all his former ones,) and have either resumed his favourite mode of government without any Parliament at all, or, if he had thought it safer to call another Parliament, would have contrived, partly by bribery and partly by the terror of his army, or Militia, to have it composed of such members as would be willing to consent to the repeal of several of the beneficial Acts to which he had lately given his consent. And therefore, if the two Houses of Parliament had, upon this refusal of the King to settle the Militia in the manner they proposed, abstained from settling it by their own authority, (as the royal party, by the advice of Mr. Edward Hyde, would have vainly persuaded them to do) all their successful labours in the first year of their sitting, (from November, 1640, to November, 1641,) whereby the liberties of Englishmen had been recovered and confirmed, would have been lost and thrown-away. This would have been so great a calamity to the nation, that the conduct of the Parliament in taking that irregular step of settling the Militia of the kingdom, by their own authority, in order to prevent it, might justly be considered as an *act of self-defence*; which is a right that belongs to oppressed nations, as well as to injured individuals. And then it will follow, that, if the suspicion, or rather the strong opinion, entertained by the Parliament, of the King's insincerity, in giving his assent to those beneficial Acts that had been lately passed, and of his secret and earnest desire of revoking them, or setting them aside, on the first convenient opportunity, was well-founded; *the King*, and *not* the Parliament, ought to be considered

as the guilty author, or causer, of the ensuing civil war, and of all the blood-shed and misery which it brought upon the nation.

Now "that this suspicion, entertained by the Parliament, of the King's secret desire of revoking, or setting-aside, all those good acts which he had lately assented-to, was well-founded," is amply proved in the three tracts here re-published, under the title of *Ludlow's Letters*; which contain an ample review of the several acts of misgovernment and oppression, from the beginning of King Charles the First's reign, to the month of April, 1642, when he had refused to reside near his Parliament, and to act in conjunction with them, and had retired towards the north of England, where he soon after raised a body of armed men for his defence; which, in a few months after, brought on the civil war. All these acts of misgovernment are set-forth in these letters, with great clearness and strength, and supported by indisputable proofs, and form a powerful confirmation of the summary account of the first part of King Charles's reign, given in the introductory chapters of Mr. May's excellent History of this Parliament.

The first of these three tracts is intitled, *A Letter from Major-General Ludlow to Sir Edward Seymour, comparing the Tyranny of the first four years of King Charles the Martyr, with the Tyranny of the four years reign of the late Abdicated King, James the Second*, and was printed at Amsterdam, in the year 1691, or about two years after the election of King William and Queen Mary to the Crown of England. And the drift of it is to shew, that the people of England of that time, had as much reason to be dissatisfied with the oppressive and illegal government of King Charles the First, in the first four years of his reign, as their successors of the then present day, had to be dissatisfied with the oppressive and illegal acts of the whole four years of the late reign of King James the Second, and, therefore, that it was unjust to
censure

censure the great Parliament of November, 1640, for their resistance to King Charles the First, in the year 1642, when he refused to give them a reasonable security for the continuance of those good laws, for the redress of their grievances, which (in the great distress of his situation, when a Scottish army, who had opposed his attempts to alter their religion, had entered England in a hostile manner, and taken possession of the Northern Counties of it) he had reluctantly consented to pass. For, if the late resistance to King James the Second for his tyrannical proceedings in his reign of four years, (which produced his abdication of the Crown,) was justifiable and even laudable, (as the Letter-writer allows it to have been in a high degree,) it must, surely, be allowed, that the resistance of the Parliament of November, 1640, to King Charles the First, after fifteen years of the like misgovernment, followed by a refusal of the natural security for his future observance of some late Acts of Parliament which he had, from the extream distress of his situation, been prevailed on to consent-to, must likewise have been justifiable and laudable. This Letter is writ in a clear, strong, and spirited style, and accompanied with an abundance of proofs and testimonies; and, with an Appendix of two pages, it extends through twenty pages of this Edition.

The second tract is intituled, *A Letter from General Ludlow to Dr. Hollingworth, their Majesties' Chaplain, at St. Botolph, Aldgate; defending his former Letter to Sir Edward Seymour, &c. and vindicating the Parliament which began in November, 1640; and was printed also at Amsterdam, as well as the former tract, and in the same year, 1691. This tract was written in answer to a tract of Dr. Hollingworth, intituled A Defence of King Charles the First, occasioned by the lies and scandals of many bad men of this age; by Richard Hollingworth, D. D. their Majesty's chaplain at St. Botolph, Aldgate; in which Dr. Hollingworth had spoken of the foregoing*

Letter, of *General Ludlow* to *Sir Edward Seymour*, in these words : “ ’Tis a *lewd pamphlet* that goes under the name of *Ludlow*,” and had insulted all those persons who approved of that letter, and gave credit to the several charges of misgovernment, in the first four years of King Charles the First’s reign, that are stated in it, by calling them *a vile brood* and *a factious crew*, and other such opprobrious names. General Ludlow in this second Letter, therefore, addresses himself to Dr. Hollingworth, in answer to the Doctor’s charge against his former letter, of being a *lewd*, or *lying* pamphlet, and begins by observing, that, though Dr. Hollingworth has thought fit to bestow that appellation upon it, he yet has not attempted to shew the falsehood of any one of the many instances of misgovernment that had been set-forth in that former letter, as having taken place in the said four first years of King Charles’s reign. He then states again in a summary manner, but with great strength and clearness, the same acts of misgovernment which he had mentioned in his former letter ; and afterwards proceeds to give a very full account of the numerous acts of oppression and misgovernment, that King Charles was guilty of in the following part of his reign, even down to the breaking-out of the Civil War, in the autumn of the year 1642 ; and these acts he sets-forth with so much distinctness, and with such full and satisfactory testimonies and proofs of them, as to leave upon the reader’s mind, no possibility of doubting of their truth. This second Letter of General Ludlow may, therefore, be considered as one of the most able and valuable histories of the whole peaceful part of the reign of King Charles the First, (from the very beginning of it, to the breaking-out of the Civil War in the summer of the year 1642,) that has ever been presented to the Publick view ; and it compleatly justifies the Parliament of November, 1640, for their prudent and resolute conduct in supporting by arms the excellent laws, for the revival and confirmation of the liberties

liberties of the subjects of England, which the King, in his late state of extream distress, had been compelled to grant them, when they found that the King persisted in refusing to settle the Militia in such a manner, as was necessary to give them a reasonable ground to expect, that he would continue to observe those excellent laws for the future, and not (as he had done on former occasions,) take the first opportunity that should occur, to revoke them and set them aside. And, indeed, it may truly be said that it is to the wise and vigorous proceedings of this Parliament, in the two, or three, first years of their continuance, and before they were disturbed and over-awed by the mutinous conduct of their own victorious armies, after the King was made a prisoner, that the subjects of the kingdom of England, after the restoration of the Monarchy in the year 1660, have been principally indebted for the several political privileges and advantages, that have exalted their condition above that of the subjects of France and Spain, and most of the other Monarchies of Europe. And, therefore, the memories of Mr. Pym and Mr. Hampden, and Mr. Denzil Holles, and the other principal leaders of that great Parliament, in those two, or three, first years of their sitting, ought ever to be held, by all true lovers of the limited Monarchical Government of England, in the highest degree of honour and esteem.

This second Tract extends from page 20 to page 81 of the present Edition.

The third Tract that is here reprinted, is intitled *Ludlow no Lyar*; or a Detection of Dr. Hollingworth's Disingenuity in his second Defence of King Charles the First, and a further Vindication of the Parliament of the 3d of November, 1640; with exact Copies of the Pope's Letter to King Charles the First; and of his Answer to the Pope.

In a Letter from *General Ludlow* to *Dr. Hollingworth*.

Together,

Together, with a Reply to the false and malicious Assertions in the Doctor's lewd Pamphlet, intitl'd, " His Defence of the King's Holy and Divine Book against the rude and undutiful Assaults of the late Dr. Walker of Essex.

Amsterdam, Printed 1692.

It seems by this title of this third Tract, and by what is afterwards said in the Tract itself, that Dr. Hollingworth had, within the last twelve-month, published two Tracts; of which the first was intitl'd, " A Defence of King Charles the First against Ludlow;" and the other was entitl'd " A Defence of King Charles the First's Holy and Divine Book, against Dr. Walker's rude and undutiful assaults;" and that a Clergyman, named *Luke Milbourn*, (who was Minister of *Great Yarmouth*,) had assisted Dr. Hollingworth in composing the latter of these Tracts. And both these Tracts are answered in this third Tract here reprinted. The latter of them, (which is Dr. Hollingworth's Defence of the Authenticity of the King's Holy and Divine Book, call'd *Eicon Basilice*, against Dr. Walker's assaults, is answered by a Letter signed *Joseph Wilson*, and dated from *Yarmouth*, June 10, 1692, which is address'd to the aforesaid *Mr. Luke Milbourn*, and forms the first part of the Tract intitl'd *Ludlow no Lyar*; and is a clear refutation of Dr. Hollingworth's Defence of the authenticity of that famous book, and a full confirmation of what Dr. Walker had asserted concerning it, to wit, that it was *not* the work of King Charles himself, (as had been generally thought,) but was compos'd by Dr. Gauden, who was, after the Restoration, made Bishop of Exeter, as a reward for what was considered by the Government of that time as so eminent a service to the cause of Royalty. And, after this answer of Mr. Joseph Wilson to Dr. Hollingworth's second Tract relating to the famous book call'd *Eicon Basilice*, we have in this third Tract, an answer to Dr. Hollingworth's first Tract above-mention'd, intitl'd " A Defence of King Charles the First against Ludlow " that is, against Ludlow's
former

former Letter to Dr. Hollingworth, or Ludlow's second Letter here reprinted. And this answer is a Letter from General Ludlow to Dr. Hollingworth, dated from Geneva, May 29, 1692. In this Letter the writer of it inserts a Letter from Pope Gregory the Fifteenth to King Charles the First, in the year 1623, when he was only Prince of Wales, and was also gone to Spain in the hope of marrying *Donna Maria*, the daughter of Philip the Third, King of Spain, who was the son of Philip the Second, who had been the cruellest and most tyrannical King in Europe, and had invaded England with a powerful Fleet and Army in the year 1588, with a view of thoroughly reducing it under his dominion, and re-establishing in it the Popish religion, with its usual appendage, the persecution of Protestants, or Hereticks. Into this most bigotted, Popish, royal family was this Prince, at that time, ambitious of entering; though the match was afterwards broke-off by some accident or other, (it does not appear clearly from what cause); and then he married another Popish Princess, named *Henrietta Maria*, the sister of Lewis the Thirteenth, King of France, who was very much bigotted to the Popish religion, and very desirous of introducing it into England; and who, by her pernicious advice to her husband in matters of Religion and Government, (in which he was weak enough to let himself be guided by her,) led him into many of the bad measures that gave rise to the misfortunes of his reign. There was, therefore, good reason for the suspicions that many of his subjects entertained of his being himself a Papist, though he always declared himself a Protestant, and even at the approach of death. But, at least, it is certain that (if he was a Protestant,) he was not such a sort of Protestant as, (for the good of the English nation, and the preservation of their religion,) a King of England ought to be; or it would never have come into his head to marry a Popish Princess. And, whoever reads the Letter of Pope Gregory the Fifteenth to him, when he was

in

in Spain, (which is inserted in this third Letter of General Ludlow,) and then reads the Prince's answer to it, (which is also there inserted,) will be disposed to think that the Protestant Gentlemen of England, in that time, (who were real believers in their religion, and not persons who thought little about the matter, and complied with the religion of the kingdom merely because they found it established,) were very excuseable for entertaining some suspicions that the King was secretly inclined to Popery, notwithstanding his declarations to the contrary.

This third letter of General Ludlow, or second Letter addressed to Dr. Hollingworth, contains several further particulars concerning the cruel sentences of the Courts of Star-chamber and High-commission against Dr. Leighton, and Dr. Burton, Dr. Bastwick, and Mr. Prynne, and concerning the King's proceedings against the Scots, in order to compell them to receive the new Liturgy composed for them by Archbishop Laud, and his raising an English army to force them to submit to his will in that alteration of their religion, though the English Nation had no right to intermeddle in the disputes between their Scottish neighbours and their King, concerning their national rights and privileges, either in Church or State, the Scots being a perfectly Independent Nation, and no way subject to the English Nation, though they happened, from the course of the hereditary succession to the two Crowns, to be at that time subject to the same King. All the King's proceedings in consequence of this attempt to alter the religion of the Scots, from the year 1637, when it was first made, to the meeting of the English Parliament of November, 1640;—and his conduct, after the rebellion of the Irish Papists, and their horrid massacre of the Protestants in October, 1641, in preventing the speedy suppression of that rebellion by the English Parliament, and in neglecting for more than two months to issue a Proclamation against them declaring them to be
rebels;

rebels ; and, when he did issue it in January, 1641-42, in his giving a special order that only forty copies of it should be printed ; by which he raised a probable suspicion in the Parliament and people of England that he did not wish that rebellion of the Irish Papists to be suppressed, but rather that he might receive some assistance from them against his English Parliament :—All these things and many others, are stated in a very full and clear manner in this third Letter of General Ludlow, or of the person who wrote under his name, if he was not the real author of it. And all the three tracts that were published under the title of *Ludlow's Letters*, and which are here reprinted, are highly deserving of a careful perusal by all such persons as are desirous of rightly understanding the History of the reign of King Charles the First, and the true grounds of the great Civil War that afterwards took place between him and his Parliament ; and they will be found to agree perfectly with the account of the same events given by Mr. Thomas May, in a more summary manner in the Introductory Chapters of his excellent History of the three first years of that famous Parliament of November, 1640, of which I have lately published a new Edition.

FRANCIS MASERES.

Inner Temple, March 10, 1812.

A
L E T T E R

FROM

MAJOR GENERAL LUDLOW

TO

SIR EDWARD SEYMOUR,

COMPARING THE TYRANNY OF THE FIRST FOUR YEARS OF

KING CHARLES THE MARTYR,

WITH THE

TYRANNY OF THE FOUR YEARS REIGN OF THE LATE

ABDICATED KING.

Occasioned by the reading Doctor Pelling's Lewd Harangues upon the 30th of January,

BEING THE

ANNIVERSARY; OR, GENERAL MADDING-DAY.

*Neque enim satis amant Bonos Principes
Qui Malos non Oderint.*

Plin. Panegy.

They can never love Good Princes as they ought, who do not perfectly abhor wicked Tyrants.

AMSTERDAM, PRINTED ANNO DOMINI, 1691.



A

LETTER

FROM

MAJOR-GENERAL LUDLOW,

TO

SIR EDWARD SEYMOUR.



SIR,

MY Love to *Old England* is such as can never be shaken ; no, not by an *Eternal Banishment* ; but I must ever wish, and heartily pray for its Prosperity : And, though 'tis not permitted to me to breath my Native Air, yet, " That it is now, in a great measure, freed from those Pestilential Vapours which poysoned it in the late Reigns, and that my dear *Country* is at length delivered from that intolerable Oppression and *Tyranny*, under which it has long groaned," is to me a matter of great rejoycing. 'Tis (*with me*) beyond doubt, that the late happy Settlement of the Kingdom is well-pleasing to *God*, and consonant to the *Laws* of the Land : For, as *Sir Robert Philips* affirmed in his *Speech* in *Parliament*, in the year 1628, it is undoubtedly true, that *the People of England are under no other Subjection than what they did voluntarily consent unto by the ORIGINAL CONTRACT between the King and the People.* And *King James* the First was greatly in the right, when he told the *Lords* and *Commons*, in the Year 1609, That *he is no King, but a*
Tyrant,

B

Tyrant, that governs not by Law: Which, (by the way) being true, the late King James ceased to be King even before his Abdication. And,

Now (Sir,) you and I being agreed that (the late King having broken the *Original Stipulation and Contract*, and becoming a *Tyrant*, by transgressing and annulling the established Laws;) the *Crown* is most rightfully placed upon the Heads of the most excellent Princes, King *William* and Queen *Mary*; I shall demonstrate to you, That King *Charles* the First, did equal (I might justly say, transcend) his Son, (whom you have deservedly Abdicated) in all his Acts of *Tyranny*. To this Undertaking I am provoked, by the reading the many Idle, malicious, and Lewd Expressions, and Extravagant Encomiums of the first, in the *Rants* of one *Edward Pelling*, who stiles himself *Rector* of *S. Martin's, Ludgate*,—a Person so brim-full of Spight, Falsehood and Venome, that (the *Cock* being turned, upon the thirtieth of *January*,) he spouts-out a Sea of Calumnies, Lyes and Poison. He, as you shall see, paints-forth King *Charles* the First more like a *God* than a *Man*; talking of him at this rate, viz. “ That great *Monarch* and *Martyr*, of whom the “ World was not worthy, and perhaps will hardly ever see the like of him again ; “ That *Incomparable Prince* ! That *Mirroure of Princes*, the *Noblest of Martyrs*, “ the *Wonder of Ages*, and the *Honour of Men* ; That *Innocent, Virtuous, Re-* “ *ligious, Matchless, Prince, The Lord's anointed, A Man according to God's own* “ *Heart.*

“ *No King could be ever better than this.* Under the *Shadow* of his *Wings* we “ did rejoyce ; *Peace and Plenty* was our *Portion* ; Every *Man* was sure of his “ *Right*, as long as this *Religious Prince* had his just *Authority* ; every *Man* was “ easie in his *Cottage*, as long as he sat at ease in the *Throne* ; our *Liberties* were “ *secure*, our *Laws* had *Life*, and *Religion* never flourished more in this *Nation*. “ *than under him.*—He died a *Martyr* for *Religion*, and a *Victim* for his *People*. “ I am of *Opinion*, that if the *Blood* of any *Prince*, or *Martyr*, could be so valuable “ as never to be atoned-for in this *World*, it would be that *Royal*, that *Sacred*, “ that *Innocent, Blood.*” Now,

To shew the effronted impudence of this little, fawning, lying, *Levite*, and to set your own, with the Thoughts of the present Age, right, in reference to this Idolized, Deified, *Tyrant*, I shall endeavour to place him in his true and just Light. And, (not to forget my proposed Method of doing it by way of Parallel,) I shall, first, recount the Miscarriages wherewith the last *Tyrant* was most justly charged ; and, when I have so done, I shall proceed to convince you and all the World (my *Doctor* excepted, to whom I pretend not to speak, in regard I find him telling his *Kind* and *Noble Friend*, the late *Bloody Monster Jefferyes*, in an *Epistle Dedicatory* to one of his *Raving Tracts*, upon the thirtieth of *January* 1683, that his *Ears* are past all feeling) how much his *Father* out-stript him, even in the first four Years of his *Reign* ; for to that Time, I purpose to confine myself in this Letter. To begin:

The late *King*, by his *Coronation-Oath*, promised and Solemnly swore to maintain his *Subjects* in the free Enjoyment of their *Religion, Laws* and *Liberties* ;
Nevertheless,

Nevertheless, *he overturned the Religion, Laws, and Liberties of the Kingdom*, and subjected all to a Despotick and Arbitrary Government; and so *broke his Oath to the People*. To come to particulars herein.

I. He assumed to himself a Power to *Suspend* and *Dispense* with the *execution* of the *Laws*, enacted for the Security and Happiness of the Subjects, and thereby rendered them of no effect. And,

In order to the obtaining a Judgement in the Court of *King's Bench* for declaring the *Dispensing Power* to be a *Right* belonging to the *Crown*, he turned-out such *Judges* as could not in Conscience concur in so pernicious a Sentence, and, having *pack'd Judges* for his Purpose, he obtained the Judgement he required.

II. He, against Express Laws to the contrary, did set-up a *Commission for Ecclesiastical Matters*; which was executed contrary to all Law.

III. None were raised to *Ecclesiastical Dignities*, but such Persons as had no Zeal for the Protestant Religion; He made *Parker* Bishop of *Oxford*, and *Cartwright* Bishop of *Chester*, and *Watson* Bishop of *S. Davids*, (*who is most deservedly excepted in their Majesty's Act of Indemnity.*)

IV. The Bishop of *London* was suspended, only because he refused to obey an Order sent to him, to suspend *Dr. Sharp*. The President and Fellows of *Magdalen Colledge* in *Oxford*, were Arbitrarily, and against Law, turned out of their *Freeholds*, and the *College* was put into the hands of the *Papists*.

V. *Lords-Lieutenants, Deputy-Lieutenants, Justices of the Peace*, and others in Publick Employments, who would not comply with the Design of *Repealing* the *Test* and the *Penal Laws*, were turned-out.

VI. The Privileges of some *Corporations* were invaded, and their *Charters* seized. And Surrenders of the *Charters* of other *Corporations* were procured to be made.

VII. He put *Papists* into *Civil* and *Military Employments* and *Trusts*.

VIII. The Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and six other Bishops, were sent to the *Tower* for setting-forth, in a *Petition*, their Reasons, why they could not obey an Order, requiring them to appoint their *Clergy* to read the *Declaration for Liberty of Conscience*.

IX. The Earl of *Devonshire* was most exorbitantly fined Thirty Thousand Pounds, and imprisoned, for a trivial Matter: And the Lord *Lovelace* was treated as a *Criminal*, only for saying that the Subjects were not bound to obey the Orders of a *Popish Justice of the Peace*.

SIR, I am the more brief in setting-down the Matters charged upon the late *King*, because the same are yet fresh in the Memories of all Men: but I shall be something more particular and larger in representing the Father's *Tyranny*, in regard that Time has placed us at a greater Distance from it.

Suspicious concern-
ing King James's
death.

Rushworth's first
Collections.

King Charles's first
Favourites were
Buckingham and
Laud.

Buckingham.

Laud.

That King *Charles II.* went-off by poisoned Chocolate, to make way for his Brother, when Matters were well prepared to set-up the *Romish Idolatry*, is a thing generally believed : And so it was, that King *James the First* was so dispatched ; as those persons may see who will turn to the Earl of Bristol's *Speech in Parliament*, and his *Articles* against the Duke of *Buckingham*; and to Sir *Dudly Diggs's Speech* at the Delivery of the Impeachment against the Duke, at a Conference with the *Lords* ; and also to the thirteenth *Article* of that *Impeachment*, which charged the Duke with a very suspicious *Plaister* and *Potion* administered to that *King*.

Well, right or wrong, King *Charles* ascended the Throne upon the twenty-seventh of *March, 1625* ; and at the first gave the World a Prospect what was to be expected from him : for he instantly took the Duke of *Buckingham* and *Laud*, (then Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells*) into admired Intimacy and Dearness, and made them the Chief Conductors of all Affairs in State and Church ; and that *aspiring Prelate* had the Guidance of his Conscience.

The *Duke's Mother*, and many near about him, were *Papists*, and he advanced men *Popishly-devoted* to places of the Chief Command in the *Court* and *Camp*. The good Archbishop of *Canterbury*, Doctor *Abbot*, speaks thus of him ; “ He was talented but as a common person ; yet got that interest, that, in a sort, all the Keys of *England* hung at his Girdle ; and it appeared that he had a purpose to turn upside-down the *Laws* and the whole Fundamental Liberties of the Subject, and to leave us,—not under the Statutes and Customs which our Progenitors enjoyed,—but to the pleasure of Princes.” Three *Parliaments*, in the beginning of this Reign, found and declared this Duke to be the Cause of all our Miseries and Disasters ; *The Grievance of Grievances*.

The Character of *Laud*, by the same great Man, Archbishop *Abbot*, was this ; “ He was the inward Counsellor with *Buckingham*, and fed his Humour with *Malice* and *Spight*: His Life at Oxford was to pick Quarrels in the Lectures of the Publick Readers, and to fill the Ears of King *James* with discontent against honest men that took Pains in their Places, and settled the *Truth*, (which he called *Puritanism*) in their Auditors : It was an observation, what a sweet Man this was like to be, that the first observable Act he did, was the marrying the *Earl of D.* to the *Lady K.* when it was notoriously known that she had another Husband, who had divers Children living by her. The *Bishop of Lincoln* (Doctor *Williams*) procured for him, at the first, the *Bishoprick* of *S. Davids*, which he had not long enjoyed, but he began to undermine his Benefactor ; and verily, such is his aspiring nature, that he will underwork any man in the World, so he may gain by it.”

This Man, after the Death of the *Duke* of *Buckingham*, was the sole Favourite, and was preferred to the *Bishoprick* of *London*, in his way to *Canterbury*. But to return to our *King*.

He obliged himself, (as yours did) by his *Coronation-Oath*, to observe, keep, and maintain the *Laws, Customs, and Franchises of the Realm* : WHICH HAD HE OBSERV'D (says Archbishop *Abbot*) ALL THINGS HAD BEEN KEPT IN ORDER:

But

But he *broke the Oath of Protection and Justice which he took to his People*, as the whole History of his Reign shews. To give you some few of the innumerable Instances which may be brought therein :—

In the beginning of his Reign he married *Henrietta Maria of France*: Besides the *General Articles* upon that *Marriage*, he agreed to *Private Articles* in favour of *Papists*, (viz.) *that those who had been imprisoned*, as well *Ecclesiasticks as Temporal persons*, should be released: that *Papists should be no more molested for their Religion*, &c.

King Charles I. agrees by his Marriage-Articles to tolerate Papists.

Hereby a *Toleration* (little less) was instantly granted to *Papists*; who, without fear of Laws, fell to their Practice of *Idolatry*, and scoffed at *Parliaments*, at Law, and all: Their Numbers, Power, and Insolence daily increased in all parts of the Kingdom, especially in the City of *London*; which seem'd to be overflowed with Swarms of *Locusts*.

This King wrote to the *Pope*, and by his Letter saluted *Antichrist* with the Title of, *SANCTISSIME PATER, MOST HOLY FATHER*. He procured the *Pope's Dispensation* for his Marriage; which was solemnized by Proxy, according to the Ceremonies of the *Romish Church*.

He gives an improper Title to the Pope.

Pursuant to his *Private Articles* with France, he instantly granted a *Special Pardon* to twenty *Popish Priests*, of all Offences against the Laws; and he built a *Chapel at Somerset-House*, with Conveniencies for *Friers*, who were permitted to walk-abroad in their habits.

Pardons twenty Popish Priests, and introduces some Friers.

The *Lords and Commons* perceiving the *Protestant Religion* to be undermined, and all things apparently tending to an *Innovation and Change of Religion* in the Kingdom; They presented to the *King* a *Petition* for *advancing true Religion*, and for *suppressing Popery*. He, by his Answer, assured them of performance; yet, *the very next day after that promise made*, He assumed to himself a Power to *dispense with the Laws* of the *Twenty-first and Twenty-seventh of Queen Elizabeth*, and of the *third of King James*, in granting *Pardons to Baker a Jesuite*, and many other *Papists*, which passed by *immediate Warrant*; and were recommended by the *Lord Conway, Secretary of State*, without the payment of the *Ordinary Fees*.

The King's first Parliament.

The *Secretary*, being called to answer this in *Parliament*, very boldly said,* that *he never hated the Popish Religion*; That the *King* commanded the granting the *Pardons*, and that no *Fees* should be taken.

This *King*, as well as yours, made *Papist Lords-Lieutenants, Deputy-Lieutenants, Justices of the Peace, &c.* As you may see by the *Petition* of the *House of Commons*, wherein they complained of the increase and countenancing of *Papists*; and named about *One Hundred Popish Lords, Baronets, Knights, Esquires, &c.* who held *Places of Government and Trust* in *England and Wales*: And I shall here remember you, that, as his *Secretary of State* did not hate *Popery*; so *Weston*, whom he made *Lord-Treasurer of England*, died a *Papist*.

He puts Papists into places of trust and power.

He granted a *Commission* to certain *Commissioners* to compound with *Papists* for all forfeitures for *Recusancy*, from the *Tenth Year of King James*; whereby

He prohibits his Courts and Officers to intermeddle with Papists.

* N. B. This particular concerning Lord Conway is a mistake, as the author afterwards confesses.

they

they made their Compositions upon very easie Terms: And he inhibited and restrained both Ecclesiastical and Temporal Courts and Officers to intermeddle with Papists; which amounted to no less than a Toleration.

And allows the Popish Religion to be openly professed in Ireland.

In Ireland the *Popish Religion* was openly profess'd without controul, and practised in every part thereof; *Popish Jurisdiction* being there generally exercised and avowed: *Monasteries, Nunneries, &c.* were erected in *Dublin*, and most of the great Towns, and filled with Men and Women of several *Orders*.

He promotes Clergymen of Popish inclinations.

The Men whom he preferred to *Bishopricks*, generally speaking, were unsound in their Principles; they set-up for a *New Church of England*; and corrupted our Religion, in Doctrine, Worship and Discipline: *These laid new paintings on the old Face of the Whore of Babylon, to make her shew lovely*: These were ready to open the Gates to *Romish Idolatry* and *Spanish Tyranny*; which, you well know, did, in that day, threaten our Nation to as high a Degree as that of France hath done of late. These,—particularly *Neal, Bishop of Winchester, and Laud, Bishop of Bath and Wells*,—were complained-of by *Remonstrance* in *Parliament*, for countenancing and cherishing *Papists* and Persons *Popishly-affected*, and depressing and discountenancing Pious, painful, and *Orthodox Preachers, how conformable soever*: And *Bishop Laud*, being advanced to *London*, was charged by a *Petition* of the

To publish a good book, was made then a Sin by this Bishop of London) and an ill one a Vertue; and while one came-out with authority, the other could not have a Dispensation; So that we seemed to have got an *Expurgatory Press*, though not an *Expurgatory Index*; and the most Religious Truth must be expunged and suppressed, in order to the false and secular Interest of some of the *Clergy*.

Printers and Booksellers, to the House of Commons, that, the *Licensing of Books* being wholly restrained to him and his *Chaplains*, he allowed *Books which favoured Popery*, but denied to *License Books that were written against it*.

The House of Commons complains of Mountague's Books in favour of Popish Tenets.

Mountague, one of the *King's Chaplains*, published a Book intituled, *An Appeal to Cæsar*, and another Book intituled, *A Treatise of the Invocation of Saints*: In these Books he asserted many things contrary to the *Articles of Religion*. This being taken into consideration by the *House of Commons* in the *King's* first Year, *They voted, that Mountague endeavoured to reconcile England to Rome*, and instanced that he maintained these Positions:

Some of his Positions.

“ 1. That the *Church of Rome* is, and ever was, a *True Church*. 2. That *Images* might be used for the *Instruction* of the *Ignorant*, and for *Excitation of Devotion*.
 “ 3. That *Saints* have not only a *Memory*, but a more peculiar *Charge*, of their *Friends*; and that it may be admitted that *some Saints* have a peculiar *Patronage, Custody, Protection, and Power*, as *Angels* also have, over certain *Persons and Countries* by special Deputation. That he impiously and profanely scoff'd at *Preaching, Lectures, Bibles, and all shew of Religion, &c.* That his Scope and End in his Book was to encourage *Popery*, and to draw the *King's Subjects* to the *Roman Superstition*, and consequently to be reconciled to the *See of Rome*.”
 The *Commons* prayed, that *Mountague* might be punished, and his Books suppress'd and burnt.

The

The Pious *Archbishop Abbot* had disallowed and sought to suppress the *Appeal to Cæsar*: but it was approved by *Laud* and his *Set of Bishops*, and printed and dedicated to the *King*.

Laud solicited the *King* to shelter *Mountague* from the Prosecution of the *Com- mons*, and, upon the occasion of that Prosecution, said, *I seem to see a cloud arising and threatening the Church of England: God, in his mercy, dissipate it!* He might indeed have a more early sight of the Cloud than any Man living, because 'twas of His own raising.

The *King* appeared incensed at the Prosecution, and sent a *Message* to the *Com- mons*, that *Mountague* was his CHAPLAIN, and that *he had taken the business into his own hands*: He afterwards granted him a *Pardon* of all Offences, and made him *Bishop of Chichester*. The *King* protects and prefers him.

It sufficed not to introduce an *Innovation and Change of Religion* at home: This *King*, to the Dishonour of our Nation (formerly the Sanctuary of oppressed Protestants) the Scandal of our Religion, and the high disadvantage of the Protestant Interest throughout Christendom, did at this time (his first Year also) Lend Eight Ships, (which he equipp'd with the Subsidies given for the relief of his distressed Protestant Sister, the Electress Palatine, and the poor oppressed Protestants of the Palatinate) to the *French King*, to fight against the miserable Protestants of *Rochelle*. Of this Squadron, *Captain Pennington*, in the *Vantguard*, went *Admiral*: The *Commanders and Mariners* protested against the service, (though tempted with Chains of Gold, and other Rewards,) and returned with the Ships into the *Downs*, declaring they would sink rather than fight against those of their own Religion: The *Duke of Rohan*, and the *French Protestants*, solicited the *King* not to let the Ships go again, and had good Words and hopes from him: Nevertheless he wrote a *Letter to Pennington*, dated the Twenty-eighth of July, 1625, strictly requiring him, without delay, to consign the *Vantguard* into the hands of the *Marquess D'Effiat*, for the *French King's Service*, and to require the seven other Ships, in his Name, to put themselves into the Service of the *French*, according to his promise: And commanding *Pennington*, in case of backwardness or refusal, to use all forcible means to compel them, even to sinking. The *King* assists the *French King* against his Protestant Subjects. The English Captains and Mariners decline the Service.

Pennington hereupon went-back, and put his *Ship* into the absolute Power of the *French King*, and commanded the rest so to do; but the *Mariners* refused, declaring they would rather be hanged at home, than surrender their Ships or be Slaves to the *French*, and fight against their own Religion: and they were making-away. But *Pennington* shot, and forced them all in again, the *Neptune* excepted; which, in Detestation of the Action, *Sir Ferdinando Gorges*, (to his Eternal Honour,) brought-away. But they are forced upon it.

All the *English*, Men and Boys, except one *Gunner*, (who at his Return, which is somewhat remarkable, was slain in Charging a Piece of Ordnance, not well spunged) declined the Service and quitted the Ships, refusing to serve against the *Rochellers*. In *September* following these Ships were actually employed against the *Rochellers*, almost to their utter ruin: The *FRENCH* boasted that the VANT- GUARD In *September*, 1625, the *English Ships* destroy many of the Inhabitants of *Rochelle*.

The Sufferings and Ruin of the Rochellers.

GUARD mowed the HERETICKS down like Grass. By these means were these good People wholly lost ; They indeed held the Town till the Year 1628, but were reduced to incredible Misery, having lived long upon *Horse-flesh, Hides, and Leather, Dogs and Cats* ; There were at length but about four thousand left alive of fifteen thousand Souls ; many died with Famine, and they usually carried their Coffins into the Church-yard, and there laid themselves in and dyed : [*A sad Story, never to be forgotten in the History of our Blessed Martyr's Reign.*]

King Charles's Administration in Civil Matters.

SIR ! Having thus shewed you how *Rome* was found to eat into our Religion, and fret into the Banks of it, the Laws and Statutes of the Realm ; I shall now lead you to the remembrance of this *King's* Administration in *Civil Matters*, and how it fared then with the *Subject* in the Points of *Liberty* and *Property* ; and shall evince, That *he took our Goods from us against our Wills, and our Liberties against the Laws* : That he plucked-up the Root of all Property : We were almost grown like the *Turks*, who send their *Janizaries*, and place the Halbard at the Door, and then are Masters of all. But not to hold you in generals :

Coat and Conduct-Money.

This *King*, in the very beginning of his Reign, levied twelve thousand *Soldiers*, and, contrary to Law, required the Countries to furnish the Charge of *Coat and Conduct-money*.

Martial Law.

He appointed Commissioners to Try, Condemn, and Execute Delinquents by *Martial Law*, against the known Laws of the Land ; and some were executed thereby.

The Parliament is dissolved. Forced Loans of Money.

He struck directly at the Property of the Subjects Goods, and (*having dissolved the Parliament*) *he*, contrary to many Laws, issued *Commissions* for raising Money by way of *Loan* ; and the *Commissioners* were ordered to certifie to the *Council-Board*, the Names of all *Refractory Persons* : particularly *he* demanded One hundred thousand Pounds of the City of *London* ; and, upon the *Magistrates* representing the People's Excuses, the *Council* commanded them to proceed therein, threatening, that, upon their Failure, *His Majesty would frame his Counsels as appertained to a King*, in such extreme and important Occasions.

Orders to the City of London and to other Places to furnish Ships.

He also required the *City* to set-forth Twenty *Ships*, Manned and Victualled, for three Months : The *Mayor, Aldermen, and Common-Council*, petitioned for Abatement of the Number of Ships demanded ; but were answered, that *Petitions and Pleadings were not to be received* : That, as the Command was to all in general, and every particular of the *City*, so the *King* would require an Account both of the *City* in general, and of every particular : That *the Precedents of former Times were Obedience, not Direction* ; and that *Precedents* were not wanting for the Punishment of those that disobey the *King's Commands*.

The Deputy-*Lieutenants* and *Justices* of *Dorsetshire* being commanded to set-forth Ships, insisted, That the Case was without *Precedent*. But they were severely checked, for that, instead of Conformity, they disputed ; and they were told, That *State-Occasions were not to be guided by ordinary Precedents*.

The *Persons of Quality* who refused to subscribe to the *Loan*, were put out of the *Commissions*

Commissions of the Lieutenancy and of the Peace (as they were who refused to comply with your *King's* Humour) and were bound to appear at the *Council-Table*; where, as *Refractory Persons*, they were committed to Prisons, or put under Confinement. These were Persons both of Note and Number, as the Prisons in *London* demonstrated, and as you must conclude, when you read these following Names, and know they were of that Number; viz. Sir *John Elliot*, Sir *John Heveningham*, Sir *Nathanael Barnardiston*, Sir *John Strangways*, Sir *Walter Earle*, Sir *Thomas Grantbam*, Sir *Thomas Wentworth*, Sir *Harbottle Grimston*, Sir *Edward Hambden*, Sir *Thomas Dar- nel*, Sir *John Corbet*, Sir *William Armin*, Sir *William Masbam*, Sir *William Wilmer*, Sir *Erasmus Drayton*, Sir *Edward Ayscough*, Sir *Robert Poyntz*, Sir *Beauchamp Saint-John*, Sir *Oliver Luhe*, Sir *Maurice Berkley*, Sir *John Wray*, Sir *William Constable*, Sir *John Hotbam*, Sir *John Pichering*, Sir *Francis Barrington*, Sir *William Chancey*, *George Ratcliff*, *Richard Knightly*, *John Hambden*, *William Anderson*, *Terringham Norwood*, *John Tregonwell*, *Thomas Godfrey*, *Thomas Nicholas*, *John Dutton*, *Henry Poole*, *Nathaniel Coxwell*, *Robert Hatley*, *Thomas Elmes*, *William Coriton*, and *George Catesby*, Esquires, besides above twenty Eminent Citizens of *London*, and many other *Gentlemen* of good Note.

Imprisonment of several Persons for refusing to lend the King Money.

Names of Persons so Imprisoned.

Sir *Peter Hayman*, upon his refusal of the Loan, was commanded to go upon the the *King's* Service beyond the Seas; others, of a meaner Rank, were either bound to appear before the *Lieutenant* of the *Tower*, to be enrolled for Soldiers to be sent for *Denmark*, or were impress'd to serve in the *King's* Ships.

Other Persons refusing the same, were compelled to go abroad on the King's Service, or listed for Soldiers.

Now, can it be imagined that there could be found a Man so hardened in Wick- edness, as to avow these unheard-of Violences, which trenched into all we had? Yes, there were in that, as in every age, PELLINGS, and ISCARIOTS, among the *Clergy*; Base *Sycophants*, Aspiring *Time-servers*, the Vile *Descendants* of *Combyse's* Judges, who being demanded, Whether it was not lawful for him to do what in itself was un- lawful, they (*to please him*) answered, "That the PERSIAN MONARCHS might do what they listed." At the same Rate those lying *Prophets*, or flattering *Gentlemen* of the *Cassock*, to scandalize the Laws and subvert *Parliaments*, prated to this *King*; They told him, *All we had was his JURE DIVINO*; and persuaded him (*who was most ready to believe it*.) That THE RIGHT OF EMPIRES WAS TO TAKE-AWAY BY STRONG HAND: Of these,

All these oppressions were justified by the Court-Clergy.

Doctor *Manwaring*, in two *Sermons* before the *King*, (printed under the Title of *Dr. Manwaring's Religion and Allegiance*) inculcated this *Doctrine*:

" 1, That the *King* is not bound to observe the Laws concerning the *Subjects Rights*, but that his *Will* in imposing *Loans* and *Taxes*, without Consent in *Parliament*, doth oblige the *Subjects* Conscience, UPON PAIN OF ETERNAL DAM- NATION.

" 2. That they who refused the *Loan*, did offend against the *Law of God*, and against the *King's Supreme Authority*; and thereby became *Guilty* of *Impiety*, *Disloyalty*, *Rebellion*, &c.

c

" 3. That

“ 3. That *Authority of Parliament* is not necessary for the raising of *Aids* and *Subsidies*. And,

Dr. Sibthorp.

Doctor *Sibthorp*, Vicar of *Brackley*, printed a *Sermon*, which he preached at the *Assizes* at *Northampton*, and dedicated to the *King*: wherein he obliged his Country with these *Positions*.

A Deo Rex, a Rege Lex.
Title page of *Pelling's*
Sermon, 30 *Jan.* 1688.
dedicated to *Jefferys*.
But we find different
Doctrine in *Bracton*
and *Fleta*; they tell

1. That it is the *Prince's* duty to direct and make *Laws*, (his *Text*, by the way, was *Rom. xiii. 7. Render therefore to all their dues*) He justified this by that apposite *Proof*, *Eccl. viii. 3, 4. He doth whatsoever pleaseth him—Who may say unto him, What doeth thou?*

us, That *Rex Angliæ habet Superiores, viz. Legem, per quam factus est Rex; ac Comites & Barones, qui debent ei frænum ponere*; The *King of England* hath for *Superiors* both the *Law*, by which he is constituted *King* (and which is the measure of his *Governing Power*) and the *Parliament*, which is to restrain him if he do amiss. *Bracton, lib. 2. cap. 16. Fleta lib. 1. cap. 17.*

Archbishop Abbot
(not being tainted
with this slavish and
Adulatory Doctrine)

2. That all *Antiquity* is absolutely for absolute *Obedience* to *Princes*, in all *Civil* and *Temporal* Things.

did well observe hence, That such Cases as *Naboth's* Vineyard might fall within this: And that by this *Divinity*, if the *King* had commanded all the *Clergy* of *England* to send him all the *Money* and *Goods* they had, they must have obeyed him, and left their *Wives* and *Children* in a miserable Case. The *Good Old Man* added, *If the King do it not, the defect is not in these Flattering Divines.*

Non-resistance and
Passive Obedience.

3. That, if *Princes* command any thing which *Subjects* may not perform, because against the *Laws* of *God*, of *Nature*, or *Impossible*; yet they are bound to undergo the *Punishment*, WITHOUT RESISTANCE, and so to yield A PASSIVE OBEDIENCE where they cannot exhibit an active one (right *SHERLOCK*.)

Dr. Harsnet.

At this rate Doctor *Harsnet*, *Bishop* of *Chester*, had before preached to *King James* in the *Time* of *Parliament*. He insisted (from the *Text*, *Give to Cæsar the things that be Cæsar's*) that *Goods* and *Money* were *Cæsar's*, and therefore were not to be denied him. Hereat the *Lords* and *Commons* took great *Offence*: The *Sermon* was burnt: but, instead of hanging the *Bishop*, he was shortly after promoted to the *Bishoprick* of *Norwich*; and afterwards, in the *Time* of our *King*, designed by *Laud* to the *Archbishoprick* of *York*.

Archbishop Abbot
refuses to licence
Sibthorp's *Sermon*.

But, to return to *Sherlock* the *First*; *Bishop Laud* took *Sibthorp* into his *Bosom*, and, that he might undermine *Good Old Abbot*, whose *Bishoprick* he coveted, he put it into the *King's* *Head*, to require the *Archbishop* to *Licence* *Sibthorp's* *Sermons*; so (to use *Doctor Abbot's* own *Words*) HE IS CALLED-UPON TO MAKE THAT GOOD BY *DIVINITY*, WHICH HAD BEEN DONE AGAINST THE *LAWs*: He *Honestly*, and like himself, declined to do it; and termed it, *A Contemptible Treatise*; an *Idle Work* of an *Hungry Man*, that understood no *Logic*. The *King* (instigated by *Laud*) pressed the thing upon him, and that with *Menaces*: The *Good Old Man* persisted in his *Refusal*, saying, with the *Psalmist* (to the *Lord Conway*, *Secretary* of *State*, whom the *King* had sent to him) *I shall not be afraid of any Evil Tidings; for my heart is fixed, trusting in the Lord.*

But the *Bishop* of *London* appeared more *plyable*, and gave *Licence* to this *Sermon*;

mon; and it came-out approved by my LORD of LONDON, as a *Sermon learnedly and discretely preached.*

Is licensed by the Bishop of London.

The King instantly suspended the Archbishop; and also *Confined him*, and committed the *Archiepiscopal Jurisdiction* to *Five Bishops*, all of the *New Church of England*, and *Sibthorp's Patrons*, viz. *London, Durham, Rochester, Oxford*, and *Honest Laud of Bath and Wells.*

The King suspends the Archbishop for refusing to license it.

The *Commons Impeached Manwaring* for his Sermons; and, by the *Judgement* of the *House of Lords* (amongst other Penalties) *he was disabled from holding any future Ecclesiastical Preferment or Secular Office.* But the King granted him a *Pardon* of all *Offences*; and he was presented to the *Rectory of Stamford-Rivers in Essex*, and had a *Dispensation* to hold it, together with the *Rectory of St. Giles's in the Fields.*

Manwaring is Impeached by the Commons and Condemned by the Lords; but is pardoned and rewarded by the King.

I shall in this Place remember you, That another *Bishop, Doctor Williams*, of *Lincoln*, (as well as the *Archiebishop*) felt the Heavy Oppression of this your *Protestant King.* In the first Year of his Reign the Bishop of *Lincoln* was *Lord-Keeper* of the *Great-Seal*; but, upon his appearing in *Parliament* against the Kingdom's great *Grievance*, the *Duke of Buckingham*, he was *Disgraced* and *Sequestered* from the *King's Presence* and the *Council-Table.* In his second Year he was accused for speaking publickly against the *Loan*; and also for refusing to give-way to Proceedings in his *Courts* against the *Puritans*; and *Doctor Sibthorp* charged him that he should say, *He was sure the Puritans would carry all at last.* The King now imprisoned him in the *Tower*; and so the late King was not without a *Precedent*, when he sent *Seven Bishops thither.* Well, this *Good Bishop* out-living his Imprisonment; when (*upon the King's throwing the Gantlet*) we came to a *TRYAL OF SKILL* for the *Old English Liberties*, he resolutely said *NOLUMUS LEGES ANGLIÆ MUTARI*; and took a *Command* in our *Army*, and bravely asserted his *Countrie's Liberties* with his *Sword.*

The King oppresses Bishop Williams.

Having thus (Sir) shewed you that the King, which *I Abdicated*, made no more *Bones* of *Pious Protestant Bishops*, when he found them standing in the way of his *Tyranny*, than this last King did, *to whose abdication you lent your Hand:* I shall now proceed to remind you, That both the *Tyrants* went *pari passu* in their *Dealing* with *Westminster-Hall.* It is before remembered, That yours modelled the *Courts* of *Justice*, till he got *Judges* to declare his *Right* to the *Dispensing Power*: but Mine set him the *Example*; for he, resolving to subject the *Liberties* and *Estates* of the *Subject* to his *Will* and *Pleasure*, and finding that the *Grave* and *Learned Judge*, *Sir Randolph Crew*, *Lord Chief-Justice* of the *Kings-Bench*, had declared himself against the *Loan*, and would not serve the *Turn* in that *Day*, to give a *Judgement*, "That the King might imprison, *durante bene placito*, and thereby leave the *Subject* in *Gaol*, and *Remediless*;" *turned him out*, and substituted *Sir Nicholas Hyde** in his room, and so gained his *Point.* For,

Of King Charles's Proceedings with respect to the Judges of Westminster Hall.

The King turns-out Chief-Justice Crew, for declaring himself against the Loan.

Sir Thomas Darnel, *Sir John Corbet*, *Sir Walter Earl*, *Sir John Heveningham*, and *Sir Edward Hamden*, *Five* of the *Gentlemen* imprisoned for refusing the

Imprisonment by the Special Command of the King.

* This *Sir Nicholas Hyde* was uncle to *Sir Edward Hyde*, who was afterwards *Lord Chancellor* of *England*, and *Earl of Clarendon.*

Loan, brought their *Writs of Habeas Corpus* in *Michaelmas Term*, in the Third Year of this King: The *Warden* of the *Fleet* made Return, That they were detained in his Custody by the *Special Command of the King*.

* Sir Robert Sawyer. We had then an *Attorney General*, (Sir *Robert Heath*) little short of your late *Sir Robert** at the Knack of Enslaving the People; he maintained and justified this sort of imprisonment, though no Special Cause was assigned; and the Lord Chief Justice *Hide*, (who was created on purpose for it,) did singly (*as the Practice has also been of late*) give Judgement for remanding the *Gentlemen* to Perpetual Imprisonment. For that Judgement did in effect declare upon Record, That by the *King's Command* a Subject might be detained in Prison for ever.

Soldiers billeted on Private Houses.

Commissions to raise Money by an Excise.

To the *Imposition* of the *Loan*, and the many other Grievous Sufferings and Violent Oppressions, under which we groaned; This King added the Burthen of *Billeting Souldiers*, of whom many were *Papists*. They brake-out into great Disorders; mastered the People, disturbed the Peace of Families, and the Civil Government. To some Places they were sent for a Punishment [of the Inhabitants:] and, wherever they came, there was a general Outcry; the Highways were dangerous, and the Markets unfrequented; they were a terror to all, and an undoing to many of the People.

Project of bringing-over German Horse.

He also (towards the End of the Year 1627,) issued a *Commission*, under the Great-Seal, to several *Temporal Lords*, with *Neal* and *Laud*, Bishops of *Winchester* and *Bath* and *Wells*, and others, to raise Money by an *Excise*. And, to enforce the Payment, and (which is very probable) to awe the *Parliament*, (which was to assemble the Seventeenth of *March*;) He,

Dolbier was a Papist.

Upon the THIRTIETH DAY of JANUARY, 1627-28, sent a *Privy-Seal* to the Lord *Treasurer* to this effect: " We Command you forthwith to pay to *Philip Burlemark*, Merchant, Thirty Thousand Pounds, to be paid by him over, by Bill of Exchange, into the *Low-Countries* and *Germany*, unto *Sir William Balfour* and *John Dolbier*, Esquire, for Levying and Providing certain numbers of Horses with Arms for Horse and Foot, to be brought-over into this Kingdom, for our Service, &c.

The King's Third Parliament, March 17, 1627-28.

Burlemark, being afterwards called into the House of *Commons*, and examined about this Matter, declared, That he received the Thirty Thousand Pounds; That One thousand Horses were levied, and these Horses and their Riders were to come-over; and Arms were provided for them in *Holland*. But he heard that a Countermand was gone to stay them.

The Petition of Right.

In this *King's Third Parliament*, (to which the Extremity of his Affairs brought him, much against his Will;) The *Commons*, with sad Hearts, taking notice of the high oppressions of the People, by heavy and illegal Exactions, by false and arbitrary Imprisonments, &c. and reflecting upon the strange and dangerous Purpose of bringing-in *German Horse* and *Riders*, to change the Frame both of Religion and Government: They found it as necessary as just, to vindicate our Ancient *Vital Liberties*: and in order thereto, They drew-up a PETITION OF RIGHT, thereby complaining of the levying of Moneys without Authority of *Parliament*: Of the Imprisoning the Subject without any Cause shewed, and not being delivered by *Habeas Corpus*, as by Law they ought: Of the Subjects
" being

“ being compelled to receive *Soldiers* into their Houses, and to sojourn there
 “ against their wills; And of the Executing *Martial Law*, contrary to the Laws
 “ and Statutes of the Realm: Whereupon they prayed, AS THEIR RIGHTS AND
 “ LIBERTIES, that none should hereafter be compelled to yield any *Gift, Loan,*
 “ *Benevolence, Tax,* or such-like Charge without common Consent by Act of
 “ Parliament: And that no *Freeman* should be *imprisoned* without Cause
 “ shewed: And that the People might not be burthened with *Soldiers* in time
 “ to come: And that no Commission for proceeding by *Martial Law*, may
 “ hereafter issue; They further prayed (*as their Right*) that the King would
 “ declare that the proceedings to the prejudice of the People, in any of the Pre-
 “ mises; should not hereafter be drawn into Example: And that in all the things
 “ aforesaid, All his *Officers* and *Ministers* should serve him according to the
 “ Laws and Statutes of the Realm.”

This highly necessary and seasonable *Petition* met with great interruption and violent Opposition: The King urged that it trench'd upon his *Prerogative*, his *Sovereign Authority*, *Regal Power*, *Sovereign Power*, &c. (Which imported no less than the King's being loose and free from all Ties and Restraints, either by fundamental Stipulations, or superadded Laws;) The great Sir *Edward Coke* said, in answer thereunto; MAGNA CHARTA IS SUCH A FELLOW, THAT HE WILL HAVE NO SOVEREIGN: Let us not yield a *Sovereign Power* above all *Laws*; *Power in Law* (as the Sheriff's *Posse Comitatus*) is taken for a power with force; The King struggled long to shift it off, and to avoid the answering this *Petition* in a Parliamentary way, pressing them again and again, by Messages, to rest and rely upon his *Royal Word*: The *Commons* persisting, pursued their *Petition*, and to have it pass into a Law; and Sir *Edward Coke* said, “ Was ever
 “ a *Verbal Declaration* of the King *Verbum Regni*?—The King must speak by
 “ Record, and in Particulars, not in Generals: All succeeding Kings will say,
 “ Ye must trust me as well as ye did my Predecessors: Let us put up our *Peti-*
 “ *tion of Right*; Not that I distrust the King, but that I cannot take his Trust,
 “ but in a Parliamentary way.”

The King endeavours to avoid granting it.

At length this *Petition* being unanimously agreed-unto by the Lords, it was presented to the King, who at first gave a lame and uncertain Answer to it; and, being press'd to give a direct and plain Answer, he resolutely sent word to the House, *That he would not alter his Answer*: But he was afterwards brought to do it by the importunity of the Lords and Commons, and gave a clear and satisfactory Answer; and so that excellent Law pass'd. But,

But is at last brought to consent to it.

He had no sooner granted this *Petition*, but we found it notoriously violated, by his *Billetting* of *Soldiers*, and *Levying* the *Subsidies* of *Tonnage* and *Poundage*, which determined by his Father's Death, and were never payable to any of his Ancestors, but only by special Act of Parliament: Hereupon the *Commons* shewed by Remonstrance, that *Tonnage* and *Poundage* were always the *Free Gift* of the Subject for Guarding the Seas, and that the taking the same without Act of Parliament, is a Breach of the Fundamental Liberties of the Kingdom, and
 contrary

Immediately after he acts in opposition to it, by *Billetting* *Soldiers*, and

Levying *Tonnage* and *Poundage*.

contrary to the King's Answer to the Petition of Right : However, by order of Council, he commanded the Customs to be Levied.

Mr. Vassal is sued in the Exchequer, for refusing to pay them;

Pursuant thereto the Custom-House Officers siezed great quantities of the Goods of Mr. *Vassal*, a Merchant, because he refused to pay Customs; and an Information being brought in the Exchequer, Mr. *Vassal* pleaded *Magna Charta*, and the Statute *de Tallagio non concedendo*, &c. and that the imposition was not *Antiqua seu certa Consuetudo*, and that it was imposed without assent of Parliament. The *Attorney General* having demurred to Mr. *Vassal's* Plea, and he joined in Demurrer, the *Barons* of the *Exchequer* publicly denied to hear Mr. *Vassal's* Counsel to argue for him; and said, *That the King was in Possession, and they would keep him in Possession.* And shortly after they imprisoned Mr. *Vassal* for not paying the Customs, as he had been before for refusing the Loan.

and afterwards Imprisoned for the same.

Mr. Rolls's Goods are seized on the same account,

The goods of Mr. *John Rolls*, a Merchant and Member of Parliament, and of Mr. *Richard Chambers*, a Merchant, being seized for Non-payment of Customs, they brought Writs of *Replevin*, to regain the Possession of their Goods, but the *Barons* of the *Exchequer* sent an *Injunction* to the *Sheriffs* of *London*, commanding them not to execute the Writs. Also the Warehouse of Mr. *Rolls* was lock'd-up by Pursuivants, at the time when he was sitting in Parliament.

and his Warehouse is locked-up.

Mr. Chambers is heavily fined by the Star-Chamber.

Mr. *Chambers* was likewise prosecuted in the *Star-Chamber*, for saying that the Merchants are in no part of the World screwed and wrung, as in *England*: That in *Turkey* they have more encouragement. For this he was FINED 2000*l.* committed to the *Fleet*, and ordered to make submission, which being drawn-up and rendered to him, he thus, (like a brave *English Man*,) underwrote it: *All the abovesaid Contents and Submission, I do utterly abhor and detest, as most Unjust and False, and never till death will acknowledge any part thereof.* Rich. Chambers.

To this he added, *Wo to them that devise Iniquity, because it is in the Power of their hand; and they covet Fields, and take them by violence, and Houses, and take them away: So they oppress a Man and his House, even a Man and his Heritage,* Micah ii. 1, 2.

Imprisonment of the Earl of Bristol.

Now, (Sir) to draw towards a Conclusion, I shall observe that no *Rank* or *Order* of Men stood clear from the Oppression of this *Tyrant*: He kept the Earl of *Bristol* under Confinement near two Years without being charg'd with any Accusation, or brought to Tryal, or permitted to answer for himself: And, upon his Petitioning the Lords to be restored to his Liberty, and to his seat in *Parliament*, and offering an Accusation against the Duke of *Buchingham*, This King, upon his own Accusation, sent him in Custody as a Delinquent, and Prosecuted him as such. Also,

And of the Earl of Arundel.

He committed the *Earl of Arundel* to the *Tower*, in time of Parliament, without expressing any Cause of his Commitment, in Violation of the *Privileges* of the *Peers*. This *Lord* was long detained a Prisoner, though the House of Lords presented

sented a *Remonstrance*, and many Petitions for restoring him to *Parliament*.
And,

As he oppressed our best *Patriots*, so he upheld and sheltred the *grand Enemies* of the *Commonwealth*: When the *Commons* in *Parliament* prosecuted the *Duke of Buckingham*, as the principal Patron and supporter of a *Popish Faction*, set on foot to the Danger of the *Church and State*: As a Person so notorious in Evil that all our Evils came by him: As the Man who had cast the Body of the Kingdom into an high Consumption: The *King* interposed to rescue him: When the *Commons* impeached him, and by one of their *Articles* charg'd him (*in effect*) with the MURDER of *King James*: The *King* told the House of Lords, that to approve *Buckingham's* Innocence, he could be a *Witness* to clear him in every one of the *Articles*. When the *Earl of Bristol* exhibited *Articles* to the Lords against the *Duke*, the *King* took upon himself to become a *Witness* to accuse the *Earl* of *Traiterous Practices* some years before.

The King protects the Duke of Buckingham against the Prosecution of the Commons.

Notwithstanding it is well known that no abuse can arise in any Department of the Government beyond the Power of the House of Commons to inquire into; and it hath been their Ancient and Undoubted Right and Usage to question and complain of all Persons, of what Degree soever, that are found grievous to the *Commonwealth*: (Whereof there was a noted instance in 30 Edward III. ; When they accused *John de Gaunt*, the *King's* Son, for mis-leading and mis-advising the *King*; and he went to the *Tower* for it;) yet our *King* told the House of Commons, "That he would not allow any of his *Servants* to be questioned amongst them ;
" much less such as were near him,—that he saw they aimed at the *Duke*; but he assured them that the *Duke* had not intermeddled, nor done any thing concerning the
" *Publick*, but by his special *Directions*. He added, that he wondered at the foolish
" *impudence* of any Man, to think he should be drawn to offer such a *Sacrifice*.

He, in scorn and defiance of the *Parliament*, procured the *Laudean Faction* in the University of *Cambridge*, (who were gaping for Ecclesiastical Preferment) to choose the *Duke* their *Chancellor* at the Time when he stood *Impeach'd* in *Parliament*.

This might be the first, but 'twas not the last time that the University hath made an election in contempt of the Parliament.

He constantly gave interruption to the *Parliament*, when they had the *Duke's* Offences under Examination, not bearing their mentioning his name and Misdoings; And he dissolved three *Parliaments* when they were intent upon his prosecution, refusing, to receive a *Petition* of the House of *Lords* against one of those Dissolutions, and denying them access to his person.

Upon the *Dissolution* of his second *Parliament*, he sent Sir *Dudley Diggs* and Sir *John Elliot* Prisoners to the *Tower*, (to the infringing the undoubted *Privileges* of the *Commons*) for managing a *Conference* with the *Lords*, upon their *Impeaching* the *Duke*.

Members of Parliament imprisoned for things done in Parliament.

He, in the time of his Third *Parliament*, sent *Warrants* for sealing-up of the Studies of Sir *John Elliot*, Mr. *Holles*, and Mr. *Selden*, and also sent *Summonses* to Mr. *Holles*, Sir *Miles Hobart*, Sir *John Elliot*, Sir *Peter Hayman*, *John Selden*,
William

William Coryton; Walter Long, William Strode, and Benjamin Valentine, Esqrs; all Members, to appear before the Privy-Council. Mr. Holles, Sir John Elliot, Mr. Coryton, and Mr. Valentine appeared, and refusing to answer out of Parliament, what was said and done in Parliament, they were (during the Parliament) committed close Prisoners to the Tower; and a Proclamation was issued for apprehending Mr. Long and Mr. Strode, who, coming-in, were committed close Prisoners to the King's Bench: And all the rest of the before-named Members were committed to several Prisons.

They bring their Writs of Habeas Corpus.

But are removed to other prisons to avoid a discharge.

The King threatens that he will lay-aside the use of Parliaments.

These imprisoned Gentlemen in *Trinity Term* following, (1629,) brought their *Writs of Habeas Corpus*, and were brought to the *King's Bench Court*, where very learned Arguments were made on their behalf, shewing the illegality of their imprisonment; and being to be brought again upon another day, to receive the Judgement of the Court, *they were* (by the unprecedented Arbitrary Practices of that time) *removed and shifted to other Prisons*, and toss'd from *Gaol to Gaol*; and by that wicked Artifice, as they were imprisoned in notorious Breach of the Priviledge of *Parliament*, so they were now deprived of the Fruit of the *Habeas Corpus*, and of the benefit of Freeborn Subjects, for obtaining their Liberty; and were long detained in Prison; and the brave *Sir John Elliot* ended his days in the *Tower, not without suspicion of foul play.*

But why have I detained you so long in recounting these particular Violations of the Priviledges of *Parliament*, when 'tis so evident that this *King* struck at the very being of *Parliaments*, as many instances fully demonstrate?

Sir Dudley Carleton, his *Vice-Chamberlain*, and a *Privy-Counsellor* (whom he soon after created a *Lord*) “warned the *Commons* to take heed of bringing the “*King* out of love with *Parliaments*, and said, that in all *Christian Kingdoms*, “*Parliaments* were anciently in use, until the *Monarchs* BEGAN TO KNOW THEIR “OWN STRENGTH, and at last overthrew *Parliaments*, throughout *Christendom*, “except here only with us: He proceeded setting-forth the wretched Condition “of Subjects in Foreign Countries, and said, This is a *Misery* which yet We are “free from: Let us then be careful to preserve the *King's* good Opinion of *Parliaments*, LEST WE LOSE THE REPUTE OF A FREEBORN NATION, by our “Turbulency in *Parliaments*.”

The *King* himself sent a *threatening Message* to the *Commons*, that, if he had not a timely supply, *he would betake himself to NEW COUNSELS*, (which could only mean the putting an End to the use of *Parliaments*.)

We here have Dr. Edw. Pelling's MIRROR OF PRINCIPLES, Noblest of

Martyrs, Wonder of Ages, and the Honour of Men, laying-down his living Opinion of the Constitution of our Government, and, (according to his then Judgement) passing a sentence of Death upon our *Parliaments*. And (seeing the *Doctor* told CAPTAIN SIMMONS of the WONDER TAVERN, with his goodly Petitioners, *Bedingfield, Sissan, Owin, and Saltmarsh*, and the rest of his Parishioners, upon the Thirtieth of *January*, 1690, “That his most Noble *Martyr*, BEING DEAD, YET SPEAKETH,”) I do put-in an early request to him, on behalf of the *Commons of England*, that he would oblige them upon the next *Madding-Day*, the (twenty-ninth of *May*) in letting them know what his *Matchless Saint* now speaks, and in particular what he says about their Right to Annual *Parliaments*: For 'tis to be hoped that by this Time, if he be kept apart from ARCHBISHOP LAUD, he may be set-right in this great Point of *English Parliaments*.

At the opening of the Parliament, the 17th of March, 1627, he told them, if they should not contribute what the State needed, he must use those other MEANS, which God [and LAUD, SIBTHORP and MANWARING, &c.] had put into his Hands: To this the Lord-Keeper added, that if the King found the readiness of their supplies, he might the better forbear the Use of his Prerogative: That the King chose that way of Parliament, not as the only way, but as the fittest: Not as destitute of others, but as most agreeable to his Disposition.

Thus (Sir) have I (as I promised) run through the first four years of this King, and shew'd you how our Liberties and Properties were invaded: How our Religion and Government were undermined: How an Army was raised to subject our fortunes to the Will of Power, and to make good the Breaches upon our Liberties: And how Parliaments were contemned and cast-off; so that it was well and truly said in the House of Commons, that *the Subject suffered more in the first three Years of this King, in violation of Ancient Liberties, than in three hundred Years before.*

N. B.

It remains now, That I recall into your Memory, what the Carriage of our Parliaments was, under this Universal Oppression: Why, their Temper, Mildness, and Moderation was incredible, as their Speeches, Petitions, and even Remonstrances, do evince: they dealt long with the King, with no other Weapons but Sweetness, Trust, and Confidence; and 'twas their only Endeavour and End to make-up all Rents and Breaches between the King and his Subjects; but they found in him A-sourness of Temper, Fierceness of Disposition and Pride, joined with a peevishness of Humour, not to bear the having his Will disputed or controuled by the established known Laws; HE WAS wilful and inexorable, and knew not the things of his peace.

The great mildness and moderation of these Parliaments.

N. B.

Having Abdicated Parliaments, (for from this Time We had eleven years interval of Government without a Parliament,) He (as idle Boys say when they act Mischief) began to play absolute Reaks, instead of Rex. 'Tis a certain Rule, *Nemo repente fit turpissimus*; and I have here given you but a Taste of the miserable and Calamitous State, under which he laid us; as you must conclude, when you remember how (after the Dissolution of his third Parliament) he betook himself to NEW COUNSELS, and exerted his Sovereign absolute Power, and how despotically he used and exercised it.

Were I to continue his History, (as I may in another Letter, if you accept this) when I lead you into Westminster-Hall, you would see the Illegal and Wicked Judgements of the Courts there, to the compleat Overthrow of the Liberty of our Persons, and the Property of our Goods; and in opening to you his accursed Star-Chamber and High-Commission Courts, I should shew you his most Cruel and Barbarous Finings, Pillory-ings, Stigmatizings, &c. His Suspending, Excommunicating, Depriving and Imprisoning the CONFORMING CLERGY of the CHURCH OF ENGLAND, for Preaching against Popery, for not reading his Book for Sports on the Lord's Day, and for not making Corporal Reverence at the Name of Jesus; I should not forget to lay before you his Billeting of Soldiers, and his most Arbitrary

Arbitrary Imposing and Exacting of *Ship-Money*, against the known Laws, and contrary to his Late Promise in the *Petition of Right*; and (which is never to be forgotten) his *Accession* to the Horrid MURDERS of those many Thousands of Miserable *Protestants*, who fell in IRELAND. But,

To conclude your present trouble, We long bore our Heavy Burdens, and the Yoke of this Oppressor, with Patience, even almost to the Breaking of our Backs; at length (*no other Means availing to rescue Us from utter Ruin*) We struggled to continue the *English Liberties* to ourselves, and to the Generations that should come after us, and to leave our *Posterity* as free as our *Ancestors* left us: And had we not so done, and that in the way we did it, where had your English Liberties been at this Day? the Great Lord *Holles* told you the Truth therein, in his Letter to *Van Beuninghen*, in the Year 1676, when he said, That had not WE, in the Parliament of 1640, interposed, the English Government must have sunk ere now: for, save what we did, NOT ONE TRUE STROKE HAD BEEN STRUCK SINCE Queen Elizabeth.

SIR! Having now made an End with my *Tyrant*, and, by the Particulars which I have presented to your View, set it beyond all possibility of rational Controul, That the *Tyrants* of whom I have treated, were at least Parallels: I shall now offer one Word for myself, which is, That in whatsoever I have said, *I have had a Due and faithful regard to truth*; and do challenge even *Pelling* himself (who ought, for his own vindication, to do it, if he can) to convict me of *Falshood* in any one Particular here charged upon his INCOMPARABLE PRINCE; and, if you shall esteem me over-tart in any of my Expressions, I say, That, if to call a *Spade* a *Spade*, be unbecoming, I have transgressed; if not, I cannot see how I ought to have expressed the *Despotic* and *Arbitrary Pranks* I have mentioned, by any other Name than that of *Tyranny*; nor to have styled him, who acted them, other than a *Tyrant*. And, as to my *Reverend Doctor*, it seems a difficulty to me to find Words, proper and severe enough, wherewith to brand and stamp a Character of Infamy upon him, who, with such *Loathsome Flattery* and *Slavish Sycophancy* (at a most bold, wild, and impudent rate) calls such a *Man* as this, *The best of Kings, A Man according to God's own heart*: Therefore, to vindicate myself in treating the Doctor as I have done, I tell him, in his own slovenly Pulpit-Language, (in his *Sermon* upon the thirtieth of *January*, 1683, dedicated to that Viper, *Jeffryes*) *That such a superlative piece of Putid Imposture may well stir an honest Man's Choler, and provoke him to spit some of it in the Villain's Face.*

And now (*Sir*) wiping my mouth, as good Manners require, after this so foul Pollution, I take my leave of you, declaring, that I will ever approve myself, *King William's* and *Queen Mary's*, and my most *Dear Country's*,

*Most Affectionate, Loyal, Dutiful,
and Obedient Subject and Servant,*

EDMUND LUDLOW.

P O S T S C R I P T.

THOUGH King *Charles* the First hated nothing more than to Govern by *Precedent*, yet he would not pray without it; and, none of the *Liturgies* suiting his Fancy, he had recourse to a *Romance*, as you may here see.

The *Prayer of King Charles*, stiled
A Prayer in Time of Captivity,
Printed in a great Folio, called,
The Works of K. Charles, and
also in his *Eicon Basilice*.

The PRAYER of PAMELA (to
an Heathen Deity) being under
Imprisonment.
In *Pembroke's Arcadia* 248, edit.
13. printed 1674.

O Powerful, O Eternal God, to whom nothing is so great that it may resist, or so small that it is contemned; look upon my Misery with thine Eye of Mercy, and let thine infinite Power vouchsafe to limit-out some proportion of Deliverance unto me, as to thee shall seem most convenient: Let not Injury, O Lord, triumph over me, and let my Fault by thy Hand be corrected; and make not my Unjust Enemies the Ministers of thy Justice. But yet, my God, if in thy Wisdom this be the aptest Chastisement for my unexcusable Transgressions; if this ungrateful Bondage be fittest for my over-high Desires; if the Pride of my (not enough humble) Heart be
thus

O All-seeing Light, and Eternal Life of all things, to whom nothing is either so great that it may resist, or so small that it is contemned; look upon my Misery with thine Eye of Mercy, and let thine infinite Power vouchsafe to limit-out some Proportion of Deliverance unto me, as to thee shall seem most convenient: Let not Injury, O Lord, triumph over me, and let my Faults by thy hand be corrected; and make not mine unjust Enemy the Minister of thy Justice. But yet, my God, if in thy Wisdom this be the aptest Chastisement for my unexcusable Folly; if this low Bondage be fittest for my over-high desires; if the Pride
of

thus to be broken, O Lord, I yield unto thy Will, and cheerfully embrace what Sorrow thou wilt have me suffer ; only thus much let me crave of Thee (let my Craving, O Lord, be accepted of, since it even proceeds from Thee) that by thy Goodness, which is thyself, thou wilt suffer some Beam of thy Majesty so to shine in my Mind, that I, who, in my greatest afflictions, acknowledge it my noblest Title to be thy Creature, may still depend confidently on thee ; Let Calamity be the exercise, but not the Overthrow, of my Virtue ; O let not their Prevailing Power be to my Destruction ; and if it be thy Will that they more and more vex me with Punishment, yet, O Lord, never let their Wickedness have such a Hand, but that I may still carry a Pure Mind and steadfast Resolution ever to serve Thee without Fear, or Presumption, yet with that humble Confidence which may best please Thee ; so that at the last I may come to thy Eternal Kingdom, through the Merits of thy Son, our alone Saviour, Jesus Christ. Amen.

of my not-enough humble Heart be thus to be broken, O Lord, I yield unto thy Will, and joyfully embrace what sorrow thou wilt have me suffer ; only thus much let me crave of Thee (let my Craving, O Lord, be accepted of thee, since even that proceeds from Thee,) let me crave, even by the noblest Title which in my greatest Affliction I may give myself, that I am thy Creature, and by thy Goodness, which is thyself, that that thou wilt suffer some Beam of thy Majesty to shine into my Mind, that it may still depend confidently on thee ; let Calamity be the Exercise, but not the Overthrow, of my Virtue ; let their Power prevail, but prevail not to Destruction ; let my greatness be their Prey ; Let my Pain be the Sweetness of their Revenge ; Let them (if so it seem good unto Thee) vex me with more and more Punishment ; But, O Lord, let never their Wickedness have such a Hand, but that I may carry a pure Mind in a pure Body ; and, *pausing awhile* ; and, O most gracious Lord, *said she*, whatever becomes of me, preserve the Vertuous *Musidorus*.

A
LETTER
FROM
GENERAL LUDLOW,
TO
D. R. HOLLINGWORTH,
THEIR MAJESTIES CHAPLAIN AT ST. BOTOLPH-ALDGATE:

DEFENDING HIS FORMER LETTER TO SIR E. SEYMOUR,
WHICH COMPARED THE TYRANNY OF THE FIRST FOUR YEARS OF
KING CHARLES THE MARTYR,
WITH THE TYRANNY OF THE FOUR YEARS OF THE LATE
ABDICATED KING.

AND VINDICATING THE PARLIAMENT WHICH BEGAN IN NOVEMBER, 1640.

Occasioned by the Lies and Scandals of many bad Men of this Age.

Veritas emergit Victrix.

I acknowledge it were better if we could have *Job's* Wish, That this Day should perish, that Darkness and the shadow of Death should cover it, that it should not see the dawning of the Day, nor should the Light shine upon it; It were better to strike it out of our Calendar, and to make our *January* determine at the 29th, and add these remaining days to *February*.—Dr. Burnet, *Bishop of Salisbury, his Sermon at St. Laurence Church, London, January 30th, 1680.*

AMSTERDAM, PRINTED ANNO DOM. 1691.

AND NOW RE-PRINTED AT LONDON, BY ROBERT WILKS, IN CHANCERY-LANE.
IN THE YEAR 1811.

THE HISTORY OF

1780

1780

1780

1780

1780

1780

1780

1780

1780

1780

1780

TO ALL SINCERE LOVERS

OF

O L D E N G L A N D,

INHABITING IN THE PARISH OF ST. BOTOLPH-ALDGATE, LONDON.

DEAR COUNTRYMEN;

T *Was a great Man's Saying, That EVERY CLERGYMAN is not qualified to sustain the dignity of the Church's Jester. That therefore, before Men be admitted to so important an Employment, it were fit that they underwent a severe Examination; and that it might appear,*

1. Whether they have ANY SENSE. *For, without that, how can they pretend, (and yet they do,) to be ingenious? Then, Whether they have ANY MODESTY: for, without that, they can only be SCURRILOUS and IMPUDENT. Next, Whether ANY TRUTH: for true Jest is those that do the greatest Execution. And, lastly, 'Twere not amiss that they gave some Account too of their CHRISTIANITY; For the World has always hitherto been so uncivil as to expect something of that from the CLERGY, in the Design and Style, even of their lightest and most uncanonical Writings. But,*

With very little regard to these, two dull Books have been lately obtruded upon the World, by one and the same Author, as I am assured; The one, under the Title of A DEFENCE of King Charles the First, OCCASIONED by the Lies and Scandals of many bad Men of this Age. By RICHARD HOLLINGWORTH, D. D. THEIR MAJESTIES CHAPLAIN, at St. Botolph-Aldgate. The other, called,

called, A VINDICATION of their Majesties Wisdom, in the late nomination of some Reverend Persons to the vacant Arch-Bishopricks and Bishopricks, OCCASIONED by the scandalous Reflections of unreasonable Men. By A MINISTER of London. Now,

*This Author having sought these OCCASIONS to be troublesome, and declaring a doubtful Resolution that he will be further so, rather than lose the Lechery of his Scribbling, and the vain-glory of his Pedantry, 'tis fit that such an arrogant Levite, who seats himself in * a Juncto, with their Majesties, to consult wisely how to preserve them from a People who mean them no Harm, should be a little animadverted-upon; which task I undertook, after I found that Persons of better Ability would not trouble themselves with such contemptible Pamphlets.*

* Epistle Dedicatory to the Defence.

I had prepared, and did purpose to have sent with this, some Remarks upon the pretended Vindication of their Majesties Wisdom; but finding that my Notes upon the Doctor's Defence of King Charles the First, are swell'd beyond the Bulk which I intended, I have laid aside those Remarks, 'till I have occasion to write again to this mighty Vindicator.

When I wrote to Sir Edward Seymour this time twelve-Month; I only discours'd of the King's first four Years; and did intend, if ever I wrote further upon that Subject, to have proceeded regularly with the succeeding Years of his Tyranny; but having engaged myself to follow the Doctor in his Ramblings, I could not at present pursue my Intention; but may hereafter do it.

Having resolved to make this Address to you, my honoured Countrymen, I will take the liberty to observe two or three things, which are omitted in my Letter to the Doctor. He saith, page 3. That great Numbers call this King a Tyrant and A PAPIST too, though he so strenuously asserted and pleaded the Protestant Cause, as it is professed by THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND, [That means, THEIR PARTY.]

Now, that he highly favoured POPERY, is most evident: and to what I have already offered to evince the Truth of that Charge, I do add these Instances.

I have told the Aldgate Chaplain, that this King, by a Letter to the Pope, saluted Antichrist with the Title of Most Holy Father. That Letter from the beginning to the end savours of Popery. For,

King Charles's Declaration in his Letter to the Pope.

1. He professes therein, that nothing could affect him so much, as AN ALLIANCE with a Prince that had the same apprehensions of THE TRUE RELIGION with himself, [That was the KING of SPAIN, A NOTABLE PROTESTANT.]

2. He calls Popery THE CATHOLICK, APOSTOLIC, Róman RELIGION, all other, NOVELTY and FACTION.

3. He protests he did not esteem it a Matter of greater Honour, to be descended from great Princes, than to imitate them in the Zeal of their Piety, who had often exposed their Estate and LIVES for THE EXALTATION OF THE HOLY CROSS.

4. He

4. He solemnly engaged to the Pope, to spare nothing in the World, and to suffer all manner of Discommodities, even TO THE HAZARDING OF ESTATE AND LIFE, for to settle a thing so pleasing to God, as UNITY WITH ROME.

Behold, what a good Sign of PROTESTANTISM here bangs at the King's Door. Moreover, when the Pope's Nuncio delivered a Letter to him from the Pope, wherein PROTESTANTS are called MONSTERS of HERESIES, and the King was invited to return the Possession of these most noble Isles to the PRINCE OF THE APOSTLES; He expressed himself in these words: I KISS HIS HOLINESS FEET for the Favour and Honour he doth me; so much the more esteemed, by how much the less deserved of me HITHERTO. And HIS HOLINESS SHALL SEE WHAT I DO HEREAFTER. So that his Holiness shall not repent him of what he hath done.

He was as good as his word here passed to the Pope, as all the World afterwards saw. Tho' that most horrid IRISH REBELLION broke-out the 23rd of October, 1641, the Lords and Commons, who complained that it was framed and cherish'd in England, could not obtain a Proclamation to declare those bloody Murtherers, Traitors, till January ensuing; and then the following Warrant went to the King's Printer from his Secretary of State.

“ IT is his Majestie's Pleasure, that you forthwith Print, in very good Paper, and send unto me, for his Majestie's Service, forty Copies of the Proclamation inclosed; leaving convenient space for his Majesty to sign above, and to affix the Privy-Signet underneath: And HIS MAJESTIE'S EXPRESS COMMAND IS, THAT YOU PRINT NOT ABOVE THE SAID NUMBER OF FORTY COPIES, and forbear to make any further Publication of them, till his Pleasure be further signified; for which this shall be your Warrant.

Whitehall, January 2, 1641.

EDWARD NICHOLAS.

See here what special care was taken, that a few only should come to the knowledge of this Proclamation; which was at that time made more observable, by the late contrary Practice against the Scots, who were, in a very quick and sharp manner, proclaimed, and those Proclamations forthwith dispersed with all imaginable diligence throughout the whole Kingdom, and ordered to be read in all Churches, accompanied with Publick Prayers and Execrations. But his Aversion to the proclaiming and proceeding against the Irish Rebels, is not to be much admired-at; for they called themselves THE QUEEN'S ARMY, and declared that they rose to maintain the KING'S PREROGATIVE, and the QUEEN'S RELIGION, against the PARLIAMENT: And he had no sooner yielded to issue this Proclamation, than (to obstruct the quelling these Rebels, and give them time to increase and strengthen themselves) the King withdrew from the Parliament, and began Domestic Dissensions.

E

Having

He delays above two Months to Proclaim the Irish Massacrers to be Traitors.

And Orders only Forty Copies of the Proclamation to be printed.

But in proclaiming the Scots to be Traitors, he had used the greatest diligence.

N. B.

Having given these slight Touches at the King's favouring Popery, and at his Accession to the Irish Rebellion; I do now leave it to you to make a Judgement, whether he were so STRENUOUS AN ASSERTER OF THE PROTESTANT CAUSE as your DOCTOR insinuates; and I care not if, once for all, I do acknowledge, that THE CLERGY may, with good pretence to Reason, say, that HE DIED THEIR MARTYR; for his being wrought-upon by JESUITICAL COUNSELS, to impose a Liturgy upon the Scots, who had no such thing before, did very much contribute to the bringing him to the FATAL BLOCK.

I shall now, for my own Vindication, entreat you to remember, that I never call this King A PAPIST; and I have ever esteem'd it a piece of Artifice in OUR PRIESTS, to amuse the People with the Suggestion, that he is falsely charged with Popery, thereby to induce them to disbelieve or forget his Crime, which was most visible to all Men, the Violation of the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom; I have therefore chosen to decline the Dispute about his Religion; and am sure 'twill be found that I have not unjustly tax'd him with the Crimes of his Misgovernment, which did so plainly and inexcusably appear to all. And why should we not think that such things were cause enough to be stood-upon by the Parliament, and to justify their Quarrel before God? As if the Almighty did not abhor INJUSTICE, OPPRESSION AND TYRANNY, unless Profession of Religion were also depraved: Nay, he abhors it more in that place where the purest of Profession is.

That this King intended to bow or break us, to perswade or force us, to Slavery, is so clear by the whole course of his Reign, that 'tis amazing that Men, (even of the highest stamp of TORYISM) should have front enough to deny it. The Parasitical Court-Priests did then preach, That we were bound to obey whatsoever the King commanded, without questioning the Lawfulness. And why did they vent such stuff, but to flatter and please the King? And how could he be delighted with it, unless he thought it true and agreeable to his Designs? And that he honoured these false Teachers, above the Prophets of the Lord, is evinced both by his advancing them, and suffering those Sons of Chanaanah to smite those Micaiahs, and to push them with Horns of Iron that they might consume them.

The great Philosopher Themistius, did say with equal truth and Wit, that Flattering Clergymen did not worship God, but the Imperial Purple; and 'tis a sad Truth, that in our day they have been SETTING THE PEOPLE ON MADDING; and the low Dejection and baseness of Mind in too many of this Generation, is to be ascribed to their PULPIT-STUFF, which has been the Doctrine and perpetual Infusion of Servility and Wretchedness into the minds of their Hearers.

The Case being thus, it becomes necessary to expose such Men as these; for 'tis intolerable that your Doctor, in his dull way of Calumniating, should (as he doth) censure, reproach, and blacken the Actions and Memories of so many excellent Persons, both Lords and Gentlemen, and also very learned and pious Divines. And on the other hand, a Reputation is to be won for King Charles the First, of Wisdom, by Wilfulness and subtile Shifts; of Goodness, by multiplying Evil; of Piety,

by

by endeavouring to root-out true Religion. *I have, therefore, in the ensuing Letter, taken some little pains in comparing his fair-spoken Words, with his far-differing Deeds; for 'tis most certain, that the World ever looks more at real Actions than verbal Protestations.*

I am sensible, my good Friends, that I now write to Men endued with Reason; let not the Goose-quill of a Chaplain at Aldgate make you all Ganders, and a sound of Words bewitch you; his Tracts which I have mentioned look like pieces of Flattery compiled by A HUNGRY LEVITE, gaping after a Deanery, or Chaplainship at Whitehall. He, by his Counterfeit Colours, setts-off a deformed Cause to gull you. Have you read this King in his Actions? and shall experimental Knowledge be confuted by this Doctor's bare Assertions? Should we esteem Truth by Words, how many Romances would be accounted as Autbentic as our Bibles? 'Tis Truth only which conquers the wise; to be captivated by ought else, argues Folly.

My last request to you is, that I may be rightly understood; I protest that no intent to trample on the Dead, or dishonour his Dust, but a desire to vindicate the Liberties of my Country, moved me to this undertaking. This unhappy King's Miscarriages and Crimes, should have lain buried in oblivion, if ECCLESIASTICAL MAKE-BATES did not rake all up again into fresh Remembrance, whether we will or no. I am not conscious to myself, that, by what I have wrate, I have loaded his Memory with other than Matter of Fact and Truth, which will be too hard for the greatest Doctor of them all. I am,

Gentlemen,

Your affectionate Country-man and Servant,

EDMUND LUDLOW.

A
L E T T E R
FROM
G E N E R A L L U D L O W
TO
DR. HOLLINGWORTH,

THEIR MAJESTIES' CHAPLAIN, &c.

MINE to Sir Edward Seymour, (*Most Eximious Sir*) bore date upon your last MADDING-DAY: Another being now come, I esteem myself obliged to justify what I asserted in my last year's Letter: to the end that I may keep my Countrymen, and in particular those of your Coat, right in their Senses; and inculcate into the Men of this Generation, a due abhorrence of Tyranny, and a just Veneration for English Parliaments. Having come to this Resolution, and that upon reading *your Jewel of a Book*, which you style *A Defence of King Charles the First; (occasioned by the Lies and Scandals of many bad Men of this Age)* which came to me as a New-Year's Gift from an endeared Friend in London; I suppose you will readily allow me to pretend to a title to an Acquaintance and Correspondence with you: For, though in the conclusion of my last to Sir Edward Seymour, I gave a Challenge to DOCTOR PELLING, (who occasion'd that) to **convict me of*

* Tho' I never have been, nor do think that I ever can be, convicted of one Falshood in my former Letter, (or in this which I am writing) yet I will confess one Error committed this time twelvemonth; twas this, I following a very faithful Historian, whose Printer, by an unhappy omission of one Letter, ran him, and me by consequence, into a great mistake; and I relying upon that Print, said, That the Noble Lord Conway had avowed in Parliament, that he *never* hated Popery; whereas his words in truth were, that he *ever* hated it.

Falshood

Falshood in any one Particular there charged upon his incomparable Prince ; yet I have not had one Word either from him or Sir Edward Seymour. Therefore in good Manners, I dismiss them from further trouble, as I might have done myself, had you not fallen foul of me : But, seeing you must be scribbling, and have taken up the Cudgels, we must come to A TRYAL OF SKILL.

To begin ;

You appear very warm at first, and therefore not so civil as a Man might hope you would be found, who profess so much Candour and Temper as you sometimes do. You say, *'Tis a LEWD PAMPHLET, which goes under the Name of LUDLOW.* Why *Lewd, dear Sir !* 'Tis a received Opinion amongst your Acquaintance at *Billingsgate*, that to call a woman *Whore*, and say you will prove her so, will bear an Action; otherwise not : I shall not therefore prosecute you for that, because 'tis only your say-so ; you neither undertake nor offer one word to prove it : And indeed, should I implead you upon it, I perceive you have express'd yourself with that Caution, that I should be non-suited ; For you add, that it goes under the Name of Ludlow ; by consequence it may not be his. Why thus unmerciful, Doctor ? You will not allow me to be Author of my own Book or Letter ; and yet you declare it a barbarous Act in a certain *Essex Doctor*, (his Name, I understand, is *Walker*) and his *Virtues and Piety will, I doubt not, find a room in future Annals and Records*, ('tis your own delicate expression) when yours will be forgotten. I say, you allow him not to deny that your *Martyr* was the Author of *Eicon Basilice*.

I meet, *Sir*, in the next place, with a taste of your *healing Spirit*. You treat me, and those who believe the Truth that you are no way able to gain-say, in a highly obliging, and most endearing, manner, *A vile Brood, a factious Crew, &c.* We are, say you : I may not now betray my own innocence so far, as to suffer any thing of this to pass upon me without a Vindication. I have asserted, that your *SAINT was a NOTORIOUS TYRANT*, and, for aught you tell me to the contrary, have very fairly proved it, and that by abundance of Instances. Am I unjust therein ? Why then do not you refute me ? Am I in the Right ? Why then will you set yourself to out-face the Truth ? That you do so, I shall demonstrate, after I have minded you, out of *my former Letter*, what things you are either to falsify or justify (for you must know, that Railing, no more than Persecution, can ever make a Convert) when you scribble again, if you intend to convince any Man of an Error, who believes that *King Charles the First* was a *Tyrant* : And I must tell you, that I am induced to make the Repetition which ensues, because I cannot perceive, by the reading your Tract, that you have look'd beyond my *Title Page* ; for there you find the only thing you mention of mine, and that with indignation ; **THE VILE BROOD**, you say, call this Day **THE MADDING-DAY**. I am most sure that you do not answer, nor so much as cast a look towards any one Paragraph or Sentence of my Letter. Therefore,

.This

An enumeration of several Acts of Tyranny and Mis-government committed by King Charles, in the first four years of his Reign.

This informs you, that (amongst many others) the following *Acts of Tyranny*, are there enumerated, and placed to your *Martyr's Account*. I shall, (to oblige you) begin with the *Church*; for I know it will please you to see that precede the *State*.

I. ' THE KING we are talking of, in a Letter which he wrote to the *Pope*, saluted *Antichrist* with the Title of *Sanctissime Pater, Most Holy Father*; HE procured the *Pope's Dispensation for his Marriage*, which was solemnized according to the Ceremonies of the Romish Church. HE agreed to *Articles* upon his *Marriage*, that *Papists should be no more molested for their Religion*. He built *Somerset-House Chapel*, with conveniency for *Friars*; and permitted them to walk abroad in their *Habits*. HE assumed to himself a Power to dispense with the *Laws*, in favour of *Popery*; particularly the 21st and 27th of *Queen Elizabeth*, by granting pardons to *Jesuits and Papists*, which passed by *immediate Warrant*. HE inhibited and restrained both *Ecclesiastical and Temporal Officers* to intermeddle with *Papists*; which amounted to a *Toleration*. *Popish Jurisdiction* was exercised and avowed in *Ireland*; *Monasteries and Nunneries* were erected there, and filled with Men and Women of several Orders. HE made above an hundred *Popish Lords and Gentlemen, Lords-Lieutenants, Deputy-Lieutenants, Justices of the Peace, &c.* And his LORD TREASURER (*Weston*) died a *Papist*. Are these, my good Doctor, any of the *VIRTUES* and *GRACES* which King William and Queen Mary (as you tell them in your *Dedication*) do daily imitate?

2. (To pass-on to the State of the *Church of England* in his Reign: *Well might Men cry in that day, The Church! O THE CHURCH!* ' *This King's Bishops*, generally speaking, were unsound in their Principles; they laid new *Paintings on the Face of the old Whore of Babylon*, to make her shew lovely: They countenanced and cherished *Papists*, and depressed *Orthodox Preachers*, how conformable soever; in particular *Archbishop Laud* (whom you, Doctor, will have to be a tolerably good Man) allowed Books which favoured *Popery*, but denied to license Books that were written against it.

' *This King's CHAPLAINS* endeavoured to reconcile England to Rome, and scoffed at *Preaching, Bibles, and all shew of Religion*. *MOUNTAGUE*, one of his *Chaplains*, being prosecuted in *Parliament*, for Crimes of this Nature, your *Martyr* was incensed thereat, granted him a Pardon, and made him *Bishop of Chester*. [And now, Doctor, pray tell me, have our most Excellent King and Queen made any such *Bishops or Chaplains* as these?]

N. B.

3. ' THIS KING, in his first Year, lent eight *SHIPS*, (which he equipp'd with *Monies* given for the relief of his distressed Protestant Sister, the *Electress Palatine*, and the oppressed Protestants of the *Palatinate*) TO THE *FRENCH KING*, to fight against the distressed Protestants of *Rochelle*: These Ships were employ'd against the *Rockellers*; and the *French* boasted that they mowed the Hereticks down like *Grass*.'

Grass.' [Pray, Sir, *your opinion in the case; Can you think their present Majesties will ever imitate their ROYAL GRANDFATHER in this Point?*]

4. 'King Charles the First, in the very beginning of his Reign, *took our Goods from us against our Wills, and our Liberties against the Laws; he raised an Army, and required the Counties to furnish Coat and Conduct-Money; and against the known Laws, put several to death by Martial-Law; HE levied Money upon the Subject, by way of Loan, and menaced the City of London, that, if they would not advance him Money, HE WOULD FRAME HIS COUNSELS AS APPERTAINED TO A KING.*' [*That surely, dear Doctor, could intend no other than such a one as France is now plagued with; it may signify King in that Language; in our plain English, 'tis downright Tyrant.*]

'When it was urged that his requiring SHIP-MONEY *was unprecedented; His haughty answer was, That Precedents were not wanting for the Punishment of those that disobey the King's Commands; and that State-Occasions were not to be guided by ordinary Precedents.* Those that refused to subscribe to the Loan, were put out of the Commissions of the Lieutenancy and the Peace, and also imprisoned; and the Refusers of the meaner Rank were bound to appear, and to be enrolled for Soldiers to be sent for Denmark; or were impress'd to serve in the King's Ships.' [*Here now is a ready way not only for the raising of Money, but also an Army for Flanders, and Sailors for our Fleet. But all your Rhetorick, Reverend Sir, will not work upon their Majesties to imitate your good and great Man in these things neither.*]

5. YOUR MARTYR suspended Dr. ABBOT, *Archbishop of Canterbury, who was a Man that wholly followed the true Interest of England, and that of the Reformed Churches in Europe; so far, as that in his time the CLERGY was not much envied here in England, nor the Government of Episcopacy much disfavoured by Protestants beyond the Seas*) I say, HE SUSPENDED this Excellent Person, and also CONFINED him, because *(to use his own words)* HE REFUSED TO MAKE THAT GOOD BY Divinity, WHICH THE King HAD DONE AGAINST THE LAWS. HE also thrust Dr. WILLIAMS, *Bishop of Lincoln, from the place of Lord-Keeper, and his Presence, and the Council-Table, for appearing in Parliament against the Kingdom's great Grievance, the Duke of Buckingham; and afterwards he imprisoned him in the Tower for speaking against the Loan, for refusing to allow Proceedings against Puritans, and prophesying that the Puritans would carry all at last.* [I doubt, Doctor, that should the King and Queen imitate their Grandfather in these Practices, you would find yourself, AS IT WERE, overwhelmed with Sorrow, and that such Actions would swell your Grief above its usual Banks, if not stir your Indignation.]

6. THE TYRANT, resolving to subvert the Liberties and Estates of the Subjects to his Will and Pleasure, *removed that grave and learned Judge, Sir Randolph Crew, from the place of Lord Chief-Justice of the King's Bench, be-*
- cause

‘ cause he had declared himself against the Loan, and would not serve his turn in
 ‘ declaring that the King might legally imprison Men, *durante bene placito*. [*My*
 ‘ *life for yours, Doctor, their present Majesties will never follow this Example of*
 ‘ *your PATTERN FOR PRINCES.*]

7. ‘ HE upon the 30th of JANUARY, (*of all the days in the Year*) 1627,
 ‘ sent a *Privy-Seal* to the *Treasury*, for the remitting 30,000*l.* into *Holland* to
 ‘ *Burlemark*, a Merchant, to be employed for *levying horse and Men* to be brought
 ‘ into England to support his Tyranny.’ [And can you think their Majesties will
 ever write after this Copy?]

8. ‘ HE had no sooner passed the PETITION OF RIGHT into a Law, than
 ‘ he was found to violate it, by *billeting of Soldiers*, and *levying the Subsidies of*
 ‘ *Tonnage and Poundage*, which determined by his Father’s Death; and were
 ‘ never payable to any of his Ancestors, but only by special Act of Parliament.’
 [And what opinion have you of King William and Queen Mary, in reference to
 this point, my good Doctor?]

9. ‘ He kept the Earl of *Bristol* under Confinement, near two years, without
 ‘ being charged with any accusation, or brought to Tryal: And HE committed
 ‘ the Earl of *Arundel* to the *Tower* in the time of Parliament, without expressing
 ‘ any cause of his Commitment, in Violation of the Privileges of the Peers.’ [I’ll
 warrant you, Sir, you’ll never find their present Majesties at this Work.]

10. ‘ HE upheld and shelter’d the Grand Enemies of the Commonwealth. When
 ‘ the Duke of *Buckingham* was prosecuted in Parliament, as the principal Patron
 ‘ and Supporter of a *Popish Faction*, set on foot, to the danger of the CHURCH
 ‘ and STATE, THE KING interposed to rescue him: When the Commons im-
 ‘ peached him, and by one of their Articles charg’d him in effect) WITH THE
 ‘ MURDER OF KING JAMES; THE KING told the House of Lords, That
 ‘ to approve *Buckingham’s* Innocence, HE could be a Witness to clear him in every
 ‘ one of the Articles. HE told the House of Commons, That he would not allow
 ‘ any of his Servants to be questioned among them, much less such as were near
 ‘ him. That he saw they aimed at the Duke, but assured them, he had not inter-
 ‘ meddled, nor done any thing concerning the publick, but by his special Directions.
 ‘ He added, That he wondered at the FOOLISH IMPUDENCE of any Man, to
 ‘ think that he should be drawn to offer such a Sacrifice. HE dissolved three Par-
 ‘ liaments, when they were intent upon the prosecution of the Duke. [*We are*
 ‘ *still at a loss, good Doctor; this will not pass with our King and Queen; we shall never*
 ‘ *bear them speak, or act, at this rate.*]

11. ‘ HE imprisoned several Members of the House of Commons, (during the
 ‘ Parliament) for refusing to answer out of Parliament, what was said and done in
 ‘ Parliament. HE imprisoned others for managing a Conference with the Lords
 ‘ upon their impeaching the Duke. HE, in the time of Parliament, sent Warrants
 ‘ for sealing-up the Studies of other Members; and he caused the imprisoned Mem-
 ‘ bers

bers to be shifted and toss'd from *Gaol* to *Gaol*, to deprive them, by that wicked Artifice, of the Fruit of their *Habeas Corpus*; and of the Benefit of Freeborn Subjects for the obtaining of their Liberty; and thus they were long detained in Prison. The brave Sir *John Elliot* ended his days in the *Tower*, not *without suspicion of foul play*. [*I am sure, Sir, you will not recommend those virtuous Practices to the imitation of their present Majesties.*]

12. HE struck at the very being of Parliaments; he sent a threatening Message to the Commons, that, if he had not a timely *Supply*, he would betake himself to NEW COUNSELS. At another time he said to the *Lords* and *Commons*, RE-MEMBER THAT PARLIAMENTS ARE ALTOGETHER IN MY POWER. THEREFORE, as I find the Fruits of them, Good or Evil, THEY ARE TO CONTINUE, OR NOT TO BE. HE told the *Parliament*, the 17th of *March*, 1627, That, if they should not contribute what the State needed, he must use OTHER MEANS. And his *Lord-Keeper* added, That, if the King found the Readiness of their Supplies, he might the better forbear the use of his Prerogative; That the King chose that way of *Parliament*, not as the only way, but as the fittest; not as destitute of others, but AS MOST AGREEABLE TO HIS DISPOSITION. [*You will readily agree with me, dear Sir, that King William hath not learn'd this way of speaking to Parliaments.*]

I have now, *Reverend Sir*, briefly run-over my former Letter, and thence presented you with a *Bone to pick*; indeed a dozen, as luck will have it: and I could have doubled the number. But, for the present, these may stay your *Stomach*, this being a *Fasting-Day*.

I must now tell you, that I am as much to seek as ever, for the *Virtues of the Martyr*, which deserve their *Majesties imitation*. But, methinks, I hear you reply to me, "So you will eternally be, if you read such *lewd Pamphlets*, as *Ludlow* converses with; you must apply yourself to the *impartial, learned, and infallibly convincing Works* of the most candid *Dr. Hollingworth*, if you will be enlightened in this great Point: He, *good Man*, jogs steadily on in the way of Truth, sparing no *Party*, you may take my word for it." May I so? He's then the *Man* for my *Money*; and, casting-off my *Strumpet* of a *Pamphlet*, I will READ, TRY, and JUDGE, according as another *Doctor* advises the *Lewd Folks*. And,

I proceed (*Sir*) to the Examination of your *Defence of King Charles the First*. You tell us, that, in looking-into and considering his *Life*, you will find yourself equally affected with *Joy* and *Grief*. Now I shall attempt to assuage your *Grief*; but, in doing it, shall abate so much of your conceived *Joy*, that, with the late *Eloquent Recorder*, I doubt I shall bring you to a *handful of Grief* and a *handful of Sorrow*.

You ground your joy upon your meeting with a Person so admirably tempered, so greatly condescending, so ready to comply with whatever was presented to him for the good of his Subjects, of so great Constancy to the Religious Persuasions of his own Mind, that he would not forsake them.

To begin with the last; because you will have the *Church* to take place of the State. Are not we made happy at this day by the *Hereditary Stubbornness* of your *Martyr's Son*? he was so *constant to the Religious Persuasions of his own Mind*, that, rather than forsake them, he very faithfully abdicated the Throne; He sacrificed his *Crown to FATHER PETRE's IDOLATRY*; his *Father* sacrificed his to *FATHER LAUD's SUPERSTITION*.

HIS TEMPER will be seen hereafter: I shall in this place only enquire, whether it appeared so admirably good as you insinuate, when he struck the *Noble Earl of Denbigh* A BOX ON THE EAR, for only walking in the Privy Gallery at *Whitehall*. We are anon to examine his *Condescension and Compliance for the good of the People*; and, in doing it, shall evince, how little you understand the History of his Life, and what reason there is to mortify a *Chaplain* of their present *Majesties*, for recommending this KING as a *pattern to future Princes*.

I come now (Sir) to your *Melancholy Part*, which you thus express; *I have been often overwhelmed, AS IT WERE, with Sorrow and loading Grief*. That, AS IT WERE, secures some hope in your case; for which there had been no room, had you been in earnest overwhelm'd. But, pray, what brings you, *Doctor*, into this unhappy case? "Why, this *Prince*, (you will tell me) *so every-way great and good, is libell'd by every sawcy Scribbler. A factious number of Men never speak of him but as a TYRANT, A ROGUE, A RASCAL: They call the Day on which he was murdered, and which is appointed by the Supreme Power of the Nation to be religiously observed, THE MADDING-DAY.*"

There's no remedy (Sir) but *Patience*; there will ever be found some *sawcy Scribbler*, or other, upon this Subject, whilst the World is troubled with any *silly Defender* of this TYRANT; for, as such, I shall continue to talk of him, and that with *Demonstration*. But I must suspect that you have learn'd the rude Terms of ROGUE AND RASCAL from your own *factious Crew*, (you know who I mean) when they are speaking of his present *Majesty*.

Now (*dear Doctor*) as to your MADDING-DAY, allow me to present you with the Opinion of a Person *tolerably wise and thoughtful*; I mean *Dr. Burnet*, now *Lord Bishop of Salisbury*, in his *Sermon* before the *Aldermen of London*, (the *Lord Mayor* being sick, and therefore absent) at *St. Lawrence Church*, upon the 30th of *January*, 1680. He did express himself in these words: *I acknowledge it were better if we could have Job's Wish, That that Day should perish, that Darkness and the shadow of Death should cover it, that it should not see the dawning of the Day, nor should the Light shine upon it: It were better to strike it out of our Kalender, and to make our January determine at the 29th, and add these remaining days to February.*

In hope (Sir) that I have here offered something to cool your *red-hot Zeal* for the Observation of this Day; upon which, you, and many of your *high-flown Brethren*, have too long spouted-out most fulsome Flattery upon your *Royal Martyr*, and been infusing Principles of *Slavery* into the free-born People of ENGLAND. I now proceed upon your *Defence*: You say, that your *Grief swells above its usual Bank*; and stirs your indignation against a VILE BROOD. Why? in earnest,
Doctor;

Doctor, 'tis time to look-out for a Cure; 'tis not above two or three Minutes since you appeared only, AS IT WERE, *overwhelm'd with Sorrow*: Now the overflowing of your Grief, and raising your Choler, speaks your case, AS IT WERE, desperate; and I doubt you will *run mad* before your next MADDING-DAY: But I have undertaken the drudgery of reading you through, and must take what follows; and so must you.

You go-on telling me, That *from these two Passions of Grief and Anger, you are resolved to vindicate this great Prince; and, IF POSSIBLE, to shame those who do shew by what they vent, that they have neither Knowledge, Wisdom, nor good Manners, nor indeed any thing else, that belongs to the Human as well as Christian Nature.*

I found (Sir) by your staring and foaming at the Mouth, what you would come to, and 'tis now with you as I foretold; Would any man in his Wits set himself not only to put a Herd of Wild Beasts to shame, but also to teach them Letters and Breeding? But *an angry Doctor* thinks himself fit for any thing, when at the same time I esteem him capable of nothing; for no man that falls into a passion can argue well; and you, Sir, have undertaken a much more difficult task than you are aware of. For I have read in the fore-mentioned Sermon of the *Learned Bishop of Salisbury*, an Expression to this effect; That *it might be expected that he should enlarge on the Virtues, the Piety, the Magnanimity and Constancy of Mind, of this your Martyr; but he confessed the performing this to be a Task above his strength.* But what will not *an aspiring Chaplain* essay? I have now (Sir) reached to what you resolve-upon.

You tell me, *that you intend only to run through the last eight Years of his reign.* Do you so, Sir? here's a snake in the Grass, *Doctor*, or else, *why do you skip his first Sixteen Years?* I wish, that, instead of running-through (which argues you in haste) I do not find you flying-over, the Years you pitch-upon; if you do, I shall endeavour to lure you back again; which that I may the more certainly do, I determine to keep pace with, or in sight of, you.

Proceeding; you say, that *you are certain, that from the beginning of the Long Parliament, November 4, to the day of his Death, he did every thing ALMOST that deserved a better Reception than it met withal; and made such various Offers and Condescensions, as would have pleased any sort of Men but those who were resolved to be Masters of his whole Crown and Dignity, &c.*

'Tis something unhappy, *good Doctor!* when you seem to speak with assurance, that you dare not adventure to do it without a Reserve; your ALMOST in this place, abates much of the Glory of this Paragraph: He did every thing ALMOST; he made *Offers and Condescensions*; what those were, I suppose you intend to inform me by and by. When I see them, we will talk about them; and then, should it be found that they were such as were not satisfactory to the *Lords and Commons* in that great *Parliament*, you will deserve to be TOPHAMIZED for slandering the Representative Body of the *English Nation*: and truly I think you merit something beyond that punishment, for saying that *their most Excellent Ma-*
gesties,

jesties, King William and Queen Mary, do daily imitate the virtues and graces of a King, who, you agree, might have committed some Mistakes in his Government, in his first sixteen Years Reign, and yet did every thing (with an unlucky) ALMOST to redress such things as his Male-Administration had put out of order, SO FAR AS HE COULD BE SATISFIED THEY WERE OUT OF ORDER. For the eternal Honour of their present Majesties, and to the unspeakable Comfort of all good Englishmen, we see them daily acquiescing in the Wisdom of their great Council, and redressing, not only ALMOST, but ALTOGETHER, the Disorders and Grievances of two or three unhappy Reigns.

In the next place you affirm, That, when the Parliament sat down in 1640, the King proposed and resolved to consent to every thing they could offer, which might be really for the good of his Kingdom. You are, Sir, too general herein for my Conversation; you talk as though you had been one of his Privy-Council, or, at least, a Chaplain to Archbishop Laud. I cannot say what his Purposes or Resolutions were; but, when we come to Particulars, shall endeavour to weigh them by his Actions.

Page 5.

Pursuant to what he proposed and resolved, (say you) he tells them frankly in his first Speech, that he was resolved to put himself freely and clearly on the Love and affection of his ENGLISH SUBJECTS, and withal, promises them to concur so heartily with them, that all the World may see, that his Intentions HAVE EVER BEEN, and shall be, to make THIS a glorious Kingdom. Having said this, you are running-on, Doctor, but with too much speed for me; you instantly add, I think, &c. Well, so you may, and I intend to hear what that is anon; for now, and not till now, you have cut me out Work, and I must intreat you to pause a little, and hear what I observe upon what you but now declared; He told them he resolved to put himself freely and clearly on the LOVE and AFFECTION of his ENGLISH SUBJECTS. Can this be true, Doctor? Did he in earnest say so? Why, he was born at Dumferling; how then can you represent him as abdicating his Ancient Kingdom, and renouncing the Love and Affection of the Scottish Nation?—Seeing you are silent in this matter, I must, it seems, take the pains to examine it; and I promise to supply your Omission with Impartiality, and all imaginable regard to Truth. And, in doing it, shall shew, with what brevity I can, not only the reason why your Martyr did, at this Juncture, caress and cajole an English Parliament; but how our Nation became so happy as to see one assembled, when our Fathers had almost forgot the Name of a Parliament. The Story is this:

Rise of the troubles
in Scotland.

The Reformation of England had never abrogated, nor scarce shaken, the Prelatical Dignity in any Parliament. But in Scotland it was quite rooted out by Law, that Church having been ever much addicted to the Reformation of Geneva. By degrees it was restored, by the extraordinary Interposition of the Power of King James the First; yet not without many Difficulties, nor without great Reluctancy of the Nobility, Gentry, and most of the Ministers of that Nation. They suffered a great Diminution of their Temporal Liberties by the Introduction of Episcopal Jurisdiction, the Bishops using rigorous proceedings against Gentlemen
of

of Quality, by *Fines, Imprisonments, &c.* And the whole structure of *Ecclesiastical Policy*,—so long used in *Scotland*, and established by so many *Acts of Parliament*,—was, at one blow, thrown down; their *Consistories, Classes, and Presbyteries*, were held to be of the nature of *Conventicles*; and all Decision of *Ecclesiastical Controversies* was confined to the *Tribunal* of a *Bishop*.

That fierce, cruel, insolent, and Popishly-affected Archbishop *Laud*,* was the main instrument in this fatal work: He in the year 1637, composed a *Common-Prayer-Book* for *Scotland*; and, desiring to demonstrate his great Affection to the *Court of Rome*, sent it thither to be approved by the *Pope and Cardinals*: They returned it, with thanks for his Respect to them, but sent him word, that they thought it not fit for *Scotland*. The GOOD MAN thereupon, further to ingratiate himself with his ELDER BROTHER, alter'd some things in it, and made it more harsh and unreasonable; and then instigated the King to send it to the *Scots*, with an express command to have it read in their Churches. It varied from the *English Common-Prayer-Book*: but the *Alterations* were for the worse, especially in the *Lord's Supper*; It was expressly commanded that the *Altar* (so called) should be situate close to the *Eastern Wall*, together with many Postures of the *Minister*, whilst he officiated. And, in the *consecrating-Prayer*, those words which, in the *English Liturgy*, are directly against *Transubstantiation*, were quite left out of that Book, and, instead of them, such other words as, in plain sense, agreed with the *Roman Mass-Book*, were inserted, viz. *Hear us, O most merciful Father, and of thy Omnipotent Goodness grant, so to bless and sanctify; by thy Word and Spirit, these Creatures of Bread and Wine, that they may be to us THE BODY AND BLOOD of thy beloved Son.* In a word, the *Scots* affirmed; that all the material Parts of the *Mass-Book* were seminally in this; and they could not relish it, that *Laud*, and his *Set of English Bishops*, should urge them to a *Liturgy more Popish than their own*; and observed, that, for the sake of *Unity*, those *English Bishops* were content to meet *Rome*; rather than *Scotland*.

The King orders a new Liturgy to be read in the Churches of Scotland.

The Book being read by a *Bishop* in the *City of Edsburgh*, the People expressed great detestation thereof; and the *Bishop* who read it, would, probably, have been slain as he was coming out of the Church, had not a Nobleman rescued him: The *Nobility, Gentry, and Ministers* petitioned against it. The King threatened to prosecute them as *Rebels*, and commanded the *Council* to receive no more *Petitions*: Thereupon several of the *Nobility*, in the Name of the *Petitioners*, made a *Protestation*, that the *Service-Book* was full of *Superstition and Idolatry*, and ought not to be obtruded upon them without consent of a *National Synod*, which in such Cases should judge: That it was unjust to deny them Liberty to accuse the *Bishops* being

The people oppose the reading of it. July 23, 1637.

* Dr. *Hollingworth*, in his Tract called *A Vindication of their Majesties Wisdom, &c.* p. 9, saith, that *Laud* was a VERY GOOD MAN, the *Book of Sports* excepted. For aught I know, he meant this Scotch Book; for it made Sport with a witness: if he did not, I am sure this deserved an exception also.

I am sensible of the Doctor's Infirmities, "that he is addicted to rash and inconsiderate Railing." Therefore, though I will not humour him, in reciting the Authority which I have for this black story of his otherwise very good man, because I have in his Works no more than his bare word for what he asserts, my good-nature prompts me to advise him not give me the Lie in this matter: for I know those who have been at *Rome*, and I can produce a most reputable Member of the Church of England for what I here charge upon that very ill Man, *Laud*. After this friendly caution, the Doctor may deny it, if he dares.

guilty

guilty of High Crimes ; of which till they were cleared, they did reject them as Judges or Governours of them : They justified their own meetings, and subscribing to *Petitions, as being to defend the Glory of God, the King's Honour, and Liberties of the Realm.*

The Scottish national Covenant of 1580 is renewed in Feb. 1638.

The Scots concluded to renew the COVENANT which had been made and sealed under King James's Hand, in the Year 1580 ; afterwards confirmed by all the Estates of the Kingdom, and the Decree of the National Synod, in 1581 ; THIS COVENANT was for the Defence of the PURITY OF RELIGION, and the King's Person and Rights, against the Church of Rome. This was begun in February, 1638, and was so fast subscribed throughout the Kingdom, that, before the end of April, a man was scarce accounted to be of the Reformed Religion that had not subscribed the Covenant. The Non-Covenanters were; first, the Papists, not exceeding 600 in number throughout the Kingdom; 2ndly, the Statesmen in Office and Favour at that time; and 3dly, some few Protestants who were affected to the Ceremonies of the Church of England, and the Book of Common-Prayer.

The King sent the Marquis of Hamilton, to deal with the Scots, to renounce their Covenant : but they affirmed, *It could not be done without manifest Perjury and Profanation of God's Name ; and insisted to have the Service-Book utterly abolished, as being obtruded against all Law upon them.* That their Meetings were lawful, and such as they would not forsake, until the Purity of Religion and Peace might be fully settled, by a free and National Synod : And they declared THAT THE POWER OF CALLING A SYNOD, IN CASE THE PRINCE BE AN ENEMY TO THE TRUTH, OR NEGLIGENT IN PROMOTING THE CHURCH'S GOOD, IS IN THE CHURCH ITSELF : And that the State of the Church at that time necessitated such a course.

The King calls a national Synod in Scotland, Nov. 1638.

The King at length (*fearing lest the Covenanters, if he delayed to do it, would do it themselves,*) called a National Synod, to begin at Glasgow, the 21st of November, 1638 ; But, within seven days after it met, it was dissolved, by the Marquis of Hamilton, in the King's Name, and the members of it were commanded to sit no more. But they protested against that dissolution, and continued the Synod when the Marquess of Hamilton was gone; and they then deposed all the Bishops; condemned the Liturgy, took away the High-Commission Court, and whatsoever had crept into the Church since the Year 1580 ; when the NATIONAL COVENANT was first established. And at last, when they themselves broke-up the Synod, they wrote a Letter of Thanks to the King, and published a Declaration, Feb. 4, 1638, directed to all the sincere and good Christians in England, to vindicate their Actions and Intentions, from those Aspersions which their Enemies might throw upon them.

He declares the Scots to be Rebels, and resolves to make War upon them.

This Declaration was welcome to the People of England in general, and especially to those who stood best-affected to the Reformed Religion and the Laws and Liberties of their Country. In fine, the Scots are declared Rebels, and the King in person, with an English Army, resolved to chastise them. But,

The generality of the English nation detested the War, knowing that the Scots were innocent, and werewronged by the same Hand by which they themselves were oppressed

sed; and they concluded that the same Sword which subdued the *Scots*, must destroy their own Liberties! Yet glad they seem'd to be, that such an occasion happen'd which might in reason necessitate the *King* to call an *English Parliament*. But the *King*, whilst he could make any other shift, how low and dishonourable soever, would not endure to think of a Parliament. He borrowed great Sums of Money of the Nobility, and required *Loans* of others; and the CLERGY contributed liberally to the War, which was called BELLUM EPISCOPALE, THE BISHOPS War.

The Bishops war.

The *King*, being animated to the War by the *Bishops*, both of *England and Scotland*, (the last perswading him, that the COVENANTERS were in no sort able to resist him; that scarce any *English Army* at all should be needful to fight, but only to appear, and his MAJESTY would find a Party great enough in SCOTLAND to do the work;) did thereupon raise a gallant Army, which rendezvoused at *York*.

The *Scots* likewise (to render the *King* unwilling, or unable, to be a Tyrant) levied a brave Army; which advanced forward under the Command of *General Lesley*. They, nevertheless, continued their first course of Petitioning the *King*: which being favoured by almost all the Nobility of *England*; at last, (by the happy Mediation of those Wise and Noble Counsellors.) a PACIFICATION, to the great Joy of all good men, was solemnly concluded on the 18th of June 1639; and the *King* granted them a free National Synod, to be holden August 6th, and a Parliament to begin the 20th, to ratify what the Synod should decree. Hereupon the *English and Scots* returned home praising God; who, without any effusion of Blood, had compounded this difference; and prevented a War so wickedly design'd. But,

The Pacification,
June 18, 1639.

Shortly after the *King's* return to *London*, his Heart was again estrang'd from the *Scots* and thoughts of Peace; and he commanded the PACIFICATION to be burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman: An Act, than which nothing could more blemish his Reputation, and which rendered him not to be believed for any thing: For what Tie would hold him, whom the Engagement of his Word, his Royal Word, given in sight of God and Man, could not bind? and having, upon the 18th of December, broke-up the *Scotch Parliament*, he began to prepare for a new War. The *Scots* complained, that it was a Breach of their Liberties, not heard-of before in twenty Ages, That a Parliament should be dissolved without their Consent, whilst Business of Moment was depending; That, whatsoever Kings in other Kingdoms might do, it concerned not them to enquire; but such a dissolution of the Parliament was absolutely against their Laws.

The King soon after orders it to be burnt.

They hereupon sent four Earls, as their Commissioners, to the *King*, to complain, that nothing was performed which he had promised at the PACIFICATION; and to intreat redress of those Injuries which had been offered them since the Pacification. But, to add to the Grievances of that Oppressed Nation, the *King* committed two of their Commissioners to Prison.

In April 1640, the *King* called a Parliament in *England*; not to seek Counsel and Advice of them, but to draw Countenance and Supply from them; resolving either to make the Parliament pliant to his Will, and to establish Mischief by a Law, or else to break it. The *Scots* wrote a Justification of their Proceedings to this

The King calls an
English Parliament,
in April, 1640.

this Parliament; and advised them, *to be wary in vindicating their own Laws and Liberties; this Parliament being procured to no other End, but to arm the King against his Scottish Subjects, and by that War to enslave both the Nations; That, after so many Violations and Dissolutions of Parliaments in England, this was not called to redress Grievances; but to be so over-reach'd, (if they were not careful) that no possibility should be left, for the future, of redressing any. That some dangerous Practice might be well suspected, when at the same time a Parliament was denied to Scotland, though promised by the WORD OF A KING; granted to England, when not expected; and obtruded upon Ireland, when not desired.*

The Parliament are unwilling to assist him against the Scots.

The Parliament met the 13th of April, when the King required a Supply to carry-on his War against the Scots, with a Promise that he would afterwards redress the Kingdom's Grievances. To which it was answered by many, That redress of Grievances was the chief End of assembling Parliaments, and ought to precede granting of Subsidies: That the people had no reason to pay for that which *they neither caused nor desired*; and which could not prove to their Good, but, quite contrary, to the great detriment of the whole Kingdom; That *they would more willingly pay, to prevent that unhappy War*: That the War would make the Breach wider, and the Remedy desperate: That **THE BEST JUSTICE WOULD BE, TO FILL UP THE PITS WHICH WERE MADE TO ENTRAP OTHERS, WITH THE BODIES OF THOSE THAT DIGGED THEM.**

And is therefore dissolved, May 5, 1640.

Upon the 5th of May, the King, to the great grief of both Kingdoms *, *dissolved this Parliament*, finding them no way disposed to countenance the War: But he **PROTESTED, HE WOULD GOVERN ACCORDING TO LAW**, as if the Parliament were constantly sitting. And yet, the very next day, to the extrem grief of the People, he was seen to break his Word; for he commanded the Lord BROOK'S Study and Pockets to be searched; and Mr. Bellasis, (Father of the present Earl of Fauconberg) Sir John Hotham, and Mr. Crew, Members of the House of Commons, were imprisoned: And the King published a false and scandalous Declaration against the Commons. He then betook himself to other Courses to carry-on this War: *The CLERGY contributed freely to it, and Collections were made among the PAPISTS.* Great Loans were attempted to be drawn from the City; and for not complying therein, Sir Nicholas Rainton, Sir Stephen Soame, and other eminent Citizens, were imprisoned: Nay, he went further, and had it under consideration to coin 400,000 l. of BRASS MONEY. [A Precedent for what the late King James did in Ireland.]

The King takes violent measures to carry-on the war.

The second Scotch war.

The Scots, (taking Alarm at the Breach of the English Parliament, and at the King's Preparations, and finding themselves bereaved of all possibility of satisfying him by any naked Supplication,) in order to provide more effectually for their own Safety, resolved to enter England, with a Sword in one hand, and a Petition in the other.

* Upon the News of the Dissolution of this Parliament, Cardinal Barberini, intituled, *The Protector of England*, though he greatly affected Archbishop Laud, declared, That he feared he would cause some great Disturbance in England, and that certainly, for his sake, and by his means, the King had dissolved this Parliament; which, he feared, Scotland, and most part of England, would take very ill.

The

The *King* marches his Army Northwards ; but the *Common Soldiers* were found sensible of Public Interest and Religion, though many *Commanders* and *Gentlemen* seemed not to be so : they declared their aversion to the War, and *questioned whether their Captains were not Papists.*

Upon the 28th of *August* 1640, the *Scots* marching towards *Newcastle*, the *English Army* encamped to intercept their Passage ; but many of the *Souldiers*, not liking the Cause, forsook their *Commanders* : However, the *Horse* engaged the *Scots*, but received a Repulse, some on both sides being slain ; and Colonel *Wilmot*, with Sir *John Digby*, and *Oneale*, both *Captains of Horse*, and *PAPISTS*, were made *Prisoners*. Hereupon the *Scots* became *Masters of Newcastle and Durham.*

The Scots become Masters of Newcastle and Durham.

The *King*, by proclamation, summoned all the *English Nobility*, with their *Followers and Forces*, to attend his *Standard at York*, upon the 20th of *September*, against the *Scots*. But about *twenty Peers*, considering the great Calamity into which the *King's* rash Proceedings had thrown the Kingdom, framed, and sent his *Majesty*, an *humble Letter*, representing the mischiefs attending his wicked War ; the Rapines committed by his Army, wherein *Papists were armed*, though the *Laws permit them not to have Arms in their Houses*, &c. and they humbly entreated him to summon a *Parliament*. The *King* thereupon summoned all the *Lords* to appear at *York*, upon the 24th of *September*, and then declared to them, that, OF HIS OWN FREE ACCORD, he had determined to call a *Parliament* ; and sixteen *Lords* were agreed-upon to treat with the like number of the *Scots*, and at length a *Cessation of Arms*, till the 16th of *December*, was agreed-upon ; and that, during that time, the *Scots* should be paid 850*l.* a day ; and they allowed *Winter quarters in England.*

The King summons the English Nobility to meet him at York.

A cessation of Arms, between the King and the Scots.

Both Nations hereupon rested in assured Confidence, that the *Parliament* would put a period to this *War* ; which could never have been begun, but for want of a *Parliament*. They were also confident, that the Freedom which the *Fundamental Laws* allow to *Parliaments*, could not be denied to this ; to which the *King* WAS NECESSITATED, and upon which the *PEOPLE* had set their utmost Hope, whom it seemed not safe, after so many and often-repeated *Oppressions*, to provoke any further. So much for the *Scottish Affairs*.

Now, it may be thought that I have too long digressed ; therefore, to return to you, *Reverend Doctor Hollingworth*, We will try what *Inferences* may be raised from this *Melancholy History*, to render it useful to the *English Reader*. I have declared that *King Charles the First* was an *insufferable Tyrant* ; you affirm him to have set a *Pattern for the best of future Princes*, and that *King William and Queen Mary* are daily imitating him : And the last thing you said, was, That, when the *Parliament* met in *November*, 1640, He frankly told them, that he was resolved to put himself freely and clearly on the LOVE AND AFFECTION OF HIS ENGLISH SUBJECTS. Now, I have been taking a great deal of pains to set this Matter in its true Light ; and to shew whence this sudden fit of Love to our Nation, with an exclusion of *Scotland*, arose. And (with your leave,

leave, Sir,) here are *two or three Uses of Information, or Instruction*, from what hath been said.

Inferences from the foregoing facts.

1. That this *Declaration of your Martyr's*; that he would put himself on the *Love and Affection of his English Subjects*, was to draw them in, to support him in his *Wicked War against the Scottish Nation*; whom at the same time he called *Rebels*, and urged their *Expulsion*; tho' he was under an *Agreement for a Cessation of Arms*, and to allow them *850l. per diem, and Quarters in England*, till their complaints might be weighed in this *Parliament*.

2. *Information*, That he appeared an *exorbitant and outrageous Tyrant*, in his Attempts upon that People.

This appears in many Particulars; to recount some of them briefly:

1. *In overturning their Church-Government, established by many Acts of Parliament*; and obtruding upon them *Laud's Liturgy, and Popish Ceremonies*.

2. *In denying them* (the undoubted Right of all Subjects,) *to petition for Redress of their Grievances*.

3. *In dissolving their Synod and Parliament*; burning the *Pacification made with them, by the Hangman's Hands*; and imprisoning the *Lords, sent by them to petition him to perform his solemn Promises, and redress their Grievances*.

4. *In levying Armies against them, and raising a Civil War, to justify himself in the violation of their Laws*. A CIVIL WAR it was, said the great Lord Digby, *seeing we are of the same Religion, and under the same King*. And,

5. *In the very thing which you, Doctor, are now magnifying him*; I mean, *in attempting to make use of the Love and Affection of the English, to enslave and ruin the Scottish Nation*.

3. *Information*, That the *Scottish Covenant was not a new Invention, or Innovation*, but established by the *Law of Scotland*, and taken by *King James the First, seventy Years before King Charles the Second took it*.

4. *Information*; That *Bishops and Clergy-men, in Conjunction with Papists*, abetted and assisted this *Tyrant*, in the *Violation of the Laws*, when the bulk of the *Nobility, Gentry, and People of England*, appeared undauntedly, in defence of the *Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom*.

5. *Information*, That *Popery hath greatly spread in Scotland, ever since Laud's Superstition was introduced there*; their number then not exceeding 600. And therefore, *Presbytery being now restored there by Law*, it may be reasonably hoped, that it will bring-back to the *Protestant religion* many who have been deluded into that *Idolatry*.

6. *Information*, That *PRINCES ARE NOT ALWAYS TO TRUST TO THE Insinuations and Suggestions of Scottish Bishops*; seeing that, when they instigated *King Charles the First* to dissolve the *Synod and Parliament*, he was seduced by them into a *Belief*, that the *Scottish Covenanters were a contemptible number*; and that *THEIR PARTY in Scotland, was sufficient to deal with them*.

7. *Information*, That the *Scots were not Rebels*, in taking Arms to assert their *Rights*; and vindicate the *Laws and Liberties of their Country*. For my noble
Lord

Lord Russel (the Honour of our Age) was most undoubtedly in the right, when, the day before his Murder, he wrote in his Paper, left behind him, the following words: *I cannot deny but that I have been of Opinion, that a free Nation, like this, might defend their Religion and Liberties, when invaded and taken from them, tho' under pretence and colour of Law.* I do affirm that this was his Orthodox Opinion, and these the words he wrote, tho' they were left out of the Print; and, in that day, there might be reason to omit them.

But, to bethink myself (Reverend Sir,) and to return to what we were upon; I left you *thinking*, at our last parting: I will now hear what your Head run upon, *I think* (say you) *he that reads the first half-Year's Transactions betwixt King Charles and this Parliament, will find he made his word good to a tittle; for whatsoever they offered to him by way of Bill, which the Nation groan'd under before, as a real, nay, but as a fancied, burden, he PRESENTLY passes it.* To shew that,

The King calls another Parliament, Nov. 3, 1640.

Page 5.

*Against experience you believe,
And argue against Demonstration;
Pleas'd that you can your self deceive,
And set your judgement by your Passion.*

We must have a little Chat about this half-Year, which has exercised your Thoughts; and I shall shew you the reasons, wherefore I dissent from your Opinion, That your *Martyr READILY PASSED whatsoever Bills the Parliament offered for the Redress of the Nation's Grievances.* Now I cannot remember one Instance, in the whole History of his Reign, of a *willing and ready Compliance* with his People, in any one Act of *Grace or Justice.* Every thing of that kind, in the whole course of his Life, was wrested from him by the universal Outcry of the Kingdom against his high Oppressions; which did never avail, but when the extremity of his Affairs wrought his stubborn Mind to a Compliance. And most sure I am, that you are mistaken in the few Instances you bring: You say, That he *PRESENTLY pass'd the Bills for putting-down the Star-Chamber and High-Commission Courts:* But I affirm the contrary, and do thus prove it. The *Parliament* could never bring him to make a fair Bargain with them; they bought every thing at a very dear rate; and, when they had come to his Price, they were ever in danger of being trick'd. They came to a Contract with him, to yield-up those two accursed *Courts of Oppression and Tyranny*, and agreed to a *POLL-BILL*, wherein every *Duke* was assessed at 100*l.* a *Marquess* at 80*l.* *Earls* at 60*l.* *Viscounts and Barons* at 40*l.* *Knights of the Bath, and Baronets*, at 30*l.* other *Knights* at 20*l.* *Esquires* at 10*l.* every *Gentleman* dispend'g 100*l.* per Annum, at 5*l.* and all other of Ability to pay a competent proportion; and *the meanest Head in the whole Kingdom was not excused.* [I hear there is now a *Poll-Bill* on foot, in this present Parliament; and therefore, from the high Affection and Duty which I bear, and shall ever pay, to those excellent Princes who do so happily fill their Grandfather's and Father's

The King's conduct during the first half-Year of this Parliament.

High-commission-court and Star-chamber taken-away.

A Poll-tax granted to obtain this favour.

Throne, I do here remember my Country-men at what rate, and for what, they were thus assessed in 1640. Then they were forced to buy-off the Encroachments of a TYRANT, who had sworn to maintain their Laws and Liberties; but now they, at lower rates, are only to enable the best Princes that ever sway'd the English Scepter, to vanquish the worst of Tyrants.] Well,

The King endeavours to get the Tax, without abolishing the two Courts.

This Bargain was struck, and, the Parliament resolving very honestly to stand to it, they prepared the Bills; but, finding the King begin to falter, declaring that he would take their Money, but would not, at that time, pass the Bills to put-down the Star-Chamber and High-Commission-Courts; They voted, that he should pass all the three Bills, or none at all. However,

N. B.

Neither the Contract nor their Vote could hold him; he trick'd them here; and upon the 2d of July, passed the Poll-Money Bill, but demurred upon the other two. Tho' afterwards, finding that the matter was very ill taken, and that it was not seasonable to displeasè the kingdom at that time, he passed the other two Bills. And now I hope that you are convinced, that he did not so PRESENTLY pass Bills for Redress of Grievances, as you inconsiderately suggested.

Page 5.

To proceed, (Sir,) you say, That THE STAR-CHAMBER had been long complain'd of as a Grievance; he signs the Bill to take it away: The HIGH-COMMISSION was a Court that most Mens Mouths were opened against; and he consents to take that away too.

Very good! We have settled the Fact; these Courts were taken-away. I have told you in what manner, and for what Consideration: I will now take leave to inform you, what great Reasons there were to put them down. Archbishop Laud, and divers of his Brethren, had cast-off all Humanity, and were metamorphos'd into ravenous Wolves; and these Courts were under their management. The Star-Chamber had abounded in extravagant Censures, whereby the Subjects were oppress'd by grievous Fines, Imprisonments, Stigmatizings, Mutilations, Whippings, Pillories, Gags, Banishments, &c. And the High-Commission was grown to such excess of Sharpness and Severity as was not much less than the Spanish Inquisition. To repeat two or three of the many instances of the horrid Oppression, and barbarous cruelty, exercised in these Tyrannical Courts:

Cruel treatment of Dr. Leighton, in Nov. 1630.

Upon the 17th of February, 1629, Dr. LEIGHTON, coming out of Black-friars Church, (it seems that he was no Conventicler) was seized by a Warrant from the HIGH-COMMISSION-COURT, and drag'd to Bp. LAUD'S HOUSE; from thence, without any Examination, he was carried to Newgate, and there clap'd into Irons, and thrust into a nasty Hole, where he continued from Tuesday night till Thursday noon, without Meat or Drink: They kept him in that loathsome place where Snow and Rain beat-in upon him, fifteen Weeks, not permitting his Wife, or any Friend, to come near him, and denied to give him a Copy of his Commitment; then they brought him into the STAR-CHAMBER-COURT, where an Information was exhibited against him, for publishing a Book, called, SION'S PLEA AGAINST THE PRELATES.

By

By his *Answer* he confessed, that, when the *Parliament* was sitting, in the Year 1628, he drew-up the Heads of that Book, and, having the approbation of five hundred Persons under their Hands, whereof some were *Members of Parliament*, he went into *Holland* to get it printed. That he printed but between five and six hundred only, for the use of the *Parliament*: but, they being dissolved, he returned home, not bringing any of them into the Land, but made it his special Care to suppress them.

The Doctor, being charged by the *Information* with these words in the said Book, *We do not read of greater Persecution of God's People in any Nation professing the Gospel, than in this our Island, especially SINCE THE DEATH OF QUEEN ELIZABETH.* He confessed the words, and answer'd, That *the thing was too true, as appeared by the Prelates taking-away Life and Livelibood from many Ministers and private Men; of whom many were pined to death in Prison, and many wandered up and down, their Families being left desolate and helpless: That, besides this, the Blood of Souls had been endanger'd, by the removal of the faithful Shepherds from the Flock.* This was a cutting Truth. And,

LAUD, being enraged, desired the *Court* to put the highest Censure that could be put upon him: That they did to his Content, condemning him to have his Ears cut, his Nose slit, to be branded in the Face, whipp'd at a Post, to stand on the Pillory, to pay 10,000*l.* Fine (tho' they knew he was not worth so much) and to be perpetually imprison'd. The grateful Sentence being past, *Laud* pull'd off his Cap, and, holding-up his Hands, gave Thanks to God, who had given him Victory over his Enemies. A Knight moved one of the Lords about the dreadfulness of the Censure, intimating that it opened a Gap to the PRELATES, to inflict such disgraceful Punishments and Tortures upon Men of Quality: That Lord replied, That it was but in *terrorem*, and that he would not have any one think, that the Sentence should ever be executed. Nevertheless,

Laud had his design; for, upon the 26th of November 1630, the Censure was executed in a most cruel manner; his Ears were cut, his Nose slit, his Face branded with burning Irons, he was tied to a Post, and whipp'd with a treble cord, to that cruel degree, that he himself, writing the History thereof ten Years after, affirmed, that every Lash brought away the Flesh, and that he should feel it to his dying day. He was, lastly, put in the Pillory, and kept there near two hours, in Frost and Snow: And then, after this most barbarous Usage, not permitted to return to his Quarters in the Fleet, in a Coach provided to carry him; but compelled, in that sad Condition, and severe Season, to go by Water.

After this, was kept ten weeks in Dirt and Mire, not being sheltered from Rain and Snow. They shut him up, most closely, 22 Months; and he remained a Prisoner ten or eleven Years, not suffered to breathe in the open Air, until the *Parliament* of November 1640, most happily delivered him. When he came abroad, to prosecute his Petition in that *Parliament*, he could neither go, see, nor hear.

Now, surely, Dr. *Hollingworth* (for I do not forget to whom I am writing) this dismal

Vindication of their
Majesties Wisdom,
p. 9.

dismal Story had slip'd your Memory, when you said, *That Bishop Laud was a very good Man, save in the Matter of the Book of Sports, and some other, as you fancy (for, you say, you are tender of judging) unnecessary Innovations.* But you must put on Patience, to hear something more of this bloody Villain's Barbarity.

Cruel treatment of
Mr. Prynne, in May,
1634.

Upon the 1st of *February* 1632, *Laud* procured Mr. *Pryn* to be sent close Prisoner to the Tower: There he lay till the 21st of *June* 1633, when an *Information* was exhibited against him in the *Star-Chamber*, for publishing a Book concerning *Interludes*, intituled, * *Histrionastix*, WHICH WAS LICENSED BY A Chaplain of Dr. *Abbot's*, Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*. Upon the 17th of *Feb.* 1633. he had this heavy Sentence pass'd upon him; *To be imprison'd for Life, pay 5000l. Fine; be expelled Lincolns-Inn, disabled to exercise the Profession of a Barrister; degraded by the University of Oxford, of his Degree there taken: and that done, to be set in the Pillory at Westminster, and have one of his Ears there cut-off; and, at another time, to be set in the Pillory, in Cheapside, and there have his other Ear cut-off.*

•Note, that no particular Passages in the Book were mentioned in the *Information*.

The Queen intercedes for him, with the King, but without success.

Tho' many of the *Lords* never dreamt of the Execution of this horrid Judgement; *Nay*, tho' Queen *Henrietta Maria*, (which deserves an honourable mention; and she shall have it: for *she was their present Majesties Royal Grandmother*;) earnestly interceded with the biggotted, cruel, and merciless King, (he shall have that too, with your leave, Doctor; for *he was a Tyrant*;) to remit its execution; yet on the 7th and 10th of *May*, it was fully executed, with great rigour.

Mr. *Pryn* remained sundry Years in the *Tower* upon this Censure; and in that time Dr. *Bastwick*, (in the Year 1635), was brought into the *High-Commission Inquisition*, and imprison'd in the *Gatehouse, Westminster*.

In the Year 1636, Mr. *Burton* preached a *Sermon* upon the 5th of *November*, at his *Church, in Fridy-street, London*, wherein he laid open the *Innovations in Doctrine, Worship, and Ceremonies, which had lately crept into the Church; and wished the People to beware of them.* For this, *LAUD* caused Articles to be drawn against him in the *High-Commission Court*, and suspended him: Then, causing his House to be broken open, took and committed him to the *Fleet*, close Prisoner; and he was shut-up there divers Weeks from his Wife and Friends.

Cruel treatment of
Prynne, Burton, and
Bastwick, in June,
1637.

Upon the 11th of *March*, 1636, they exhibited an *Information* against Dr. *Bastwick*, Mr. *Pryn*, and Mr. *Burton*, in the *Star-Chamber*. And upon the 14th of *June*, 1637, they pass'd this Sentence on them, *viz. To lose their Ears in the Palace-yard, Westminster: To pay a Fine of 5000 l. a man; and be perpetually imprisoned in three remote Places of the Kingdom, viz. the Castles of Carnarvon, Cornwall, and Lancaster; and Mr. Pryn to be stigmatized in the Cheeks with two Letters, (S. and L.) for a seditious Libeller.*

Upon the 30th of *June*, 1637, to the great regret of the People, who strewed their way with Herbs, these *Confessors for English Liberties*, were brought to the Place

Place appointed for the Execution of the accursed Sentence ; which was done in a manner extraordinary cruel.

Dr. *Bastwick*, being upon the Pillory, spoke thus to the lamenting People :—*I wrote a Book against the Pope, and the POPE OF CANTERBURY said I wrote against him.*—*So far am I from base Fear, that had I as much blood as would swell the Thames, I would shed it every drop in this Cause: Had I as many Lives as I have Hairs on my Head, I would give them all for this Cause.* Being let out of the Pillory, he took the Sponge from one of his Ears, which was all bloody, and waving it over his Head, said, *Blessed be my God, who hath counted me worthy, and of his mighty Power hath enabled me to suffer any thing for his sake. And as I have now lost some of my Blood, so am I ready and willing to spill every drop in my Veins in this Cause, for which I have now suffered ; which is, for maintaining the Truth of God, and the Honour of my King, against Popish Usurpations* LET GOD BE GLORIFIED, AND LET THE KING LIVE FOR EVER. [These were not Expressions of a COMMON-WEALTH'S MAN, or a Rebel ; Were they, good Doctor-*Chaplain at Aldgate?*]

Mr. *Pryn*'s turn being next ; he expressed himself thus : *We are accounted FACTIOUS FELLOWS, Hereticks and REBELS, for * DISCOVERING A PLOT* *Discoverers of Plots against the Protestant Religion and English Liberties, have been ever used at the rate which Mr. Prynne was, ever since Laud's Faction got-up in the Church. *OF POBERRY: Alas! POOR ENGLAND! What will become of thee and thy Religion, if thou maintainest not thy own ESTABLISH'D FAITH* [you see, Doctor, *Mr. Pryn* was for the Church, as established by Law] *AND LAWFUL LIBERTIES?* [Ay, that spoils all ; for it renders him a *Common-wealth's man*, no doubt ; yet 'tis but such a one as the late King Charles the Second frankly told the Duke of Buckingham he would have been had he not been a King.] *Christian People* (proceeded Mr. *Pryn*) *I beseech you all stand firm, and be zealous for the Cause of God and his true Religion, to the shedding of your dearest Blood: otherwise you will bring yourselves and your posterities INTO PERPETUAL BONDAGE AND SLAVERY, &c.*

The Executioner coming to sear and cut his Ears, he said, *Come Friend, come, burn me, cut me, I fear not ; I have learn'd to fear the Fire of Hell, and not what Man can do unto me: Come, sear me, sear me, I shall bear in my Body the Marks of the Lord Jesus.* The Executioner having done his part, and that with the utmost Cruelty, Mr. *Pryn*, with a smiling Countenance, said ; Now, *blessed be God, I have conquer'd and triumphed over the Bishop's Malice ;* and, returning to the Tower, he made these Verses by the way :

S. L. STIGMATA LAUDIS.

*Stigmata Maxillis referens insignia Laudi,
Exultans remeo, victima grata Deo.*

*Triumphant I return: My Face describes ;
Laud's scorching Scars, God's grateful Sacrifice.*

Next

Next follows the *Reverend Mr. Burton*; he being in the *Pillory*, said, *I was never in such a Pulpit before; but little do you know, what Fruit God is able to produce from this dry Tree; MARK MY WORDS; I say through these Holes, God can bring Light to his Church.* Moreover, he said, *My conscience, in the discharge of my Ministerial Duty in admonishing my People, to beware of the CREEPING-IN OF POPY, and exhorting of them to stick close to God, and the King, in Duties of Obedience, was that which first occasioned my Sufferings: For the Truth I have preached, I am ready to seal it with my Blood; for this is my Crown, both here, and hereafter.*

After this Execution done, they were banished to the remote parts of the Kingdom, and there kept several Years in close and solitary Confinement, not allowed Pen, Ink and Paper, nor the sight of any Friend; and in this most deplorable case, did the *Parliament*, in *November, 1640*, find these three distressed *Gentlemen*, of several Professions, the noblest in the Kingdom, *Divinity, Law, and Physic*. But they were soon sent-for from their Exile, and brought into *London* by many thousands of rejoicing *Gentlemen* and *Citizens*, who went-out on Horseback, to meet them and congratulate their Deliverance. And the *Parliament*, taking their Case into Consideration, *voted*, THAT THE JUDGEMENTS GIVEN *against them were illegal, unjust, and against the LIBERTY OF THE SUBJECT*. Now, good *Doctor*, was not here reason with a witness, *to open every Man's Mouth with Complaints*, against these most arbitrary and pernicious Courts, and to induce the *Parliament* to remove these Forges of Misery, Oppression, and Violence? Nevertheless, the KING, *with a very unwilling Mind*, as I have shew'd, *yielded therein*; but, as he lost much of the Thanks which so great a Grace, *freely and forwardly express'd*, might have deserved; so I doubt it will be some diminution to your Credit, dear *Doctor*, that, *contrary to what you affirm*, HE DELAYED, and did not presently comply in this matter. Well! what follows now? The King is still on the giving hand; no doubt of it.

These cruel judgments are censured in Parliament as illegal.

THE SHIP-MONEY (you add) *tho' great, and very learned, Lawyers, had given their Opinion, that the exacting of it in some Cases, was according to Law; yet he, GOOD MAN, gives-up that also.*

Here, good *Doctor*, you speak like A MEER CLERGY-MAN, and I begin to suspect that you never read any other than Dr. *NALSON's HISTORY*, and are tainted with the Principles of those famous *Gentlemen* of the *Cassock, SIBTHORP* and *MANWARING*, who, as well as some designing *Lawyers*, told your *Martyr*, *That Authority of Parliament is not necessary for the raising Aids and Subsides. That all Antiquity is absolutely, for absolute Obedience to Princes, in all Civil and Temporal Things.* You make the yielding-up the Claim of *Ship Money* to be an act of *pure Grace*; for very able *Lawyers* gave their Opinion, *that the King might exact it by Law*: and so, I have told you, *did as able and no less knavis Divines*. But hearken, I beseech you, what the *Wisdom* of *Parliament* told him. *They declared it a new and unheard-of Tax; they voted it a most illegal Taxation, and unsufferable Grievance*; they looked-into the Carriage of those

Judges

Ship-Money.
Page 5.

Judges who advised the King in this matter, and found that Sir JOHN FINCH (a Gentleman of good Birth, of an high and Imperious Spirit, ELOQUENT IN SPEECH, though in the knowledge of the Law not very deep,) in the Year 1636, (when Ship-Money was first plotted and set on foot,) was made Lord Chief-Justice of the Common-Pleas. And it appeared that, by his Brokage and Sollicitation, and that with Threats and Promises, several of the Judges were wrought-upon to give it under their hands, that the King might by Law exact Ship-Money. Thereupon an Impeachment of High-Treason was drawn-up against him; and the great Lord FAULKLAND (though an Admirer of the Church, as you tell me,) presented it to the Lords with a very pithy and sharp Oration against Finch; but he (being at this time Lord-Keeper) not daring to abide the Test, took his Wings, and fled in a disguise to Holland. In Conclusion, the Arbitrary Power, pretended to be in the King, of taxing the Subject without Consent in Parliament, was not only declared to be against Law by the Judgement of both Houses, but also by Act of Parliament. Thus we rid our Hands of SHIP-MONEY. And,

Now indeed, Sir, you come to that which might well raise your Choler, and stir your Indignation: The King passed a Bill to remove the Bishops out of the House of Lords; he also passed a Bill for attainting the great Earl of Strafford, which offered Violence to the Peace and Quiet of his Mind all the days of his Life.

The Bishops are removed from the House of Lords.

To tell you the Truth, Doctor, the Parliament found the Bishops of that day, to be the Troublers of the State, and that it was, by consequence, become most necessary to abridge their immoderate Power usurped over the Clergy and other good Subjects, which they had most maliciously abused, to the hazard of Religion, and greatest Prejudice and Oppression of the Laws of the Kingdom, and the just Liberty of the Subject: They had cherish'd Formality and Superstition as the probable Supports of their own Ecclesiastical Tyranny and Usurpation; they had multiplied and enlarged the Differences between the common Protestants and those whom they called Puritans; under which Name they included all those that desired to preserve the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom, and to maintain the true Protestant Religion. They had been designing a Conjunction between Papists and Protestants in Doctrine, Discipline and Ceremonies; only it must not yet be called Popery. They had triumphed in the Suspensions, Excommunications, Deprivations and Degradations of divers learned and pious Ministers; and in the Vexation and grievous Oppression of great numbers of the People, whereby many thousands were impoverished, and others were so afflicted and troubled by them, that great numbers departed into New England and other parts of America, and others into Holland. The most of the Preaching that was allowed, was degenerated into railing against Parliaments and Puritans, (because they were tenacious of just Liberty and true Religion) crying-up Absolute Authority, Passive Obedience, &c. Strains of Wit, fitter for a Stage than a Pulpit. After the Dissolution of the Parliament in May 1640, They continued the Convocation, and, by unheard-of Presumption, they made Canons contrary to the King's Prerogative, to the Fundamental Laws of the Realm, to the Right of Parliaments, to the Property and Liberty of the Subject,

Their great corruption at that time.

Subject, thereby establishing their own *Usurpations*, justifying their *Altar-Worship*, and other *Superstitious Innovations*, which they had formerly introduced without Warrant of Law; they imposed a new *Oath* on the Subjects for maintenance of their own *Tyranny*, and laid a great *Tax upon the Clergy*. And now, to fill-up the measure of their iniquity, the *House of Lords*, upon the 30th of *December 1641*, at a Conference with the *Commons*, told them, that the *Bishops*, by a *Protestation* which they made to the King and Lords, had deeply intrenched upon the *Fundamental Priviledges and Being of Parliament*; whereupon the *Commons impeached Twelve of them of High Treason*, in endeavouring to subvert the *Fundamental Laws of the Realm*, and the very *Being of Parliaments*; and they were, by the *House of Peers*, sequestered from *Parliament*, committed to the *Tower*, and, shortly after, by *Act of Parliament*, most deservedly deprived of voting in the *House of Peers*.

The Earl of Strafford's
attainder.

I hope, good *Doctor*, you will acquiesce in the *Reasons* which I have here offered for the passing this *Bill of Exclusion*; but the other *Bill for attainting the great Earl of Strafford*, you say, offered *Violence to the Peace and Quiet of the King's Mind*, all the days of his *Life*.

This great *Man*, who had long run-on in a full *Career* to establish *Tyranny*, trampling-down the *Peoples Liberties*, leaping the *Hedges of the Laws*, or making *Gaps* through them, was impeached by the *Commons* in many *Articles*, some whereof were for ruling *Ireland* (of which he had been *Lord-Lieutenant*) in an *Arbitrary way*, against the *Fundamental Laws*, which he had endeavoured to subvert. For abusing his *Power to the increase and encouragement of Papists*; for maliciously endeavouring to stir-up *Hostility between England and Scotland*; for labouring to subvert *Parliament*, and incense the *King* against them; for levying *Money by force of Arms*; for imposing an *Oath upon the Subjects*, That they should not protest against any of the *King's Commands*: for telling the *King*, That he had an *Army in Ireland*, which his *Majesty* might employ to reduce this *Kingdom to Obedience*.

Upon this *Impeachment* the *Earl* was brought to *Trial* before the *Lords*, which lasted from the 22d of *March*, (with but few days intermission) till the midst of *April*. After this long *Trial*, the *Commons* voted him guilty of *High-Treason*, in divers *Particulars*, and drew-up and passed a *Bill of Attainder* against him, but 59 dissenting. This *Bill* being carried to the *Lords*, the *King's Solicitor-General* made it good by *Law*, to the satisfaction of almost all that heard him: The *Judges* also delivered their *Opinions*, That the *Matters* proved against him amounted to *Treason*; and so the *Lords* passed the *Bill*. The *King*, having after this, called all the *Judges* to deliver their *Opinions* before him; and also sent for **FOUR BISHOPS TO RESOLVE HIM UPON SCRUPLE OF CONSCIENCE**; He, at length, gave the *Royal Assent* to this *Bill*.

Prithee now, *Doctor*, tell me what ail'd your *Martyr's Conscience* at this time? There must be something extraordinary and not commonly taken notice of in this *Matter*, that must (as you affirm) offer *Violence to the Peace and Quiet of his Mind*,
all

all the Days of his Life. You know, he exacted the *Ship-Money*, without scruple of Conscience, upon the Advice of some *Lawyers*. And though they retracted their Opinions, both Houses of *Parliament* voted, and his *Majesty* at length acknowledged, it to be an illegal and unjust Exaction: Yet *that Guilt soon wore-off*, and we never heard that thereby, or by any other of the almost innumerable Oppressions of his People; no, nor by his destroying the poor *Protestants of Rochelle*; the Quiet of his Mind was any way disturbed. Now, in the case we are upon, here was a fair and most solemn *Trial*; The *Lords and Commons* voted the *Crimes to be Treason*; The *King's Counsel and Judges* avowed the same; The *Bishops* (MARK THAT, DOCTOR) *pick'd the Thorn out of his Conscience*. Nevertheless, his passing this *Bill* violated the Peace of his Mind all the days of his Life. To offer something towards the enlightening you in this Matter, allow me to remind you of what you have before read: When the *Duke of Buckingham* was impeached for Treason, *this same King* told the *Parliament*, THAT BUCKINGHAM HAD NOT INTER-MEDDLED, NOR DONE ANY THING CONCERNING THE PUBLICK, BUT BY HIS SPECIAL DIRECTIONS. Now, I have a strong fancy, that *the unhappy Earl of Strafford's Case* was the same with the *Duke's*; and that it disturbed the Quiet of the *King's Mind*, that he could not preserve this, as he had done his other Servant, in the execution of his own *Commands**. And no marvel it stung his Conscience to adjudge to death the doers of those Misdeeds whereof himself had been the chief Author.

In the next place, *good Doctor*, you inform us, *That the King signed a Bill for a Triennial Parliament*; which certainly was as great a condescension as was ever made by a *Prince*. Why now, 'tis very unlucky, *Doctor*, that when you think your self certainly in the right, you are most undoubtedly in the wrong; for *this Act for a TRIENNIAL PARLIAMENT*, did not extend to so much as by the Law the *Parliament ought to have required*, there being at that time two Statutes of *Edward 3d* in force for a *Parliament to be holden once a Year*. An Act for Triennial Parliaments.

But now you bring me to an Act of superabundant Grace; you say, *That he pass'd an Act for the Parliament to sit during pleasure*. This was something indeed; we must therefore examine what Reasons the *Parliament* had to insist upon this *Bill*, and what the Motives were that brought the *King* to comply herein. Page 6. An Act for continuance of the Parliament.

It appeared most evidently to both Houses, by the Examinations and Confessions of several of the Criminals, that some time before the passing of the *Bill* for the continuance of the *Parliament*, (which was upon the 10th of *May 1641*) *The KING* had been tampering with the *Army* which he had raised against the *Scots*, and which lay undisbanded in the North, to bring them up to curb the *Parliament*, and subdue them to his Will. Many great men were found to be engaged in this Conspiracy, viz. *Mr. Piercy*, Brother to the *Earl of Northumberland*; *Mr. Henry Jermin* the *Queen's Favourite* (afterwards *Earl of St. Albans*;) *Mr. Goring*, eldest A Conspiracy to bring-up the Army to curb the Parliament. May, 1641.

* 'Tis a mischievous Conscience with which one good Deed is so hard to pass-down as to endanger almost a choaking; and bad Deeds without number, (tho' as big and as bulky as the Ruin of three Kingdoms,) go-down currently without straining.

Son to the *Lord Goring*, *Mr. Wilmot*, the *Lord Wilmot's* eldest Son; *Sir John Suckling*; *Colonel Ashburnham*; *Pollard*; *Oneal*, an Irish Papist; and many others: *these had taken an Oath of Secrecy among themselves.* To joyn with this Army, and strengthen the Plot, *a French Army was to be landed at Portsmouth*, which Towne, for that purpose, was to be put into *Mr. Jermy's* hands; and the * *Irish Army*, consisting of 8000, *almost all Papists*, was to be brought-over.

Upon the Discovery of this horrid Plot, *Piercy*, † *Jermin*, and *Suckling* fled into *France*; *Goring*, being taken, made an ingenuous Confession, and so was discharged: *Oneal*, *Wilmot*, *Ashburnham*, and others, were committed to the Tower, from whence *Oneal* was permitted to make his Escape.

Mr. Piercy's letter concerning it.

Mr. Piercy, by a Letter from beyond the Seas, to his Brother the *Earl of Northumberland*, dated the 14th of *June*, confessed much of this Conspiracy; in particular the taking the Oath of Secrecy; And that they had agreed to engage the Army to stand by the King against the Parliament, in

The preserving the Bishops Functions and Votes.

The not disbanding the Irish Army till the Scots were disbanded.

The endeavouring to settle his Revenue to that proportion it was formerly.

That he imparted all this to the King, and perceived, that *he had been treated-with by others, concerning something of the Army*; which did not agree with those Proposals, BUT INCLINED A WAY MORE HIGH AND SHARP, NOT HAVING LIMITS EITHER OF HONOUR OR LAW. That *Goring* and *Jermin* were acquainted with the other Proceedings; and that the *King* pressed *Mr. Piercy* to admit them to consultation; To which he having yielded, and sworn them to Secrecy, acquainted them what he had proposed; but HE FOUND THEIR PROPOSALS DIFFERED FROM HIS, IN VIOLENCE AND HEIGHT.

Colonel Goring's confession.

Colonel Goring confessed, upon his Examination, that *Jermin* carried him to the *King*, who asked him, *If he was engaged in any CABAL concerning the Army?* To which *Goring* answering, That he was not: The *King* said, *I command you then to join yourself with Piercy*, and some others whom you will find with him at his Lodgings. That he thereupon went, and found with *Mr. Piercy*, *Wilmot*, *Oneal*, and others: That he and *Jermin* having first taken the Oath of Secrecy, which the others had taken before; *Mr. Piercy* made his Propositions, viz. *That the Army should presently be put into a posture to serve the King*, and then should send up a Declaration to the Parliament of these particulars: *That nothing should be done in Parliament, contrary to any former Act of Parliament*; and the *King's* Revenue be establish'd: That *Jermin* propounded, that the Army should be immediately brought to London; and they SHOULD MAKE SURE

* The Parliament had addressed the King to disband this Army; but he answer'd, *That he would not allow of the disbanding the Irish Army, for divers reasons best known to himself.*

† *Jermin*, after this Discovery, went-off with a Pass under the King's own hand; which commanded the Governour of *Portsmouth* to provide, with all speed, a Ship to carry him to any Port of *France*.

OF THE TOWER. And he confessed, that he himself urged these things, to shew the Vanity and Danger of the other Propositions, without undertaking these.

Lieutenant-Colonel *Ballard* and Capt. *Chudleigh* confessed, that *the French* that were about London, were to be mounted, and would join with the Army; and that *the Clergy* would raise 1000 Horse to assist them. And *Chudleigh* added, that *the Queen* had sent down Money to fortify PORTSMOUTH: Further, that Mr. *Jermin* ask'd him, if he thought the Army would stick to their Officers, in case the King and Parliament should not agree?

It further appeared by the Confessions of Sir *Jacob Ashley*, Sir *John Coniers*, and Capt. *Legg*, eminent Commanders in the King's Army, that *Oneal*, the Papist, was a principal Agent in carrying-on their Intrigue of working upon the Army to engage them against the Parliament; That *THE KING* sent Instructions under his Hand, for a Petition to be presented from the Army: In which was a Clause to this effect; That, whereas all Men ought to give God thanks, for putting it into the King's Heart, to condescend to the Desires of the Parliament, to do many things, which none of his Ancestors would have consented unto, as giving way to the Triennial Parliament, and granting many other things for the good of his Subjects; yet, notwithstanding, some turbulent Spirits seem'd not to be satisfied, but WOULD HAVE THE TOTAL SUBVERSION OF THE GOVERNMENT: That, therefore, the Army, being of good comportment, though ill-Paid, might be called-up to attend the Person of the King and Parliament for their Security.

Other confessions.
The King himself is engaged in this Plot of bringing-up the Army against the Parliament, in May, 1641.

That *the Design* was, that the Army should move towards London, and spoil the Country all along as they went, to hinder the Scots from following them. That *Oneal* proposed to Sir *Jacob Ashley*, the making the Scots Neutral; but Sir *Jacob* said, that they would lay him by the Heels, if he should come to move such a thing; for they would never break with the Parliament.

Upon this Discovery, I must tell you, Doctor, the Hearts of honest Men were highly grieved to find *the King* in this Conspiracy; and they began to despair of that Happiness which they had hoped-for by this Parliament: And the two Houses, doubting (as they well might) the King's sincere affection to them, and considering what great Disturbance they had met-with, and were like to meet-with, in settling the State; and what great Disbursements of Money were to be made for the payment of the English and Scottish Armies: They unanimously moved the King to sign a Bill for continuance of this present Parliament: That it should never be dissolved till both Houses did Consent and agree, that Publick Grievances were fully redress'd; and his Plot made it unsafe for him to deny it: Besides, as his extream Wants had forc'd him to call this Parliament, so the same necessitated him to comply with them. For, *this great Parliament* (taught by woful experience, that he used Parliaments only to serve his Turn; and so, when he had attained his Ends, their End ensued in a sudden Dissolution) would grant no Supply to relieve his Necessities, until, by his Concession, they had obtained this continuance, to redress the People's many and great Grievances: And they themselves declared, That, though

The necessity the King was under of granting the Bill for the continuance of the Parliament.

though there were in it some seeming Restraint of the Regal Power in dissolving Parliaments; yet it was no taking that Power from the Crown, but suspending the Execution of it for this Time and Occasion only: Which was so necessary for the Publick Peace, that without it they could not have undertaken any of those great Charges, but must have left both the Armies to Disorder and Confusion, and the whole Kingdom to Blood and Ruin; for to pay the Armies, Money was to be borrowed upon the Publick Faith, which had been nothing worth, if that Parliament could have been dissolved at the King's Pleasure.

And whereas (Sir) you express yourself as astonished at this gracious Compliance, and say, that *no King ever granted the like before.* I answer, 'Twas most evident, that *no King before ever made so great a Necessity for a Parliament to insist upon it.* And besides, in the Constitution of ENGLAND's GOVERNMENT, it was never the meaning of the LAW-GIVERS, that the King should dissolve Parliaments, whilst the Great Affairs of the Kingdom were depending: And though Kings have used to do so, it was never the more lawful.

Well, Doctor, I agree with you, that the King passed these Bills, very advantageous for the Subject; yet in none of them was he bereaved of any just, necessary, or profitable Prerogative of the Crown. And I must tell you, because you are silent, and for aught I know, ignorant in the Point, *All this was not done for nought; for the King had out of the Subjects Purse, in the first Year of this Parliament, ONE MILLION AND AN HALF OF MONEY: And yet some Men have the impudence to suggest, That the Parliament did nothing for him.*

To proceed;

Page 7.
The Grand Remon-
strance. Dec. 15,
1641.

What's the next Article in the Impeachment against this Parliament? *These Men, to shew their Gratitude for what was done before, drew up a Remonstrance, wherein they made the most bitter Reflections upon the King's former Government.—And which was so unmannerly, as well as false, that when it came to be debated in the whole House, 'twas carried only by eleven Voices.*

You are out again, *most unlucky Doctor!* My Authentick Historian tells me a Tale quite contrary to yours; The Remonstrance, or Declaration of the State of the Kingdom, was carried but by eight Voices, saith he; yet it contained plain (which I will allow you to call *Unmannerly* but must not yield to be false) Truths, reciting the chief Grievances and Oppressions which the Nation had groaned under since the beginning of this King's Reign until that time, but with as much tenderness of expression, and respect to his Person, as so much Truth could possibly be uttered. Many of the Members who opposed this Remonstrance, were of the same Opinion with those who voted for it; but urged, that *no Cure could be hoped for by it: That, instead of directing a stubborn King for the future, it would teach him only to hate the Makers of it, as Upbraiders of his Crimes: And they held it fitter to win him by the sweeter way of concealing his Errors, rather than, by publishing them, to hazard the provoking him.* And now, Sir, not to contend it with you, whether

whether the *little Majority*, or *great Minority*, were the best *Politicians*, and most in the right; you are certainly in the wrong, when you insist, that this *Remonstrance* was so strenuously opposed, because the Matter thereof was unmannerly and false.

You add, That *the King* fairly answered this *Remonstrance*, and vindicated himself from those horrid *Aspersions* wherewith they loaded him. Page 8.

Not to be transported, *Reverend Sir*, to such an indecency of replying, as is usual in such a Case as this; I barely tell you, that you talk loosely, and with no regard to Truth, in what you now say: for I have the *Royal Answer* and *Vindication* now under my Eye, and do find that the *King* doth fairly answer the *Remonstrance*, (which sets forth the many Grievances and high Oppressions of the People,) in these only words, *We shall IN FEW WORDS PASS-OVER that part of the Narrative, wherein the Misfortunes of this Kingdom, from our first entering to the Crown, to the beginning of this Parliament, are remember'd in so sensible Expressions. And to this he adds not one word in vindication of himself from those Miscarriages enumerated in the Parliament's Remonstrance, which you call HORRID ASPERSIONS, but his Majesty knew to be sad Truths.*

What follows next?

The *King* (you say) through *TUMULTS*, and too-much countenanced *RIOTS*, withdrew from *Whitehall*; being under apprehensions of *Affronts* design'd to be offer'd to his Person, if not something worse. Ibid.

The *Story* of these pretended *Tumults* and *Riots*, (*dear Doctor*) is so intermixt with another, relating to the greatest Violation of the Privileges of *Parliament* that ever was committed, that 'tis most necessary to talk of both together.

About the beginning of *January*, 1641-2, the *King* sought nothing more than to begin a *Quarrel*; and, to support himself therein, he employed *Emisaries* to cajole the young *Gentlemen* of the *Inns of Courts*, to make offer of their Service to him, as a *Guard of Defence*; and divers of them, to ingratiate themselves, repaired to the Court, and were highly caressed by the *King* and *Queen*: He at the same time ordered *Cannoneers*, and other *Assistants*, into the *Tower*, and removed the *Lieutenant* thereof: He fortified *White-hall* with Men and *Munition* in an unusual manner. And about the same time, *Colonel Lunsford* and others, gathered *Troops of Horse* at *Kingston upon Thames*, where the Magazine of Arms for that part of the County of *Surrey* lay. Matters on his part being thus prepared, upon the third of *January* (not only against the Privilege of *Parliament*, but the common Liberty of every Subject) he commanded the *Chambers, Stalls, and Trunks* of the *Lord Mandeville*, a Member of the House of Lords, (*Grandfather* to the present *Noble Earl of Manchester*, who inherits as well the Vertues as Honours of that great Patriot) and of *Denzil Hoiles*, Esq. (since known by the name of the great *Lord Holles*) *Sir Arthur Haslerig*, *Mr. J. Pym*, *Mr. John Hampden* (*Grandfather* to that highly deserving *Gentleman*, who at this day bears his Name, and in whom his Vertues do live and flourish) and *Mr. William Strode*, Members of the House of Commons,

The violent proceedings of the King in January, 1641-2.

His attempt to seize
the five Members.
January 4, 1641-42.

Commons, * *to be sealed-up.* Upon the next day the King came with about 300 Soldiers, Papists and others, to the *House of Commons*, armed with Swords, Pistols, and other Weapons; and there demanded the said five Members to be delivered to him, upon a pretended Charge of *High-Treason.* His Followers, at the same time, thrusting-away the *Door-keepers* and *Attendants* of the *House*, held-up their *Swords* and some their *Pistols ready-cock'd*, saying, *I am a good Marks-man, I can hit right, I warrant y u:* Others of them said, *A Pox take the House of Commons; a Pox of God confound them,* and violently assaulted. and by Force disarmed, some of the *Servants* of the *Members*, and said, **WHEN COMES THE WORD?** and afterwards declared, that, questionless, *if the Word had been given: they should have fallen upon the House of Commons, and HAVE CUT ALL THEIR THROATS;* which *Doings* the *Commons* declared, *were* A TRAITEROUS DESIGN *against the King and Parliament,* and that they could not sit any longer without a sufficient † *Guard*, wherein they might confide; wherefore *they adjourned* to the Tuesday following, having appointed a *Committee* to sit in the mean time at *Guilball, London*, to consider of all things that might concern the Good and Safety of the Kingdom, and *the Relief of Ireland.* [And I am to tell you, Doctor, that the great Lord Falkland was the fourth Person named to this great *Committee.*]

The *Commons* further declared, *That they were so far from protecting any of their Members that should, in a due manner, be prosecuted according to the Laws of the Kingdom, and the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament, for Treason, or any other Misdemeanours, that none should be more ready and willing than themselves to bring them to a speedy and due Trial.* And upon the 15th of *January*, they ordered the *Attorney-General*, who had prepared the *Articles of Treason* against the *Members*, to bring-in his *Proof*, and make them good, *if he could:* Whereupon the King sent a message, that **HE NOW FOUND CAUSE** *wholly to desist from proceeding against them;* and had commanded his *Attorney-General* to proceed no further therein, *nor to produce, nor discover, any proof* concerning the matter. Also **BOTH HOUSES** petitioned the King for the *speedy proceeding* against the *accused Members*, **IN A LEGAL WAY**, *whereby they might be brought to condign Punishment, if guilty; or discharged from so heavy an Accusation, if innocent.* The King giving an *evasive Answer* to this *Petition*, the *Lords* and *Commons* apply to him again, by a *second Petition*, praying that the *Parliament* might be informed before *Friday* then next ensuing, *what Proof there is against them, that they may be called to a Legal Trial.*

* These were all Gentlemen of great Esteem and Reputation in the House. Two of them, Mr. *Holles*, and Mr. *Strode*, having before suffered many Years of sharp and harsh Imprisonment from the King, after the Dissolution of the Parliament in the fourth Year of his Reign, for Matters done in Parliament, contrary to the Priviledges of that high Court.

† They petitioned the King to allow them a *Guard*, to be commanded by the *Lord Chamberlain* of his Household, but could not obtain it.

To which *Petition** the King answered, that, AS HE ONCE CONCEIVED, he had ground enough to accuse them, so now *his Majesty finds as good Cause wholly to desert any Prosecution of them.* Do you hear this, DOCTOR? If you ever had till now, you would not surely have assumed the Confidence to have said, as you do, (*Pa.* 11, 12.) That *nothing less would satisfy the Parliament, than that he must be obliged, AS IT WERE, and IN EFFECT, to beg the Members Pardon for wronging them, with what he thought and COULD BY GOOD EVIDENCE PROVE MATTER OF TRUTH.* Now I do (AS IT WERE) think that you ought (not only IN EFFECT, but *in earnest*) to humble your-self to the *Descendants of these honourable and never-to-be-forgotten PATRIOTS,* for the horrid Slander which you here lay on their great Names and Families: For, tho' the King gave-up the Cause, saying that HE FOUND GOOD REASON *wholly to desist from proceeding against them;* and at another time, that he found GOOD CAUSE *wholly to desert any prosecution of them;* Yet you, *forsooth,* must keep-up the wicked Clamour, and falsely inform this Generation, that his Majesty, GOOD MAN, had pregnant Evidence to prove them guilty of Treason. But, to put you to shame, if possible ('tis what you threatened me with, Reverend Sir!) I shall add a few words more upon this occasion. The Lords and Commons told the King in a third *Petition,* that, notwithstanding his Majesty found good cause, *wholly to desert any farther prosecution of the accused Members;* yet they remained still under that heavy Charge so imputed unto them: And that, by two Acts of Parliament, viz. 37 and 38 *Edw.* 3. it was enacted, That, *if any Person whatsoever, make Suggestion to THE KING HIMSELF of any Crime committed by another, the same Person ought to be sent with the Suggestion before the Chancellor, or Keeper of the Great-Seal, the Treasurer, or the great Council, there to find Surety to pursue his Suggestion, which, if he cannot prove, he is to be imprisoned till he satisfy the Party accused, of his Damages and Slander, and make Fine and Ransom to the King.* Wherefore, the Lords and Commons beseeched the King, that he would be pleased to send the Person or Persons, that in this Case made the Suggestion or Information to him, against the said Members; together with the Suggestion or Informations; to the Parliament; that so such Fruits of the said good Laws may be had as was intended by them, and the Rights and Priviledges of Parliament may be vindicated; WHICH OF RIGHT AND JUSTICE OUGHT NOT TO BE DENIED.

Notwithstanding this *Petition,* no *Authors nor Witnesses* were ever produced, to avow the heavy Charge and Accusation of the noble Lord *Mandeville* and the five Members, till now, that fifty Years are elapsed, You, *unhappy Doctor,* are trumping-

* A *Petition* of about two thousand Freeholders of *Buckinghamshire* was presented to the King, setting forth that Mr. *Hambden,* Knight of their Shire, (a Gentleman in high Esteem with them, and the whole Kingdom) was accused of Treason; that they believed it to be the Malice which his Zeal to his Majesty's Service and the State had contracted in the Enemies to the King, the Church and the Common-wealth, had occasioned this foul Accusation; and they prayed that he and the other Members might enjoy the Priviledge of Parliament.

The City of *London* also petitioned, that the Lord *Mandeville,* and the five Members, might not be restrained of Liberty, or proceeded against otherwise than according to the Priviledges of Parliament.

up *good Evidence*, though, for want of just Matter, (which never yet came to light;) the *King* let the Business fall of his own accord. And, see now, how neatly you have noos'd yourself; for, *by your idle dedication to their Majesties*, you have made this *false Suggestion TO THE KING HIMSELF*, and so are fallen into the Mercy of the *noble Earl of Manchester*, and become liable to the severe Penalties in the *Statutes* of King *Edward* the Third.

To dispatch this Head; Was it not a Crime against the Law of Nature, against the Rules of Justice; that innocent Men should be charged with so great an Offence as Treason, in the Face of the highest Judicature in the Kingdom, without Witness, without any possibility of Reparation, even in point of Innocency? Such was the case of these great Men; for *the King denied to discover their Accusers, and yet, would not pass a Bill for their Discharge, unless in the Narration they would desert the avowing their own Innocency.* Nay, was it not an *Act of Tyranny* beyond Parallel? *He accused them, and yet would produce no Witness? he confessed them clear in his own Judgement, yet they must not profess their own Innocency, for fear of wounding his Honour?*

The King pretends to be afraid of the tumults in London.

We will proceed now, *Reverend Doctor*, to what remains to be said, about the *terrifying Tumults and Riots*, which frightened his *Majesty* from *Whitehall*. You said, that *he withdrew through Tumults, and too much countenanced Riots, being under apprehension of Affronts, design'd to be offered to his Person, IF NOT SOMETHING WORSE.* When you return me an Answer to this Letter, *dear Sir*, you will infinitely oblige me, if you will tell me, in plain English, what you intend by *SOMETHING WORSE*, than that the *Mob* would affront his *Majesty's* Royal Person? For, according to my present Apprehension, you seem to insinuate; that he *ABDICATED WHITEHALL*, under a dread, that these wicked *Rioters* would have forced his *COMFORTABLE IMPORTANCE*, or perpetrated some Act so highly Villanous, that you could not find a Name for it. For the present, till I have better Light herein, I will lay before you my Thoughts in this Case: In the doing whereof, we must examine how things stood at that time, whereby 'twill be seen, *whether there were any such Tumults; and if there were, whether the King himself did not cause them?*

The King's Attendants wound some of the Citizens.

He had tempted the ENGLISH ARMY, with no less Reward than the Spoil of the City of LONDON, to come-up and destroy the PARLIAMENT; He had, in an inexcusable and hostile manner, made a most high Invasion upon the Priviledges of BOTH HOUSES: Hereupon, many *Citizens, unarmed*, resorted to *Westminster* to present their *Petitions*, and express their steadfastness to the *Parliament*, whose Lives and Safeties, by more than slight Rumours, they doubted to be in Danger; the *King*, having fortified *Whitehall*, and entertained Armed Men, not a few, planted them at the ** Gate of his Palace*, where they reviled, menaced, and, with drawn Swords, actually wounded many of the *Citizens*, as they passed-by in a peaceable manner, whereof some died. Nay, they went farther, and were come to that height of Boldness, as to give-out insolent and menacing Speeches against the *Parliament* itself, and to

* The first Blood that was drawn in this Cause, was in that very place where the King's own Blood was afterwards shed.

imbrue their Hands in the Blood of the King's Subjects in Westminster-hall, and at the doors of the Parliament, as well as at his own Gate. And when the Parliament and People complained, and demanded Justice for those Assaults, he justified and abetted his own Crew in what they did.

Now the passing-by of a multitude of the King's Subjects, *armed with no other Weapons than Petitions*, could neither be justly called *Tumults*, nor could the Parliament have forbid them, without breach of the People's Freedom: *unarmed Petitioners, surely, could not be formidable to any*: And I must remember you, Doctor, that a very short time before his Majesty pretended to dread these tumultuary Citizens, *The City entertained, feasted, and conducted him to Whitehall with as pompous Solemnity, and costly Expressions of Love and Duty, as ever had been known*. Nay, did he not, the very next day after his irruption into the House of Commons, (than which nothing had more exasperated the People,) *go in his Coach, unguarded, into the City?* Did he receive the least Affront, much less Violence, in any of the Streets, and not rather humble Demeanours and Supplications? He knew the People to be so full of Awe and Reverence to his Person, as to commit himself single amongst the thickest of them, at a time when he had most provoked them: This shews, beyond doubting, that *all his fear of Tumults was but a mere Pretence and Occasion taken of his resolved absence from the Parliament, that he might turn his Slashing at the Court-gate to Slaughtering in the Field*. Well,

The King, retires, first to *Hampton-Court*, commanding those of his Servants who were Members of Parliament, to leave their Service there, and to give their Attendance upon his Person. Shortly after, *the QUEEN passes into Holland, carrying with her all, or the greatest part of, the Crown-Jewels; which she immediately pawn'd, and, with the Money, bought Arms and Ammunition for the War, which was not yet begun*. The King withdraws from London.

N. B.

Page 8.

But I have almost forgot my self, Reverend Sir, I must attend to what you say in the Case; 'Tis this, I see; *The King, though withdrawn, yet ceases not to call upon the Parliament to consider the Nation's Good, and the settling it upon such Foundations as 'bat neither the Monarch might invade the just Rights of the People, nor the People encroach upon the Rights of his Crown and Dignity*. Having said this, you intimate that he told them something upon their presenting *Petitions* to him at *Theobalds* and *Newmarket*. Then it seems that *they called upon him likewise*; and 'tis fit my Countrymen should know for what, seeing you do maliciously with-hold it.

Upon the 1st of *March*, 1641-42, BOTH HOUSES CALLED UPON HIS MAJESTY, by their *Petition* presented at *Theobalds*; *That, for the dispatch of the great Affairs of the Kingdom, the Safety of his Person, the Protection and Comfort of his Subjects he would be pleased to continue his Abode near the Parliament, and not to withdraw himself to any the remote Parts; which if he should do, it must needs be a cause of great Danger and Distraction: And they prayed him to accept this humble Counsel as the effect of that Duty and Allegiance which they owed unto him, and which would not suffer them to admit of any Thoughts, Intentions, or Endeavours, but such as were necessary and advantageous for his Majesty's Greatness and Honour, and the* The two Houses petition him to come back.

Safety and Prosperity of the Kingdom: Expressions surely, that do not in the least savour of that *Sedition and Rebellion*, with which at this time, by you, *Doctor*, and many other *WICKED Clergymen*, the Memory of this great Parliament is charged.

They send a declaration to him at Newmarket.

The *King* being deaf to the importunate Supplication of the *Lords and Commons* for his Return: They again *called upon him* more earnestly, sending after him a *Declaration to Newmarket*, by the *Earls of Pembroke and Holland*, and a *Committee* of the *Commons*, wherein they laid before him the Causes of their own *Fears and Jealousies* in these Particulars:

The grounds of the fears and jealousies entertained by the Parliament.

‘ 1. That *the design of altering Religion* had been potently carried-on by those in greatest Authority about him; *the Queen’s Agent at Rome, the Pope’s Nuncio here*, are not only Evidences of this Design, but *have been great Actors in it*.

‘ 2. That *the War with Scotland* was procured to make way for *this Intent*, and chiefly fomented by the *Papists, and other persons Popishly-affected*; whereof we have many Evidences.

‘ 3. That *the Rebellion in Ireland* was framed and contrived here in England; and that *the English Papists* should have risen about the same time, we have several Testimonies, &c. *The Irish Rebels affirm, that they do nothing but by Authority from the King; they call themselves the Queen’s Army*: The Booty which they take from the English, they mark with the *Queen’s mark*; and it is proved that *their purpose was to come to England, after they had done in Ireland*.

‘ 4. The labouring to infuse into your Majesty’s Subjects an evil Opinion of the *Parliament*, and other Symptoms of a Disposition of raising Arms, and dividing your People by a *Civil War*; in which Combustion *Ireland* must needs be lost, and this Kingdom miserably wasted and consumed, if not wholly ruined and destroyed.

‘ 5. That your Majesty sent-away the *Lord Digby* by your own Warrant beyond the Sea, after a Vote had passed in the *House of Commons*, declaring, that he had appeared in a Warlike manner at *Kingston upon Thames*, to the Terror of your Majesty’s good Subjects; that he, being so got beyond Sea, vented his traiterous Conceptions, *That your Majesty should declare yourself, and retire to a place of Strength*; and intimated some Service which he might do in those Parts; whereby, in probability, he intended the procuring of some Foreign Force to strengthen your Majesty, in that Condition into which he would have brought you; which malicious Counsel, we have great Cause to doubt, made too deep an Impression on your Majesty, CONSIDERING THE COURSE YOU ARE PLEASED TO TAKE, OF ABSENTING YOURSELF FROM YOUR PARLIAMENT, and carrying the Prince with you, which seems to express a purpose in your Majesty to keep yourself in a readiness for the acting of it.

‘ 6. *The manifold Advertisements* which we have had from *Rome, Venice, Paris, and other parts, that they still expect that your Majesty has some great Design in*
hand

‘ *band for the altering of Religion, and breaking the Neck of your Parliament ; and that you will yet find means to compass that Design: That the Pope’s Nuncio hath solicited the Kings of France and Spain to lend your Majesty 4000 Men apiece, to help to maintain your Royalty against the Parliament.*

‘ These are some of the grounds of our *Fears and Jealousies*, which made us so earnestly to implore your Royal Authority and Protection for our Defence and Security in all the ways of Humility and Submission : which being denied by your Majesty, *We do with Sorrow apply ourselves to the use of that * Power, which, by the Fundamental Laws of this Kingdom, resides in us ; yet still resolving to keep ourselves within the Bounds of Faithfulness and Allegiance to your Sacred Person and your Crown.*

* The Militia.

And as to the *fears and Jealousies* which his Majesty seemed to have entertained of them ; *The Lords and Commons thus answered :*

‘ *We have, according to your Majesty’s Desires, laid our Hands upon our Hearts ; we have ask’d ourselves in the strictest Examination of our Consciences, we have search’d our Affections, our Thoughts ; considered our Actions, and can find none that can give your Majesty any just occasion to absent yourself from Whitehall and the Parliament ; but that you may with more Honour and Safety continue there than in any other place.*

‘ Your Majesty lays a general Charge upon us ; if you will be graciously pleased to let us know the Particulars, we shall give a clear and satisfactory Answer. But *what hope can we have of ever giving your Majesty Satisfaction, when those Particulars which you have been made believe were true, yet, being produced and made known to us, appeared to be false ; and your Majesty, notwithstanding, will neither punish nor produce the Authors ; but go on to contract new Jealousies and Fears, upon general and uncertain grounds, affording us no means, or possibility, of particular Answers, to the clearing of ourselves ?*

‘ WE BESEECH YOUR MAJESTY TO CONSIDER IN WHAT STATE YOU ARE, *how easy and fair a way you have to Happiness, Honour, and Greatness, Plenty and Security, if you will join with the Parliament in the Defence of the Religion and publick Good of the Kingdom. THIS IS ALL WE EXPECT FROM YOU ; and for this we return to you our Lives, Fortunes, and utmost Endeavours to support your Majesty, and your just Sovereignty and Power over us ; but IT IS NOT WORDS THAT CAN SECURE US in these our humble Desires : We cannot but too well and sorrowfully remember what GRACIOUS MESSAGES we had from you this Summer, when, WITH YOUR PRIVITY, the bringing-up the Army was in Agitation : We cannot but with the like affections, recall to our Minds, how, not two days before your own coming to the Commons House, you sent a GRACIOUS MESSAGE, that you would always have the same care of their Privileges as of your own Prerogative ; of the Safety of their Persons as of that of your own Children. That which we expect,—which will give us assurance, that you have no thought but of Peace and Justice to your People,—must be some real Effect of your Goodness to them, in granting those things which the present necessities of the Kingdom*

do

N. B.

‘do enforce us to desire ; And that you will be graciously pleased to put from you those *mischievous Counsellors* who have caused all these Dangers and Distractions, and to *continue your own Residence and the Prince’s, near London and the Parliament* : which, we hope, will be a happy beginning of Contentment and Confidence betwixt your Majesty and your People ; and be followed with many succeeding Blessings of Honour and Greatness to your Majesty, and of Security and Prosperity to them.’

Page 8.

These are brief Heads, *good Doctor, of the Declaration* which you mention to be read to the King at *Newmarket* ; and you, with very little regard to his Majesty’s Honour, do affirm, that, after the hearing this *Declaration* read, *he expostulated* in these words : *What would you have ? Have I violated your Laws ?* Were you as well read in the History of that Day as you pretend to be, this his strong *Expostulation* with the *Lords and Commons* would never have found room in your *Defence* of the King ; for his high violations of the Laws were too well known to the whole World, to be denied ; and you, *his Majesty’s Defender*, would never have revived the thing, had you remember’d the short, but most pertinent, *Reply* which *both Houses* made thereto, in these words ; *We are heartily sorry we have such plentiful matter of an Answer to that Question, HAVE I VIOLATED YOUR LAWS ?*

Page 9.
The Militia.

You proceed, *Sir*, saying, That *the Applications from the two Houses at this time, were for NOTHING LESS than the MILITIA*. You are out again, *Doctor*, and, would I use the *Royal Language*, wherewith the *Earl of Holland* was interrupted by the *King* in reading the *Declaration* to him at *New-Market*, I might, with more Truth than he did, say, *THAT’S FALSE, THAT’S A LIE* : For in recounting some Particulars of the *Declaration*, I have demonstrated, that *their Application was also for other and less Matters than the Militia* ; they humbly petitioned him to *put-away his wicked Counsellors, and to return to his Parliament*.

Page 20.

You add ; That *the King continuing stedfast to his Resolution, and DEAF TO ALL THEIR IMPORTUNITIES*, [The want of Ears, I must tell you, *Reverend Sir*, cost him his Head at last] *telling them, That he would not part with his Militia for an Hour*. I must help you a little in this part of the Story too ; The *Earl of Pembroke* ask’d him, *Whether the Militia might not be granted, as was desired by the Parliament for a time ?* HIS MAJESTY SWORE, BY GOD, NOT FOR AN HOUR. This shews him a little more *stubbornly stedfast* than you would tell the World ; however, *you told too much* in this place, or *his Majesty* resolved *and swore too fast* ; for afterwards you say, That, at the *Treaty at Uxbridge*, *He consented that the Militia, for three Years, should be in the Hands of twenty Commissioners*, the one half to be nominated by the *two Houses*.

Page 9.

Your next words are these, THE MILITIA THEY MUST HAVE, OR THE NATION IS UNDONE.

The State of the Kingdom at that Day considered, there never fell from your Pen a greater Truth than what you have here delivered. For, besides the particular Instances which I have already given you of the *King’s Invasion of the Privileges*

ledges of the *Parliament*, of the *Rights* of the *People*, and of *his Preparations for War* against them; I must here inform you, that in the beginning of the Year 1641-42, a time when the *King* was, in appearance, transacting Matters amicably with the two Houses, and we seemed to be in a deep Peace; a time when *he declared, that he had received no other carriage from his Parliament than what he professed himself satisfied with; and that, if the Bills he had past were again to be offered, he should cheerfully and readily assent unto them; even then he dispatched-away Letters and an Agent to the King of Denmark, complaining of the Parliament, and asking Supplies from thence, AD PROPULSANDOS HOSTES; (you know the English of that is, to subdue his Enemies;)* and declared himself in these words, *ad alia Consilia Animum convertendum duximus; We resolve to betake ourself to NEW COUNSELS*; which are the very words he used to the *Parliament* in the Year 1628.

A striking instance of the King's Insincerity.

§

Further, upon the Discovery of *his Plot to bring-up the English Army against the Parliament*, he turned to the *Scottish Army*, then at *Newcastle*, and baited his *Temptation* with a rich Reward, *not only to have 300,000 l. in hand, and the Spoil of London, but four Northern Counties to be made Scottish.* Moreover, to encourage them to joyn with him, *he declared to them, that he was to have Money and Horse from Denmark, and that he would make York the place of his Residence, for the better Accommodation of both Nations, or fuller Revenge upon London: He also gathered Men in London, under pretence of raising Forces for Portugal, who were to possess themselves of the Tower.* The *Queen* in *Holland* was buying *Arms*, and his *Majesty* had actually raised Forces in divers Counties: The *Parliament* was all this time *petitioning* in Peace: And for the Reasons now assigned, amongst many others, *They humbly besought him, that he would be pleased to put the Tower of London, and the Militia, into the hands of such Persons as should be recommended to him by both Houses of Parliament.* The *King* seemed to comply herein, and by his *Answer* promised them that the *Militia* should be put into such hands as they should approve of, or recommend to him: hereupon both Houses nominated Persons of the greatest Honour, as fit for that Trust; to give you the Names of some of them, the *Earls of Holland, Rutland, Bedford, Bullingbrook, Salisbury, Warwick, Pembroke, Leicester, Stamford, Essex, Clare, Northumberland, Lincoln, Suffolk, &c. Lords, Paget, North, Strange, Roberts, Grey of Werh, Chandois, Dacres, Mandeville, Wharton, Spencer, Brook, Herbert, Fielding, Littleton, Lord-Keeper, &c.* Men eminent in all Qualifications of Honour and Sufficiency were recommended for several Counties, and the *King* was desired to agree thereunto, *as he had promised; upon his delaying to give a satisfactory Answer, they again petition him to give such an Answer as might raise in them a Confidence that they should not be exposed to the Practices of those who thirst after the Ruin of the Kingdom, and the kindling that Combustion in England which they had effected in Ireland: That nothing could enable them to suppress THE REBELLION IN IRELAND, and secure England, but the granting of their humble Petition; which they find so absolutely necessary for the preservation of the King and Common-wealth, that the Laws of God and Man injoyn them*

His traiterous offers to the Scottish army.

N. B.

them to see it put in Execution. They again, by a *Petition* presented at *Theobalds*, March 1, 1641-42, intreated him, that he would at last be pleased to grant their necessary *Petition* concerning the *Militia*, and declared, that, if he refused to do it in these times of *Distraction*, they must be enforced to dispose of it for the *Safety* of the *Kingdom*, in such manner as had been propounded to his *Majesty*. They followed him with the same *humble Supplication*. in his several *Removes* to *York*: But. (HE HAVING ABDICATED the *Parliament*, and BEING DEAF (as you most ingenuously confess) TO ALL THEIR IMPORTUNITIES;) they declared, that there had been of late a most desperate *Design* upon the *House of Commons*, which they had just cause to believe was an *Effect* of the BLOODY COUNSELS of PAPISTS. and other ill-affected *Persons*; who had already raised A REBELLION IN IRELAND, and, by reason of many *Discoveries*, they could not but fear they would proceed, not only to stir-up the like REBELLION AND INSURRECTION in this *Kingdom*, but also to back them with *Forces* from abroad; and thereupon both *Houses* made an *Ordinance* for the ordering the *Militia* of *England* and *Wales*; there appearing an urgent and inevitable *Necessity* for putting his *Majesty's* *Subjects* in a *Posture* of *Defence* for the *Safeguard* of both his *Majesty* and the *People*. And they RESOLVED, that, in this case of *extream Danger*, and of his *Majesty's* *refusal*, the *Ordinance* agreed-to by both *Houses* for the *Militia* doth oblige the *People*, and OUGHT TO BE OBEYED, by the *Fundamental Laws* of this *Kingdom*. They further, about that time, RESOLVED, That the *King's* *Absence*, so far remote, from his *Parliament*, was not only an *Obstruction*, but MIGHT BE A DESTRUCTION to the *Affairs* of *Ireland*.

The ordinance of both Houses for the Militia.

The spirited behaviour of the Parliament of Richard II upon his withdrawing himself from them.

And now, *Sir*, having laid before you the *Grounds* of the *Parliament's* proceeding as they did, in the business of the *Militia*: I will shew you how much higher our *Fore-fathers* went than we did in 1641-42. They were of that *Courage* and *Severity* of *Zeal* to *Justice* and their *Native Liberty*, against the proud *Contempt* and *Mis-rule* of their *Kings*: that, when RICHARD the *Second* departed but from a *Committee* of *Lords*, who sat preparing *Matters* for the *Parliament*, they required the *King*, (who was then withdrawn no further off than to the *Tower*) to return to *Westminster*; WHICH HE REFUSING, THEY FLATLY TOLD HIM, THAT, UNLESS HE CAME, THEY WOULD CHOOSE ANOTHER KING. So high a *Crime* it was accounted then, for a *King* to absent himself from his *Parliament*. Much less would they have suffered, that a *King* should leave his *Regal Station*, and the whole *Kingdom* bleeding to *Death* of those *Wounds* which his own unskilful and perverse *Government* had made. Yet, WE IN OUR DAY went not their length; THE KING HAD ABDICATED; our *Religion*, *Lives* and *Liberties* were threatened with most imminent *Danger*, from intestine *Enemies* and *Foreign Force*; WE only made a most necessary *Provision*, that our own *Swords* should not be employed to the *Destruction* of all that was dear unto us. And pray, what harm, what *Rebellion*, was there in all this?

The next thing we meet with in your *Defence*, REVEREND DOCTOR, is this; Before the *War* actually broke-out, the *King* was gone to *York*, hoping thereby

thereby to COOL THE HEATS that were AT LONDON, and in some little time TO BE INVITED thither, to live with more Honour and Safety than he did before.

The King in truth went to York in a high Chafe, hoping for something beyond, and contrary to, what you intimate; 'twas in hopes that, (to enable himself the better for that dismal War which he had resolved-upon,) he might possess himself of Hull, a Town of great Strength, and most advantageously situated, both for Sea and Land Affairs; and which was at that time the Magazine of all the Arms which he had bought with Money most illegally extorted from his Subjects, to use in a causeless and most unjust Civil War against his Subjects of Scotland. Did he hope for an Invitation back to London? Why, he had had that very often made to him, in a most humble and earnest manner; in particular, by a Petition of the Lords and Commons, presented to him at York, the 26th of March, 1642. They humbly advised and beseeched him, that, FOR THE RECOVERY OF IRELAND and securing this Kingdom, he would be graciously pleased, with all convenient speed, to return to London, and to close with the Counsel of his Parliament; where he should find their dutiful Affections and Endeavours ready to attend him, with such entertainment as should not only give him just cause of Security in their Faithfulness, but other manifold Evidences of their Intentions and Endeavours to advance his Majesty's Service, Honour, and Contentment, and to establish it upon the sure Foundation of the Peace and Prosperity of his Kingdoms. EXPRESSIONS, surely, DOCTOR, THAT DO NOT IN THE LEAST SAVOUR OF REBELLION AND TREASON. But the deaf King, instead of hearkening to this dutiful Petition and Invitation, summoned the Gentry of that County to attend him at York, where he made the most bitter Invectives against the Parliament, and stirred them up to raise Horse and Foot for his Service. His Majesty found but six Gentlemen to comply with his Demand of raising Men, tho' made under the pretence of a Guard. The greater part of the Gentlemen, and divers thousands of Freeholders, gave him an Answer under their hands to this effect, We humbly beseech your Majesty to impart the grounds of your Fears and Jealousies to your High Court of Parliament (OF WHOSE MOST LOYAL CARE AND AFFECTION TO YOUR MAJESTY'S HONOUR AND SAFETY, WE ARE MOST CONFIDENT) and WHATSOEVER SHALL BE ADVISED BY YOUR GREAT COUNCIL, we shall most willingly embrace, and give our Concurrence and Assistance to it, as shall become us, ——— And WE ARE MOST ASSURED, that your Royal Person shall be secure in the general Fidelity of your Subjects of this County without any extraordinary GUARD.

The King was presented the next day with a Petition from many thousands, who justly styled themselves peaceably-affected Subjects in the County of York, in which they speak thus:

That many of them, in their late Desires of petitioning your Majesty, were denied Access to your Person, kept-back with Violence, and affronted by some who had Dependence

The King goes to York, in order to possess himself of the Magazine at Hull.

The two Houses send Commissioners to the King at York to invite him to return to them.

The King endeavours to raise an Army against the Parliament.

N. B.

The Yorkshire-men petition the King to be reconciled to the Parliament.

pendance on your Majesty; and were threatened, that, WHEN YOUR MAJESTY'S ARMY SHOULD BE ON FOOT, those should be first pillaged that refuse to subscribe to the raising of Forces; which, we humbly conceive, are POSITIVELY CONTRARY TO YOUR MAJESTY'S OWN EXPRESSIONS, &c.

We humbly supplicate your Majesty, to cast your Eye upon the present State of this your Kingdom.——We are confident that no so absolute and hearty Observance to your Majesty's just Commands can be demonstrated, as what your Majesty in Parliament shall declare; which, IF IT BECOME DIVIDED, (as God forbid!) our Hearts even tremble to consider the Dangers and Diminution of the Honour and Safety which your Majesty's Posterity and Kingdoms will unavoidably be put upon: Since it is clear to every Understanding, that IT IS NOT A DIVIDED PART OF ONE OR SEVERAL COUNTIES THAT can afford that Honour and Safety to your Majesty, AS THE WHOLE KINGDOM; WHICH YOU MAY COMMAND, no ground of Fear or Danger remaining, if a good Confidence were got betwixt your Majesty and your Parliament; whose grave and loyal Counsels are, we humbly conceive, the visible way, under God, to put a speedy end to the Troubles of Ireland, and establish your Throne in Righteousness.

We most humbly supplicate, that we may represent our Unfitness to become Judges betwixt your Majesty and Parliament, in any thing, or dispute the Authority of either; which, we humbly conceive, do fortifie each other.——We shall be ready to maintain your Majesty's just Rights, the Priviledges and Power of Parliament, and the lawful Liberties of the Subjects.

I have now shewn you, Doctor, that the King wanted not Invitations to return and live in Honour and Safety at London: The Parliament importunately pressed it; the Gentlemen and Freeholders of Yorkshire humbly supplicated it. But nothing is more certain than that, instead of hoping to cool the Heats at London by retiring to York, 'twas his sole purpose and intention to put that Country, and the whole Kingdom, into a Flame, as he quickly did; and, pursuant to that Design, having rejected, with Scorn, the Petitions I have mentioned, he persisted in his former way of raising Forces, and made a Proclamation, requiring all Gentlemen, and others, of that Country, to attend him in Arms.

The King rejects these Petitions, and continues to raise Forces.

The Parliament votes that the King intends to make war upon them.
May 20, 1642.

The Lords and Commons, wisely foreseeing the impending Mischief, and observing the Clouds to gather so fast, and threaten a Storm, they as wisely endeavoured to prevent it; and therefore passed a Vote, May 20, 1642, That it appears that the King (Seduced by wicked Counsel) intends to make War against the Parliament; who, in all their Consultations and Actions, have proposed no other end unto themselves, but the Care of his Kingdom, and the performance of all Duty and Loyalty to his Person.

2. That whensoever the King maketh War upon the Parliament, it is a Breach of the Trust reposed in him by his People, contrary to his Oath, and tending to the Dissolution of the Government.

3. That whosoever shall serve, or assist him in such War, are Traitors, by the Fundamental Laws of this Kingdom, and have been so adjudged by two Acts of Parliament, and ought to suffer as Traitors, 11 Rich. 2. 1 Hen. 4.

But

But I must hear you, Sir, upon this Point, of *the first beginning* of the unnatural and bloody War. You suggest, *that he was forced to raise an Army, which was after the Parliament had voted a Necessity of a War with him.*

Page 10.

Will you never leave your L. Doctor? *The Parliament did not vote a necessity of a War; They indeed voted, as I told you but now, That it appeared that the King intended to make War against them; and it was near two Months afterwards, viz. the 12th of July, 1642, that the Lords and Commons, (finding his Majesty to persist in that Intention) voted, that an Army should be forthwith raised for the Safety of the King's Person, Defence of both Houses of Parliament, and preserving of the true Religion, the Laws, Liberty, and the Peace of the Kingdom. That the Earl of Essex should be General, and that they will live and die with him in this Cause; and that the Earl of Bedford should be General of the Horse.* Nevertheless, they resolved, that a Petition should be presented to his Majesty, by the Earl of Holland, Sir John Holland, and Sir Philip Stapleton, to move the King to a good Accord with his Parliament, to prevent a Civil War; which was to the effect following.

They afterwards vote that an Army be raised for their defence.
July 12, 1642.

But first present a Petition to the King to prevent a civil war.

‘ Although, We, your Majesty's most humble and faithful Subjects, the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, have been very unhappy in many former Petitions to your Majesty; and, with much Sorrow, do perceive that your Majesty, incensed by many false Calumnies and Slanders, doth continue to raise Forces against us, and to make great Preparations for War, both in the Kingdom, and from beyond the Seas; yet, such is our earnest desire of discharging our Duty to your Majesty and the Kingdom, to preserve the Peace thereof, and to prevent the Miseries of Civil War: That (notwithstanding we hold ourselves bound to use all the Means and Power which, by the Laws and Constitutions of this Kingdom, we are trusted with, for Defence and Protection thereof, and of the Subjects, from Force and Violence;) We do, in this our humble and loyal Petition, prostrate ourselves at your Majesty's Feet, beseeching that you will forbear and remove all Preparations and Actions of War;—That you will come nearer to your Parliament, and hearken to their faithful Advice and humble Petitions, which shall only tend to the Defence and Advancement of Religion, your own Royal Honour and Safety, and the preservation of our Laws and Liberties. And we have been, and ever shall be, careful to prevent and punish all Tumults and Seditious Actings, Speeches, and Writings, which may give your Majesty just cause of Distaste, or apprehension of Danger.

Their Petition.

‘ And we, for our Parts, shall be ready to lay-down all those Preparations which we have been forced to make for our Defence. And with respect to the Town of Hull and the Ordinance concerning the Militia;—as we have, in both these Particulars, only sought the preservation of the Peace of the Kingdom, and the Defence of the Parliament from Force and Violence, so we shall most willingly leave the Town of Hull in the state in which it was before Sir John Hotbam drew any Forces into it, delivering your Majesty's Magazine into the Tower of London: and We shall be ready to settle the Militia by a Bill, in such a way as shall be honourable and safe for your Majesty, most agreeable to the Duty of Parliament, and effectual to the Good of

‘ the Kingdom, that the Strength thereof be not employed against itself; and that which ought to be for our Security, applied to our Destruction. And that the Parliament, and those who profess and desire still to preserve the Protestant Religion, both in this Realm, and in Ireland, may not be left naked and indefensible, to the mischievous Designs and cruel Attempts of those who are the profess’d and confederate Enemies thereof, in your Majesty’s Dominions, and other Neighbour Nations: To which, if your Majesty’s Courses and Counsels shall from henceforth concur; We doubt not but we shall quickly make it appear to the World, by the most eminent Effects of Love and Duty, That your Majesty’s personal Safety, your Royal Honour and Greatness, are much dearer to us than our own Lives and Fortunes, which we do most heartily dedicate, and shall most willingly employ, for the support and maintenance thereof.’

And now, Sir, I appeal to you, and to all the World, *Whether these Men talk’d here, as though they were resolv’d to make War, and engross all into their own hands, let what would become of the King?* as a certain Aldgate Doctor of Divinity falsely accuses the Lords and Commons. Thanks be to God, Sir John Holland (as well as Sir John Prattle) is yet alive in Norfolk, in perfect Health and Understanding; and is ready to give the same account I have here given you, to any Man that asks him about it.

What say you next, Mr. Chaplain at Aldgate? Why, *To let the World see what the King aimed-at, He does assure the Gentlemen, whose Loyalty engaged them early on his Side, and does promise them, in the Presence of Almighty God, and as he hopes for his Blessing and Protection, that he would, to the utmost of his Power, defend and maintain the true Protestant Religion establish’d in the Church of England.*

You almost provoke me, Doctor, to draw-up a Petition to your Right Honourable and Right Reverend Diocesan, to suspend you from writing DEFENCES, till you swear to do them honestly; then, and not till then, we may hope for the Truth; the whole Truth, and nothing but the Truth. I am credibly informed, that there was something more in this Speech, than you are willing to acknowledge; ’Tis the same, I take it for granted, that his Majesty made at the Head of his Army, between Stafford and Wellington, the 19th of September 1642. He then had these Expressions also; *The time cannot be long before we come to Action— You shall meet with no Enemies, but TRAITORS, MOST OF THEM BROWNISTS, ANABAPTISTS, AND ATHEISTS.* These were the Words of a King; I shall not therefore reflect further upon them, than to ask you, upon the Oath which you are to take, Whether you do in your Conscience believe, that the Great, the Good, the pious King, spoke Truth here? Whether he had not more Atheists and Papists in his Army, than the Parliament had Brownists and Anabaptists in theirs?

Your next effort is this; You fall upon the Consideration of the Steps his Majesty made towards Peace, and thus express yourself; *Truly, I think; ACCORDING TO MY POOR JUDGEMENT, he now Acts according to what he always*

always pretended, and solemnly avowed; to wit, as a true Father of his Country; for he purposes, That HIS REVENUE, MAGAZINES, TOWNS, SHIPS AND FORTS may be restored to him; and all should be well.

Now I will readily agree, that there is here and there found a Doctor, nay a Chaplain too, of a poor Judgement; but one would think, that he that is conscious of his own Weakness and Incapacity, should not assume the Arrógance to judge in Matters of Right between Princes and their People. And I will here tell you, what better Heads than you or I ever wore, said upon this Point; The Opinion of the Parliament was, That his Majesty's Towns were no more his own, than the Kingdom is his own; and his Kingdom is no more his own, than his People are his own: And if the King had a Propriety in all his Towns, what would become of the Subjects Property in their Houses therein? And if he had a Propriety in his Kingdom, what would become of the Subjects Property in their Lands throughout the Kingdom, or of their Liberties, if his Majesty had the same Right in their Persons, that every Subject hath in his Lands? This ERRONEOUS MAXIM being infused into Princes, THAT THEIR KINGDOMS ARE THEIR OWN; and that they may do with them what they will, (AS IF THEIR KINGDOMS were for them, and not THEY for their Kingdoms) is the Root of all the Subjects Misery, and of the invading of their just Rights and Liberties; whereas INDEED THEY ARE ONLY INTRUSTED with their Kingdoms, and with their Towns, and with their People, and with the Publick Treasures of the Commonwealth, and whatsoever is bought therewith; and by the known Law of the Kingdom, the VERY JEWELS OF THE CROWN are not the King's PROPER Goods, but are only intrusted unto him for the Use and Ornament thereof; as the Towns, Forts, Treasure, Magazines, Offices and the People of the Kingdom; and the whole Kingdom itself is entrusted unto him, for the Good, Safety, and best Advantage thereof. And AS THIS TRUST IS FOR THE USE OF THE KINGDOM, SO IT OUGHT TO BE MANAGED BY THE ADVICE OF THE HOUSES OF PARLIAMENT, whom the Kingdom hath trusted for that purpose, it being their Duty to see it be discharged, according to the condition and true intent thereof, and as much as in them lies, by all possible means to prevent the contrary.

The King's revenues and prerogatives are bestowed upon him, not for his own benefit, but for the good of the Kingdom.

Not to enquire what you, Sir, in your poor Judgement, do think of this high Principle, I will move with what speed I can, to a Conclusion: I told you, not long since, That the Lords and Commons voted the raising an Army to be commanded by the Earl of Essex; and at the same time humbly (but in vain) supplicated the King for Peace, and to return to his Parliament. When the General marched with his Forces towards the Army raised against the Parliament and Kingdom: He was instructed to fight at such Time and Place as he should judge most to conduce to the Peace and Safety of the Kingdom, but was also commanded to cause a Petition of both Houses to be presented to his Majesty; wherein they thus expressed themselves.

“ We cannot, without great grief and tenderness of Compassion, behold the *pressing* Another petition of both Houses to the King.

' *pressing Miseries, the imminent Dangers, the devouring Calamities, which do*
 ' *extremely threaten the Kingdoms of England and Ireland, by the practice of a*
 ' *Party prevailing with your Majesty, who by many wicked Plots and Conspiracies,*
 ' *have attempted the alteration of the true Religion, and the Antient Government of*
 ' *this Kingdom, and the introducing of POPISH IDOLATRY AND SUPERSTI-*
 ' *TION in the CHURCH, and TYRANNY and CONFUSION in the STATE :*
 ' *And, for the compassing thereof, have long corrupted your Majesty's Counsels, abused*
 ' *your power, and, by sudden and untimely dissolving of the former Parliaments, have*
 ' *often hindred the Reformation and Prevention of those Mischiefs ; and, being now*
 ' *disabled to avoid the Endeavours of this Parliament, by any such means, have*
 ' *TRAITEROUSLY attempted to over-awe the same by Force : And, in Prosecution*
 ' *of their wicked Designs, have EXCITED, ENCOURAGED, AND FOSTER'D*
 ' *an unnatural REBELLION in IRELAND ; and have drawn your MAJESTY*
 ' *to make War against your Parliament, as if you intended, by CONQUEST, to*
 ' *establish an ABSOLUTE, ILLIMITED, POWER over them.*

' *And by YOUR POWER, and the countenance of your Presence, they have SPOIL-*
 ' *ED, IMPRISONED, MURDERED divers of your People. And, for their better*
 ' *assistance in these wicked Designs, they do seek to bring-over the Rebels of Ireland to*
 ' *join with them. WE HAVE, for the just and necessary Defence of the Protestant*
 ' *Religion, of your Majesty's Person, of the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom, and*
 ' *the Priviledge and Power of Parliament ; TAKEN-UP ARMS, and appointed*
 ' *Robert, Earl of Essex, to be Captain-General of all the Forces by us raised ; and*
 ' *to head and conduct the same, against these REBELS and TRAITORS, and*
 ' *them to subdue and bring to condign Punishment.*

' *And we do most humbly beseech your Majesty to withdraw your Royal Presence*
 ' *and Countenance from these wicked Persons ; and THAT YOUR MAJESTY WILL*
 ' *NOT MIX YOUR OWN DANGER WITH THEIRS ; but, in Peace and*
 ' *Safety, forthwith return to your Parliament, and by their faithful Counsel and*
 ' *Advice, compose the present Distempers and Confusions abounding in both your*
 ' *Kingdoms, and provide for the Security and honour of your Royal Posterity, and the*
 ' *prosperous Estate of all your Subjects : And we do, in the presence of Almighty*
 ' *God, profess, That we will receive your Majesty with all Honour, yield you all due*
 ' *Obedience and Subjection, and faithfully endeavour to secure your Person and Estate*
 ' *from all Danger ; and, to the uttermost of our Power, to procure and establish to*
 ' *yourself, and to your People, all the blessings of a glorious and happy Reign.'*

You see, Sir, the LORDS AND COMMONS TALK'D LIKE CHRIS-
 TIANs ; They were griev'd at the Miseries of the Kingdoms ; They detested the
 Romish Idolatry : When they sent their Army against the Enemies of the King and
 Kingdom, they supplicated his Majesty not to mix his Danger with theirs, but to return
 in Peace to his Parliament, and compose the Distempers of his Kingdoms, and provide for
 the Security and Honour of his Posterity : They, IN THE PRESENCE OF GOD,
 PROFESS, that they would receive him with all Honour, yield him all due Subjection,
 endeavour to secure him from Danger, and make his Reign Glorious and Happy ;
 WHICH

WHICH WORDS CERTAINLY ARE NOT THE WORDS OF TRAITORS. But all this would not do: for *he resolved to answer their Petitions in Blood*, and proclaimed the *Earl of Essex, a Rebel*. Yet, to blind the Eyes of the Multitude, and disguise his pernicious and cruel Intentions, under the semblance of Peace and Justice, he made (*as you, Doctor, have observed*) divers solemn Protestations, with fearful Imprecations upon himself and invocation of God's Holy Name, That he intended nothing but the Peace and Welfare of his People, the mainenance of Religion, and the Laws of the Kingdom; and for his own security only, to raise a Guard for his Person; and that he did from his Soul abhor the thought of making War against the Parliament, or to put the Kingdom into a Combustion: Nevertheless, his contrary Intentions were at that very instant manifested, by these ensuing Actions and Proceedings, before the Parliament voted the raising of their Army.

The King proclaims the Earl of Essex a Rebel.

He put a Garrison of Souldiers into Newcastle.

The * *Papists*, in a peremptory manner, in the King's Name, demanded their Arms, taken from them according to the Laws, to be again restored to them.

He caused the Mouth of the River *Tine* to be fortified, whereby the whole Trade of *Newcastle* for Coals, was subject to be interrupted whensoever he should please.

A Ship laden with Cannon for Battery, Powder, and Ammunition, was brought for him into the River of *Humber*; which also brought several Commanders from Foreign Parts: Also divers other large Preparations of Warlike Provisions were made beyond the Sea, and shortly expected; besides, great Numbers of Gentlemen, Horses, and Arms, were drawn from all parts of the Kingdom; and all the Gentlemen of *Yorkshire* required to bring in their Horses for the King's Service.

Commissions for raising Horse were granted, and divers Officers for his Army were appointed.

Upon the 4th of July, the King rendezvouzed an Army of a considerable number of Horse and Foot at *Beverly*; amongst whom there were divers *Papists*, and other persons of desperate Fortune and Condition, ready to execute any Violence, Rapine, and Oppression.

He sent some Troops of Horse into *Lincolnshire*, to the great Terror of the People; They began to take-away Men's Horses by force, and to commit Acts of Hostility.

These are sad Truths, Reverend Doctor; and the King having thus, contrary to his solemn Protestation, begun the War: the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, held themselves bound in Conscience to raise Forces for the preservation of the Peace of the Kingdom, and Protection of the People in their Persons and Estates, according to Law; and for the Defence and Security of the Parliament: and accordingly, upon the 12th of July, 1642, and not before, (*as I have already told you*) they voted the raising an Army for these purposes.

Now in regard, as I understand, you were, before your Dotage, a *Presbyterian*,

* Upon the 27th of September, 1642, he not only allowed, but required, the *Papists* of *Lancashire* to provide Arms for themselves, their Servants and Tenants: and all, without doubt, for the Service of the Church of England.

Minister of Essex; I would gladly set your poor *Judgement* right in this great Point, of as well the *Necessity* as the *Justice* of the *Parliament-War*; and, in regard that I find you prejudiced against *Dr. Seaman* and *Mr. Calamy*, I will not offer their *Opinion* to you; but, pray, see what the learned and pious *Mr. Daniel Rogers*, of *Wethersfield*, *Mr. Matthew Newcomen* of *Dedham*, and above *sixty* eminent *Ministers* of so many several *Towns* in *Essex*, left under their hands, in relation to this *Controversy* between you and me.

A declaration of sixty eminent ministers in Essex concerning the cause of the civil war.

‘ *We* (say they) call the *God of Heaven and Earth* to witness upon our *Souls*, that it was not hatred to any *Party or Person*, much less to the *Person* of *OUR KING*, that first drew us to engage with, and for, the *PARLIAMENT*; but clearly this.—Some Years before the assembling of this *Parliament*, we evidently saw the *Affairs of Church and State* in imminent and apparent hazard; many and great *Alterations* made in *Doctrine, Innovations in Worship, the Power of Godliness disgrac’d, true Religion undermined, the faithful and conscientious Professors of it persecuted, even to Bonds, Flight, and Imprisonment:—POPERY CONNIVED-AT, COUNTENANCED, COURTED:—besides many grievous Oppressions of the Subjects in their Liberties and Properties.* These things we saw and sighed for, but had no thoughts of inviting any to make *Resistance*, tho’ against the abused Name and Power of a *misguided King, whom we much pitied in his Miscarriages* until it pleased *God* to bless us with *A PARLIAMENT,—THE ORDINARY MEANS WHICH HE HATH APPOINTED IN THIS NATION FOR THE REDRESSING OF SUCH GROWING EVILS.*

See the Remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom. December 15, 1641.

‘ The *Parliament* meet, declare their *Apprehensions* of the *Danger* of *CHURCH AND STATE*, apply themselves to all *humble and submissive ways*, by *PETITIONS, REMONSTRANCES, &c.* speak nothing but *honourably* of the *King*; lay the *Blame* of all *Miscarriages* upon *Evil Counsellors*; require them to *Tryal*. But *God, for our Sins and his*, shuts-up his *Majesty’s Heart* against these *Addresses*; Instead of yielding-up those whom the *Parliament* demands, he demands some of their *Members*, and seconds his *Demand* with a *Face of Violence*. And *HERE BEGAN THAT MOST UNHAPPY BREACH: the Parliament, upon this, desire a Guard; the King apprehended, OR PRETENDED, Terror; he leaves his Parliament upon it, and, UNDER SHADOW OF A GUARD for his Person, RAISETH AN ARMY, sets-up his STANDARD, &c.* The *Story* is too long and sad for us to relate; but hence arose that *Fire*, which since hath burnt almost to the very *Foundation*; And who knows when it will be quenched?

‘ The *Parliament*, seeing which way the *Counsels* of the *King* steered, apprehend a necessity of raising *Arms FOR THE DEFENCE OF THEMSELVES AND THE KINGDOM.*—When the *War* was first commenced, their *Army* carried a *Petition* in the one hand, as well as a *Sword* in the other, in which the *Lords and Commons* do, *IN THE PRESENCE OF ALMIGHTY GOD,*
profess

· profess, That if his Majesty will forthwith return to his Parliament, &c, they will
 · receive him with all Honour, yield him all due Subjection and Obedience; and faith-
 · fully endeavour to secure his Person and Estate from all Danger, and do the utmost
 · of their Power, to procure and establish to himself and his People all the Blessings of
 · a glorious and happy Reign. WE DID THEN VERILY BELIEVE, AND
 · YET DO, that these were the sincere and cordial Intentions of the Lords and Com-
 · mons; and, although the King was so unhappy as to reject that Petition, yet they
 · persisted still in the same Loyalty of Intentions and Affections towards him, as ap-
 · pears in their many Messages to himself, and Declarations to the Kingdom.

· Upon these Grounds we engaged in this CAUSE, being called to it by a lawful
 · Authority; The TWO HOUSES OF PARLIAMENT BEING THE OR-
 · DINANCE OF GOD UNTO THIS NATION, FOR THE PREVENTING
 · OF TYRANNY, AND THE REGULATING OF THE EXORBITAN-
 · CIES OF REGAL POWER, and being convinced in our Judgements, both of
 · the Equity and Necessity of THE PARLIAMENT'S DEFENSIVE ARMS, &c.

· WE APPEAL TO GOD, the Searcher of all Hearts, to whom we must give
 · an Account of all our Ways, THAT THESE WERE THE GROUNDS OF
 · OUR FIRST ENGAGEMENT.

Now, Sir, to look-back to your Defence of the King; I find you frequently glo-
 rying in his Majesty's oft-repeated Gracious Messages, Offers, Proposals, and Conde-
 scensions, for Peace; and in relation to the Department of the Parliament, you thus
 express your poor Judgement. I cannot but persuade myself, they were resolved to
 continue the War, and engross all into their own hands, let what would become of the
 King: But yet, that they might pacify the Minds of a great Number of the Nation,
 who groaned under the Miseries of the War, and began to see too much of a private
 Spirit under publick Pretences; they consent to a Treaty at Uxbridge. They did so;
 and you declare that two Heads were agreed to be there debated, viz.

Page 17.

1. Of Religion and Church-Government.

2. Of the Militia.

Now, in reading the History of that Treaty, I find, that a third great thing, was
 agreed to be also debated, viz. The business of Ireland. But, that being a Point
 which you care not to touch, I must not allow you to hide it.

To discourse a little about this Treaty. Notwithstanding the King (for his Credit's
 sake, and to satisfy his own Party, weary of War,) yielded to a Treaty; I cannot per-
 suade myself, but he was resolved to continue the War. And, if you appear not a
 man of resolved Prejudices, or else of profound and stupid Ignorance, I do half think
 that I may bring you over to my Opinion in this matter. For, to let you see what
 disposed him to hearken to this Treaty, take his own words in his Letter to the
 Queen in December, 1644. "I shall shew thee upon what Grounds I came to a Treaty,
 to the end thou may'st the better understand and APPROVE of my Ways; Then
 know, (as A CERTAIN TRUTH) that all, EVEN MY PARTY, are strongly
 impatient for Peace; which obliged me so much the more, (at all occasions) to shew my

The Treaty of Ux-
 bridge in February,
 1644-5.

real Intentions to Peace.——NO DANGER OF DEATH SHALL MAKE ME DO ANY THING UNWORTHY OF THY LOVE.

At the very instant of this *Treaty*, which was had in *February*, 1644, the King used all imaginable means to bring, not only FOREIGN FORCES, but the *Irish CUT-THROATS*, against the *Parliament*. To clear-up this Point, and also to evince how insincere he was in his *pretended Intentions of Peace*, I will briefly present to your view his *under-band Transactions*, as well with *Foreign Princes*, as those *Rebels*: and in the first place, I shall mind you of some Passages between *Him* and the *Queen*, in relation to this and other *Treaties*.

Instances of the King's insincerity in carrying-on this treaty.

In a *Letter* to her of *January 9*, 1744. he writes thus. The *Scots Commissioners* have sent to me to send a *Commission* to their *General Assembly*; WHICH I AM RESOLVED NOT TO DO: But, to the end of *making some use of this occasion* by sending an honest man to *London*, and that *I may have the more time for the making* A HANDSOME NEGATIVE, I have demanded a *Passport* for *Phil. Warwick*, by whom to return my *Answer*.

At another time in the same Month he tells her, that, *as for my calling those at London* * A PARLIAMENT, IF THERE HAD BEEN BUT TWO OF MY OPINION, *I had not done it*: THE CALLING DID NO WAYS ACKNOWLEDGE THEM TO BE A PARLIAMENT; upon which *Condition and Construction I did it, and accordingly it is registered in the Council-Books*.

Nothing is more evident than that *the King was steered by the Queen's Counsel in the Management of this Uxbridg-Treaty*, and that which you call the *Church of England* [THE BISHOPS] was greatly her *Care*. By *Letter* in *January 1644*, before the beginning of that *Treaty*, *She instructs him not to abandon those who have served him, lest they forsake him in his need; that SHE hopes he will have a care of her and her RELIGION: That in her Majesty's Opinion, RELIGION SHOULD BE THE LAST THING UPON WHICH HE SHOULD TREAT: for, if he do agree upon Strictness against the Catholics, it would discourage them to serve him; and, if afterwards there should be no Peace, he could never expect Succours either FROM IRELAND, or any other CATHOLICK PRINCE*.

In another of her *Letters* we find her writing thus, *Jan. 17, 1644: It comforts me much to see the Treaty shall be at Uxbridge.*——I RECEIVED YESTERDAY LETTERS FROM THE DUKE OF LORRAIN, WHO SENDS ME WORD, IF HIS SERVICE BE AGREEABLE TO YOU, HE WILL BRING YOU 10,000 MEN——ABOVE ALL, *have a care not to ABANDON those who have served you, AS WELL THE BISHOPS, AS THE POOR CATHOLICKS*.

By the *King's Letters* to the *Queen* in *February*, when the *Treaty at Uxbridge* was depending, *he styles the Parliament UNREASONABLE, STUBBORN, PERFIDIOUS REBELS; presses her to hasten all possible Assistance to him,*

* He had agreed to treat with them as a *Parliament*; the *Queen* upbraided him for so doing; and he thus vindicates himself.

particularly

particularly that of the Duke of Lorrain. He tells her, that the *limited days* for treating are now almost expired, without the least Agreement upon any one Article; wherefore *I sent for enlargement of Days,* THAT THE WHOLE TREATY MAY BE LAID OPEN TO THE WORLD; and I ASSURE THEE THOU NEEDEST NOT DOUBT THE ISSUE OF THIS TREATY; for MY COMMISSIONERS ARE SO WELL CHOSEN, (*tho' I say it*) that they will neither be threatened, nor disputed, from the Grounds I have given them, which (upon my word) IS ACCORDING TO THE LITTLE NOTE THOU SO WELL REMEMBEREST—*Be confident that in making Peace I shall ever shew my* CONSTANCY IN ADHERING TO BISHOPS AND ALL OUR FRIENDS, and not forget to put a short Period to this perpetual Parliament.

We find him in another *Letter*, dated the 5th of March, expressing himself in these words: *I have thought of one means more to furnish thee with for my Assistance, than hitherto thou hast had; it is, that I GIVE THEE POWER TO PROMISE, IN MY NAME, THAT I will * take-away all the Penal Laws against the Roman-Catholicks in England, as soon as God shall enable me to do it.*

Another *Letter* to her of the 20th of March, hath this Expression: *I find that Thou much mistakest Me concerning Ireland; I DESIRE NOTHING MORE THAN A PEACE there, and never forbid thy Commerce there.*

In relation to *Ireland*, he wrote to the Marquess of Ormond to this effect, Jan. 7.

THE REBELS HERE *have agreed to TREAT: AND MOST ASSUREDLY ONE OF THE FIRST and chief ARTICLES they will insist-on will be,* TO CONTINUE THE IRISH WAR; WHICH IS A POINT NOT POPULAR FOR ME TO BREAK ON: *of which you are to make a double use: First, TO HASTEN WITH ALL POSSIBLE DILIGENCE THE PEACE THERE; the timely conclusion of which, will take-off that Inconvenience which otherwise I may be subject to, by the refusal of that Article, upon any other Reason. Secondly, By dexterous conveying to the Irish, the Danger there may be of their total and perpetual EXCLUSION FROM THOSE FAVOURS I INTEND THEM, in case THE REBELS here clap-up a Peace with me.*

NOT DOUBTING OF A PEACE, *I must again remember you TO PRESS THE IRISH for their speedy Assistance to me here, and their Friends in Scotland. —I DESIRE that THE IRISH would send as great a Body as they can, to land about Cumberland; WHICH WILL PUT THOSE NORTHERN COUNTIES IN A BRAVE CONDITION.*

* If this were so good a King, Why so much Clamour against King James the Second for designing the same thing?

Upon the 14th of *January* he writes thus to the *Queen*: *As for the Peace of Ireland, to shew thee the Care I have had of it, and the Fruits I hope to receive from it, I have sent thee the last Dispatches I have sent concerning it.*—FOR GOD'S SAKE LET NONE KNOW THE PARTICULARS OF MY DISPATCHES.

By another *Letter*, he commanded *Ormond*, *To dispatch the Irish Peace out of hand; and thereby promises that the PENAL LAWS against Roman-Catholicks SHALL NOT BE PUT IN EXECUTION, the Peace being made; and that, when the Irish give him that Assistance which they have promised for the suppression of THIS REBELLION, then he would consent to the Repeal of them by a Law; and concludes, RECOMMENDING TO HIM AGAIN, THE SPEEDY DISPATCH OF THE PEACE OF IRELAND.*

Another *Letter* to *Ormond*, upon the 27th of *February*, 1644, was, That HE THOUGHT HIMSELF BOUND IN CONSCIENCE *not to lose that Assistance which he might hope from his IRISH SUBJECTS, for such Scruples as in a less pressing condition might reasonably be stuck-at by him, and therefore commanded him to conclude a Peace with the Irish, WHATSOEVER IT COST; so that his Protestant Subjects there might be secured, and his Regal Authority preserved.*—If the present taking-away of the *Penal Laws against Papists* will do it, (said he) *I shall not think it a hard Bargain, so that freely and vigourously they engage themselves in my Assistance against MY REBELS of England and Scotland, FOR WHOM NO CONDITIONS CAN BE TOO HARD, not being against Conscience or Honour.*

N. B.

By another *Letter* to the *Marquis of Ormond*, in the same Month, he writes thus: *Now again I cannot but mention the Necessity of hastening the Irish Peace; for which I hope you are already furnished by me with Materials sufficient. But in case (against all Expectations and Reason) PEACE CANNOT BE HAD UPON THOSE TERMS, YOU MUST NOT BY ANY MEANS FALL TO A NEW RUPTURE with them, but continue THE CESSATION.*

He wrote to the *Duke of Richmond*, one of his *Commissioners* for the *Uxbridge Treaty*; *TO REMEMBER TO CAJOLE WELL THE INDEPENDANTS, AND THE SCOTS: Nay, be instructed Secretary Nicholas to bribe the Commissioners for the Parliament, with the promise of Security, Rewards, and Places*.*

Well, now, upon the whole Matter, pray tell me ingenuously, *good Doctor*, *whether did the King, or the Parliament, more sincerely aim at the desired Peace in this Treaty?* I am clearly of opinion, that he frustrated the Hopes of a happy Composition at this time; for, whatever you alledge, had he used the same moderation here, and granted those things he offered to yield to afterwards, (as I may have occasion to shew you hereafter) *the unhappy War had then been ended*: But though he pretended to listen to Overtures of Peace, because *his own Party were weary of the*

* There was at this time high Division in *London*, between the *Presbyterians* and *Independants*; therefore, to ruin both, by fomenting Misunderstandings between them, the *Independants* are to be cajoled: A thing worthy remembrance in all times.

War;

War; yet he was found to use *Tricks of Legerdemain*, and by this, and his *other Treaties*, aimed only at the getting some Advantage by *secret Treacheries and under-hand Dealings*.

I have told you, that *one of the three main Heads* to be treated upon, was *Ireland*; That was to be *anticipated and forestall'd by a Peace at any Rate to be buddled-up with the Irish Rebels; e'er the Treaty could begin*; that he might pretend his *Word and Honour past*, against the *popular Arguments* which the *Parliament* might urge upon him, for the continuance of that *just War*. *The English*, during the Treaty, were called *perfidious Rebels*, but the *IRISH* were called *GOOD AND CATHOLICK SUBJECTS*. He contrived how to make handsome *Negatives*. For fashion-sake he call'd the *Parliament* a *PARLIAMENT*; yet, by a *Jesuitic Usight*, he did not acknowledge them to be so, though he call'd them so. He pressed earnestly for *Ten thousand Lorrainers*, to be transported hither, and that a *Body of the bloody Irish Rebels* might be landed in *Cumberland*, delighting himself with the hope that they would put the *Northern Counties* into *A BRAVE CONDITION*. For he well knew that they had destroyed above *One hundred and forty thousand Protestants in their own Kingdom*; and were therefore, without doubt, very fit Men to assist him in the *Maintaining THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND*. He boasted of his choice of *Commissioners* for the Treaty, and that they would stick close to the *NOTE OF INSTRUCTIONS*, which he and the *Queen* had concerted; and assured her that *HE WOULD EVER SHEW HIS CONSTANCY IN ADHERING TO BISHOPS AND PAPISTS*. He empowered the *Queen* to treat with the *Irish*, and to give assurance, that he would take-away *THE PENAL LAWS* against *Papists* in *England*. In fine, Nothing is more evident, than that he used *Treaties, pretending Peace, to no other End than to gain Advantages that might enable him to carry-on a War*. And, methinks, it should not offend you to hear what Opinion, not only a *Minister*, but a *Martyr for Monarchy*, had of this *King*. The famous *Mr. Christopher Love*, who lost his head upon *Tower-hill*, (which I am confident you will never do for any Cause, though you live near it) preaching before the *Parliament-Commissioners* at this *Uxbridge Treaty*, expressed himself thus: *It would search to the quick to find-out WHEATHER: KING JAMES AND PRINCE HENRY, HIS SON, CAME TO A TIMELY DEATH, YEA OR NO; Some Parliaments have been but short-liv'd, when there was but a muttering, that enquiry should be made of their Deaths. It would search to the quick, to know, WHETHER ROCHELLE and all THE PROTESTANTS in it, were not betrayed into the hands of their Enemies; AND BY WHOM. It would go to the quick to find-out WHETHER THE IRISH REBELLION was not plotted, promoted, countenanced, and contrived, in England; AND BY WHOM.*

The opinion of King Charles's character, entertained by the pious minister, Mr. Christopher Love.

N. B.

Now, I hope, *Reverend Sir*, that you will not have the face to deny, but *Mr. Love* was a *Conscientious and Pious Divine*; and I will finish this Head in telling you, (though a little out of course) that the *Earls of Northumberland, Pembroke, Salisbury, and De bigb*, with the *Lord Wainman, Sir Henry Vane, Mr. Pierrepont, Mr. Hollis, Mr. Prideaux, Mr. St. John, Mr. Whitlock, and Mr. Crew*, (who were *Commissioners* for the *Parliament*, in the Treaty we have been talking-of,) were (as well as you

you boast the *King's Commissioners* to have been) *Men of Honour and Honesty, Men of Fortunes and Estates, Men of great Parts and Endowments, who understood the business they went about, and were very fond of healing the Nation's Breaches, and putting things into such a posture as might settle the King upon his just Rights, and the People upon their ancient Priviledges.*

The affair of the Scottish army retiring to Scotland, and leaving the king in the hands of the English Commissioners, set in its true light.

Well, *Sir*, for my own Comfort, if not for your's, I purpose to trouble myself (at least at this present) with but one thing more in your *Tract*. You say, "That the Scots, notwithstanding all their Promises and Obligations, **SELL THE KING TO THE ENGLISH PARLIAMENT.**" 'Tis a *Divine Truth*, "that Men are not only ignorant because they cannot, but because they will not, know the Truth:" And I cannot conceive that you believe what you here assert. Therefore, that my *Country-men* may be undeceived, and our *Brethren* of Scotland vindicated, I will set this Matter in its true Light:—The *King* had fled to the *Scottish Army* at *Newcastle*, then in the *Parliament's Service and Pay*; and there *Propositions for Peace* were made unto him, which he rejected. The war being happily ended, the *Parliament* were in arrear to the *Scots*, for their assistance in it, *Four hundred thousand Pounds*: It was agreed, that half that Sum should be presently paid; upon receipt whereof, the *Scots* were to deliver-up (not the *King*, but) the towns of *Berwick, Newcastle, and Carlisle*, to the *Parliament*. 'Tis far from Truth, that this was the *Price of the King*. For the *Parliament* freely granted to the *Scots*, that they might carry him (if they pleased) to *Edinburgh*; But they refused it, affirming, that by his *Presence*, in an unsettled Nation, new *Commotions* might arise. They rather desired (which was also the *King's desire*) that he might be carried into the *Southern parts of England*, and live in some of his *Palaces* near *London*, which they thought more convenient for treating of a Peace: So that in all the whole *Debate*, they seemed to contend, not who should have the *King*, but who should not have him. Nevertheless, to cast a slander upon both Nations, (for, certainly, 'tis as wicked a thing to buy, as to sell, such Merchandize,) You, *Sir*, will have it, that the *Scots* sold him, and the *English* bought him. But **WILFULNESS EVER WAS THE GREATEST BLINDNESS.**

N. B.

Reverend Sir, I shall for the present discharge you and myself from further trouble. You think, I suppose, that you make me a very merciful Offer, That, if I will repent, and do so no more, I may hope to live in Peace, and you will not further lash me with any more such Scourges, as I have been but now tortured with; but, if I shall persist, and appear incorrigible, you have more Rods in Piss, and will pay me off. You have much more to say in the behalf of *King Charles the First*, ['tis well if you have; for I am sure, 'tis very little that you have hitherto said] and you assure me I shall have it; and resolve, That, as long as you can hold a Pen in your Hand, you will not drop his Cause. There's no Remedy then, but I must abide your Fury: For I resolve never to ask Forgiveness and promise to do so no more: But, on the contrary, to write-on, as I have leisure, and you give me occasion, in the defence of the *Laws and Liberties of my Country*. Upon which Subject I have much more to say, and, if you will not be quiet, you shall have it; I love the Cause.

Cause too well to drop it, and will wear my Steel Pen to the stumps in its defence. And,

Now, seemg we are eternally to differ in this Point, I desire to settle two things with you, for the more orderly Prosecution of this dreadful War.

1. That we (as *Duellists* agree upon the length of their Weapons) may resolve how often to trouble the World with our *Impertinences*. I think once, or, if you will have it so, twice (because *there are TWO MADDING-DAYS*) in a Year, may suffice.

2. That, after you have *fairly answer'd* this and my former *Letter*, by *falsifying* (which, as a *Preliminary*, I shall expect from you) the many particular Instances I have brought to shew that *your admired Prince was a Tyrant*, or else by proving that they are not *Acts*, or *Evidences*, of *Tyranny*, you would then (in the further Prosecution of that *Defence* which you have undertaken, accompanied with a design of *Criminating* at the same time one of the *greatest and best-deserving Parliaments* that ever *England* saw) lay-aside your loose and general way of discoursing, and *come to Particulars*. When you shall so proceed, and I shall have failed to give you a *clear Answer* to every thing you shall have advanced, then, and not till then, the day will be your own. For, tho' (throughout your whole Discourse, which I have been examining,) you *Rebellize the Lords and Commons, and fly in the Face of the Parliament, with the King's gracious MESSAGES, SAYINGS, &c*; Others may, upon better grounds, *sum-up the humble, condescending, convincing PETITIONS, MESSAGES, DECLARATIONS, &c.* of the *Parliament*, and dash them all into your Face, than you can those *Messages and Sayings* of the *King* into the Faces of all who declare that he was a *proud Nimrod, a hardened Pharaoh*; in plain English, A **MERCILESS TYRANT**.

Lastly; To encourage you to further Conversation with me, tho' some Men are so impudent as to say that it is not Day when the Sun itself doth shine, you shall see that *I am not resolved against Conviction*, but that, *being under the Command of good Manners*, I rest not satisfied in the *Confession* which I made in the beginning of this *Letter*, of an *Error* committed in my former *Letter* in relation to the *Noble Lord Conway*, (sometime *Secretary of State* to *King Charles the First*) but shall more fully do it in this place.

An acknowledgment of a mistake in the former Letter relating to Lord Conway.

Being misguided by the *Printer's Mistake* in *Rushworth's* first *Collections*, from whence I took it, I was led to say, in my last Year's *Letter*, *page 7*, *That the Lord Conway said in Parliament that he never hated Popery*; whereas, *his words were, that he ever hated it*: and I have now certain ground to say, that those words were not only consonant to *his Speech* then made in *Parliament*, but agreeable to the constant Tenour of his whole *Life*, even unto the last *Period*. His *Father* and *Mother* lived and died *pious Protestants*; such was his *Religious Lady*, and such are his *Grand Children* at this day.

Some particulars of his life and character.

This *Lord Conway* was *Knighted* at the taking of *Cadiz* in *Spain*, in the time of *Queen Elizabeth*; he was afterwards, for many Years, *Governor* of the *Brill* in *Holland*, where he and his *Family* lived as became *zealous Protestants*, and were greatly beloved and esteemed by the *Protestant Magistrates* and *Ministers* of that *Town*.

He

He was greatly favoured by *the never-to-be-forgotten* MOST PIOUS PRINCE HENRY.

When the *Brill* and other *Cautionary Towns* were delivered to the *Dutch*; upon his return into *England*, he was employed to *Jersey*, to compose some Differences there; which he performed to so much Satisfaction, that *the good Protestants* of that Place always mentioned him with Honour,

He was then sent *Ambassador* to *Germany*, in behalf of the *King* and *Queen* of *Bobemia*, and was very acceptable to those UNHAPPILY-DESERTED *Protestant Princes*. Upon his return to *England* the *Spanish Match* was warmly pressed; against which he spake with so much Reason and Courage, that the *Duke of Buckingham* (who, for particular ends, resolved to ruin that Project) introduced him as a proper Instrument for that purpose to be *Principal Secretary of State*.

In that Station he refused many Gifts tendered to him by particular Persons, and 10,000*l.* *Sterling* offer'd and pressed upon him by the *Spanish Ambassador*.

In the beginning of King *Charles I.* Reign, at the opening of one of those *Parliaments*, and according to the Custom then, the *Holy Communion* being to be received by both Houses of *Parliament*, by the Contrivance of some LAUDEANS, the SACRAMENT was offered to the *Lords*, in *Henry the Seventh's Chapel*, NOT IN BREAD, BUT IN WAFERS. This *Lord Conway* was one of the *Lords* who refused the *Wafers*, and caused them to be taken-away, and Bread to be brought.

* Not long after King *Charles I.* sent for the *Seals of the Secretary's Office* from him; which (as the *Lord* employed in that Message would often say) the *Lord Conway* delivered with an admirable Generosity, becoming indeed one that, in that Ministry of State, had served the Publick with extraordinary Ability and Integrity, had performed many noble Offices to particular Persons, without Injury to any, and left that Place and some others of great Profit, without one Farthing advantage to the State of his Family.

When he was upon his *Death-Bed*, a *Lady* of great Wit, who was turned *Papist*, and was the Widow of a near Relation of his Lordship, very subtilly and earnestly pressed upon him concerning his *Religion*; whereupon he strengthened himself, and made full profession of his firm Steadfastness in the *Reformed Protestant Religion*, caused the Servants to convey this *Lady* out of his House, and commanded them not to suffer any of that Religion to come to him.

And now, *Doctor*, I assure you at parting, That, as fast as you convince me of any *Error*, or *Mistake*, committed in my Scribblings about *your Martyr*, I shall as openly and frankly retract it, as I have now done this, which relates to my *Lord Conway*. Might I be made so happy as to find a suitable return from you, and that you would give a free and impartial Liberty to the use of your own Reason, I would yet hope, that we might mutually conclude, as I now do,

Your Friend in and for Truth,

Amsterdam, Jan. 30, 1690.

EDMUND LUDLOW.

* He that would not make the necessary Advances to *Rome*, was to be neither *Secretary*, nor *Minister of State* to King *Charles I.*

A Table of some remarkable Things in this Book.

	Page		Page
KING CHARLES I. favouring Popery, and dispensing with the Laws, &c.	3	That War called <i>Bellum Episcopale</i> .	39
His Bishops cherished Popery, and discountenanced conformable Orthodox Ministers.	3	The Scots raise an Army.	39
Montague, one of his Chaplains, who endeavoured to reconcile England to Rome, made a Bishop.	6	A Pacification concluded; the King soon after burns it by the Hangman's hands.	39
The King's lending Ships to the French to destroy the Protestants of Rochelle.	7	Scottish Commissioners sent to the King, imprisoned.	39
Ship-Money, Loan, Coat, and Conduct-Money required, and the Refusers imprisoned and impress'd to serve at Sea.	8	A Parliament called in April, 1640, and soon after dissolved.	40
Archbishop Abbot suspended and confined, Bishop Williams disgraced and imprisoned.	11	Members imprisoned.	40
Sir Randolph Crew, Lord Chief Justice, displac'd.	11	Clergy and Papists contribute to a second War against Scotland.	40
Tonnage and Poundage levied against Law.	13	Sir Nicholas Rainton, Sir Stephen Soame, and other eminent Citizens, imprisoned for refusing a Loan.	40
Earl of Bristol confined.	14	The Scots possess themselves of Newcastle and Durham.	41
Earl of Arundel imprisoned.	14	The Lords at York petition for a Parliament.	41
Duke of Buckingham protected against the Parliament.	15	Cessation of Arms with the Scots.	41
Members of Parliament imprison'd.	15	Parliament of Nov. 1640 summon'd.	43
Sir John Elliot's Death in the Tower.	16	Star-Chamber and High-Commission-Courts suppress'd by Act of Parliament	43
The King's threatening Speeches in Parliament.	16	Poll-Money granted.	43
His Speech at the Meeting of the Parliament, Nov. 1640.	36	Dr. Leighton's Censure in the Star-Chamber.	44
Bishops obtruded upon Scotland against their Laws.	36	Mr. Pryn's, Dr. Bastwick's, and Mr. Burton's Censures and horrid Oppressions by Archbishop Laud.	46
Laud framed a Book of Common-Prayer for Scotland, and sent it to be approved by the Pope.	37	Those Sentences declared illegal in Parliament.	48
The Scots protest against it.	37	Ship-Money illegal.	48
King James I. took the Scottish Covenant in the Year 1580.	38	Lord Keeper Finch is impeach'd of High-Treason about Ship-Money, and flies.	49
The Scots renewed that Covenant in the Year 1638.	38	The many Exorbitances and Oppressions of the Bishops.	49
The Scots require to have the Liturgy abolished, and to have a National Synod.	38	Twelve of them impeach'd of Treason, and all removed from the Lord's House.	49
A Synod called, and soon after dissolved by the King; the Scots protest against the Dissolution, and continue the Synod.	38	The Earl of Strafford impeach'd and attainted of Treason.	49
The King resolves upon a War against Scotland.	38	Bills for Triennial Parliaments, and for continuing the present Parliament, passed.	51
		Conspiracy to bring the Army against the Parliament discovered.	51
		The King had a Million and a half of Money in the first Year of the Parliament of November, 1640.	54

	Page		Page
The Grand Remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom, Dec. 1641. - - -	54	The King summons the Gentry to York, and requires them to raise him a Guard	65
The Tumults and Riots in 1641. - - -	55	They petition him to return to the Parliament. - - -	65
An Account of the occasion of those Tumults. - - -	55	Petition of many thousand Freeholders of Yorkshire. - - -	65
The King accuses the Lord Maundevill and five Members of the House of Commons, of Treason. - - -	55	The King requires the Gentlemen, &c. of Yorkshire to attend him in Arms. - - -	66
He goes to the House of Commons with an armed Force, and demands the five Members. - - -	55	The Lords and Commons vote, that the King intends to raise War, and that it is a Breach of his Trust, and that such as assist him in that War are Traitors. - - -	66
The Commons demand a Guard. - - -	56	They vote the raising an Army, to be commanded by the Earl of Essex. - - -	67
The Case of the five Members discussed. - - -	57	Their Petition to the King to return. - - -	67
The King leaves Whitehall. - - -	59	The King's Speech at the head of his Army. - - -	68
The Parliament petitions him at Theobald's to return. - - -	59	The Petition of the Parliament sent by the Earl of Essex, - - -	69
They send a Declaration to him at Newmarket, praying his return, and the putting the Militia into safe hands. - - -	60	The Preparations made by the King for War. - - -	71
His Answer about the Militia. - - -	62	The Opinion of above sixty Essex Ministers of the Parliament-War. - - -	72
His sending to the King of Denmark for Aid against the Parliament. - - -	63	The Uxbridge-Treaty, - - -	73
He invited the Scots against them. - - -	63	Heads of Letters between the King, Queen, and Marquess of Ormood, about the Uxbridge-Treaty, and for procuring a Peace with the Irish Rebels, to bring them against the Parliament. - - -	74
The Queen buys Arms in Holland. - - -	63	The vulgar Error of the Scots selling the King refuted. - - -	78
Names of the Peers recommended by the Parliament to be entrusted with the Militia. - - -	63	A Vindication of the Lord Conway. - - -	79
The Lords and Commons petition about the Militia. - - -	63		
Their Ordinance for ordering the Militia - - -	63		
The Proceedings of the Parliament with King Richard the Second. - - -	64		
The Lords and Commons petition the King at York to return. - - -	65		

LUDLOW NO LYAR,
OR A DETECTION OF
DR. HOLLINGWORTH'S DISINGENUITY
IN HIS
Second Defence
OF
KING CHARLES I.
AND A FURTHER
VINDICATION OF THE PARLIAMENT

OF
The 3d of November, 1640;

With Exact Copies of the Pope's Letter to King Charles I. and of his Answer to the Pope.

IN A
LETTER FROM GEN. LUDLOW TO DR. HOLLINGWORTH.

TOGETHER

With a Reply to the false and malicious Assertions in the Doctor's lewd Pamphlet,
Entituled, "His Defence of the King's Holy and Divine Book, against the rude
and undutiful Assaults of the late Dr. Walker, of Essex.

AMSTERDAM, PRINTED 1692.

TO MR. LUKE MILBOURN,

MINISTER OF GREAT YARMOUTH, AND ASSISTANT TO DR. HOLLINGWORTH
IN HIS MIGHTY UNDERTAKINGS.

SIR,

I Must Confess, that, when the Act of Parliament Injoyned the Clergy to take an Oath of Fidelity to our unquestionably Lawful Sovereigns, their Sacred Majesties, King *WILLIAM* and Queen *MARY*; myself and your other Fellow-bowlers upon *Yarmouth-Green*, were under a Jealousie, that you would, by refusal of that Oath, have spoiled the old Proverb, and parted the honest Man from the good Bowler. But, seeing that the Bias of your Interest wrought your Conscience to Compliance in that point, it hath been an amazement to your Friends, that (you having left us near a Year since, with promise to come-back within a very few weeks,) any such Rub could come in your way, as to stop your return to us; and that we never received any Letter from you, nor knew how to direct to you, till now; that yours (which I received this day Se'nnight,) tells us, that you have constantly lodged at Dr. *Hollingworth's*, and had been engaged with him in a business of a *Close and Comfortable Importance*, of which we should be farther informed by the return of our next Carrier. Now we all remembered that *Comfortable Importance*, according to your Admired Dr. *Sam. Parker's* refined way of expressing it, meant a *Mistress*: but, when we do daily see here, your vertuous and well-deserving Wife and hopeful Children, we were utterly at a loss how to understand you, till the Carrier brought us, this last *Tuesday*, the Two Books, Entituled, Dr. *Hollingworth's Defence of King Charles the First against Ludlow, and of his Holy and Divine Book against Dr. Walker's rude and undutiful Assaults*; to the Compiling whereof, you say you had not a little Contributed.

In truth (Sir,) till now, at some times I suspected that you had repented, (as other frail Clergymen have done before you) of the only good deed you ever did, — I mean your having Sworn to their Majesties, — and had unsworn your Oath, and were Caballing with your endear'd Friends, the *Jacobites*; At other times it ran in my head, that you and the Dr. having been long in most inward Conversation with them, you had redintegrated yourselves, and insinuated into those your old Associates, the present *Plotters*: — with purpose to search-out, and discover their horrid design against the invaluable Lives of their Majesties, against our Church and Nation. But, your Books have put me out of doubt in the Point; and, as you requested, I have given them a reading, and should have now presented you with some Transient Remarks upon them

them both, if, to my great Content I had not found that *Ludlow*, by a Letter to the Dr. (a Copy whereof was sent to a Friend here) hath, in great part, prevented me. However, I shall make some general Observations upon both these famous Tracts, and then speak more particularly to that which rudely traduces the Memory of the most pious Dr. *Walker*.

The Arrogance which runs through both these Books is insupportable; the Author boasting proudly of himself, and vilifying and censuring others to such a degree, that nothing is more like it than the conduct of Mountebanks, who, after a deal of Scaffold-Pageantry to draw an Audience, entertain them by decrying all other medicines, with a Panegyrick on their own Balsam: All his Arguing is frivolous and trivial; and, though he knows, or should know, that the Rhetorick of Barking never moved any man, he writes as though he had ingross'd all the Ammunition of Railing to himself; he appears as serious as a mad-man, and answers demonstration with *the Lye*. It is, surely, the highest Indecorum for a Divine to write in such a style as this; and methinks, if our Author had the least spark of vertue unextinguished, he should, upon considering these things, retire to his Closet, and there lament and pine-away for his desperate folly, and for the eternal shame to which he has hereby condemned his own Memory. His Friends should give him good Counsel before his understanding be quite unsettled; or, if there be none near, the Neighbours should be called-in, and a Parson sent-for, to perswade him in time, and not let it run on thus, till he is fit for no place but *Bedlam*. Nothing will serve him but he must be a Mad-man in Print, and write in defence of a King, and that at such a rate, that, if the King were alive, he would be out of love with himself; he hath, (like those frightful Looking-Glasses that are made for sport,) represented his Idolized Saint in such bloated Lineaments, that, I am confident, if he could see his face in it, he would break the Glass. But, to pretermitt his defence against *Ludlow*, I descend to make a few Animadversions upon his Treatise against Dr. *Walker*, wherein I discern, all along, the footsteps of a most inveterate and implacable Malice. However, I am obliged to handle it with the more tenderness, in respect to the venerable Licence the Title-page shews in these words, *Imprimatur Carol. Alston, R. P. D. Hen. Epis. Lond. à Sacris* *.

In the discharge of my Undertaking, I shall, in the first place, take leave to recount the heads of some of those proofs, offer'd by Dr. *Walker*, to demonstrate that Dr. *Gauden*, and not King *Charles*, was the Author of the Idolized Book, called *Eicon Basiliké*.

' This good Man, in his Introduction, saith, that Dr. *Hollingsworth* did put him upon that unwelcome labour, by falsely accusing him of telling a false story, without consulting him, by word or letter, before he did it; and that he was constrained by unavoidable necessity (unless the Doctor expected that, as a *Felo de se*, he should, by silence, give consent to his unjust Calumnies) to vindicate himself: And he declares his resolution to keep that modest temper, which becomes one who designs no personal Quarrel, nor writes for Victory, but for Truth: The search and discovery of which needs no Tricks, no little Arts, no big Words; but is best attained by sedate proceedings, and plain and open dealing. And he solemnly Ap-

Dr. Walker's Account of his Reasons for thinking that Dr. Gauden was the Author of the famous Book called *Eikon Basilike*, which is generally ascribed to King Charles the 1st.

* Reverendo Patri in Deo, Henrico, Episcopo Londinensi, à Sacris.

‘ *peals to the Searcher of Hearts, the Avenger of Falsehood, and Revealer of Secrets, that he will write nothing, of the Truth of which he is not thoroughly persuaded.*

‘ 1. He asserts (page 4th) that Dr. Gauden, some time before the Book was finished, acquainted him with his design, and shewed him the heads of diverse Chapters; and some of the discourses written of them, and asked his Opinion concerning it; who told him, he supposed it would be much for the King’s Reputation, Honour, and Safety; but added, he stuck at the lawfulness of it, and asked him how he satisfied himself so to impose upon the World? To which Dr. Gauden so readily replied, that he concluded he had thought of it before; look on the Title, ’tis the Portraiture, &c. and no man draws his own Picture.

‘ 2. That, some good time after, Dr. Walker being with Dr. Gauden in London, he went with him to Dr. Duppa, Bishop of Salisbury, and, in the way thither, Dr. Gauden told him, that he was going to the Bishop (whom he had acquainted with his design) to fetch what he had left with him to be perused; or to shew him what he had farther written; that the Bishop had some private Discourse with Dr. Gauden, who, in their return, told Dr. Walker, that the Bishop said there were two Subjects more, which he wished he had thought-on, and propounded them to him, viz. *The Ordinance against the Common Prayer-Book, and the denying his Majesty the Attendance of his Chaplains*; (which are now the 16th and 24th Chapters in the Printed Book) and desired Dr. Gauden to write two Chapters upon them, which he said he promised he would do; but, before they parted, the Bishop recalled that request, and said, “pray go you on, to finish what remains, and leave these two subjects to me; I will prepare two Chapters upon them:” which he accordingly did; as Dr. Gauden owned to Dr. Walker, and others whom he had made privy to the whole, and never pretended to have written these, as he did to have done all the rest.

‘ 3. That Dr. Gauden, some time after the King was Murdered, upon Dr. Walker’s asking him, whether the King had ever seen the Book, answered, that he did not certainly know; but he had used his best endeavours that he might; for he delivered a Copy of it to the Marquess of Hertford, when he went to the Treaty at the Isle of Wight, and entreated him to deliver it to his Majesty, and humbly desire to know his pleasure concerning it; But the Violence which threatened the King hastening on so fast, he ventured to Print it, and never knew what was the Issue of sending it; for, when the thing was done, he judged it not prudent to make further noise about it by enquiry.

‘ 4. That Dr. Walker asked Dr. Gauden, whether King Charles the Second knew that he wrote it; he answered, I cannot positively and certainly say he doth, because he was never pleased to take express notice of it to me. But I take it for granted he doth; for *I am sure the Duke of York doth*; for he hath spoken of it to me, and owned it as a seasonable and acceptable Service; and, he knowing it, I question not but the King also doth.

‘ 5. That Dr. Gauden’s Wife, some others, and Dr. Walker, believed it as much as they could believe any thing; and, when they spake of it in his presence, or in
his

his absence, did it without the least doubt of his having writ it; being as much assured of it, as 'twas possible they could be of any matter of Fact; And there is no shadow of Appearance, why he should put so gross a cheat upon them all; for 'twas before it was finished, and a good while before 'twas Printed, they so believed; and therefore he had not the Temptation to steal the Applause it met with when made publick.

6. That Dr. *Gauden* delivered to Dr. *Walker*, with his own hand, what was last sent-up, (after Part was Printed, or at least in Mr. *Royston's* hands to be Printed) and, after he had shew'd it him, and Seal'd it up, gave him strict Caution with what Wariness to carry and deliver it: and, according to his direction, he delivered it, *Saturday 23d of December, 1648*, in the Evening, to one *Peacock*, who was instructed by what hands he should transmit it to Mr. *Royston*, and in the same method a few days after, the Impression was finished, and Dr. *Walker* received six Books, by the hand of *Peacock*, as an acknowledgment of the little he had Contributed to that Service; one of which he affirmed he had still by him, at the time of his writing this Account.

To these reasons Dr. *Walker* adds (page 7) that he meets with expressions in the devotional part, very frequently used by Dr. *Gauden* in his Prayers (for he used Conceived Prayer both in his Family and in Publick) which he never heard from any other man.

Now, Sir, you are not to take these things, which I have transcrib'd, to be the Sum total of what Dr. *Walker* offers in order to evince, that Dr. *Gauden* was the Author of the Book we are talking of; he lays-down many other Arguments of mighty weight in the point; to which I must refer you, and shall only conclude his modest Account of this matter, in these words: 'These are the Reasons why I believe, as I do, the Affirmative part of the Question, that Dr. *Gauden* was the Author; and, as I believe, so I have also spoken. And, if any Man can produce stronger Reasons for the Negative part, I do not say only that I will, but that I must, believe that contrary part: for no Man who Considers, can believe as he lists; but the weightiest Arguments will turn the Scale.

And, if any Man will be so Charitable as to endeavour to reclaim me from an Error, which he supposes I am in; I even beseech him to write nothing, for the Truth of which he does not make the like Appeals to God which I have done. For, if he attempts it by Raillery or Railing, by feeble Conjectures, or Stories inconsistent with themselves, or contradicting one another, he may with more discretion spare his pains. For, as no wise man will be influenced farther by such Tools, than to pity those who use them, or make themselves merry, so I confess I am so tired with examining such Ware, and so cloyed with such *Quelk-chose*, I shall have no stomach to such Fare; or think myself concern'd to take any Notice of it.

Dr. Hollingworth's
Answer to Dr. Walker.

I come now, Sir, to consider Dr. *Hollingworth's* Answer to Dr. *Walker*, and before I enter upon his Arguments, I desire you to smell to a Nose-gay of Flowers, which I have gather'd out of the Garden of *Their Majesties Chaplain at Ald-gate*. His Title-page terms the Reverend Dr. *Walker's* Assertions, *Rude and undutiful Assaults*.

Assaults. ‘ He Affirms in his *Preface*, That in his Answer to Dr. *Walker’s* Book, he has omitted many Inconsistencies therein, because he resolved to dwell on matter of Fact; and has forborn returning those *Scurrilities* and *Scorns* he had loaded him withal, upon himself; because he was dead, (p. 3, of his Pamphlet.) The *Aldgate Doctor* saith, that if God, the Avenger of the injured and oppressed, had not called the *Essex Doctor* to an Account before his Book was published, he should have been so bold as to have given, and that by undeniable Proofs, such Instances of the Man, as would have invalidated his whole Testimony, and made him, and his Book too, a Scorn to the World; but being dead, he will *as much as he ought* in this Case, forbear him. (p. 4) He doubts, nay *scorns to believe*, that Dr. *Gauden* made the Book called the King’s, and told Dr. *Walker* so; and the more, because he *Asserts it*; who, was he not dead, the *Chaplain* would give Reasons sufficient to satisfy any Man why he doth not believe it, upon his Authority. —Dr. *Walker’s* Book, saith he, is an unseasonable, false, and undutiful Book, which gratifies none but the great Enemies of Monarchy and Episcopacy.—’Tis a Forgery, and, to Dr. *Hollingworth’s* knowledge, has Amazed and Grieved a great part of the Subjects of the Kingdom;—The Sum total of the thing is, to serve the Lusts of a party of Men against Monarchy and Episcopacy.—That Good, that pious Man, Dr. *Walker*, does Assert, that Dr. *Gauden* said he Composed the Book; and his words weigh more with us, say the *Common-wealth’s men*, than a Thousand Witnesses to the Contrary.—The *Essex Doctor* is a bold man, an audacious Slanderer,—*True Church of England-men* scorn to carry-on their designs by Lies and Forgeries, by Tricks and Devices.—I was personally Acquainted with Dr. *Walker*, and know he was an Encourager of, and Comrade with, those who had no kindness for the Church at all;—Well done, Dr. *Walker*, if thou hadst a man alone with thee, undoubtedly he was always on thy side, and thou wert always in the right, and, when the Man was dead, wouldest assume the Confidence to Print it.—The *Common-wealth men* say, it looks very hard upon the Memory of such a Man as famous as Dr. *Walker*, to give him the *Lye*.—The *Essex Doctor’s* talk is vain and rash, false and undutiful—His Book is vain, shuffling, proud, and inconsistent,——*I hope I have made good what I Asserted*, and prov’d Dr. *Walker’s* Say-soes to be but meer Fictions of his own.—I wish he had resisted Temptations to Revenge, and Vain-glory: Revenge against a Church to which he was never true, for he was an Enemy within our Gates; and then I am sure the world would not have been pester’d with a Book, stuff with so many notorious falshoods.

Thus, Sir, hath your Host at *Aldgate*, (whose Mouth wants scowring) unloaded his Lay-stall; and how justly these vile Calumnies might be retorted upon him who utters them, let the world judge. But I shall not rake further in this Dunghill; ’tis most certain, that an ill Man cannot, by praising, confer Honour, nor by reproaching, fix an Ignominy. The late Dr. *Walker* had such a Stock of solid and deserving Reputation, that it is more than a wild, rambling, Slanderer can spoil, or deface, by all his Revilings; he was such a judicious, conscientious, learned, and sincere

sincere Protestant, so true a Son of the Church of *England*, that, had this *hot-headed Turn-coat* had any Modesty, he would have blush'd to reproach and load him with Contempt, Malice, and Obloquy : but vile and insolent Language costs him nothing, and therefore he has laid it on so prodigally.

I am now to look a little farther into the *Aldgate Doctor's* Defence of that which he will call the King's Book, against the *Essex Doctor's* Assaults, that I may shew you how he hath left Matters standing between him and his Adversary.

He saith, (*page 2*) *It was for his Holy and Divine Book, that that great King was so highly venerated, so deservedly applauded; and, indeed, upon the score of which the greatest part of his Actions were vindicated; and therefore this Book must be considered and weighed in a just and proper Ballance; (indeed so it ought).*

Page 5, he tells us, and who may question it? that what *Dr. Walker* asserts of *Dr. Gauden's* writing the Book, is *all Sham*; and that, if he had dared to have told such a Falshood, he must have sat-down contented with his Living at *Barking*, without any Expectation from the Court; without either being Bishop of *Exeter*, or living in hopes of the *Bishoprick* of *Winchester*.

Now, who will doubt *Dr. Gauden's* having possessed the fat Living of *Barking*? But 'tis all Sham, he was no more Incumbent there, than *Dr. Hollingworth* was in the See of *Canterbury*, in the Reign of *Charles* the First. How then should it happen that he talks of *Barking*? I was thinking that he pitch'd upon it, in regard of its near resemblance to *Railing*, which has sometimes proved a good Living to an Ecclesiastical Wrangler. But, upon second Thoughts, I consider, that the Town of *Barking* is but seven Miles from *London*, and contiguous to the small Vicarage of *West-Ham*, which the *Aldgate Doctor* once possessed; and learning there, that *Barking* was a plump Parsonage of four or five hundred Pounds a Year, his Ambition might lead him to set his Heart upon it; and his Brain being now cracked at the Disappointment, he talks of it at the rate, which we have seen a distracted Lover in *Bedlam* speaking of his hard-hearted Mistress. But it seems *one Falshood* would have dashed all *Dr. Gauden's* Hopes of Preferment; I say then, Alas, poor *Dr. Hollingworth!* you must sit-down contented with your Chaplainship at *Aldgate* of 8 *l. per Annum*, without any expectation of *Barking*, (though it is in their Majesties Gift) or of any other Promotion from the Court; for before I have done, I shall demonstrate, that *your whole Book is but one huge Lie, 27 Pages long.*

Page 6, the Doctor repeats his old Story of a worthy Person, *Sir John Brattle's* informing him, ' That in the Year 1647, the King having drawn-up the most considerable part of this Book in loose Papers, desired Bishop *Juxon*, to get some trusty Friend to look it over; and to put it into exact Method. And the Bishop pitched upon *Sir John's* Father; who undertaking the Task, was assisted by this his Son, who sat-up some Nights with his Father to assist him in methodizing these Papers, all writ with the King's own Hand.

You shall see what *Dr. Walker* said in this Point; " I make no Judgement (saith he, *page 19.*) prejudicial, or of disadvantage, to the Character here given

of

‘ of Sir *John Brattle* ; but with due respect to him, I would ask the Doctor a few Questions.

1. ‘ May it not be possible, without any diminution of Sir *John’s* Veracity, that in more than 40 Years, there may be some mistake of other Papers for these, or some other lapse of Memory, about a Matter in which he was concerned but once or twice, and that but transiently, and on the bye? Or was Sir *John*, who must have been then a young Man, and, ’tis likely, but in a private Capacity, so well acquainted with the King’s Hand, which ’tis probable he had seldom or never seen? I believe few Country Youths, or young Gentlemen, are so very well used to their Sovereign’s Hand-writing, as to make a critical Judgement of it, and to be able with assurance to distinguish it from the Writing of all other Men.

‘ Further ; supposing, but by no means granting, that the King desired Bishop *Juxon*, as is said, to desire a trusty Friend to do it : Why another rather than the Bishop himself? Had the King any Friend more trusty than Bishop *Juxon* ; Or was he too good, or above doing such Service for his Master, who had not a Servant who loved or honoured him more? Or was he too busy to attend it, when he was wholly out of all Employment, and enjoyed the most undisturbed Privacy and Quiet of any Man that had served the King in any eminent Degree? Or was Bishop *Juxon* less fit and able than a private Man, when the Book consists of Policy and Piety? And who a fitter Judge of what concerned the first, than one who had so long been a Privy-Counsellor, and Lord-High-Treasurer of *England*? And for the second, he was one on whom the King relied, as much or more than on any Man, for the conduct of his Conscience, as appeared by his singling him out, to be with him in his preparations for Death. And why must Bishop *Juxon* desire another Man to do that Work, for which (had there been any such Work to be done) he was the fittest Man alive, for Fidelity, for Ability, for Inclination to his Master’s Service, and for vacancy and leisure?

Let’s see now what Answers their Majesties Chaplain at *Aldgate* makes to these plain Questions ; for we find him vaunting, (page 22.) That he hath made-out Matter of Fact against Dr. Walker’s Assertions, in his vaim, shuffling, proud and inconsistent Book. Why, all that the *Aldgate* Doctor saith hereunto is, (page 9.) He (Dr. Walker) questions Sir *John’s* Memory, and talks of his Youth, to invalidate the Story ; but that is so great an Affront to all the young Gentlemen and Apprentices in London, who, at the Age of Nineteen, are so very much employed and trusted in their Master’s Books and Accounts, that I leave them to vindicate Sir *John*, upon the score of helping his Father in a thing of such a Nature as this was, at such an Age.

What ridiculous Stuff is this! ’Tis such an inexcusable Affront to the London Apprentices, to say, That, though they understand their Masters Account-Books, they have not, at Nineteen, the necessary qualifications of States-men and Divines, that they must be instigated to draw-up an Abhorrence against it ; and it may be this Doctor, who would coax them to fall upon Dr. Walker as their common Enemy, designs them a Venison Feast this Season ; but (should he do it) I advise

you, as his Friend, to caution him to appoint it at some other place than *Merchant-Taylors Hall*, in regard *Dr. Meriton* lives opposite to it; and it may be some diminution to his Credit, if that Reverend Divine should take the opportunity to cross the Street, and tell him, in the midst of his Jollity with the Lads, that he hath twice belied him in his malicious Scribblings against *Dr. Walker*.

The *Aldgate Doctor* (pag. 9.) dismisses *Sir John Brattle*, saying, *And this is all I have to say as to Sir John Brattle; and that he told me this, I will depose upon Oath, whenever I am lawfully RECALLED.*

I have heard of *Re-ordaining*, *Recanting*, and *Re-recanting*; and it is more than probable, that this Learned Gentleman understands the meaning of these words; but 'tis beyond my Capacity to make sense of *Recalling* in this place, and he will oblige me in telling me his meaning therein: And to requite the Courtesy, you may tell him, that I will produce good Evidence upon Oath, when *REquired*, (there's a *Re* for his *Re*) that *Sir John Brattle*, (who, I agree, is a very worthy Person,) doth declare, That he never told *Dr. Hollingworth*, or any other Person, that the Papers he spoke of *were writ with the King's own Hand*. Their Majesty's Chaplain may not take it ill, or think that his Veracity is called into Question, by enquiring of *Sir John* about this Matter: for we had his leave to do it, when he asserted the thing, and said, *Thanks be to God, Sir John is yet alive, and is ready to give the same Account to any Man that asks him.*

The *Aldgate Doctor* affirms, (pag. 10.) 'That the Reverend *Dr. Meriton*, dining in the latter end of the last Year with the Lord-Mayor, *Sir Thomas Pilkington*, happened to meet with *Dr. Walker* at the same Table; where *Dr. Walker*, was pleased, *with his usual confidence*, to assert *Dr. Gauden* to be the Author of the King's Book: Upon which *Dr. Meriton*, turned upon him with the Story of *Mr. Simmond's* communicating the whole thing to *Dr. Gauden*, upon which he was so confounded, that he had nothing to say for himself. And, though, if none but *Dr. Meriton* himself had declared to me (quoth he) the Issue of their Debate, it would have satisfied me: yet the further satisfaction I had from my worthy Friend *Mr. Marriot*, (then Chaplain to the Lord-Mayor, and Minister of the Parish Church in *Rood-Lane*,) who stood-by and heard the whole Discourse, and withal the silence he put *Dr. Walker* to; (which he professed to myself,) gave me so full a satisfaction, that, upon that account, I ventured to give the World an Account of it in print.

Now it had been much better either to have let this Story quite alone, or to have given a true Relation of it: but our Author trusts to Falshoods more than to the Truth of the Cause. He saith in his Preface, *If any Man questions the Truth of these Living Evidences I have quoted, if he pleases to come to me, I will wait upon them, and he shall have satisfaction from themselves of the truth of what I have writ.* I should tell him now, (if I did not know him,) that he might be ashamed to prevaricate as he doth: but he hath cast-off all shame; he exclaims thus upon *Dr. Walker*. (page 20.) *Well done, Dr. Walker, if thou ever badst a Man alone*
with

With thee, undoubtedly he was alwaies on thy side, and thou wert always in the right; and, when the Man was dead, wouldest assume the confidence to print it.

In what words now shall I bespeak Dr. *Hollingsworth*? he offers to wait upon any Man who is doubtful in the Matter, to the Persons he names; and yet, I am at a certainty that he hath assumed the confidence to put these reverend Divines, Dr. *Meriton* and Mr. *Marriot* (whom he terms his Worthy Friends) in print, (whilst living) without their Privy or Consent, or consulting them of the truth of what he relates; and I am as sure that they will nor averr what he asserts they told him. For, without putting the Doctor to the trouble of waiting upon him, I engaged a Friend to enquire of these Reverend Persons of the truth of what he writes relating to them; and Dr. *Meriton* saith, "that Dr. *Hollingsworth* had committed *two* Dr. Meriton's testimony. *Mistakes*, (to give it no harder Name) in the Story; for, whereas he affirms that Dr. *Walker*, *with his usual Confidence*, began the Discourse at my Lord-Mayor's Table, Dr. *Meriton* declares, that there was no such Discourse at the Table, but that after Dinner he himself began the Discourse taking Dr. *Walker* into a Corner of the Room:" and Mr. *Marriot* is pleased to declare, "that he did not much ob- Mr. Marriot's testimony. serve the Discourse, nor charge his Memory with the Particulars thereof, but believes Dr. *Meriton* began it; and that Dr. *Walker* did assert, in reply to him, that Dr. *Gauden* was the Author of the Book." Yet, we are to believe, if we please, that poor Dr. *Walker* was confounded and put to silence; but I am sure the *Aldgate* Doctor ought to be so, whose very asserting a thing ought to carry in itself an Argument of Credibility; and from henceforth, surely, he will be for ever banished from the Society of Learned and Honest Men.

Where are we next? Dr. *Hollingsworth* saith (pag. 9.) *The next thing I shall discourse upon, is the Story of Mr. Simmonds.* Is it so? come then, let me hear it; *A reverend Friend, the Vicar of Witham, acquainted him where the Widow of Mr. Simmonds lived; The Doctor went to her, and enquired whether she knew any thing of the King's Book, and how far her Husband was concerned in it? She presently answered the Doctor, that going into her Husband's Study, she saw upon the Table a Book in writing, which she knew was not her Husband's Hand, and therefore asked him whose it was; but he turned her off, with bidding her mind her own Business.*

A doughty Story upon my word; and such a Command as this (to mind his own Business) from my Lord Bishop of London to our Doctor, might have prevented the blotting of abundance of Paper; but, seeing 'tis tumbled-out, and that with the License of his Lordship's Chaplain, with a vain imagination that it serves the Cause; I will take the liberty to say, That a Friend of mine, without consulting either the Vicar of *Witham*, or the Vicar of *Gotham*, found, that Mrs. *Simmonds* lived with Mr. *Span* in *Creed lane*, near *Black-Fryers*; and he assures me, that upon discourse with her, she appeared to be a very discreet and good Woman, (as in earnest I am assured her Reverend Husband was) and did acknowledge that Dr. *Hollingsworth* had been with her; which, without further examination of the above-mentioned Story, (it deserving no remark) I will allow to justify the Doctor therein. But (quoth he, pag. 11.) *she told me, her Husband never joyed himself after* the

the King's Murther, but fell sick and died the 29th of March following. So she told my Friend, but with this difference (as the Doctor knows, but he seems resolved never to tell the Truth, the whole Truth, and nothing but the Truth) that his Sickness whereof he died was the *Small-Pox*.

The Doctor's next *living Witness* is your honest Name-sake Mr. *Milbourn*, the Printer; *he told the Aldgate Chaplain*, (if a Man may take his word) ' That in 1648, ' he was Apprentice to Mr. *Grisman*, a Printer; at which time Mr. *Simmonds*, oy ' Mr. *Royston*, sent the King's Book to be Printed, and that his Master did Print ' it: and that Mr. *Simmonds* alwaies had the name of sending it to the Press, and ' that it came to them as from the King.

Now, though it seems as improbable that a Printer's Apprentice should know the Author of a Book which comes to his Master, through several Hands (as 'tis in this Relation) to be Printed with the greatest privacy, as that those *London Apprentices* who understand the keeping their Masters' Accompts, are therefore capable of being Ministers of State: Yet I will not contend this matter with Mr. *Milbourn*, but be it as he saies.

In the next place (*pag. 13.*) I find a Certificate under the Hand of Mr. *Clifford*, who assisted Mr. *Milbourn* in Composing and Correcting the Book; which backs his Story, with this Addition, that ' great part of the Book was seized in Mr. *Simmond's* Lodgings; and he, *though in a Shepherd's Habit*, was so far discovered, ' as that he was pursued into Great *Carter-Lane*, by the Rebels; where he took ' Refuge, and *the bloody Villains fired two Pistols at him, which frightened him up ' Stairs, and out of the Garret-window he made his escape over the Houses.* And he ' further saith, That he never heard, nay, that *he is sure Dr. Gauden never was ' concerned in that Book, by which Mr. Milbourn and himself printed it.*

This Certificate, I find, *Sir*, is attested by yourself and *Margaret Hollingworth*: And one of your and my Neighbours, was inquisitive, upon the reading it, to know whether this *Jewel*, for so they say *Margaret* is in the Greek, be the Doctor's Wife or Daughter? But I could not resolve it.

Now had Dr. *Walker* been alive, and had *Clifford* made Oath of what he here asserts, I know not but he might have been indicted for Perjury, for saying; That *he is sure Dr. Gauden was never concerned in the Book.* And then Dr. *Hollingworth*, who confesses that he procured and penned this Certificate, might have been in some danger of an Indictment for Subornation.

But, pray, let us compare the Relation of Mr. *Clifford* with that of good Mrs. *Simmonds*; She saith, ' That she lodged with her Husband in *Carter-Lane*; and ' that, their Lodgings being discovered, *a Souldier shot a Pistol to mark the Door,* ' (the very Expression used by Dr. *Walker* in his Relation of the Story, *pag. 30*) ' but she and her Husband were at that time at Dinner with a Major of the King's, ' at one Mr. *Chibar's*, a Minister about *Old Fish-street*; and had notice brought ' thither, that Souldiers had been at their Lodgings; whereupon her Husband ' went-away, bidding her go home: And the Souldiers coming soon after to Mr. ' *Chibar's* his House, the Major made his escape at a *Garret-Window*, before the ' Door

Door of the House was unlock'd. And she further told my Friend, That till he read it to her out of Dr. *Hollingworth's* Book, *She never heard of her Husband's going in a Shepherd's Habit.* But when this Matter comes to be scrutiniz'd, I foresee that our Doctor will affirm, That by a *Shepherd's Habit*, he only meant a *Gown and Cassock.*

The next material thing which occurs is, (*pag. 17.*) *If he (the Essex Doctor) had writ nothing but Truth, a Nut-shell would have held it all.*

There are more Brains in a Walnut, than in the *Aldgate* Doctor's dry Skull, and their Shells are alike thin and brittle; he is equally a Stranger to Wit and Manners; but a quart Pot will scarce contain the Falshoods which he hath writ.

Page 19. Our Author inserts the Transcripts of two Letters from one *Tom. Long* of *Exet.r.*, as he affirms; which say, *That Dr. Gauden told him, that he was fully convinc'd that the Eicon Basilice was entirely the King's Work.* This famous Story, I observe, is esteemed by their Majesties *Aldgate* Chaplain, as a stabbing Evidence; for before he came at it, we were threatened with it all along in his Book: *Page 6.* he said, *By and by I will prove, under the Hand of a more credible Man than ever Dr. Walker was, that Dr. Gauden had another Opinion of the Author of the Book.* *Page 17.* We have the same thing over again in these words; *I say, and will prove it by a better Evidence than Dr. Walker can be supposed to be, that Dr. Gauden, after he was Bishop of Exeter, did justify it to be the King's Book.* *Page 18,* this celebrated Witness is produced; and our Doctor tells us, 'Tis *Mr. Long*, *Prebendary, as he takes it, of Exeter.* And, *page 20,* he thus characterizes him: *I must tell the Reader, that he is an ancient, grave, Reverend Divine, well known for his Truth and Honesty; one, who as he is a professed Member of the Church of England, so he hath always been true to the Doctrine and Discipline of it, in his Preaching and Practice; and not like my Adversary, who I know (for I was personally acquainted with him) was an Encourager of, and Comrade, principally, with those who had no kindness for the Church at all.*

I must, with your leave, Sir, a little remark upon this most extraordinary and remarkable Man. *Dr. Hollingworth* is, no doubt, sure of the truth of what he says; we are bound to believe him, though he is not at a certainty what this *Long* is; for he tells us, that he is *Prebendary of Exeter, as he takes it. He hath alwaies been true to the Doctrine and Discipline of the Church of England.* That's indeed something, and makes the *Prebendary* a much more valuable Man than our *Chaplain*; for he, once-upon-a-time declared, that *he thanked God, he had vomited-up all his Calvinistical Principles.* Whereupon a Person of true Worth, and of high Desert, replied thus to him; *Then the Doctrine of the Church of England, and St. Paul's Epistles, have spewed you out for an Apostate; and so farewell to you for a Knave.*

But I may not let the *Prebendary* thus slide out of my hands: I have found there's something more than ordinary in the Man, which recommends him to the Doctor's Favour, and I will not withhold it from you. There's a kind of Sympathy in the natures of these two mighty Churchmen; our Doctor proposed, *page 50,* of his second Defence, *That every Parish of England should buy the famous*
Eicon

Eicon Basilice (with the other Works of King *Charles*) and chain it up, to inform the Minds of all good Men: and the *Prebendary* hath a Crotchet of reading some Portions out of it, in the Church, for the further enlightening our Understandings. Behold how they piss in a Quill; and for aught I know, the next proposal from these Men may be, to read the *Arcadian Prayer* in the same Book, for the furthering of our Devotion.

I proceed to give you something more of *Long's* just Character, and leave it to you to judge how much you find of *Hollingworth* therein. He hath an aking Tooth at *Lectures and Sermons* too; and a mighty Spleen at *Free-Prayer*; he would have all the publick Ministrations to consist in reading *Liturgies and Homilies*. But his virulent Book, called *Vox Cleri, or the Sense of the Clergy, concerning the making of Alterations in the establish'd Liturgy*, published in the Year 1690, doth most truly speak the Man's Principles, and discover what sort of Men, are, in our Doctor's esteem, the true *Church-of-England-Men*; and upon that score he terms the pious *Dr. Walker* an Adversary to the Church.

This Book is a Libel upon that great and excellent Person, his Grace my Lord Archbishop of *Canterbury* that now is, and several others of the highly-deserving Bishops and Clergy of the Church of *England*, who were found inclinable to the much-long'd-for *Union of Protestants* in the late Convocation.

He glories that the Clergy opposed and overthrew a *Bill for Comprehension*, contrived by Bishop *Wilkins*, Sir *Orlando Bridgman*, and Judge *Hales*; because they thought a *Faction within the Church would prove more hurtful than a Schism without it*, &c. He rejoices that *Dr. Jane* was chosen *Prolocutor of the Convocation*, in opposition to *Dr. Tillotson*, and says, that 'tis look'd-upon as a good Omen of success, in their Proceedings for the good of the Church; and throughout the whole Book he puts an high value upon *Dr. Jane* for opposing any alteration in the Liturgy or Ceremonies, with a *Nolumus Leges Angliæ mutare*, and at the same time casts leering Reflections upon the Friends of Union and Peace, under the name of *Latitudinarians*. He oft extols and magnifies the *Non-swearing Bishops*, and calls their *deserved Deprivation* for their Obstinacy, a dealing with them as the Bishops were dealt-with in 1642, by the *Scottish and Dissenters* Malice. He expressly declares himself against parting with any thing for the Dissenters satisfaction; and perswades to the inforcing them to Uniformity by strict Discipline. But I may not dwell upon his envenom'd Invective; in short both *Hollingworth* and *Long* appear to be *Fiery Zealots, Violent Bigots*, who stand at an irreconcilable distance with dissenting Protestants, and will run both out of the Church and their Wits too, if the Parliament should think fit to let the Dissenters in, upon an honourable Accommodation of our Differences. And 'twould be strange indeed, if a Man of *Dr. Walker's* healing Spirit, should have any Credit with such Men as these; but 'tis his Honour to be traduced by them.

But now he falls with a Witness upon poor *Dr. Walker*, saying, (page 22.) *I have a Commission from the present Bishop of Gloucester, Dr. Fowler, to present the*

the world with this Narrative attested by himself; which has a great deal in it, considering the former Testimonies.

The former Testimonies, indeed, considered (which have nothing in them but Falshood, and empty or angry Words) I must allow that there is something in this, though not to the Doctor's Purpose: We have here a Certificate attested by my Lord Bishop of *Gloucester*, which fills almost three Pages, with most undoubted Truth; and this must be esteemed something; and 'tis a rare thing too; for (this relation excepted) a Man may aver that there is scarce a Paragraph in their Majesties Chaplain's seven-and-twenty Pages without a Falshood. It behoves then that we look into this narrative: The sum of it is this:

'About 28 years since Mrs. *Keighly*, a very Religious and Pious Gentlewoman, told Dr. *Fowler*, that a Captain of the Parliament-Army told her, that, being appointed to stand every Morning at his Majesty's Bed-Chamber Door, when he was a Prisoner in the *Isle of Wight*, he observed, for several days, that he went into his Closet, and staid there a considerable time, and then went into the Garden: And the Captain perceiving that *he still left the Key in the Closet-Door*, he went in, and found that the King had been penning most Devout and Pious Meditations and Prayers, which the Captain read for several Mornings together. And Mrs. *Keighly* said, That he gave such an Account of these Meditations and Prayers, that she was confident they were printed in *Eicon Basilice*, after she came to read the same.'

And I am very inclinable to be of good Mrs. *Keighly's* Mind; and yet this Relation doth more serve Dr. *Walker* than Dr. *Hollingworth*. It must be remembered that the *Essex-Doctor* asserts that Dr. *Gauden* sent a Copy of the Book by the Marquess of *Hertford* to the King, when a Prisoner in the *Isle of Wight*, and that he believes it was corrected by his Majesty. The design of the Book was, *ad Captandum Populum*; and this King was no fool, I assure you: He spent some time every Morning in perusing, and making such Alterations and Emendations as he thought fit in the Papers, and then took his walk, leaving the Key in his Closet-Door, and the Devout Papers upon the Table, as a Bait to catch the Captain; for though, as the *Aldgate* Chaplain most wittily expressed himself, Some Birds are not to be catch'd with Chaff, yet some may: And so I think the Mystery is unriddled.

And now, that I may take a full revenge upon the Doctor, I fall upon him with the But-end of another Bishop; 'tis Dr. *Nicholson*, who was Bishop of *Gloucester* at the time when the Widow of Dr. *Gauden*, after her Husband's Death, resided in that City: This Bishop, understanding that Mrs. *Gauden* did declare that her Husband wrote the King's Book, and desiring to be fully satisfied in that Point, did put the Question to her, upon her receiving the Sacrament; and she then affirmed, that it was wrote by her husband. For the Truth of this I can appeal to Persons of undoubted Credit now living in *Gloucester*: and I am under no doubt but my Lord Bishop of *Gloucester*, that now is, will acknowledge that those Persons have related this Matter to him, as I have now told it. And I do as certainly know that there is a Person of Quality and clear Reputation, who was Mrs.

Gauden's Brother, now living; that will affirm that his Sister did constantly, in her Conversation with him, declare that her Husband was the Author of that Book: And the same thing is well known to several of her Relations now in being.

I shall now hasten to an end, when I have related a Story which agrees with the Earl of *Anglesey's Memorandum*, and with *Dr. Gauden's* telling *Dr. Walker*, (as he asserts) that the Duke of *York* knew that he was the Author of that Book, and own'd it as a seasonable and acceptable Service. There is now in being a Person of Quality, in whose hearing the late King *James* was highly commending the excellent Language of the present Bishop of *Rochester's* Book, called, *The Rye-House Conspiracy*. Whereupon this Person took occasion to say, That *his Majesty's Father's* Book was wrote in an excellent stile. To which the King replied, *My Father did not write that Book; it was wrote by Bishop Gauden*. 'Tis very indecent to publish Names without Permission; but I will adventure to say, that the Person I mean, either is at present, or lately was, one of the *Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty*.

I observe that *Dr. Hollingworth* never writes a Pamphlet without a *Postscript*: in that against *Dr. Walker* he tells an idle Story, 'That *Mrs. Simmonds* acquainted him, that [*Mrs. Gauden*] being at Dinner, *some Years since*, at a Citizen's House, he, (like one of the Faction, and greedy to lessen Monarchy by aspersing King *Charles*,) told her, if she would confess the Truth, that her Husband made the Book called the King's, *there were some hundreds of Pounds at her service*: which she scorned, and told him, *She was not to be bribed by never-so-much to [tell] so great a Lie*.'

'Twould be a very seasonable and good Work, to set some body to bribe this prevaricating and forging Doctor to speak Truth. For *Mrs. Simmonds*, who is a conscientious Woman, denies that she told the Doctor that any Body attempted to bribe her [*Mrs. Gauden*] to a Lie, or said to her that there were some hundred Pounds, or any Sum at her Service; but she declares she told him, That, quickly after the King's Murder, one *Mr. Robinson*, who lived about *Threadneedle-street*, invited her [*Mrs. Gauden*] to Dinner, and talked with her about her Husband's writing the King's Book, and said, it might be some hundred Pounds in her way, if she would acknowledge the Truth; and that, if she would not, she might come into great trouble; and she saith that she never saw him after.

And now, after all this wrangling; for Peace sake, and half-a-Crown to be spent at the *Pye-Tavern at Aldgate*, I will (so far as I am interested in the Matter) give that diminutive and inconsiderable thing, the *Aldgate* Chaplain, his saying: The Book was, without further debate about it, wrote by King *Charles*, and he Lies that gain-says it. But then I must be allowed to observe, that it begins with Falshood, and ends with Fraud: So that as *Dr. Hollingworth* told him, (*1st Defence*, p. 37.) *If the Essex-Doctor had any value for the memory of his deceased Friend Dr. Gauden*, he would certainly have forborn telling it in all places, with a more than usual Confidence, that *Dr. Gauden* was the Author of it; for he was a learned and grave Divine; and would scorn to gull the Multitude by setting-off a deformed Cause

Cause with counterfeit Colours; by cloaking detestable Tyranny, with the resplendent Beauty of blessed Piety.

The King begins his Book, saying, That *he called his last Parliament, not more by others Advice, and the Necessity of his Affairs, than by his own Choice and Inclination.* This is to all knowing Men so apparently not true, that a more unlucky Sentence hardly could have come into his Mind. He never lov'd, never fulfilled, never promoted the true End of Parliaments: But having first tried, in vain, all undue Ways to procure Money; his Army beaten by the Scots, the Lords Petitioning, and the general Voice of the People, almost hissing him and his ill-acted Regality off the Stage, compelled at length, both by his own Wants and Fears, upon meer Extremity he summon'd this last Parliament.

N. B.

And as to what we find in the end of this Book, his *Prayer in the time of Captivity.* Who would have imagined so little fear in him of the All-seeing Deity; so little care of Truth in his Words, or Honour to himself or to his Friends, or sense of his Afflictions, as immediately before his Death to pop into the Hands of that grave Bishop, Dr. *Juxon*, who attended him, as a special Relick of his Saint-like Exercises, a Prayer stolen, word for word, from the Mouth of a Heathen Woman praying to a Heathen God, and that not in a serious, but a vain, Amatorious, Book, Sir *Philip Sidney's Arcadia*; a Book, how full so ever of Wit, not worthy to be named among Religious Thoughts and Duties: Not to be read at any time without good Caution, much less in time of Trouble and Affliction to be a Christian's Prayer-Book. 'Tis worthy of remark, that he who had acted over us so Tragically, should leave the World at last with such a ridiculous *Exit*, as to bequeath, among his deifying Friends, such a piece of Mockery to be published by them, as must needs cover both his and their Heads with shame and confusion. And, sure, it was the Hand of God that let them fall, and be taken in such a foolish Trap, as hath exposed them to all Derision; if for nothing else, to throw Contempt and Disgrace, in the sight of all Men, upon this his idolized Book, and the whole Rosary of his Prayers.

To conclude, if any Man censures me for using too much tartness in any of my Expressions; let him take notice, that Dr. *Walker* told your Doctor, (*page 9.*) That *good Nature and good Manners might be overcome with too much ill Usage, to cause him to be answered as he would not, if he accused as he should not.*

I am, yours,

JOS. WILSON.

Yarmouth, June 10, 1692.

*Insanis Veritas scandalum est, & cæcis
Doctoribus Caligo quod Lumen est.*

LUDLOW NO LIAR, &c.

IN A LETTER TO

D R. H O L L I N G W O R T H.

TIS common, *Sir*, to such despicable and malicious Brawlers as you are, to rail at those things most, that are most praise-worthy: I should therefore esteem it scandalous to the Glorious Cause, and Noble Performances of the most worthy Parliament of *November 1640*, (which I have endeavoured to vindicate,) to be commended, and account it a praise to be evil-spoken-of, by you: and it would provoke a Man to laughter to behold you betaking yourself to Slanders and Calumnies, to see nothing but dirt and filth issuing from your mouth, when you find your Arguments will little avail.

I should not give myself the trouble to animadvert upon your Follies and Frenzies, but that I hear you are swollen with Pride and Conceit to an incredible degree.

I shall therefore shew, that, with a great deal of toil, you have done just nothing at all; and that you are fallen under a most prodigious degree of Stupidity and Madness, to take so much pains to make your Folly visible to the World, which till now, you, in some measure, have concealed; to be so industrious to heap disgrace upon yourself. What offence does Heaven punish you for, in making you undertake the Defence of so forlorn and desperate a Cause as that of King *Charles the First*, and that with so much confidence and indiscretion; and, instead of defending it, to betray it by your ignorance?

It was as truly as ingeniously observed by the Learned Bishop *Burnet*, in his Sermon before the *House of Commons*, January 31st, 1688-89: 'That, if one were to make a Panegyrick on Tyranny, he ought to turn-over all the common Places of Wit, all the Stores of Invention, and the liveliest figures with which his
' fancy

‘fancy would furnish him, to make so odious a thing look but tolerably; and, by ‘sacrificing truth to interest, and varnishing it over with Wit and Eloquence, he ‘might shew how gracefully he could plead a very ill Cause.’ And ‘tis certain that most Writers use some endeavour to carry-on their discourses by a *Stream of Sense and Reason*: but you, Sir, have done it by a *Course of Reviling and Railing*; and it may be truly said, That, *if the dirty and Tinker-like Names, the scurrilous and foul-mouth’d Expressions, the spiteful and false Accusations*, (I gather these Expressions from your book) were taken out of your Pamphlet, it would appear but a poor and shrunken thing, unpleasing to yourself when you look upon it, and of small power to work upon others that read it. You seem rather to bawl and hoöt-at, than to answer, my Letter; and your Book is the best *Common-Place* for *Billingsgate* that I have lately seen: But it is well known, that a *Mountebank* can neither draw, nor keep, a Croud about his Stage, without the help of a *witty, or foul-mouth’d, Buffoon*. And the *gay Fancy, the cutting Sarcasms*, wherewith your Tract is all-bespatter’d, do adorn and render it highly entertaining to some Persons. And I must confess, that I find some subtilty in your first setting-out. For you begin cunningly, and, like an old *Cavalier*, you place the *Right Reverend and Pious Bishop* Kidder, in the front of the Battle, just as King *Charles* the First did the *Roundheads*, whom he had taken Prisoners at the Battle of *Edgehill*; these (as we find the Relation in *Husband’s Exact Collections*, page 758.) he set pinioned in the front of his Men, when he engaged the Parliament-Forces at *Braintford*, to be a Breast-work to receive the Bullets that came from the *Brownists and Anabaptists*, (of such the King affirmed the *Parliament-Army* to consist) that the *Cavaliers* might escape them. However, *the good Bishop*, I plainly foresee, will come off, as every of them did; *he may be shot through the Cloaths, but no way hurt*. For your Quotations out of the Sermons of this good Man, and of that *great and well-studied Divine, Dr. Sherlock*, do only endeavour to aggravate the Iniquity of this Martyr’s Murder; whereas there is not one syllable in either of my Letters relating to it. I only endeavoured to evince, That *the King intended to bow or break us, to persuade or force us to Slavery*; and that *the Parliament*, when he was enflamed to take Arms against them, and to put all into a common Combustion, did, in one hand, present their humble Supplications, most earnestly begging to enjoy the English Liberties in Peace; and held in the other hand, *the Sword of just and innocent Defence*, against the Oppression and Violence of the Enemies of the King’s true Honour, and of the Kingdom’s Peace. And I am yet to learn, that, by any law of God or Nations, this could be judged to be *Rebellion*: And I cannot see but Dr. *Sherlock* is of my opinion; for in his Sermon upon this last 30th of *January*, 1691, page 6, he saith, ‘He shall not dispute the lawfulness ‘of resisting the King’s Authority; whether it were lawful for the Parliament to ‘take Arms against the King, to defend the Laws and Liberties of their Country. ‘He supposes, that, in a limited Monarchy, the Estates of the Realm have Authority to maintain the Laws and Liberties of their Country, against the illegal ‘Encroachments and Usurpations of their King.’ Now I go no greater length, and

and I think this comes-up to the great Lord *Russel's* Position, which you had in my *Letter*, page 20: 'That a free Nation, like this, may defend their Religion and Liberties, when invaded and taken from them, though under pretence and colour of Law.'

Your next step, Sir, is, (page 6) to my Quotation out of a Sermon of Bishop *Burnet's*, Jan. 30th, 1680, which you say you will transcribe, to let the World see what a Cheat I am. Well; seeing you did so, I will also transcribe it, that the World may judge whether you or I be the Knave in this Matter. The words are these, 'I acknowledge it were better if we could have Job's Wish, that this Day should perish, and the shadow of Death should cover it, that it should not see the dawning of the Day, nor should the Light shine upon it; it were better to strike it out of the Calendar, and make our *January* terminate at the 29th, and add these remaining days to *February*.'

These words (say you) *are wrested by Ludlow, and they appear, at first sight, only a Rhetorical Flight, whereby that Right Reverend Person would express the detestableness and horridness of the Fact, which he bewailed that day.* Now, because I ever was against judging any thing upon the first sight, I have twice read the Sermon of this learned, wise, and highly-meriting Bishop; and must tell you, that I did not wrest his words, but that he was of Opinion, "that the observation of that Day had been too long continued, and that, in regard, of the great abuse thereof by some *hot-headed Ecclesiastical Make-hates*, 'twas time to leave it off; and I cannot but think that every Man will conclude as I do, even upon the reading of his Text, *Zech. viii. 19. Thus saith the Lord of Hosts, The Fast of the Fourth Month, and the Fast of the Fifth, and the Fast of the Seventh, and the Fast of the Tenth, shall be to the House of Judah Joy and Gladness, and cheerful Feasts; therefore LOVE THE TRUTH AND PEACE.* And I must say, that I am strengthened in this Belief, when I remember, that about that Time, and indeed upon the very Day when this Sermon was preached, viz. Jan. 30th, 1680, some of the Clergy (I know their Names, but will spare them) did in their Pulpits deliver-up our Laws and Liberties to the King's Will; and, according to their Doctrine, we were to hold all at his Pleasure; and in the three or four succeeding years, upon that and such-like Occasions, these *Boutefeux* did raise Despotick Power to that dangerous height, that *England* became too hot for Dr. *Burnet*, as well as for many other good Men; and he and I might, with equal safety, have returned together. But, to put it beyond doubt, what my Lord Bishop of *Salisbury's* meaning was, in that Expression, *It were better if we could have Job's Wish, &c.* which you insinuate that I wrest; I shall lay before you some Expressions in that Sermon: you may read, page 4, these words; 'Upon their loving Truth and Peace, those black and mournful Days should be converted to Days of Gladness. Page 5, 'It might have been expected, that our 29th of *May* should have worn-out the remembrance of the 30th of *January*; and now at the end of two-and-thirty years, it may be reasonably asked, should we still continue to fast and mourn? Page 28. '[if we come to love the Truth and Peace]

Peace] to live in Love and Peace, one with another, then our Days of Fasting shall be turned into solemn and chearful Feasts: Then should our 29th of May swallow up the remembrance of the 30th of January: Or, perhaps, as the Prophet foretold, such happy Deliverances should come to the Jews, as should make even that out of *Egypt* to be forgotten; so we might hope for such days, as should outshine and darken the very 29th of May — If we come to love Truth and Peace, then shall even this Fast of the 10th Month, according to the Jewish Account, (which, according to Arch-Bishop *Usher*, is exactly our 30th of January) be to us, Joy and Gladness.

I can now scarce with-hold myself from saying, That 'tis most evident *the Doctor* at *Aldgate* doth appear to be the Person who would *wrest Bishop Burnet's well-intended Words to his own malicious Design*:—A Design to keep-up Animosity, Wrath, and Feuds in the Kingdom; a Person who shews himself estranged from Truth and Peace, in contending to perpetuate the observation of this Day. And, seeing we have happily lived to behold the wonderful Deliverances which my Lord Bishop of *Salisbury* did not only hope-for, but seem to foretel:—Seeing we have our glorious 5th of *November*, rendered famous to all succeeding Ages, by our late, repeated, happy and miraculous Deliverance from Popery, and its inseparable Companion, Tyranny:—Seeing we behold our thrice-happy 30th of *April* and 4th of *November*, the *Birth-Days* of those matchless Princes, our most deservedly admired and beloved Sovereigns, *King William* and *Queen Mary*, *out-shining and darkening* even the 29th of *May*; I would hope, that I may live to see the time, when his Lordship will make a Motion in Parliament, for the annulling the Law which enjoins the Observation of the 30th of *January*; and that, I am sure, would be highly acceptable to the sincere *Lovers of Truth and Peace*. But,

I already see an Objection against it; You (*Doctor*) say, Pag. 2. *An Act of State has appointed this Day to be FOR EVER observed, to bewail the Sin of the Murder of the King*. However, I am sure, my Lord Bishop of *Salisbury* doth well remember, that in Times by-past, other Days have been appointed to be observed by *Acts of State*, upon such like Occasions; and one in particular, to declaim against *Gowry's detestable Conspiracy*, which is now forgot: His Lordship also knows, that in *Numb.* 21. when, for the People's speaking against *God* and *Moses*, the Lord sent Fiery Serpents, which destroyed many of them; Upon their Confession of their Sin, *Moses*, at their Entreaty, prayed for them; and (as it is in the 8th and 9th Verses) *The Lord said unto Moses, Make thee a fiery Serpent, and set it upon a Pole; and it shall come to pass; that every one that is bitten, when he looketh upon it, shall live: And Moses made a Serpent of Brass, and put it upon a Pole; and it came to pass, that, if a Serpent had bitten any Man, when he beheld the Serpent of Brass, he lived*. You see, Sir, *this was God's own Institution*; and that, I hope, was at least as good as your *Act of State*. Let us see now what became of this *brazen Serpent*; 2 *Kings* 18. *The good King Hezekiah*, (and there were very few good ones
in

in those days) *who did that which was right in the Sight of the Lord, broke in pieces the brazen Serpent that Moses had made [for unto those days the Children of Israel did burn Incense to it] and he called it, Nehushtan.* And that God highly approved this Act of this *glorious Reformer*, is evident from the very next Verse, which records, that *after him was none like him among all the Kings of Judah, nor any that were before him.*

And now, Sir, to dismiss this *Black-Day*; allow me to observe, that there is not one Syllable in either of my *Letters*, reflecting on *the Act of State*, which ordained the Observation of the 30th of *January*; but I term it a *Madding-Day*, because our *Parasitical Court-Priests* would not keep the Peace, but on that Day did set the Nation on *Madding*, by infusing Principles of *Slavery* into her *Free-born People*.

(Page 7.) You pick a Quarrel with me about my *Epistle Dedicatory*, and upbraid me for courting *the Populace*, and Dedicating to *the sincere Lovers of Old-England, in Aldgate-Parish*; and say, *Sure the King and Queen, or else the Lords of the Council, might have been made the Patrons of a Work that pretends to what Ludlow's doth.* But, whatever you think of yourself, or the World of you, methinks 'twas something sawcy, even in you, to prefix *their Majesties Sacred Names* to so silly a Book, as was your *first Defence*; and 'tis as arrogant, to entitle, *the Most Reverend and Right Reverend the Arch-Bishops and Bishops, the Nobility, Gentry, &c.* to this *Second*; and to begin, as if you were seated on the Throne, *MY LORDS and GENTLEMEN.* And it seems most impudent, to tell them, that *upon the Reputation or Dishonour of King Charles the First, and the Principles which maintain the one, or those that propagate the other* (as much as if you had said, *upon my Scriblings*) *depend the Being and Well-being of our present Church and State; and consequently the Life and Preservation of our present King and Queen.* But, whatever you may do, 'tis not for the mean Shrubs of the Laiety, to soar so high as you presume; and I took mine to be a modest and inoffensive Dedication, and do yet think it ought to be esteemed such, though you snarl, and, in your gay and angry Humour, make Distinctions, if not a Schism, and that in your own Parish; and very prodigally throw-out to *Ludlow*, a good number of Benefactors, because they do not believe that they were the only good Men, who took part with the King against the Parliament; who, you say, *only did their Duties in standing by their Prince, according to the Laws of the Land, and the Oaths they had taken.* Now, if this be not an inconsiderate and weak Way of arguing, why did not you and your Brethren do your Duty; and (as the *Jacobites* query) stand by King *James*, to whom you were sworn? And, as to your *Old Englishmen*, whom you cull-out and set-by for yourself, under the Notion of *Lovers of the Government, by King, Lords, and Commons*; I doubt not but there are of your Acquaintance, a great many Pretenders thereto; and yet, if a Man could stand behind the Hangings, at your *Club at the Pye Tavern*, he might hear many of 'em kick at the Healths of *King William and Queen Mary*; and yet be the first who will propose and urge the drinking the King's Health: which, every Boy understands, is, in their meaning, *King James's.*

To proceed, *Page 9*, you tell me, that *I begin my Epistle with a prophane piece of Wit; namely, THE CHURCH, THE CLERGY; but that the best of it is but borrowed.* Now, I hope, we of the *Laiety*, may, without committing the Sin of Sacrilege, borrow and lend this Commodity amongst ourselves; and, were all Clergy-Men as dull as yourself, Doctor, 'twould be as great a Sin to borrow of them, as to rob a Spittle. *The piece of Wit* which you here term *prophane*, was only a *seasonable Exhortation to you, to shew a little regard to Sense, Truth and Christianity*, in your future writings; and this your last Book demonstrates, that of all the Scribblers of the Age, you ought most to have attended to this Caution. But, *this was prophane Wit*: ay, no doubt of it; *there's no Salvation; can there be any Wit, out of the Church?* Wit is ever prophaned, say these Borderers upon it, if any Man touches it but themselves. However, I will adventure to borrow again, from my Old *Lay Friend*, the most ingenious Mr. *Andrew Marvell*. "Albeit (saith he) Wit be not
 "inconsistent and incompatible with a Clergy-Man; yet, neither is it inseparable
 "from them: So that it is of concernment to my Lords the Bishops, henceforward
 "to repress those of 'em who have no Wit, from Writing; and to take care that
 "even those that have it, do husband it better, as not knowing to what Exigency
 "they may be reduced."

You say, *Pag. 10.* *I shall betake myself, with all the brevity I can, to consider your various Charges, you so imprudently draw-up against the King's and Queen's Grand-Father, both in your Epistle and in your Book itself.* And *Pag. 11*, you fall to work: *In your Epistle you tell us of a Letter which the Prince wrote to the Pope, which, from the beginning to the end, savours of Popery; and you mention your Particulars to prove it.* Of Prince Charles's Letter to the Pope.

First, You tell us, that he professes nothing could affect him so much, as an Alliance with a Prince that had the same apprehensions of true Religion with himself. You are in the right; I did say so; and, if I cannot make it out, you deservedly style me a *foul-mouth'd, scandalous, and leud Miscreant*: And a Man would think that you should not doubt your having caught me, when you bespeak me in these confident Words; *For God's sake, Sir, read-over the Letter again, and tell me where there is such a word, or any thing thing like it; I have the Letter now before me, as it is in Rushworth; and I assure you, upon reading it again, I find nothing like it; and I hope I am not so dull, but I understand common Sense; and, if it was not for the unmannerliness of the Expressoin, I would, I am justly provoked to say, leave your L—*

I must confess, *Sir*, this your Expostulation struck me with no small astonishment, and your bold and confident Assertion would, if possible, have made me ready to suspect myself (as you represent me) for one of the *vilest Impostors* that ever appeared in the World: for I never doubted but your *Mother* instructed you in the reading of *English*; and he who hath attained thereto, should not mistake in such a case as this. But,

Upon my second reading you; I observed, that you say, *I have the Letter now before me, AS IT IS IN RUSHWORTH*; this raised a Suspicion in me, that you were conscious that it was elsewhere to be found; why else should you say, *AS IT IS IN RUSHWORTH?* Turning to *Rushworth*, which you were poring-upon
 when

when you wrote your Defence, I was confirmed in my Opinion; for in the Margin to that Letter, in *Pag.* 82, I read, and you will see, when you put on Impartial Spectacles, this honest Intimation; *There is another Copy of the Prince's Letter to the Pope, published by several Hands, somewhat different from this.* Well, though you affirm, that you find nothing like what I charge, I can see, (as you presently shall) even in *Rushworth*, several Things as like it, as I have found a *Doctor* to be like a *Dunce*.

Indeed, [any thing] like this Letter to the Pope is not found in *Dr. Gauden's Famous Book, called Eicon Basilice*, nor in *the Works of King Charles*; neither it is in *Pembroke's Arcadia*, in *Heylin*, or in *Nalson*: But you, good Doctor, may see it in a Book which you have in your Library, for you quote it in your 13th Page; 'tis entituled, *Cabala, Mysteries of State (in Quarto) Pag.* 214. The *Royal Words* there, (which you could not, or, rather, would not, find,) are these; 'I shall never be so extremely affectionate to any thing in the World, as to endeavour Alliance with a Prince that hath the same apprehension of the true Religion with myself. The same thing is expressed by *Mr. Rushworth*, in these Words; 'Your Holiness's Conjecture of our Desire to contract an Alliance and Marriage with a Catholick Family and Princess, is agreeable both to your Wisdom and Charity; for we would never desire so vehemently to be joined in a strict and indissoluble Bond with any Mortal whatsoever, whose Religion we hated.

You proceed in the Examination, or rather, as you affirm, Detection of *Ludlow's Lying*, in the Particulars excepted from the *King's Letter to the Pope*.

2dly, Quoth you, *What, Sir, you say, That he calls Popery the Catholick, Apostolick, Roman Religion; all others, Novelty and Faction? In what part of the Letter find you this? Sir, I tell you 'tis false, there is not one syllable of this nature throughout the whole; and I challenge the whole World of Malice to shew me anything like it in the Letter: And now again, Sir, who ought to leave their L——? Why, Sir, to deal honestly with you, I did say as you charge me; but I must also tell you, that I see 'tis not false; for towards the end of the Letter, I find these Syllables; 'I entreat your Holiness to believe, that I have been always very far from encouraging Novelties, or to be a Partisan of any Faction, against the Catholick, Apostolick, Roman Religion.'* And, in answer to your Question, Who ought to leave their L——? I say, they should who are convicted thereof. Now go on to act your part.

3dly, You say, *That he protested, he did not esteem it a matter of greater Honour to be descended from great Princes, than to imitate them in the Zeal of their Piety, who had so often exposed their Estates and Lives in the exaltation of the Holy Cross: And, pray, where is the Fault in this? I hope any Man who knows what the Holy Cross means in its proper sense, (which is nothing else but the Christian Religion, purchased upon the Cross by the blood of Jesus,) will say, that this Protestation is so far from blackening this great Prince, that it redounds to his Credit and Honour. These are your Words, are they not, Doctor?*

This Passage is indeed a little diverting: *Ludlow, I observe, is no Lyar here.* You admit this Passage to be in the Letter; and, imagining you can justify it, do

not

not answer this, with *Thou lyes* ; for that, in your Canonical way of Arguing, appertains only to things unanswerable. But now, upon reading the Letter, it will seem to some as *though I had played the Wag in this Point*, and laid a Trap for you, as some Body did for me, who gave me to understand that *you were once a Presbyterian*, with which you make yourself very merry, as I see, pag. 50. For, if you will please to look into *the King's Letter*, 'tis there *HOLY CHAIR*, though, indeed, it is *Holy Cross* in mine; and I am sure, *such a Protestation to expose Estate and Life in the exaltation of the Holy Chair, doth not redound to the Honour of a Protestant King*; for we all know that *the Holy Chair*, (mean *the Cross* what it will) in its plain, proper, sense, *means nothing but down-right Popery*. But you, Doctor, know a ready way to bring yourself off with Honour; and, if I had not put a Trick upon you, in writing *Cross for Chair*, your Answer would have run thus; *For God's sake, Sir, read-over the Letter again, and tell me where there is any Protestation about imitating the Zeal of his Ancestor's Piety, in exposing his Estate and Life in the exaltation of the Holy Chair, or any thing like it: I am not so dull, but I understand common Sense; and this indeed (had it been in the Letter) savours of Popery, and would have blackened this great Prince: but you, Bold-face, are past all manner of Shame; and a man would think you are possessed; for there is not one word like this in the Letter; and I am justly provok'd to say, Leave your L——.*

Your next Cavil runs thus, (pag. 12.) *You say that he solemnly engaged to the Pope to spare nothing in the World, even to the hazarding his Life and Estate, to settle a thing so pleasing to God, as Unity with Rome. Surely, Sir, you are past all manner of shame; and a Man would think you were possessed; for there is not one word of this in the Letter; and none but a Person who cares not what Falsities he obtrudes upon the World, in order to deceive the silly and credulous part of Mankind, [THE LAIETY] would have so boldly printed such a notorious Falsbood as this is; and ought to leave his L——, Sir?*

Why now, Doctor, you are in the right again, and put-down my very Words; and as sure as you do so, so sure 'tis, that I charge nothing but the Truth: And, to shew you that *the King's Letter* hath many of the Words, I do here transcribe them; 'I will (*saieth the King*) employ myself, for the time to come, to have but one Religion, and one Faith.——Having resolved in myself to spare nothing in the World, and to suffer all manner of Discommodities, even to the hazarding of my Estate and Life, for a Thing so pleasing to God. And who now ought to leave *his Lying*, let the World judge.

N. B.

Having thus, Sir, offered what occurs for the right placing the before-charged Lies, allow me to make a Parallel observation upon you. You insert into your Title-Page this Expression; *Let the lying Lips be put to silence; which cruelly, disdainfully, and despitefully, speak against the Righteous*, Psal. 31. Now, at the rate of your talking, I might well say, *For God's sake turn to your Bible again, and tell me where you find these words*. The Text which I find in my Bible, *Psal. xxxi. 18.* runs thus; *Let the lying Lips be put to silence; which speak grievous things, proudly and contemptuously against the Righteous*. But then you will reply, 'This is the wonted Custom

tom of your Party; these *Presbyterians* have their constant recourse to the *Bible*, to oppose the *Liturgy*; but we *Laudean Church-men* never cite the *Bible*, when we can make the *Common-Prayer* to serve the turn; and the pestilent *Letter-writer* must know, that I took my Quotation out of the *Psalter*, not the *Psalms*; and there, in the 31st and 20th Verse, (though it be the 18th in the *Bible*) are the very words which I put-down. 'Tis true, *Sir*, I do find it thus; but how had I been intrapp'd, if I had never seen, or had not had the *Common Prayer-Book* by me, and found that you had an Authentick Author for what you put-down? What a Nest of *Ecclesiastical Wasps* should I have brought about my Ears, had I said, *Leave your L——, 'tis false, 'tis not so in my Bible?* And, pray, why may not I, (there being neither Statute nor Canon-Law prohibiting it) take the liberty to quote the *Bible* and the *Cabala*; when I quarrel not with you for reading the *Common Prayer-Book* and *Rushworth*?

To return to what you were upon: the last thing you said, was, *And who ought to leave his Lying?* You then say, (page 12.) *And, as for his [the King's] Reply to the Pope's Nuncio, which you mention; after these Falsehoods, pray, tell me in what Authentick Author I may find it? for I assure you, you have put so many false things together before, that you have so much lost your Credit with me, that I will believe nothing on your bare Assertion; and I do not doubt but every body that reads both, will be of my mind.*

Your Conclusion here, *Sir*, looks something fair; you seem content that every body should read both, and speak as he finds. I think they ought to do so; and I address you, in all humility, to be so ingenuous as to get Allowance that the Press may be open to both Sides, for what shall be hereafter published in this Controversy; for 'tis unreasonable that you should rail for what you idly call the *Church of England*, without controul, and under the publick Licence and Protection; and 'tis not only inconvenient to print at *Amsterdam*, but, in regard there are so many *Tories* and *Jacobites* employed in the *Custom-House*, 'tis no small Risque that every Man runs, who would bring-over any thing that is wrote for the Service of *Old-England*; I mean, the Government of *England*, by King *William* and Queen *Mary*, with Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament; and that you agree to be *Old-England* indeed. But I have too long digress'd.

You were telling me, that I have so much lost my Credit with you, that you will believe nothing on my bare Assertion. Upon this you must allow me to say, that you are laid so flat by the Reverend and pious *Dr. Walker*, in relation to the idle Story of *Sir John Brattle*, about *Dr. Gauden's* Book, commonly called the *King's*, (and which they say *Sir John* doth deny) and you have put-down so many things in your Defence of the Martyr, which are incredible, that your Credit is so much impaired with me, that I cannot believe every thing you assert. I therefore desire, that, for the future, you would give your Authorities (as I shall) for what you write; so that our Readers may know how to make a true Judgement of Things: And I must tell you, that, you being deficient in this Point in your *First Defence of King Charles*, I rather play'd than argued with you in my
former

former Letter. But I will now tell you, that I had the *King's Reply to the Nuncio*, upon delivering the *Pope's Letter* to him, from *Cabala, Mysteries of State*, page 214, where you may read it in these words.

‘ I kiss his Holiness Feet, for the Favour and Honour he doth me ; so much the more esteemed, by how much the less deserved of me hitherto ; and his Holiness shall see what I will do hereafter.’ [And so did *England, Scotland, Ireland*, and the whole World ; his Bishops and Chaplains pressed Popish Innovations, and preached Doctrines of gross Popery.] ‘ And I think my Father will do the like ; so that his Holiness shall not repent him of what he hath done.’

N. B.

Now, *Si*, *Cabala* is a Book of clear Credit, and not to be gain-say'd by you ; for you unluckily quote the same Book in the very same Paragraph, wherein you raise your Hue and Cry after my *Au' bentick Author*.

And now, for the further illustration of the Matters which I have too long dwelt-upon, I shall here transcribe, not only that Letter we have been talking-of, but that of the *Pope* to the *King*, which he answered in so highly-obliging terms ; and, for your better Satisfaction, you may compare them with *Cabala*, p. 212, &c.

POPE GREGORY the XVth's LETTER to the PRINCE of WALES,
afterwards King CHARLES the First.

Most Noble Prince, Health and Light of Divine Grace, &c.

GREAT BRITAIN, abounding with worthy Men, and fertile Virtues, so that the whole Earth is full of the Glory of her Renown, induceth many times the *Thoughts of the great Shepherd* to the consideration of her Praises. In regard, that presently in the Infancy of his Church, the King of Kings vouchsafed to choose her with so great Affection for his Inheritance, that almost, it seems, there entered into her at the same time, the Eagles of the *Roman Standard*, and the Ensigns of the Cross. And not few of her Kings, indoctrinated in the true Knowledge of Salvation, gave example of Christian Piety to other Nations, and after-Ages, preferring the *Cross to the Scepter*, and the Defence of Religion to the Desire of Command. So that, meriting Heaven thereby (the Crown of eternal Bliss) they obtained likewise, upon Earth, the Lustre and glorious Ornaments of Sanctity. But in this time of the *Briannick Church*, how much is the case altered ? yet we see, that to this day, the *English Court is fenced and guarded with moral Virtues*, which were sufficient Motives to induce us to love this Nation, it being some Ornament to the Christian Name, if it were likewise a Defence and Sanctuary of *Catholick Virtues*.

Wherefore, the more the Glory of your most Serene Father, and the Property of your natural Disposition, delighteth us, the more ardently we desire that the Gates of Heaven should be opened unto you, and that you should purchase the universal

versal Love of the Church. For, whereas that Bishop, *Gregory* the Great, of most pious Memory, introduced amongst the English People, and taught their Kings the Gospel, and a *Reverence to the Apostolical Authority*; We, much inferior to him in Virtue and Sanctity, as equal in Name, and height of Dignity, it is reason we should follow his most holy Steps, and *procure the Salvation of those Kingdoms*, especially (most Serene Prince) *there being great hopes offered to us at this time of some successful Issue of your Determination.*

Wherefore, you, having come to *Spain*, and at the Court of the Catholick King, with desire to match with the House of *Austria*, it seemed good to us, most affectionately to commend this your Intent, and to give clear testimony, that at this time *your Person is the most principal Care that our Church hath.* For, *seeing you pretend to match with a Catholick Damosel, it may easily be presumed, that the antient Seed of Christian Piety; which so happily flourished in the Minds of British Kings, may, by God's Grace, reverberate in your Breast.* For *it is not probable that he that desires such a Wife, should abhor the Catholick Religion, and rejoice at the overthrow of the Holy Roman Church.* To which purpose, we have caused continual Prayers to be made, and most vigilant Orisons to the Father of Lights, for you (fair Flower of the Christian World, and only Hope of Great Britam) that he would bring you to the Possession of that most noble Inheritance, which your Ancestors got you by the Defence of the Apostolick Authority, and *Destruction of Monsters of Heresies.* Call to memory the times of old; ask your Fore-fathers, and *they will shew you what way leads to Heaven,* and perceiving what Path mortal Princes pass to the heavenly Kingdom, behold the Gates of Heaven open. Those most holy Kings of *England*, which, parting from *Rome*, accompanied with Angels, *most piously revered* the Lord of Lords, and *the Prince of the Apostles* in his Chair. Their Works and Examples are Mouths wherewith God speaks, and warneth you, that *you should imitate their Customs, in whose Kingdoms you succeed.*

Can you suffer that they be called Hereticks, and condemned for wicked Men, when the Faith of the Church testifieth, that they reign with Christ in Heaven, and are exalted above all the Princes of the Earth, and that they, at this time reached you their hands from that most blessed Country, and brought you safely to the Court of the Catholick King, and desire to turn you to the Womb of the Roman Church; wherein, praying most humbly, with most unspeakable Groans, to the God of Mercy, for your Salvation, to reach you the Arms of Apostolical Charity, to embrace most lovingly your Children, so often desired, and to point-out, as it were with a Finger, the blessed Hopes of Heaven. And, truly you could do no Act of greater Comfort to all Nations of Christendom, than to return the Possession of those most noble Isles to the Prince of the Apostles, whose Authority for so many Ages was held in England for the defence of the Kingdom, and divine Oracle: which will not be uneasy to do, if you open your Breast (upon which depends the Prosperity of those Kingdoms) to God, who is knocking. And we have so great desire of the Honour and Exaltation of your Royal Name,
that

Puritans.

These Desires of the Pope were seconded with continual Endeavours of Swarms of Jesuits and Priests permitted to reside amongst us.

that *we wish, that you should be called* through the whole World (together with your most Serene Father, *the Freer of Great-Britain, and Restorer* of her antient Religion.* Whereof *we will not lose all hopes,* putting them in mind in whose hands the Hearts of Kings lie. and he that rules all-nations of the world, by whose Grace † *we will, with all possible Diligence, labour to effect it.* And you cannot choose but acknowledge in these Letters the Care of our Apostolical Charity to procure your Happiness, which it will never repent us to have written, if the Reading thereof shall at leastwise *stir some Sparks of Catholick Religion in the Heart of so great a Prince,* who we desire may enjoy Eternal Comforts, and flourish with the Glory of all Virtues.

Given in *Rome,* in the Palace of *St. Peter,* the 20th of *April,* 1623.

In the third of our *Pontifado.*

The PRINCE of WALES his Reply to the POPE'S LETTER.

Most Holy Father,

I RECEIVED the Dispatch from your Holiness with great Content, and with that Respect which the Piety and Care wherewith your Holiness writes, doth require: It was an unspeakable Pleasure to me to read the generous Exploits of the Kings my Predecessors, in whose Memory, Posterity hath not given those Praises and Elogies of Honour as were due to them: I do believe that your Holiness hath set their Examples before my Eyes, to the end I might imitate them in all my Actions. For in truth they have often exposed their Estates and Lives for the Exaltation of the Holy Chair; and the Courage with which they have assaulted the Enemies of the Cross of Jesus Christ, hath not been less than the Care and Thought which I have, to the end that the Peace and Intelligence which hath hitherto been wanting in Christendom, might be bound with a true and strong Concord. For, † as the common Enemy of the Peace watcheth always to put Hatred and Dissention amongst Christian Princes; so I believe that the Glory of God requires that we should endeavour to unite them: And I do not esteem it a greater Honour to be descended from so great Princes, than to imitate them in the Zeal of their Piety. In which it helps me very much to have known the Mind and Will of our thrice honoured Lord and Father, and the holy Intentions of his Catholick Majesty, to give a happy Concurrence to so laudable a Design: for it grieves him exceedingly to see the great Evils that grow from the Division of Christian Princes, which the Wisdom of your Holiness foresaw, § when it judged the Marriage which you pleased

* The Pope well knew that his Design of destroying the Northern Heresy, had been considerably advanced in K. James's time.

† The Roman Strumpet is very industrious to corrupt the Earth with her Fornications, Rev. 19. 2.

‡ The Interests of Popery and Tyranny were always found very well to agree, and this Prince was easily persuaded, that his Crown, and the Pope's Chair, had common Friends and common Enemies.

§ The Pope prepared a strange Wife for him, which, according to Scripture Truth, is a dangerous Preparative for a strange God; surely they will turn-away your Heart after their Gods, 1 Kings, 11. 2.

to

N. B.

to design between the Infanta of *Spain* and myself, to be necessary to procure so great a Good; for 'tis very certain, that I shall never be so extreamly affectionate to any thing in the World, as to endeavour Alliance with a Prince that hath the same Apprehension of the true Religion with myself: Therefore, I intreat your Holiness to believe, that I have been always very far from Novelties, or to be a Partisan of any Faction against the Catholick, Apostolick, Roman Religion: But, on the contrary, I have sought all Occasions to take-away the Suspicion that might rest upon me, and that I will employ myself for the time to come, to have but one Religion and one Faith, seeing that we all believe in one Jesus Christ. Having resolved in myself, to spare nothing that I have in the World, and to suffer all manner of Discómmodities, even to the hazarding of my Estate and Life, for a thing so pleasing unto God: It rests only that I thank your Holiness for the Permission you have been pleased to afford me, and, I pray God to give you a blessed Health and his Glory, after so much pains which your Holiness takes in his Church.

This Letter to the *Pope* was presently printed in *Spain*, in several Languages. And I can shew it you in many Authors of Credit; it is found recorded by *Andrew du Chesne*, Chronographer to the French King, in his History of *England, Scotland, and Ireland*, Lib. 22. The French *Mercury*. (a never-controlled Author) hath it also, as I here give it you, in Tom. 9. p. 510. printed Anno 1623. Mr. *James Howel*, an Attendant upon the King in the Spanish Expedition, (and who ever remained firm to him, being imprisoned by the Parliament for a Malignant in the time of the War) doth also point at it in his *Dodona's Grove, or Vocal Forest*, printed Anno 1640. He saith there, pag. 128: ' That the Pope was a great Friend to the ' intended Alliance with *Spain*, and wrote to the Prince. This Letter is also printed in *Pryn's Popish Royal Favourite*, p. 40. in French, and likewise in English, agreeing exactly with the Copy in *Cabala*: And Mr. *Pryn* saith, ' That he hath seen ' another Copy of this Letter long since in English, being somewhat different from ' the French in some expressions, though not in Substance; and, perchance, he ' wrote two of this Nature: but it appears that such Letters really passed between ' the King and the Pope, by divers ancient printed Copies of them in sundry Lan- ' guages. Thus speaks Mr. *Pryn* himself; and you will credit him, because you tell me he was a Convert, and rectified many of his Errors; yet he never retracted, or acknowledged, this to be one.

And now, *Sir*, to expostulate this Matter with you; Is it credible, that a Man of common Honesty, nay a *D.D.* who styles himself *their Majesties Chaplain*, and dedicates to them, that a pretender to Learning and good Manners, who had notice from *Ru. kworth*, that there was another Copy of the King's Letter to the Pope, published by several Hands, different from his; that he, who by his own Confession hath *Cabala*, and uses it to serve his Purpose, should treat a Person who writes Truth out of the same Author, with the unbecoming Expression,—and that three times over in one Leaf,—of *Leave your L*——; that such a Man as you, in such
a Case

a Case as this, should say, 'Tis false; you are past all manner of shame; and one would think that you are possessed? But let us see what follows, my honest Tell-truth.

Pag. 14. you fall upon Dr. Leighton's Case, and call the most barbarous and diabolical Sentence, which Bishop Laud procured to be pronounced, and most cruelly executed upon him, his Punishment; and say, That you are something of the mind that he met-with hard Fate, and such as, had you been one of his Judges, [with your present sense of things] you should not have consented to. So that, it seems, you cannot be confident but you might have been as wicked as Laud himself. And by the discovery which you indiscreetly make of yourself a little after, (of which more presently) I have reason to suspect that you would have made the worst Bishop of the two; and then I am sure you had been a very wicked Bishop indeed. You say, Let me tell you, Sir, Dr. Leighton was a great Transgressor, and deserved a severe Punishment.———Must it be Persecution, to call such a foul-mouth'd Person to an Account, and to punish him? But you, of all Men, Dr. Brazen-face, ought to be very tender of justifying the severe punishment of a foul Mouth, lest a Jury of your Neighbours (should you be called to an account, if for nothing more than your malicious slandering of that Reverend Divine Dr. Walker) should find you to be a foul-mouth'd Person; for in such a case [according to your present sense of things] I am something of the mind, you would esteem it a hard Fate, to have your Ears cut, your Nose slit; to be branded in the Face, stand in the Pillory, pay ten thousand Pounds Fine, and be perpetually imprisoned.

You proceed next (pag. 15.) saying, I have look'd into the Case of Pryn, Burton, and Bastwick.———[I do, upon a full consideration of the whole, wish from my Heart their Punishment had been some other way;] I do not think that the way of punishing these Persons was at all Politick or Prudent, [because not for the Interest, as things then stood, either of the King or the Church]. And if Bishop Laud had kept in his Study at that time, and not appeared at all, either to hear the Trial, or assist in the Sentence, it had been better for him, and [those Designs of Uniformity he had so much set his Heart upon.]

Whoever weighs this last Paragraph, must agree in what I but now hinted, that you, even you, Doctor; would have been a worse Bishop than Laud. You well approve the punishing of these three Persons; but the way was not Politick or Prudent, because not for the Interest [as things then stood] of King or Church. Let you (subtil Doctor) alone for Mischief, though you have a very unhappy Talent at writing in Defence thereof; you would have done it as effectually, but in a more cunning manner; you would have been found as Arch and Crafty, but a more close Youth; like the Persecutors in Ancient Times, whose Practices are most ingenuously express'd by Mr. Marvel in these words; 'In Persecution, the Clergy 'as yet, wisely interposed the Magistrate betwixt themselves and the People, not 'caring, so their End were attained, how odious they render'd him: And you 'may observe, that, for the most part, hitherto, they stood crouching, and shot either 'over the Emperor's Back, or under his Belly: But in process of Time they be-

‘ came bolder and open-faced, and persecuted before the Sun at Mid-day ; Bishops
‘ grew worse, but Bishopricks every day better and better.

You, *Politick Doctor*, in your great Wisdom, would have taken a more prudent course than Bishop *Laud* ; you would, in your Study, have laid such a Scheme as this ; *A Jefferies*, or a *Wright*, should have been made *Lord Chief-Justice* ; a *Graham*, and a *Burton*, should have pack’d a *Jury of London Tories*, to give such a Verdict as they should have directed : Hereby these Gentlemen should have been *Whip’d*, *Pilloried*, *Stigmatized*, and what else Bishop *Hollingsworth* pleas’d, and all by the Hands of *the Laity*, and that *according to Law* ; the *Bishop*, *good Man*, neither assisting *at Trial*, nor *Sentence*, but close at his Book, *as innocent as a wild Bear*, and *as harmless as a Tyger*.

Well, *it had been better for Laud*, and *those Designs of Uniformity which he had so much set his heart upon*.

Laud’s design of an Union with Rome.

And pray, tell me, *Sir*, in all Love, what Uniformity was this which thus run in *Laud’s Head*, and which you seem so much to approve ? It must certainly be the honest Design of coming to a *due Temper*, to a *uniting of Protestants* : No, no, nothing like it. *Mr. Whitlock* was a good Man ; and you say, *pag. 14*, *That you do not in the least question the Truth of what he writes*. Take, then, his Account of this *Monster*, rather than *Martyr*, and you will see which way his Head turn’d. *Whitl. Mem. pag. 97*. ‘ In Arch-Bishop *Laud’s Diary*, under his Hand, (produced in ‘ Evidence against him at his Trial) ‘ are Passages of his being offered to be made ‘ a Cardinal ; which he said, that he could not suffer till *Rome* were other than ‘ it is.

[He wickedly and traiterously designed, that, upon the Pope’s yielding, in some few Points, (as the *Common Prayers* to be continued in English, and such other Trifles,) he would deliver-over the possession of *these most noble Isles to the Prince of the Apostles*.]

Whitl. pag. 92. It was proved against him, that he should say, ‘ The Pope was ‘ not Antichrist, but the Head of the Church ; and that the Protestant Religion, ‘ and Romish Religion, were all one ; and, if the one was false, so was the other.

‘ He chid *Dr. Hall* (as in *Whitlock*, p. 91.) for giving the Holy Father the Epithets of Antichristian, &c. He held the Pope to be Metropolitan Bishop of the ‘ World.

‘ He furnished the King’s Chapel, (they are *Mr. Whitlock’s own words*, p. 85.) ‘ that Seminary Priests would come thither for their Devotion and Adoration ; and ‘ some of them were instanced, (*this was at his Trial still*) who said they knew no ‘ difference between their Churches and this Chappel, and some other of our ‘ Churches, as they were ordered.

He endeavours to make the King absolute.

To this I shall subjoin a few Words out of *Rusworth’s Third Collection*, Vol. 2. *pag. 818*. ‘ Arch-Bishop *Laud* endeavoured to advance the Power of the Council- ‘ Table, the Canons of the Church, and the King’s Prerogative, above the Laws ‘ of the Land ; and said, that, as long as he sat at the Council-Board, they should ‘ know, that an Order of that Board should be of equal Force with an Act of Par- ‘ liament.

liament. And at another time said, that he would crush them to pieces that would not yield to the King's power. He styled the Parliament *Puritans*, and commended the *Papists* for harmless and peaceable Subjects. He said, ' That there must be a blow given to the Church, such as had not been given, before it could be brought to Conformity.

Was not this a rare *Head of the Church of England*? Why may not a Man for once, and not practise it, borrow your Words, (dear Doctor) *pag. 53*, and say, *I cannot think Laud would have talked thus, unless he had been acted by seven Devils worse than himself; and then I am sure they must be Devils indeed?*

But no more of *Laud* in this place; I return to you, *Mr. Chaplain at Aldgate*, Though you do not commend the doing of the Business of *Pryn, Burton, and Bastwick*, in *Laud's* imprudent way, and that for a weighty Reason, because *you would have done it better*. You proceed, *pag. 16*, saying, *The Justice of the Nation ought not to be afraid of accounting with such bold Men, as they shewed themselves.*——*Mr. Burton*, speaking of the Bishops; instead of *Pillars*, calls them *Caterpillars*; instead of *Fathers, Step-fathers*. O horrid! is this true? Why, this was almost as bad as his laying-open the *Innovations in Doctrine, Worship, and Ceremonies, which had lately crept into the Church, and wishing the People to beware of them*: which I mention to be charged upon him; and I question whether *his Ears*, and 5000 *l.* Fine, would have paid the Reckoning, if *Hollingworth* had been in *Laud's* place.

The offensive words in Mr. Burton's book.

But, what then would have aton'd for *Dr. Bastwick's Transgression*? He (say you) in his Answer to the Information against him, inserted these words; *That the Prelates are Invaders of the King's Prerogative; Contemners and Despisers of the Holy Scripture; Advancers of Popery and Superstition, Idolatry and Profaneness: Also they abuse the King's Authority, to the Oppression of his Loyal Subjects; and therein exercise great Cruelty, Tyranny, and Injustice; and, in Execution of those impious Performances, they shew neither Wit, Honesty, nor Temperance; nor are they either Servants of God, or of the King, but of the Devil: being Enemies to God, and of every living Thing that is good*: And concluded, that he, the said *Dr. Bastwick*, is ready to maintain these things thus put-down.

The words in Dr. Bastwick's book that were the ground of his cruel punishment.

Now, seeing that they cut-off his *Ears*, for these Expressions, without bringing the Point to trial; I will put myself in his place, and stake mine against yours, that I will make-good every Syllable in this Charge against that *Caterpillar Laud*, and some of his Brethren; when I see you take it to pieces, and say, in your Rhetorical Flights, *This is false; That's a Lie*. And I will give it under my hand into the Bargain, that I will prove that these Bishops were a Generation of Vipers, which on any terms would have eaten their way to Preferment, through the Intrails of either Church or State. You may make the best on't, Doctor.

In your 17th Page, you affirm, *That these three Men suffered for Libelling the Government, and putting Indignities and Affronts upon the then legal Administrators.*

strators. I have shown you the heinous Transgressions of Dr. *Bastwick* and Mr. *Burton*; but you leave us in the dark as to Mr. *Pryn*'s; therefore, pray, let this put you in mind, when you write next, to tell the World what those Indignities and Affronts were, for which Mr. *Pryn* suffered; because I have been told, 'twas for publishing a Book, which Dr. *Buchner*, Chaplain to the Arch-bishop, (I do do not mean the *Villain Laud*, but that excellent *Pattern for Bishops*, Dr. *Abbot*) did approve and license to be printed.

Having finished your Vindication of the Punishment of these Persons, you dismiss it thus, page 17. And so much by way of Answer to that part of your Book, by which you have endeavoured to blacken the good King's Reign, and to run-down the Reputation of Bishop *Laud*; and to express your Indignation against me for saying otherways he was a very good Man. [I see a Man cannot, for his Heart, prevail upon this Hare-brain'd Doctor, to let *Laud* alone; but, whether we will or not, he will go-on to murder the Reputation of this his *Martyr*.] You run-on thus, (without Fear, Wit, or Honesty,) I say still he was a good Man, and have a very good Man to back me, Judge *Whitlock*, a Man of a clear Credit, and sound Judgement; who, as his Son tells me in his Memoirs, said of him, that he had too much Fire, but was a just and good man. [This is to purpose, if it hath the necessary ingredient of Truth:] But I observe now, that, when you have a sure Second, one upon whom you can depend, you constantly quote the Page as well as Author; but you left me here, very unkindly, to turn-over a large folio; to find Judge *Whitlock*'s Character of *Laud*; and at length I pitched upon it in the Mem. page 32, in these very words:—*Laud was more busy in Temporal Affairs and Matters of State, than his Predecessors of late times had been: Judge Whitlock, (who was anciently, and thoroughly acquainted with him, and his Disposition,) would say, he was too full of Fire, though a just and good Man; and that his want of Experience in State-Matters, and his too much Zeal for the Church, and Heat, if he proceeded in the way he was then in, would set this Nation on fire. But this you intended to conceal: And now I think that the Judge did not only speak like a very good Man, but like a Prophet; and I wish you much Joy of Mr. Whitlock's Authority; whom, some will tell you, you had much better have let-alone.*

Judge *Whitlock*'s opinion of Arch-bishop *Laud*.

Well; that I may once for all rid my hands of this troublesome *Bishop*, such you make him to this day, I will give you his Character from another very good Man, a Person of clear Credit and sound Judgement, we all know, that is, Sir *Harbottle Grimston*; 'tis in his Speech upon the Arch-bishop's Impeachment, in 1641, which you will find printed in the Continuation of *Rushworth's Collections*, now published.

Mr. *Grimston*'s speech against him.

We are (saith he) fallen upon the great Man, the Arch-bishop of Canterbury: look upon him as he is in his Highness, and he is the Sty of all pestilent Filth, that hath infected the State, and Government of the Church and Common-wealth; look upon him in his Dependencies, and he is the Man, the only Man that hath raised and advanced all those (that, together

together with himself, have been the Authors and Causers of all the Ruins, Miseries, and Calamities we now groan-under.

Who is it but he only, that brought-in the Earl of Strafford, a fit Instrument and Spirit to act and execute all his wicked and bloody Designs in these Kingdoms?

Who is it but he only, that brought in Secretary Wüdebank, the very Broker and Pander to the Whore of Babylon?

Who is it but he only, that hath advanced Bishop Manwaring, the Bishop of Bath and Wells, the Bishop of Oxford, and Bishop Wren; the least of all, but the most unclean one?

These are Men that should have fed Christ's Flock; but they are the Wolves that devoured them: It was the Happiness of our Church, when the Zeal of God's House did eat-up the Bishops; glorious and brave Martyrs, that went to the Stake in the Defence of the Protestant Religion: but the Zeal of these Bishops, hath been to eat-up and persecute the Church. He hath been, and is, the common Enemy to all Goodness and good Men, So much for this, otherways good Man. What have we next?

You say, Page 18, I come now to make some Reflections upon your Scotch Story, which you have told with so much Venom and Partiality, that you have every way acted like your malicious and ungodly self. — You begin with a Relation of Bishop Laud's (what, more of Laud still?) composing a Common-Prayer-Book for them; and tell us, how the Mutinies and Disturbances in Scotland sprung from thence; which truly I am very sorry for.

Of Laud's Liturgy
for Scotland.

'Tis well; we are agreed in this point, that from the imposing this Liturgy, the Scottish Troubles did arise; so that, hitherto, there's no Ungodliness in my Story. But (you proceed) I am sure it had been better for them, and [the Christian Religion] professed amongst them, if they had submitted to the Usage of that Book, and continued it ever since.

This, in truth, Sir, is ungodly and malicious all over; you are sure it had been better for the Christian Religion, &c. Why not Protestant Religion? CHRISTIAN RELIGION is indeed, in its true and genuine sense, so good an Expression, that a better cannot be found for the only true Religion: but these Laudean Churchmen, the Papists in disguise, must be narrowly watched; for 'tis notoriously known, that they hold the Roman-Church to be a true Church, though we know 'tis idolatrous. We must hold them to the Shiboleth, [PROTESTANT] when they pretend to tell us what is best for the Christian Religion: Laud himself spoke at the rate which you (crafty Turn-Coat) here do; his Letters expressed his fear of delay in bringing-in the Common-Prayer-book, for the great good (not of the Church of Scotland, but) of the Church.

My

My *Lord Bishop of Salisbury* may surely be allowed to be a more competent Judge. in this matter. than you: He saith, *Page 30*, of his *Memoires*; ‘ The Liturgy had some Alterations from the English, which made it more invidious, and less satisfactory — The imposing it, really varied from their former Practices and Constitutions. — *Page 33*, The Lords petitioned, complaining against the Liturgy, and Book of Canons; offering, under the highest Penalties, to prove they contained things both contrary to Religion and the Laws of the Land. *Page 36*, The Earls of *Traquaire* and *Roxburgh*, by Letter to the King, advised him to secure the People of that which they so much apprehended, the fear of Innovation of Religion; saying, that they found few, or none, well satisfied. — *Page 33*; The Earl of *Traquaire* went to Court, and gave account, that all the Troubles were occasioned by the introducing the Liturgy: with which scarce a Member of the Council (except the Bishops) was well-satisfied; neither were all these cordially for it; for the Archbishop of *St. Andrews*, from the beginning, had withstood these Designs; and the Archbishop of *Glasgow* was worse pleased.

Some expressions in it bordering upon the Popish doctrine of Transubstantiation.

See, now, what the *Scottish Nation* offered against this *Liturgy*, which you, *Doctor*, are sure, *it had been better for them, and the Christian Religion, if they had received and used it*; Their Commissioners in their Charge against *Laud*, (exhibited in our Parliament, in 1641,) say, *Page 11*, &c.) ‘ This Book inverteth the Order of the Communion in the Book of *England*; of the divers secret Reasons of this change, we mention one only: In joining the Spiritual Praise and Thanksgiving, which is in the Book of *England*, pertinently after the Communion, with the Prayer of Consecration before the Communion; and that, under the Name of Memorial or Oblation, for no other end, but that the Memorial and Sacrifice of Praise, mentioned in it, may be understood according to the Popish Meaning; *Bellar. de Missá, lib. 2, cap. 21*. Not of the Spiritual Sacrifice, but of the Oblation of the Body of the Lord.

‘ The corporal Presence of Christ’s Body is also to be found here; for the words of the Mass-Book, serving to this purpose, which are not to be found in the Book of *England*, are taken in here; Almighty God is incalled [or invoked], that, of his Almighty Goodness, he may vouchsafe so to bless and sanctify with his Word and Spirit, these Gifts of Bread and Wine, that they be unto us the Body and Blood of Christ. — *On the other part*, the Expressions of the Book of *England*, at the delivery of the Elements; “ Of feeding on Christ by Faith, and of eating and drinking in remembrance that Christ died for thee,” are utterly deleted.

Now one would think, that, if such a *whiffing Doctor* as you are, were not past all shame, (as you affirm me to be) it would make you blush, (but we may sooner expect to see you burst) that you, (who appeared but now very tender of passing a Judgement upon the Actions of *the accursed Star-Chamber*), should be found so pragmatical, so arrogant, as to censure King *Charles* the First, (who damn’d this very Book by Act of Parliament) and the Kingdom and Church of *Scotland* in this Point;

Point; and declare, That you are sure it had been better for them, and the Christian Religion, if they had submitted to the Usage of this Babylonish Book and continued it ever since. But you are so inflexible, that there's little hope of reconciling you to that Nation, (I had almost said, to the King, and Queen) unless this well-approved Liturgy be sent-down once more, and entertained there. For then (you say, pag. 18.) the worship of God would be performed with [Order and Decency], and in a way suitable to his Divine Nature and Perfections: And, consequently, could not have been nauseous to the soberly-wise, and seriously-devout, part of that Kingdom, [as now it is] by reason of those rude and undigested Addresses, those ex-tempore and unpremeditated Expostulations with God; those bold and saucy Applications, that, for want of a good Book, or a well-framed Form of Prayer, [of their own before-hand, and committed to memory] are so commonly made use of in their Pulpits; too many of the accounts of which we have lately, since the great Turn in Scotland, received from very good Hands and undeniable Testimonies.

This is, I am sure, a nauseating, if not an ungodly and prophane, way of Talking: You, poor, weak Man as you are, run away with a gross Mistake; that because there were Bishops in Scotland till the great Turn, (as you term the legal Settlement of that Church by their present Majesties) they had also a Common-Prayer-Book: but, (believe me, or let it alone, as you please,) they had no such thing; it was detested, even by many of their Episcopal Clergy. I shall not pretend to remark upon your most unbecoming and malicious Representation of the praying of the present Ministers of that Kingdom; but, 'tis well known that their Divines are of good Ability, and every way well qualified for the discharge of the Ministerial Function. And, whereas you pretend to recommend a well-framed Form of Prayer of their own, before-hand, and committed to Memory, for the prevention of rude and undigested Addresses, bold and saucy Applications; I would fain know of you, what Canon allows a Minister of the Church of England to frame his own Prayer, and to mutter out a good part of it, so as nobody can tell what he says: And, then, to rise constantly in his Voice, when he comes to *the Ox*— and *the Ass*—.

But, to talk seriously of this most serious Matter; pray, see what the Devout and Learned Bishop of Salisbury says of such Doctors as yourself, in his Sermon, Jan. 30, 1680, pag. 9. ‘ Many weak Persons, who, by the Heat of their Tempers, are ‘ inclined to entertain Prejudices, hold, that Addressing to God in Prayer, and the ‘ being guided by the inward Motions of Grace, and God’s Holy Spirit, are but ‘ illusions of Fancy, if not the Contrivances of designing Men.

Pag. 10. ‘ Earnestness in Prayer, and depending on the inward Assistances of ‘ God’s Holy Spirit: How have Men, who know or value these things little themselves, taken occasion to disparage them with much Impudence and Scorn?

Now, Sir, upon the whole Matter, I do think it might tend to the Publick Peace, if my Lord Bishop of London would please to suspend such a dry and insipid Doctor as you are, from publishing even *ex-tempore and unpremeditated Defences*, and to injoin you a well-framed Form of Defending, so that it may be performed with

with Order and Decency, and not be exposed to Contempt and Scorn, by reason of any rude and undigested *Addresses*, bold and saucy *Applications*, to their most Sacred Majesties, the Most Reverend and Right Reverend, the Arch-Bishops and Bishops, &c. For I perswade myself, that the *Ex-tempore* Rhimes of some Antick *Jack-Pudding*, may deserve Printing better than your empty and nonsensical Pamphlets; and that it had been better to have set some Ballad-singer to have bewailed the King's Misfortunes, than so ridiculous an Orator as you are found to be, who are so insipid, that there's not the least Spirit in any thing you say.

Where are you now, Sir? *Aye, but this Bold-face, says, This Liturgy [for Scotland] was not only composed by Bishop Laud, but sent by him to the Pope and Cardinals for their Approbation; and this Story I must not dare to deny. But, with your leave, Mr. Modesty, I will venture upon that piece of Confidence, as to tell you I do not believe it, and that, because you assert it.* Now, I do agree that I did say so; and I am indeed a *Bold-face*, if I have not good *Au'thority* for what I thus charge upon Arch-Bishop *Laud*; for no Man's bare Assertion may pass in such a Case as this. But there is more in this Matter, than the short-sighted *Chaplain* at *Aldgate* is aware of.

Proofs that the Scots Common-Prayer-book composed by Laud, was sent to Rome for the approbation of the Pope and Cardinals.

You may find the Story of *Laud's* sending the *Scots Common-Prayer*, to be approved by the Pope and Cardinals (as I told it) in a Book of good Credit, entituled, *A new Survey of the West-Indies*, wrote by a Reverend Divine of the *Church of England*, Mr. *Thomas Gage*, Minister of *Deal*, in *Kent*; 'tis in page 280, in the Folio Impression. He there tells you, 'That, being a Friar, he went to *Rome* with Letters of Recommendation to Cardinal *Barbarini*, the Pope's Nephew, intituled, *The Protector of England*: That, coming acquainted with Father *Fitz-Herbert*, Rector of the English Colledge of Jesuits, he [*Fitz-Herbert*] highly praised Arch-Bishop *Laud*, and said, That he had, not long since, sent a Common-Prayer-Book (which he had composed for the Church of *Scotland*) to be first viewed and approved by the Pope and Cardinals; and that they liked it very well for Protestants, to be trained-up in a Form of Prayer and Service; yet the Cardinals (first giving him Thanks for his Respect) sent him word, that he [the Pope] thought it was not fitting for *Scotland*. That Father *Fitz-Herbert* told him, he was Witness of all this, being sent-for by the Cardinal to give him his Opinion about it, and of the Temper of the Scots. And that *Laud*, hearing the Censure of the Cardinals concerning his Intention and Form of Prayer, to ingratiate himself the more in their Favour, corrected some things in it, and made it more harsh and unreasonable for that Nation.

This good Man, Mr. *Gage*, after he had there related the Matter as above, expresses himself thus; 'This most true Relation of Arch-Bishop *Laud*, I have oft spoke-of in private Discourse, and publickly in Preaching; and I could not, in Conscience, omit it here, both to vindicate the just Censure of Death, which the Parliament gave against him, and to reprove the ungrounded Opinion and Error of some ignorant Spirits, who have, since his Death, highly exalted and cried him up for a Martyr.

You may also find something like this of Mr. *Gage* in *Bishop Burnet's Memoirs*,
pag.

pag. 83, he relates, ‘ That in the year 1638, one *Abernetby*, who, from a Jesuit, turned a zealous Presbyterian, spread a Story in *Scotland*, (which took wonderfully,) of the Liturgy of that Kingdom, having been sent to *Rome* to some Cardinals to be revised by them; and that Signior *Con* (the Pope’s Nuncio to the Court of *England*) had shewed it to *Abernetby* at *Rome*. Indeed, the Bishop adds, ‘ That the Marquess of *Hamilton* wrote to *Con* about it; but he protested seriously, he never had so much as heard of a Liturgy designed for *Scotland*, till he came last to *England*; that he had never seen *Abernetby* at *Rome* but once; and, finding him light-headed, had never again taken notice of him.’

Now, it takes not much from the Credit of *Abernetby*’s Relation, that *Con* denied it: for it must be noted, that he was a Jesuit; and, according to the Tenets of the Romish Church, ’twas lawful, if not his Duty, to lie for Holy Church.

You come next, with a most convincing Argument, to shew the Falsehood of my last Assertion: *What!* (say you, pag. 19.) *Bishop Laud send to the Pope and Cardinals for their Approbation of a Liturgy almost the same with ours?* I think this vexatious Ghost will never be laid; I thought we had done with *Laud*; but here he appears again: *What!* *Laud send to the Pope to approve a Liturgy almost the same with ours?* Aye, *Laud* was the most likely Bishop in *England* to do it. For you say, That his Heart [was set] upon Designs of Uniformity: And was not this the most probable Course to accomplish those designs? Mr. *Whitlock* (whom you will credit) shews (as I but now told you) that *Laud* declared, That the Protestant Religion, and the Romish Religion, were all one; and, if the one was false, so was the other. That he brought the Romish and English Churches (I think I must say Steeple-houses, to be rightly understood) to such an Uniformity, that the Popish Priests knew no difference between theirs and ours. Why, then, may we not believe that, in pursuit of that Plot of Uniformity, which his Heart was so much set upon, he sought the Pope’s Approbation of the Liturgy; whom (as Mr. *Whitlock* himself declares) he held to be the Metropolitan Bishop of the World; so that *Laud* was to him, (as that Traitor, *Turner*, the late Bishop of *Ely*, was to *Sancroft*,) but a younger brother?

Proceeding to argue the Point, you say; Sure, Sir, you have forgot the Bull of the Pope, in the 10th of Queen Elizabeth, which commands all his pretended Catholick Children, not to attend upon the publick Liturgical Devotions of our Church; and you have forgot that [the Papists, upon that account, and by virtue of the Authority of that Bull, have declined our Publick Service ever since]; and therefore it is very likely Bishop *Laud* should send a Liturgy to *Rome* for its Approbation. Most likely, for this very reason; and one who did not well know you to be a Hare-brain’d Blunderbuss, would be ready to conclude, with that ingenious *Jacobite*, of the *Lacedæmonian Society*, who, inveighing against my Letter, told a Friend of mine, it must be answered by a better Pen; for the Doctor writes, said he, as though he play’d booty. I appeal to any Man of common Understanding, whether a better Reason can be invented, to persuade the World of the Probability of *Laud*’s sending the *Common-Prayer Book* to be approved at *Rome*, than that which you have here assigned: The point is already settled, that his Head was set upon Designs of Uniformity; the Pope was his elder Brother;

the Papists came to the Common-Prayers of our Church for the first 10 years of Q. Elizabeth; and by consequence, might have so done to this day, had not Pope Pius the 5th prohibited them. Let any Man shew me a more probable way to obtain a Repeal of that Bull, (which hath made the Papists ever since decline our Liturgical Church-Devotions,) and to bring them to Church again, or, rather, to bring us to go to Church with them, than by introducing a Liturgy allowed and approved by his Holiness; a Liturgy, in which (as I said, and you do not deny) all the material Parts of the Mass-Book seemingly were; and wherein Transubstantiation was rather allowed, than denied. But that empty Head of yours is carried round, so that you do not know what is fit to be said. What have we next?

Page 20. *Well, Sir, you say, If [the Common-Prayer-Book] was sent into Scotland; pray, let me ask you one Question; In whose Name, and by whose Authority, was it sent?*

The Answer is as obvious as short, and you needed not to have sent to *Switzerland* to have a Resolution in the point. The Common-prayer-book was sent into Scotland in the name of *one*, who had not Authority to impose it upon the *Scots* according to their Laws.

You go-on, saying, *Why, if they did not like it, did they not, first, submissively petition their lawful King, and let him know how disgusting the Liturgy was to many of his Subjects in that Kingdom?*

Why, 'tis most evident, from all the Historians of that time, that they did, in the very beginning, petition in the most submissive manner against the imposing this *Liturgy*; and that thereupon, after the first reading it, in the great Church of *Edinburgh*, upon the 23d of *July*, 1637, the *Council of Scotland* yielded that it should not be further urged by the Bishops, till his Majesty's Pleasure were known: Upon which, the Petitioners returned satisfied to their Habitations. But, upon the 18th of *October*, there being a great conflux of People at *Edinburgh*, to hear the *King's* Determination, a *Proclamation* was published, commanding them, upon pain of *Rebellion*, to depart the City; and, shortly after, the *King* commanded the *Privy-Council* to receive no more *Petitions* against the *Common-Prayer-Book*. Nevertheless, you confidently demand, *Why, if they did not like it, did they not, first, submissively petition?* But the *Scots* shall here answer for themselves; take their own words in their Charge exhibited in Parliament against *Laud*; 'Our Supplications (say they) were many against this Book. But *Canterbury* procured them to be answered with terrible Proclamations. We were constrained to use the remedy, of Protestations: but, for our Protestations, *Canterbury* procured us to be declared Rebels and Traitors in all the Parish-Kirks of *England*. When we were seeking to possess our Religion in Peace, against these Devices and Novations, *Canterbury* kindled War against us.—Our *Scottish* Prelates petitioned that something might be abated of the *English* Ceremonies; as the Cross in Baptism, &c. But he would not only have these kept, but others super-added; which was nothing else but adding Fuel to the Fire.

Read also their Expostulation in their *Remonstrance*, 1639, Pag. 4. 'Certainly, Posterity will hardly believe (as we, who have seen it, cannot but wonder) how it hath come to pass, that we should have so long petitioned our Native Prince to do

‘ us Justice, whereof he is Debtor to his People ; and to hear our just Complaints
 ‘ against the Usurpation of a few Men, who were undermining the professed Reli-
 ‘ gion, and the Government of the State; and to suffer us to live according to our
 ‘ Laws ; and yet that we could never be heard, nor answered, in the point of our just
 ‘ Desires. Far less will they guess what hath been the ground of that merit and trust
 ‘ of one domineering Prelate, in the Affection of the King, that it should be more
 ‘ forcible to diswade, than all the Supplications and Intercessions of so ancient and
 ‘ faithful a Nation should have power to move.’

Well, what say you next, Mr. Tittle-tattle? *The Scots took a Covenant against Compliance with the Church of England.*

Against Compliance with the Church of England ; Aye, now 'tis out ; there's the ground of the Quarrel ; *the Scots traiterously refused to comply with Bp. Laud :* But they shall speak for themselves ; they answer you thus, Doctor. ‘ We are free
 ‘ of the heavy Censures of Rebellion and Treason, which are so ordinarily thun-
 ‘ dered-out, that they are become the less formidable to us. We are supported
 ‘ with this inward Testimony, that we fear God, and still honour the King ; although
 ‘ our Adversaries will not be pleased, except we will follow their Rules, which
 ‘ are not unlike those of the Jesuits, which were found at *Padua*, when they were ex-
 ‘ pelled the Territory of *Venice* : *One of them was, [that Men should take heed, that*
 ‘ they do not too much press, or inculcate, the Grace of God :] *Another was, [that*
 ‘ Men must believe the Hierarchical Church, although it tells us, that that is black
 ‘ which our Eye judgeth to be white.] Unto which we may add the third, invented
 ‘ by *Ignatius Loyola*, [of *blind Obedience*,] which we have no mind to practise.’ But,
 to move-forward.

Page 22. *We find (say you,) their Seditious Remonstrances, Declarations and Pamphlets, were dispersed.*—

Now, I cannot find that Mr. *Whitlock*, whom you quote, informs you, that their *Remonstrances, &c.* were *seditious*: this is maliciously foisted-in by you ; and, if you were in *Scotland*, you would, as you deserve, be severely punished (which you would call Persecution) upon the Statute against *Leasing-makers*.

Mr. *Whitlock*, in *Pag. 28*, which you cite, gives this Relation ; ‘ About the
 ‘ year 1560, the Earl of *Murray*, with *Knox*, *Buchanan*, and others, gave such a
 ‘ shock to *Popery*, as made every thing (and, by consequence, *Episcopacy*) which
 stood near it, to reel. He then shews, how *Episcopacy* and *Presbytery* took their
 turns of Government: and, giving an Account of the King's Resolution to enforce the
Common-Prayer-Book; and, by an Army, to bring the *Scots* to obedience, (or, as you
 phrase it, to *Compliance with the Church of England*); he saith, ‘ That, because this
 ‘ was the Bishops War, it was held fit that they should contribute largely towards
 ‘ the Preservation of their own Hierarchy; and, accordingly, the Clergy were assem-
 ‘ bled by the Bishops, in their Dioceses, and invited to a liberal Aid.

I shall now, (Sir,) in a short Digression, shew you, from Mr. *Whitlock*, how this was growing-up, from being the *Bishops*, to be a *Popish War*. He relates,
 Page 31. ‘ That the Queen employed Sir *Kenelm Digby* and Mr. *Walter Moun-*

‘ *tague*, (who at that very time, as we have it in *Gage’s Survey of the West-Indies*, p. 209, stood Candidates at *Rome* for a *Cardinal’s-Cap*,) ‘ to labour the Papists ‘ for a liberal Contribution, which they gained ; and Sir *Basil Brooks*, a Person ‘ afterwards very active in the *Irish Rebellion*, was appointed Treasurer for the ‘ Monies, thus raised by the Queen’s Solicitation for this War against the *Scots* : ‘ hereupon some styled the Forces raised against the *Scots*, in the beginning of the ‘ year 1640, THE POPIISH ARMY.’ But to return to what I intended ; I will shew you the heads of the *Scotch Declaration*, which Mr. *Whitlock* puts-down upon the *Page* you mention ; and, that I may not be accused of Partiality, take, first, the *King’s Declaration* ;—‘ His Majesty saith, he sets it forth to inform his ‘ Subjects of the seditious Practices of some in *Scotland*, seeking the overthrow of ‘ Regal Power, under the false pretext of Religion, &c. He takes God to witness, ‘ he is constrained by their Treasons, to take Arms for the safety of that and this ‘ Kingdom. He resolves to maintain Episcopacy there, &c.’

The *Scots* answer ; ‘ That, though the Secrets of God’s Ways cannot be sounded, ‘ yet, considering his Providence in their personal Affairs, the Lord is about some ‘ great Work on Earth ; for the Cup of Affliction, propined to other Reformed ‘ Kirks, is now presented to them :—That, instead of a gracious return to their ‘ humble Petitions from time to time, the return is a late Declaration libell’d ‘ [or, perhaps, levelled] against them ; though the Gates of Hell shall not prevail ‘ against their Cause, and the Kingdom of Jesus Christ now in question. Which ‘ Declaration proceeds from the Unchristian Prelates and their Party. They conclude, ‘ setting-forth their long suffering of the Prelates Insolency, &c. and fearing Popery ‘ to be introduced. And they say, for doing any harm to *England*, cursed be their ‘ Breasts, if they harbour any such Thought, &c.’

Your next Accusation, Doctor, against the *Scots*, is, page 23. *The King consents to a Treaty ; Commissioners were appointed on both sides ; and they came to a Conclusion, agreeing upon seven Articles ; The King justly performed the Articles on his side, notwithstanding the first Article agreed-upon, was “ to disband the Forces of Scotland within 24 hours ;” and yet these perfidious Persons kept part of their Forces in a body, and all their Officers in pay, and kept-up their Fortifications at Leith. And now, let the Reader judge by this, how deserving these Men are of such Commendations as this pestilent and bold Letter-Writer gives them.*

‘ The Scots behave with honour towards the King, after the Pacification.

Take a full Answer to this Slander, from *the Representation of the Proceedings of the Kingdom of Scotland, since the late Pacification, by the Estates of the Kingdom*, pag. 35. ‘ We, within the space of forty-eight hours, (the time appointed by ‘ his Majesty,) dissolved our Army. Concerning the Officers, we were careful, ‘ both to observe that Article of *the Pacification* to his Majesty, and also to keep ‘ promise to them ; which did bind us—not to hold them in Military Pay, but—to ‘ vouchsafe them Entertainment, till they should be restored to their own, or called ‘ to other Service ; which ought not to be taken for any Breach, Contempt, or ‘ Disobedience, but for an observation of the Law of Nature and common Equity ; ‘ they

N. B.

‘ they being our own Natives, and having forsaken their Places and Means for the Defence of Us and their Native Country. Less than this neither could they expect, nor we perform, although the Peace had been most firmly settled.

‘ *All Forts and Castles were speedily restored*, although they be now used for a Terror and Invasion against us. Some part of the *Fortifications at Leith* was demolished, for his Majesty’s Satisfaction ; and the whole remitted by his Majesty to the Town of *Edinburgh*, as having a right to the same.’

See further what they say in Refutation of this vile Calumny, in their *Remonstrance concerning the present Troubles*, pag. 7. ‘ We delivered all Places into his Majesty’s Hands, which were desired, in testimony of our Obedience ; and, although they might have been, in our Hands, Pledges of Assurance for performance of those Articles that were agreed to be granted in the following *Assembly and Parliament*; and now, contrary to our Expectation, are turned into Engines of Terror and Fetters of Slavery, to frustrate us from obtaining the benefit of that *Capitulation*.’

Now, to put you, *Doctor*, to eternal silence, I shall subjoin an unconquerable Evidence against your bold Assertion ; *The Pacification was made upon the 18th of June 1639 ; and upon the 24th, the Marquess of Hamilton received possession of the Castle of Edinburgh for the King*. This is in *Bishop Burnet’s Memoirs of the two Hamiltons*, pag. 144 ; which is a Book you have heard-of, though, I doubt, have never seen, (you shall presently see why I say so.) If this Treatise be partial, it must incline to the *King* against the *Scots*, because the *Marquess* was deeply engaged in the Royal Cause : This was not only wrote by the *Bishop* when he was a *Chaplain to King Charles the Second*, from the *Marquesses own Memoirs*, but is dedicated to the *King*, and was published with his Royal Testimonial, that *he had seen and approved it*. And is there room now for any Man to believe, that, if the *Scots* had not acted with the highest Simplicity and Integrity in this Treaty, they would have instantly and voluntarily quitted the castle of *Edinburgh*, (which was the best Strength in that Kingdom) to his Majesty ? And now let the Reader judge by this, whether one word that such a paltry *Doctor* as you utters, out of your Pulpit, be to be credited?

N. B.

Well, what comes next ? even what lies uppermost, pag. 23. *And, whereas this scandalizing Person has the confidence to assert, that the King, when he came home, burnt, by the common Hangman, the Pacification he had made : I must tell him, he talks, (as he has done all along throughout his Letter,) falsely, and [against his own Reading and Knowledge :] and for this I appeal to Bishop Burnet in his Memoirs of the two Hamiltons ; where, pag. 782, he acquaints us, That the Scots published a false and scandalous Paper, entitled, Some of his Majestie’s Treaties with his Subjects of Scotland ; which was so Untrue and Seditious, that it was burnt by the Hands of the Common Hangman. And are not you a base Person, then, to obtrude such a Lie upon the World as you have done ? But it is no wonder ; the Father, whose Cause you have served in this rude and seditious Libel, is the Father of Lies.*

Why, now, most unhappy *Doctor*, you are catch’d again ; and, whereas you say, that

that *I talk falsely against my reading*, it will be found that *you talk at random for want of reading*. I told you, that I suspected you had never seen *Bishop Burnet's Memoirs*; you shall now see my reason for it; You quote *pag. 782*, and there are but 436 Pages in that Book, and 47 in the *Appendix*. And, for my part, I have read it some Years since, and now have again turn'd it over, but cannot find therein the Story for which you vouch him: I am apt to think, (as you told me, *pag. 50*.) That *some crafty Knave, finding you ready to pick-up any Story, whereby you might serve your Cause, had a mind to put a Trick upon you, and to expose the Truth of the rest of your Book, by telling you, That Bishop Burnet's Evidence against the Scots, would outweigh a thousand Witnesses: and that he had declared what false Loons they were, in a certain Book called his Memoirs.* But is not he a *Blockhead*, then, that will be so imposed upon?

Bishop Burnet's account of this matter.

Nevertheless, to deal openly, and without reserve, in this Matter; I find these *Memoirs* speaking thus, (*pag. 143*.) 'When the *Scotch Commissioners* came-back to the Camp, they gave an account of their Negotiation, and, besides *Articles of Treaty*, they produced another Paper, [*which passed among all for the Conditions of Agreement*;] it was a Note containing some Points which were alledged to have been agreed-to at *Berwick*, verbally, though not set-down in the written *Treaty*; which was made-up of some *down-right Mistakes*, [this Term comes something short of *False, Scandalous, Untrue and Seditious*, which are your *Epithets*;] and of *other things which the King in discourse had indeed said, but not positively, nor as a Determination on which he had concluded.*—

It were now worth the knowing, what, in particular, these *down-right Mistakes, and these other things*, were; but, this History leaving us in the dark therein, I shall shew you what was the main thing which gave distaste, in that Paper which, *Bishop Burnet* saith, *passed among all for the Conditions of the Agreement*; and how the Estates of *Scotland* justified that Paper from the Imputation of *Mistakes*. The Paper is intituled, *Some Conditions of his Majesty's Treaty with his Subjects of Scotland, before the English Nobility*.

'It is there remembered, that, it being with all Instancy and Humility prest, *Saturday, June 15*, that his Majesty would satisfy that main Desire of his Subjects, by declaring, that he would *quit Episcopacy*; his Majesty did answer, That it was not sought in our Desires. And, when it was replied, That our first Desire "to have the *Acts of the General Assembly* ratified," imported the same; His Majesty acknowledged it to be so, and averred, that he did not refuse it, but would advise till *Monday the 17th*. At which time his Majesty, being prest to give some Signification of his *quitting Episcopacy*: And, it being plainly shown to his Majesty, That, *if he would labour to maintain Episcopacy, it would breed a miserable Schism in this Kirk, and make such a Rupture and Division in this Kingdom*, as would prove uncurable: And, if his Majesty would let the *Kirk and Country* be freed of them, his Majesty would receive as hearty and dutiful Obedience as ever Prince received of a People: His Majesty answer'd, that he could not prelimit and
'forestall

‘ forestall his Voice, but had appointed a *Free Assembly*, which might judge of all
 ‘ *Ecclesiastical Matters*; the *Constitutions* whereof he promised to ratify in the ensuing
 ‘ *Parliament*.

See, now, what the *Estates of Scotland* said, in vindication of themselves in this
 Matter; you will find them thus expressing it, in their *Representation of the Pro-*
ceedings of the Kingdom, page 15.

‘ After much Agitation, and many Consultations, his Majesty’s Declaration,
 ‘ touching the intended *Pacification*, was read to our *Commissioners*; who, upon their
 ‘ Dislike and Exceptions, taken both at the Matter and the Expressions, as being con-
 ‘ trary to our Minds, and prejudicial to our Cause, did humbly remonstrate, that *the*
 ‘ *Declaration*, as it was conceived, could not give Satisfaction to us from whom they
 ‘ were sent. His Majesty was graciously pleased to command some words to be de-
 ‘ leted, and other words to be changed; and many parts thereof were, by *verbal Pro-*
 ‘ *misses* and Interpretation, from his Majesty’s own Mouth, mitigated: Which, in
 ‘ our Estimation, were equal to that which was written, some of the *Counsellors of*
 ‘ *England* assuring our *Commissioners*, that *what was spoken and promised before Men*
 ‘ *of Honour, and in the Face of two Armies, was no less certain, and would (no doubt)*
 ‘ *be as really performed, as if it had been written in Capital Letters*; which there-
 ‘ fore were diligently observed, carefully remembered, and punctually related, by
 ‘ our *Commissioners*, at their delivering of his Majesty’s *Declaration* to us: And
 ‘ without which, *we neither could, nor would, have condescended and consented to the*
 ‘ *Articles of the Declaration, more than we could, or would, against the Light of our*
 ‘ *Minds and Consciences, have sinned against God, and condemned our own Deed.*
 ‘ Thus way was made to the *Pacification*, and for pre-occupying all Mistakes,
 ‘ whether wilful possibly by some, or through weakness of Memory by others.
 ‘ *These vocal Interpretations and Expressions were collected, kepted by ourselves, and,*
 ‘ *in Papers, delivered to some of the Commissioners of England.*’

It may now be observed, upon the whole Matter, that this Paper contained
 nothing contrary to the Articles, or the *Pacification*, but was a mollifying of his
 Majesty’s Declaration, that it might be the more readily received by the People.
 And it had been more than imaginable Impudence, to put into the Hands of the
Nobility of England; a Paper professing what was openly spoken but just before in
 their own hearing; and yet containing Untruths and seditious Positions, contrary
 to all that was done for Peace.

The Truth of the Case is this; The King had promised them a *General Assembly*,
 to be holden the 6th of *August*, and a *Parliament* upon the 20th, to ratify what
 should be decreed in the *Assembly*: But he was reprimanded by the Queen and the
 Bishops, who vilified the *Pacification*, and upbraided him, that he had brought
 home a dishonourable Peace. Whereupon he altered his Mind, declaring, that
 what had been agreed, would be *unprofitable for the Kirk*, because he well knew
 that nothing short of the extirpation of *Prelacy* could satisfy that People. He,
 therefore, about a month after the *Pacification*, set himself to pick a Quarrel with
 them;

N. B.

them ; and, upon the 18th of *July*, 1639, he charged them with no less than Eighteen *Criminal Articles* ; whereof they denied some, and made full Answers to the rest. I shall touch upon two of them, because they refer to your *Discourse* which we are now examining.

The third *Article* was, ‘ Forces not dismissed ; and, in particular, *Monro’s* Regiment yet kept on foot.’

The Answer was this ;

‘ Since his Majesty will have that Regiment disbanded, the same shall be done presently : But we humbly beg, that his Majesty would be pleased to dismiss the Garrisons in *Berwick*, *Carlisle*, and the rest of the Borders.’

The 18th *Article* was ; ‘ The Paper divulged ; and if they avow the same ?’

Which had this modest Answer :

‘ As we are most unwilling to fall upon any Question which may seem to import the least Contradiction with his Majesty ; so, if it had not been the Trust which we gave to the Relation of our Commissioners, the written Declaration would not have been acceptable, nor the Castle of *Edinburgh* rendered to his Majesty, except for the Trust we reposed in their Relation, and confidence in his Majesty’s Royal Word ; which, we believe they did not forget : which Paper was only written for that cause, lest his Majesty, or his Subjects, should aver, that they spake any thing without Warrant.’

But, having fully shewn that this Paper suffered innocently, I detain you no longer upon this head.

In the next place, *page 24*, you exhibit a most heinous Article, not only against the *Scots*, but the *English* also ; *They sent* (you say) *NEW COMMISSIONERS to the King*. They did so ; but I question whether you understand the reason why they were called *New Commissioners* ; and therefore this may inform you, that they sent *Commissioners*, not long before, to supplicate for Peace ; but *they were denied access to the King’s Presence*, and commanded to return Home. You go on, saying, that *Mr. Whitlock* informs you, *page 31*, *they had great resort to them, and many secret Counsels held with them, by the discontented English, especially those who favoured Presbytery, and were no Friends to Bishops*. Having consulted *Mr. Whitlock*, I find you are so far right ; but you break-off in the middle of the Sentence, and omit these words, [*or had suffered in the late Censures in the Star-Chamber, Exchequer, High-Commission, and other Judicatories*] ; and I would fain know what you infer from this Tale, and what harm you see in it. *Mr. Whitlock* gave you the Names of some Honourable and never-to-be-forgotten Patriots, who resorted to these *Commissioners*, to whose names you ought to pay more deference, than to make a malicious Representation of their Visits and Conversation. The Earls of *Essex*, *Bedford*, *Holland*, the Lord *Say*, *Mr. Hambden*, *Mr. Pym*, &c. were Men, who with sad hearts beheld the Innovations in Religion and the infringing of Fundamental Laws and Liberties in both Kingdoms. Surely, then, *Doctor* ; with-

out

out your license, such men as these, may lawfully consult what means are proper to support the Fabrick, when they see Religion and Justice, which are the Pillars of the Government, to be undermined.

But, say you, *The Scots implored Aid from the French King, by a Letter under the Hands of many of their principal Actors.* You then put-in an Appeal (page 25.) to the Reader, *Whether his Majesty had not just Reason, after such Discoveries as these were, to clap some of them in Prison; and whether he had been to blame, if, for such traiterous Correspondencies with a Popish Prince, he had chopt-off some of their Heads?*

Of the Letter of the Scots to the French King.

I have a word or two which might be offer'd for stay of Execution of this hard Sentence, and desire to be heard, or, rather that the whole Kingdom of *Scotland* may be permitted to speak in this case. ' This is that *French Letter* (saith that ' *Parliament*) so much insisted-upon, as to open a Gate to let-in Foreign Power to ' rule over *England* and ourselves; which, by what Consequence it can be inferred, ' we would fain know? *When a People is sore distressed by Sea and Land, is it ' unlawful, by the Law of God and Man, to call for Help from God and Man? ' Is there no Help nor Assistance by Intercession, by Supply of Money, &c.? ' Is all Assistance by the Sword, and by Men? We love not Shrouds nor ' Disguisements, we speak the plain Truth, and fear nothing so much as that the ' Truth be not known. Great Forces by Sea and Land were coming upon us: ' Informations went-abroad in other Nations, to the prejudice of Us and our ' Cause. This made us resolve to write unto the French King, apprehending that, ' upon sinister Relation, his power might be used against Us. Aid and Assistance ' hath been given in former Times. If we have called now upon Denmark, Holland, ' Sweden, Poland, or other Nations for Help, are we therefore inviting them all ' to a Sovereignty over us? And, when all is said or done, the Letter was but an ' Embryo, forsaken in the Birth, as containing some unfit Expressions, and not ' agreeable to our Instructions, and therefore slighted by the Subscribers, but ' catch'd by this treacherous and secret Accuser of the Kingdom. Another Letter ' was formed, consonant to the Instructions, and signed by many Hands; but ' neither was this sent from us, because we conceived that Mediation from France ' would be but late to avert the Danger which was so near.—It is universally ' known, that it was written in May 1639, and, therefore, ought to have been buried ' in the Pacification.—We love not to harp upon Subscribing, or sending, of Letters ' to other Princes, and to the Pope himself, from Examples of Old, and of Late, which ' are not bid from the Eyes of the World. It is sufficient to us to have justified our- ' selves, and to show how innocently the Lord Lowdon suffereth, for putting his ' Hand to such a Letter, the Guiltiness or Innocence, not being personal or proper ' to the Lord Lowdon, but national, and common to us all. And although it had ' been a Fault, and his alone, yet whatsoever it was, it did in time, and for a long ' time, go before his Commission and Employment; and therefore ought not to ' have been challenged till he had returned to his Country, had unclothed himself of ' his Commission, and turned again to be what he was before, a private Nobleman; The ' Dignity*

‘ Dignity and Safety of Nations, Kingdoms, Estates, and Republicks, are much interested in their Commissioners and Legates, (whether they be sent from one Prince to another, or from a Kingdom, Province, or Republic, to their own Prince.) Their Dignity; for what is done to the Legate, is interpreted to be done to them that sent him. Their Safety; because if Legates be wronged, there can be no more composing of Differences, nor possibility of Reconciliation.—Moreover, his Majesty’s own Royal and inviolable Warrant for the coming of our Commissioners to his Presence at this time, is enough for their Safe-Conduct and Security. If they have committed any thing at home against their King, Country, or any particular Subject; the fundamental Liberties and Independency of the Kingdom do require, that they be tried and judged at Home, and in a legal way, by the ordinary Judicatories of the Land.—We earnestly intreat for their Liberty and Safety, who are to us as ourselves.

Methinks, now, if the King, according to the rash Advice of you, *their Majesties frantick Chaplain at Aldgate*, should have chopped-off the Head of my Lord of Lowdon, one of the Scotch Commissioners, it would have offered *Violence to the Peace and Quiet of his Mind all the Days of his Life*. But, I must think again, his Lordship was a Presbyterian, a Heretick, who would not comply with the Church of England; that considered, you could do it with the greatest Complacency, and ’twould (I am satisfied) be highly to your content, that the People had but one Neck, so that you might do their business at a blow.

The King’s design of beheading the Earl of Lowdon in the Tower.

I remember that you told me, upon the occasion of my talking of *Laud’s* sending the Scotch Common-Prayer-Book to be approved at Rome, that you thought *I had got a Secret*. Whether I then had or not, you bring one into my Remembrance, by your enquiry *whether the King had been to blame, if he had chopped-off some of the Scotch Commissioners Heads*; and you shall have it.

I have heard, and do believe, that the King, having, against all Justice, imprisoned the Earl of Lowdon (one of the Commissioners from the Scotch Parliament) in the Tower; he, about three of the Clock in the Afternoon, sent his own Letter to Sir William Balfour, the Lieutenant of the Tower, commanding him to see my Lord of Lowdon’s Head struck-off within the Tower, before nine the next morning: Upon the Receipt of this Command, the Lieutenant of the Tower, that his Lordship might prepare for Death, gave him notice of it: He being surprized, (as well he might,) prevailed with Sir William to find-out the Marquess of Hamilton, (then in great favour with the King, and Master of the Horse) and to tell him, that he esteemed him to be engaged in Honour, to interpose in this matter. The Letter being thereupon carried and shewn to the Marquess, it struck him with Astonishment; and, with no small difficulty, he made his way to the King, who was then in Bed, and humbly enquired whether his Majesty had given such a Command for beheading the Earl of Lowdon? the King answered, *Yes, and I will be obeyed therein; he shall die*. The Marquess, finding him inexorable, told his Majesty, that he would kiss his Hand, and instantly take his Horse and be gone; for he would not stay to see his Majesty massacred, as most certainly he would be; for before the next Night the whole City

City would come upon him. Hereby the King was wrought-upon to hold his Hand, and countermand the fatal Warrant.

This is so incredible a piece of *Tyranny*, that I cannot expect you should believe it upon my bare Assertion: I shall therefore shew you, that it seems to be pointed-at in Bishop *Burnet's Memoirs*, Page 161, in these words; ' There were some ill ' *Instruments* about the King [*Bishops, no doubt on't*] who advised him to proceed ' *capitally* against *Lowdon*; *which, it is believed, went very far*: But the *Marquess* of ' *Hamilton* opposed this *vigorously*; assuring the King, that, *if that were done, Scot-* ' *land was for ever lost*.

Now, if Curiosity shall lead you to enquire further into this matter, you may do well to learn what is meant by the obscure Expression, [*which, it is believed, went very far*:] and, if that do not open the whole business to you, you will not fail of Satisfaction, if you can, by any Friend, make way to the Original Papers, from which my Lord Bishop of *Salisbury* took his *Memoirs*, and which now are in the Hands of his Grace the Duke of *Hamilton*.

A word or two more about *Scotland*, and we will cast an Eye on your *Impeachment* against our own Nation. You very often term the Actions of that Kingdom, *factionous, seditious, rebellious, traitterous*: Now let me shew you how the *Scotch Parliament* defined *Treason*; ' We entreat our Adversaries (*say they*), to shew us in ' good earnest, and not by way of Railing, in what sense we have incurred the Cen- ' sure of Rebellion and *Treason*; We cannot be moved to think, but the Mitre of ' an usurping Prelate, by the Authority of a National Council, may be thrown to ' the ground without the Violation, or smallest Touch, of the Crown, or Scepter, of ' Imperial Majesty. To dethrone a Prelate, and to overturn Prelacy, we judge it ' no *Treason* against the King. ——— Traitors to God and their Country, must be ' Traitors to the King; and such as are faithful to God and their Country, must be ' the King's best Subjects: The Right of his Majesty's Crown, and the Acts of ' Parliament, command all the Subjects to rise with the King, and to assist him, ' when he riseth for God and the Country; but no law, nor act of Parliament, for- ' biddeth them to stand-up for God and the Country, in the case of publick Invasion.

Take now, from Bp. *Burnet's Memoirs*, a true Account of these *Scotch* Troubles, which have now been so troublesome to you and me, and I'll return to Old *England*: ' The Lords of the Council (saith he,) Page 31, (not 782.) laid the greatest blame ' upon the Bishops, which appears from the Earl of *Traquaire's* Letter to the Mar- ' quess of *Hamilton*, dated 27 Aug. 1631. viz.

' At the meeting of the Council, 23^d Instant, we found so much appearance of ' Trouble and Stir like to be, amongst People of all Qualities and Degrees, upon ' the urging of this *New Service-Book*, that we durst no longer forbear to acquaint ' his Majesty therewith. ——— Some of the leading Men of the Clergy are so violent, ' and many times without ground or true Judgement; that their want of right un- ' derstanding how to compass business of this nature and weight, doth often breed ' as many Difficulties; and their *rash and foolish Expressions and Attempts* have ' bred such a Fear and Jealousy in the Hearts of many, that, if his Majesty were ' rightly informed thereof, he would blame them, and justly think that *from them* ' *arises*

' *arises the ground of many Mistakes amongst us.*—[This Business, in good Faith, is, *by the Folly and Misgovernment of some of our Clergy*, come to that height, that the like has not been seen in this Kingdom of a long time.]

No more of *Scotland*. Let's see what's next. You declare your Resolution, to apply yourself *to the Defence of what you had formerly said in behalf of King Charles*; and proceed thus (*Pag. 26.*) You say, *That those Gracious Acts which I mention, were bought of him. And what then? What hath been more usual ever since Parliaments had a being in England? Pray, look into the Statute-Book, and tell me, what Gracious Favours can you find, bestowed by the several Kings of this Realm upon their People, that those People have not made their acknowledgments for them, by presenting their Sovereigns with great Sums of Money?*

What ridiculous Stuff is this? *Gracious Acts, Gracious Favours, &c.* It hath been heretofore well observed, that some who call themselves Church-men, have left their Station to become ignorant and unhappy States-men, who have made the Church, and the Tenets thereof, an Instrument of Bondage to the Subject. These Men tell us, that Parliaments are not assembled to ease the Grievances of the Subject; but to fill the Coffers of the Prince: These Men teach Princes, that all the Rights and Liberties of the Subject, and the maintenance of them, are *Doles of Grace*, and Gifts of meer Favour, proceeding from the Prince, (and not the true Birth-right of the Subject, which they may truly challenge,) which are to be continued or changed as Princes shall think fit. But, pray, let us see what these *Gracious Acts*, these *Gracious Favours*, were, which we bought, as in your Opinion we ought. They were Acts to declare the levying Money by way of forced Loan, Ship-Money, Coat and Conduct-Money, to be illegal, and against the undoubted Liberty of the Subject; to suppress the most accursed and tyrannical Courts, called the Star-Chamber and High-Commission; to bring a Traitor to Justice; to secure us of the sitting of a Parliament once in three Years, when the antient Laws gave us a right to Annual Parliaments*, and when he had, to the high violation of those Laws,

N. B.

* The statute of the 4th year of King Edward III., Chapter 14, A. D. 1331, is in these words; "Ensement est accordé que Parlement soit tenu chacun an une foitz; ou plus, si mestier soit." That is, "Item it is accorded, that a Parliament shall be holden every year once; and more often, if need be." And in the 36th year of the same King, Chap. 10., it is enacted as follows. "Item, pour maintenance des dits articles et Estatutz, et redresser diverses mischiefs et grevances, qui viennent de jour en autre, soit Parlement tenu chacun an, sicomme autrefois estoit ordeigné par Estatut." That is, "Item, for maintenance of the said articles and statutes, and redress of divers mischiefs and grievances which daily happen, a Parliament shall be holden every year, as at another time was ordained by Statute."

And this statute was regularly observed to the end of the reign of the great King Edward the 3d, and through the greater part of the following reign of king Richard the 2d; as is clearly shewn by that learned and zealous friend to Publick Liberty, *Mr. Granville Sharp*, of the Middle Temple, in pages 159, 160, 161, &c.—170, of a very able tract, intituled, "*A Declaration of the People's Natural*

Laws, kept us without a Parliament for about eleven Years. These Acts, say you, (their Majesties Malapert Chaplain at *Aldgate*,) are such *Gracious Favours*, that, if we will have them, we ought, in all Conscience, to buy them. But our English Parliaments have always been of another Mind; and Sir *Robert Cotton* tells us, in the Life of King *Henry the Third*, That that King was told in full Parliament, that they would not pay his Debts, nor give him a Groat, *postquam cœpit esse dilapidator Regni*, so long as he continued to destroy the Kingdom. And pray now, turn to your Bible, and tell me what Text there, doth warrant this your wild Opinion. Where are we now?

But *they bought these Acts; did they? Pray, who had the disposal of the Money? how was it laid out? was it given to the King to do what he listed withal? No; you know a great part of it was bestowed on the Scots, for the good Service they did in rebelling against their King, and putting two Kingdoms into a Flame.*

I did

Natural Right to a Share in the Legislature;” of which a second Edition was printed in the year 1775, for Benjamin White, Bookseller, in Fleet-street. And, amongst the several instances which he has there cited of successive years, in each of which a new Parliament had been summoned by the King, by a new Writ of Election, he mentions some years in which two, or more, new Parliaments had been summoned, by different Writs of Election, in the space of a single year, or without a royal Prorogation of the preceeding Parliament, to meet again at another day, in the course of the same year, as has been the practice for the last two Centuries. So that it may truly be affirmed, that, in those antient times, the people enjoyed the privilege of electing new Representatives in Parliament, either once in every year, or more than once, if the King found it necessary to have a second Parliament, before the expiration of a year.

This seems to have been a very useful and valuable Privilege, as it tended very much to strengthen the connection between the Members of the House of Commons and their Constituents, or Electors, of whom they are the Representatives, or, in the language of the Writ of Election sent to the Sheriff, the Attornies, or persons who have received from them, full and sufficient powers to consult with the King and his Council, upon the important matters relating to the state of the Kingdom, that shall be laid before them, and to consent, on the behalf of their Constituents, or Electors, to the resolutions that shall there be taken concerning them, “*Ita quod Milites Burgenses pro se et communitatibus Civitatum et Burgorum, divisim, ab ipsis habeant ad faciendum et consentiendum iis quæ tunc de communi consilio (favente Deo) ordinarî contigerint super negotiis ante-dictis; ita quod, pro defectu hujus modi protestatis, dicta negotia in effecta non remaneant quovis modo.*”—See *Elsyng’s Method of holding Parliaments in England*, pages 68 and 69.—For hence it seems evident, that, according to the Antient and Original Constitution of the House of Commons, there ought to be a general agreement, or concurrence of opinion, upon the Subjects, for the discussion of which the Parliament was to be assembled, between the Electors of the several Counties, Cities, and Boroughs, and the persons they were so to empower to represent them, and act for them: and, surely, that agreement, or concurrence, would be much more likely to take place, if the elections were to occur once, or more than once, in every year, than if they are renewed only once in the course of seven years, as may be the case according to the laws now in being.

Nor, if this good old law were to be revived, would there be any danger of such violent and expensive,

I did observe, (in my Letter to you,) that the King had, out of the Subjects Purse, in the first Year of the Parliament, *Nov. 1640*, one Million and an half of Money. I also remember that the King, upon the Conclusion of the Treaty at *Rippon*, agreed to allow the *Scots 850 l. per diem*, and in answer to your question, I say, the King had the disposal of the Money; and, as to what part of it the *Scots* received, the King paid it to them, for his having done against all Law and Reason what he listed. And I will shew you from the Demand of that Nation, who ought to have paid the Reckoning. They say, ‘ We were constrained to take ‘ Arms for our Defence; The War on our part was Defensive, and all Men do ‘ acknowledge, that in common Equity, the Defendant should not be suffered to ‘ perish in his just and necessary Defence; but that the Pursuer ought to bear the ‘ Charges of the Defendant. The prevalent Faction of Prelates and Papists have ‘ moved every Stone against us, and used all sorts of Means, not only their Coun- ‘ sels, Subsidies and Forces, but their Church-Canons and Prayers, for our utter ‘ Ruine; which make them obnoxious to our just Accusations, and guilty of all ‘ the Losses and Wrongs which we have sustained. And, therefore, we may now, ‘ with the greater Reason and Confidence, press our Demand, that the Parliament, ‘ the Kingdom, and the King himself, may see us repaired in our Losses, at the ‘ Cost of that Faction, by whose Means we have sustained so much damage. We ‘ will

expensive, and often ruinous, contests at the times of Election, as are seen in the present mode of proceeding, when the general Elections occur only once in about six years. For, as the Representatives would be constantly disposed to cultivate the good opinion of their Constituents, and, by their conduct in Parliament, to promote their interests and wishes, as far as their own consciences and judgements would allow them, in order to be re-elected by them in the next year, it is probable that there would be much fewer contested Elections, and changes of the Representatives, than there are at present. And from the harmony that would generally subsist, between the Members of Parliament and their Electors, the Dignity and Respectability of the House of Commons would be increased, and the confidence of the people, in the wisdom and uprightness of their measures, would be restored; and the resolutions that would be taken by them, would be generally allowed to be in reality, what they are now often called and pretended to be, true expressions, or declarations, of *the Sense of the People at large*, on the subjects to which they relate. It seems probable, therefore, that the revival of this good old law, for chusing new Parliaments every year, would be attended with very happy consequences, and give general satisfaction to the Nation.

And, if this law for annual new Parliaments were to be revived, it seems reasonable that the day for the said annual Election, and likewise the day of the meeting of the Parliament for the dispatch of business, should be certain known days in the year, fixed by the Law, just as the first days of Hilary and Michaelmas Terms are in the King’s Courts of Justice in Westminster-Hall, for the beginning of the sessions of the King’s Judges in those Courts, for the decision of suits at law; to the end that the Right and Duty of the two Houses of Parliament to assist, and concur with, the King in the important business of making new laws, and repealing, or altering, old ones, as occasion should require, and of imposing new taxes upon the people, should not only be, but constantly appear to be, and be universally known to be, an essential, permanent, regular, and indispeusable, part of the Constitution of the British Government, as much as the administration of justice by the King’s Judges in his Courts at Westminster-Hall, and not a temporary and occasional instrument of government to be employed only at the King’s pleasure, whenever he should think fit to have recourse to it; and that no future King, who should happen to be infected with the malady of King Charles the First, “ an inordinate love of arbitrary power, and a strong disposition to make himself an absolute
Mouarch

' will never doubt but the Parliament in their Wisdom and Justice, will provide
' that a proportionable part of the Cost and Charges be born by the Delinquents.
' We wish the Justice of the Parliament may be declared, in making the Burden
' more sensible to the Prelates and Papists, than to others who never have wronged
' us, which will conduce much to the Honour of the King and Parliament.'

Pag. 27. You take notice of my Charge; that the King demurred to pass the Bills for taking-away the *Star-Chamber* and *High-Commission Courts*, at the time when he passed the *Poll-Bill*, though presented together to him for the Royal Assent; and demand whether he ought to have passed them, without a *Why*, or a *Wherefore*?

Of the Bills for taking-away the Star-Chamber and High-Commission-Court.

No, by no means; you talk now like a *Rational Creature*: We are then to look for the *Why's* and *Wherefore's*. You acknowledge, in your first Defence, that these Courts were *Grievances* to the Nation; and I said, and by many sad Instances proved, that they were *Arbitrary and Tyrannical Courts, Forges of Misery, Oppression and Violence*: There's then a *Why*, for you Doctor. The Parliament agreed with the King, to give him the *Poll-Bill* to remove these accursed Courts of Oppression and Tyranny; There's also a *Wherefore*. Nevertheless, though the Parliament voted that he should pass all the three Bills, or none at all; he, snatching-up their Money, runs-away, and delays to pass the Bills for

Monarch over his people," should be tempted to tell his Parliament, as King Charles did his in the year 1627, "to remember that Parliaments are altogether in his power, and that therefore, as he finds the "fruits of them to be good or evil, they are to continue, or not to be:" as is shewn above in page 33.

And, if this salutary old law were to be revived, the first day of the month of October in every year, (if it were not on a Sunday, and in that case, the 2d,) would probably be found to be a convenient day for the proceeding to a general election; and some day about the middle of the following month of November, as, for example, the 17th, (if it were not on a Sunday, and, in that case, the 16th,) to be a convenient time for the meeting of the Parliament for the dispatch of business. The 17th of November was the Birth-day of that great Princess, Queen Elizabeth, who governed the nation during forty-three years with great wisdom and justice, and in great harmony with her Parliaments; and, by their advice and assistance, delivered the English nation a second time from the yoke of the Pope's authority, and the cruel persecutions that had been lately practised under it, and established the Protestant Religion on a solid and lasting foundation; and also caused the laws to be administered, in her Courts at Westminster-Hall, in a stable and uniform manner, by learned and upright Judges, well selected for the purpose, whereby property of every kind became more secure and valuable than it had ever been before; and who likewise greatly encouraged and advanced the trade of the nation, and laid the foundation of its navigation and maritime power. These were great and eminent services to her subjects, which have justly made her memory dear to their posterity; and, (to use the words of *Mr. Thomas May*, in the beginning of his excellent History of the last Parliament of King Charles the First,) *they were accomplished by the justice and prudence of her government, by making the right use of her subjects' hearts, hands, and purses, in a Parliamentary way.* It seems, therefore, that it would be only a just tribute to her merits and memory to make choice of her birth-day, the 17th of November, in every year, (being in a part of that month that is very convenient for that purpose,) for the first day of the meeting of the new-elected Parliament.

abrogating

abrogating the *Star-Chamber* and *High-Commission Courts*; and yet you affirmed, That HE READILY passed whatsoever Bills the Parliament offered to him for redress of the Nation's Grievances: And whether he did or not, was the point in Controversy between you and me.

The Earl of Strafford's case.

The next thing in course, is, (Page 28.) the unhappy Earl of *Strafford's Case*; in relation whereunto you, most learned Doctor, (whose head is swelled, like any Bladder, with Wind and Vapour,) do thus impeach the Lords and Commons;—*Do not you know they were so little satisfied with the Legality of their Proceedings, that they in the very Bill [for his attainder] inserted a Clause, that this should not be made use of, as a Precedent for the time to come.* This is well enough urged for a D. D. and is passable, the Man who utters it being considered: But I must tell you, Sir, what I have heard as wise a Man as you, say about this Clause, of *not bringing it into Precedent*; that in such Cases it could not be otherwise, without leaving the same power to the Judges in *Westminster-Hall*, which, by the Statute of *Edward the Third*, is entrusted only with the Parliament; for that Statute, enumerating all Treason cognizable by the Judges, reserves to the Parliament *declarative Treason*; as that which they [the Parliament] might be safely entrusted with, though it could not be safely left in the Hands of any other Jurisdiction. And that this is the reason of that Clause, I am told, no Lawyer, though never so much a Tory, will deny.

N. B.

Allow me now, Sir, seeing we are talking of *Strafford*, to lay before you a pleasant Dialogue, which I find in *Whitlock's Memoirs*, page 41, between your three Martyrs, the *King*, the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and the Earl of *Strafford*, together with the Lord *Cottington*, a Papist; and that upon the 5th of *May*, 1640, the very Day upon which the Parliament was dissolved, for their refusing to furnish Money to carry-on the wicked War, then resolved-upon against *Scotland*; the Paper is intituled,

His wicked advice to the King.

No danger of a War with Scotland; if Offensive, not Defensive.

‘ *King Charles.* How can we undertake Offensive War, if we have no Money?

‘ *Earl of Strafford.* Borrow of the City 100,000*l.* go-on vigorously to levy
‘ *Ship-Money*; your Majesty having tryed the Affection of your People, you are
‘ *absolved and loose from all Rule of Government, and to do what Power will admit*:
‘ Your Majesty having tried all ways, and being refused, shall be acquitted before
‘ God and Man. And you have an Army in Ireland, that you may employ to reduce
‘ this Kingdom to Obedience: For I am confident the Scots cannot hold-out five
‘ Months.

‘ *Archbishop.* You have tried all ways, and have already been denied; IT IS
‘ NOW LAWFUL TO TAKE IT BY FORCE.

‘ *Lord Cottington.* Leagues abroad there may be made for the Defence of the
‘ Kingdom; the Lower House are weary of the King and Church: [The Enemies of
‘ Popery, were even in that Day Common-wealths-men]. ‘ All ways shall be just
‘ to raise Money by, in this inevitable Necessity, and are to be used, being lawful.

‘ *Archbishop.* For an Offensive, not a Defensive, War.

‘ *Strafford.*

‘ *Strafford*. The Town is full of Lords: put *the Commission of Array* on Foot; and, if any of them stir, *We will make ’em smart*.

Now you will readily agree that this is no Sham; in regard it comes from Mr. *Whitlock*, whom you quote four or five times. Besides, I assure you, that it was given in Evidence upon Oath, at the Earl of *Strafford’s* Tryal; and (which further evinces the Truth thereof,) the King instantly required the Loan of the City of *London*, as here advised; and, for refusal to comply therein, *Ludlow* tells you, page 17, he imprisoned Sir *Stephen Soame*, Sir *Nicholas Rainton*, and other eminent Citizens. And were not these Halcion Days? were not these a rare set of blessed Saints?

Page 32. You lash me for my relation of the King’s tampering with the Army, to curb the Parliament and subdue them to his Will, and you say, *that I tell a Story of Piercy and Goring, &c. such a one as the Faction was wont to make use of upon all occasions, to amuse and heat the People; but the best of it is, there are so many incredible Things (you say) in the Account, that I must tell you it hath not gained upon my belief at all. Amongst the rest, you tell us that two of the Parties concerned confess “that all the French that were about the Town, were to be mounted.” But that which is the Nicker, is, that the Clergy would raise 1000 Horse to assist them; and yet this conspiracy was under an Oath of Secrecy: And VERY LIKELY INDEED! WHEN SO MANY CLERGYMEN MUST BE ACQUAINTED WITH IT. Surely, Sir, you have a mighty Opinion of yourself.* Of Goring’s Plot.

Surely, Sir, you have a very bad Opinion of your Brethren of the Cassock, or else a most weak way of arguing; and the more you say, the more you discover your Rashness and want of Judgement: The Clergy will not con you Thanks for representing them to the World as Blabs of their Tongues, to the prejudice of the Cause of Mother-Church; as an Order of Men, who may not be trusted with a Secret, committed to them under a strict Oath. But *this Story* (you say) *has not gained upon your Belief*.—Who can help it? Our Saviour converted many, of divers States and Conditions, to the Faith; but we do not find that he ever converted a Priest.—That the King did tamper with the Army, to bring them against the Parliament, as I relate it, appears most evidently in *Whitlock’s Memoirs*, Page 44, and also by the several Informations, Examinations and Confessions upon Oath, (before a Committee of the House of Lords) of the Parties engaged in it, most of them Men of Quality, and highly in favour with the King. You may read them at large in *Husbands’s* exact Collections (a Book in esteem with you) beginning at Page 220. I there find that *the two Parties* who confessed “that the French about the Town were to be mounted, and that *the Clergy* were to find 1000 Horse,” were Lieutenant-Colonel *Ballard* and Captain *Cudleigh*. But, in regard

regard you have taken the Pains to relate what his Majesty's Declaration said to this Point; I shall, for the setting the matter in its true Light, transcribe a brief Account thereof from the Declaration of the Parliament, (which you most rudely call the Faction) as you will find it in *Husbands's Collections*, Page 200. There, speaking of the intended Force upon the Parliament, they declare themselves thus:

' Certainly we have been more tender of his Majesty's Honour in this point, than he, whosoever he was, that did write his Majesty's Declaration; where he calls God to witness "he never had any such Thought, or knew of any such Resolution of bringing-up the Army;" which truly will seem strange to those who shall read the Depositions of Mr. *Goring*, the Information of Mr. *Piercy*, and the Examination of Mr. *Wilmot*, Mr. *Pollard*, and others; with the other Examination of Capt. *Legg*, Sir *Jacob Ashley*, and Sir *John Conyers*: and consider the Condition and Nature of the Petition, which was sent unto Sir *Jacob Ashley*, under the Approbation of *C. R.* which his Majesty doth now acknowledge to be his own Hand; and, being full of Scandal to the Parliament, might have proved dangerous to the whole Kingdom, if the Army should have interposed betwixt the King and them, as was desired.'

N. B.

Of the Tumults at
Whitehall.

You tell me, page 43, That *I have been so bold in my Assertion about the Tumults, that I give the Lie to almost all the Historians that have writ the Transactions of those Times; and you refer me to the Votes of the Common-Council, Dec. 31, 1641.* Now, because you are short in the Relation of that Matter, I shall give it you as it is in *Husbands's Collection*, page 30. The Lord *Newburgh*, upon Dec. 31, 1641, delivered a Message from his Majesty to the Common-Council, to this effect; ' There having been of late many tumultuary Assemblies about *Whitehall* and *Westminster*, the King recommended to their Care the preventing the like Tumults; and declared, That he was so well assured of the good Affections of the City, that he could in no wise understand it to have any share in the Fault of these Tumults, but that they proceed meerly from the mean and unruly People of the Suburbs, &c.'

Hereupon the Common-Council returned Answer, ' That they had no hand in these tumultuous Proceedings, and disavowed the same; and promised their best Endeavours to prevent and suppress, in time to come, all such tumultuous Assemblies, and all mutinous, rebellious, Persons: And they humbly desired, that all the Delinquents, and Causers of Tumults, being apprehended, may receive condign Punishment. And,

' They ordered every Member of the Common-Council to make it known, That, if any Person should neglect his Duty of Watch and Ward, &c. and not do his best Endeavour to suppress, or prevent, Tumults, he shall receive condign Punishment.'

Now, *Sir*, I appeal to all Mankind, whether this doth any way serve your Purpose? You refer to the Votes of the Common-Council, and would thence argue, that

that the King was necessitated, by reason of the Tumults, to leave *Whitehall*. But the contrary is most evident, from the King's Message, and the Answer and Resolutions of the City. The King declares, That he was well-assured of the good Affections of the City, and that they had not any share in the Fault of the Tumults, but that they proceeded merely from the mean and unruly People of the Suburbs. The Common-Council promises to prevent and suppress all Tumults, and commands strict Watch and Ward to be kept to that purpose. And might not the King have been hereby persuaded, that he was in no danger from Tumults? Were not these Votes a full Security against Fear from such Disorders for the future? No doubt but they were; but the King had other Designs than those of Peace in his Head. I told you of his Majesty's fortifying *Whitehall*, and that armed Men sallied-out thence, reviling, menacing, and wounding, many Citizens passing-by with Petitions to the Parliament; and that, when the Parliament and People complained of those Assaults, the King justified the Authors thereof; so that I must needs conclude (as I did before) that the tumults were made at *Whitehall*, by the King's own People; that *all his fear of Tumults, was but a mere Pretence and Occasion taken, of his resolved Absence from the Parliament, that he might turn his flashing at the Court-Gate, to slaughtering in the Field.*

Page 44. You tell me, that *another Calumny wherewith I reproach the Memory of King Charles, is his unwillingness to issue-out his Proclamations against the Irish Rebels; and when he did issue it, he gave order that only 40 copies of it should be printed.* You then say, *The truth of it is, that, if this Story was true, it would be an inexcusable Fault in the King; but, to Refute me, you transcribe his Majesty's own Vindication of himself, which saith, that he was in Scotland when the Rebellion broke-forth, that he immediately recommended the care of that business to the Parliament here; ——— That, if no Proclamation issued sooner (of which for the present he was not certain, but thinks that others were issued-out before), it was, because the Lords-Justices of Ireland desired them no sooner, and, when they did, the number of copies of it which they desired might be printed, was but twenty.*

King Charles's unwillingness to proclaim the Irish Massacres to be Rebels.

Now, in Truth Sir, this doth little mend the matter; 'tis most strange that the King should publish to all the World in Print, that *he thinks other Proclamations were issued before*; he might, without doubt, have easily been at a certainty in this point: For, had there been any such thing, his Council-Books, his Secretary of State, his Clerks of the Council, would have remembered him thereof; but, to this day, no such thing hath appeared, nor ever will. And, 'tis a poor excuse to say, that *the Proclamation was no sooner issued, because not sooner desired.* We, of this Age, do remember in what manner our Late Princes (their Father's own Sons) have pursued the least suspicion of Rebellion: You know that King *Charles* the Second, upon *the pretence of a Plot*, in the year 1683, was so far from deferring, by the space of three months, to issue a *Proclamation* against his own Son, the Duke of *Monmouth*, that we had it in three days: and I do think there were rather forty Thousand than forty copies of it Printed; for, after we had had it by itself, for the better spreading thereof,

thereof, it was published in the Gazette; and the like course, you well know, was taken by the late King *James*; First, in the case of the Duke of *Monmouth*, and then in that of the Prince of *Orange*. But I will shew you what the Parliament said in this case of the *Irish* Rebels, in a Declaration in 1642.

‘ That, when the Lords and Commons had, upon the first breaking-out of the *Irish* Rebellion, immediately sent-over 20,000*l.* and engaged themselves for the reducing of the Rebels, yet the King, after his Return from *Scotland*, was not pleased to take notice of it, until after some, in the House of Commons, had truly observed, how forward his mischievous Counsellors were to incite him against his *Protestant Subjects* of *Scotland*, and how slow to resent the proceedings of his *Papist Traytors* in *Ireland*.

‘ That, although the Rebels had most impudently styled themselves, *The Queen’s Army*, and profest that *the Cause of their Rising* was, to maintain the King’s prerogative, and the Queen’s Religion, against the *Puritan Parliament* of *England*; and that thereupon the Parliament advised his Majesty to wipe-away this dangerous scandal by proclaiming them Rebels; which then would have weakened the Conspirators in the beginning, and have encouraged both the Parliament here, and good People there, the more vigorously to have opposed their proceedings; yet no Proclamation was set-forth to that purpose, till almost three months after the breaking-out of this Rebellion, and then Command was given, that but forty should be Printed, nor they published, till further directions should be given by his Majesty.

He hinders the Parliament from suppressing the *Irish* Rebellion.

‘ That the Parliament and Adventurers had long since designed 5000 Foot, and 500 Horse for the Relief of *Munster*, to be sent under the Command of the Lord *Wharton*: but no Commission could be obtained from his Majesty; whereby *Lymrick* was wholly lost.

‘ That, when divers well-affected persons had prepared twelve Ships and six Pinnaces, with more than 1000 Land-Forces, at their own charge, for the service of *Ireland*, and desired nothing but a Commission from his Majesty to enable them thereunto; That Commission, after twice sending to *York* for the same, was likewise denied.

‘ That, although the Lords-Justices of *Ireland* have, three Months since, earnestly desired to have two pieces of Battery sent-over for that Service, yet such Commands are given to the Officers of the Tower, that none of his Majesty’s Ordnance must be sent to save his Majesty’s Kingdom.

‘ That the King’s Souldiers took-away, at one time, six hundred Suits of Cloaths; and at another time three hundred Suits; which were sent by the Parliament for the poor Souldiers in *Ireland*.

‘ That the Rebels did lately send a Petition to his Majesty, intitling themselves

‘ selves his Majesty’s Catholick Subjects of Ireland, complaining of the Puritan Parliament of England, and desiring, that, since his Majesty comes not thither, according to their expectation, they may come into England to his Majesty.

You come (page 46) to Examine, who were the first Beginners of the War, and say, *The Parliament did really, and in deed, first draw the Sword, and sound the Trumpet to Battle*——— *Whereas the King set-up his Standard at Nottingham, in August, did not the Lords and Commons, in June before, make an Order for bringing-in of Money, or Plate, to maintain Horses, Horsemen, and Arms?*

And did not the King, long before, in the beginning of the year 1642, when all things were in perfect Peace, *send-over the Crown-Jewels*, to buy Arms and Ammunition in *Holland*? Did not he, at that time, write to the *King of Denmark*, complaining of the Parliament, and asking Supplies from him, *ad propulsandos Hostes, to subdue his Enemies*? You were told of these things before: but you will not touch them. I shall not therefore trifle-away more time with you, upon this point of the first beginning of the War; only I will mind you, that the King, *upon the 4th of July 1642, Rendezvoused an Army at Beverly in Yorkshire, though the Parliament did not Vote the raising of an Army till the 12th.* And, which is more, I will give you the name of the first Martyr who fell in that War in defence of the Laws and Liberties of his Country; ’twas one *Percival, of Kirkman, Shalme, in Lancashire*; he was Murdered the 15th of *July 1642, near Manchester*, by the King’s Forces, under the Command of the Lord *Strange, Son to the Earl of Derby*; for which that Lord was impeached in Parliament. You may see a particular Account of this, in *May’s History of the War*, page 109. in *Husbands’s Collections*, 611. and in *Rushworth’s Collections*, 3d. Part. Vol. 1st. p. 680.

The King made preparations for the War before the Parliament.

Assembling an Army at Beverly 4th July, 1642.

The first man killed on the side of the Parliament, July 12, 1642.

Well; I see, to my Comfort, that we shall soon draw to a Conclusion: You say, p. 49. *I have answered your Grand Impeachments and Accusations of this great and Excellent Prince: As for the other things, with which you stuff your Libell, I say, alas! Sir, you must not think to catch some Birds, (and there are, thanks be to God, great numbers of them in the Kingdom) with such Chaffe as this.*

There are indeed, in *England*, a great many kinds of Birds, and of Beasts also, and a great many of every kind; and, before we part, we will a little recreate ourselves with some of them. *You must not think to catch such Birds with Chaffe: A witty Conceit, upon my word; and, had your dull fancy chopt-upon this other flight, neither must Chickens think to feed Capons, it would have made you as proud as a Peacock, and you would have clapt your Wings, and crowed like any fighting Cock, at the wit of the Expression; But (begging pardon of your Gravity) I will tell you, that it hath been observed, that, of all Creatures in the Creation, the Owle of Birds, and the Ass of Beasts, are the most grave; and Sir William Temple, in his ‘Memoirs of what passed in Christendom from 1672, to 1679, page 57, saith, that ‘Old Prince Maurice of Nassau, when he was about 76 years of Age (having ever passed for an honest and pious man,) informed him, that, when he was Governor*

of.

‘ of *Brasil*, he heard of a *Parrot*, that spoke, and asked, and answered common
 ‘ questions like a reasonable Creature, and (though he believed nothing of it,) his
 ‘ curiosity led him to send for it; That, when it came first into the Room where
 ‘ the Prince was, with a great many *Dutchmen* about him, it said presently, *What a*
 ‘ *Company of White Men are here?* They asked it, *what he thought that Man was?*
 ‘ pointing to the Prince; it answered, *Some General or other*; the Prince asked it,
 ‘ *whence came you?* It answered, *from Marinman*; the Prince, *to whom do you belong?*
 ‘ The Parrot, *to a Portugueze*; Prince, *what do you do there?* Parrot, *I look after the*
 ‘ *Chickens*; the Prince laughed and said, *you look after the Chickens?* The Parrot
 ‘ answered, *yes I, and I know well enough how to do it*, and made the *Chuck* four or
 ‘ five times, that People use to make to Chickens when they call them.

Now, one would hope that this pretty Bird, which discoursed so rationally, might put a *braying Beast* to silence, if any thing but pulling-out the *Asse's Tongue* could do it: You see, *Doctor*, that this Understanding *Parrot* could distinguish *White from Black*, knew its own Capacity, and undertook no other Task than it could well perform, crying *Chuck, Chuck, Chuck*, to the Chickens very pertinently; (which is more than you do to your Birds;)—that this ingenious, fair-dealing, *Parrot*, when it talked with the *Prince*, (not thinking it would pass for an answer to have told him, *you must not think to catch such Birds as me with Chaff*.) came close to the point, and gave direct and sensible Answers to plain and honest Questions; whereas you prevaricate in a most shameful manner, and prate, as though you were only fit for the Conversation of a Flock of *Magpies, Jacklaws, Woodcocks, Owles, and Buzzards*. 'Tis evident that your itch of Vain-glory, and unparalleled Confidence, makes you affirm, that you have answered me; and you would fain be thought to have said all that can be said, when you hardly say any thing, but blate what you know nothing of; you have heaped-up together many Impertinencies, abundance of Rubbish and Trifles, but treated of nothing with Solidity and Judgement, nor so much as touched the Tenth part of the matters charged in my Letter; but in your natural levity, skipping them over, would persuade *the Birds of your Feather*, (I gave you their names but now) that, as *Chaff*, you make them to vanish with a puff of your mouth. But, indeed, when I consider how miserable a Wretch of an answerer you do here render yourself, and yet how you persist still in your huffing and strutting, and do more and more revile and rail, I cannot (especially seeing it relates to one of your own Birds) but present you with another piece of Mr. *Marvel's* profane Wit, as you call it; ‘ I have seen (saith he) with some pleasure, the Hawking at the
 ‘ *Magpye*; the poor Bird understands very well the terrible pounces of that Vulture,
 ‘ but therefore she chatters amain most ruefully, and spreads and cocks her tail, so
 ‘ that one that first saw and heard the sport, would think that she insulted over the
 ‘ Hawk in that Chatter, and huffed her Train in token of Courage and Victory;
 ‘ when, alas! tis all from her fear, and another way of crying the Hawke, mercy;
 ‘ and to the end that, the Hawke, finding nothing but Tail and Feather to strike at,
 ‘ she may so perhaps shelter her Body. I have been too long trifling at this Boys
 Play of Bird-catching; I return now to a more manly Recreation, and, having al-
 ready

ready dispatched the *Wild Boar*, the *fierce Tiger*, and the *dull Ass*, I pass by the *Monkey*, the *Ape*, the *Baboon*, and that great Herd of the many, other despicable Animals, and will a little hunt the *barking Woolf*.

Quoth you, Doctor, (page 50.) *I am ready to take my leave of you ; but, before we part, I must needs reckon with you upon the score of a Reflection you have made upon myself : you are pleased to say, you understand I was a Presbyterian Minister in Essex ; which words have almost forced me to a smile.*

Now, if I were mistaken as to your being a *Presbyterian Minister in Essex*, you are not to make yourself too merry with it, nor may you deny your having changed your Opinion from what it formerly was. For you know there are many of your Contemporaries in the University of *Cambridge*, who knew you to be a Presbyterian there : and I could name you an honest Gentleman now in being, who, you know, hath reason to be acquainted with all the steps you have taken from your youth ; and he saith, that you left the University upon a dislike of the Ceremonies ; and persisted in that dislike, till you found there was no Preferment to be got, but by Conformity ; so that I may with truth say, you are one of *Dr. Wild's Changelings*, and that he gave us your exact Marks, when he thus described you in his Poem called, *The Recantation of a Penitent Proteus, or, the Changeling.*

* My Conscience first, like *Balaam's Ass*, was shy,
Boggled and Winc'd : which when I did espy,
I cudgel'd her, and spur'd her on each side,
Until the Jade her Paces all could ride.

When first I mounted on her tender Back,
She would not leave *the Protestant Dull Rack*,
Till in her Mouth *the Covenant-Bit* I got,
And made her learn the *Presbyterian Trot*.

'Twas a hard Trot, and fretted her ; alas !
The Independent Amble easier was ;
I taught her that, and out of that to fall
To the Taintiv of Prelatical.

Now with a Snaffle, or a twined Thread,
To any Government she'll turn her head :
I have so broke her, She will never start,
And that's the meaning of my *Broken heart*.

* The Doctor saith, P. 51, of 2d Defence, I took time to Consider the Nature and Terms of Conformity ; which, by my former Education, I was wholly a Stranger to.

Cambridge I left with grief, and great disgrace,
To seek my Fortune in some other place,
And that I might the better save my stake,
I took an Order, and did Orders take.

Amongst *Conformists* I myself did list,
A Son o'th Church as good as ever pist ;
But tho' I bow'd, and cring'd, and cross'd, and all,
I only got a * *Vicaridge* very small.

Oh ! I am almost mad: 'twould make one so,
To see which way Preferment's game doth go.
I ever thought I had her in the Wind;
And yet I'm cast above three years behind.

Three times already I have turn'd my Coat ;
Three times already I have chang'd my Note.
I'll make it Four, and four-and-Twenty more,
And turn the Compass round, e're I'll give-o're.

Ambition, my great Goddess and my Muse,
Inspire thy Prophets all such Arts to use
As may exalt ; betwixt this and my Grave,
A Mitre, or a Halter, I must have.

Tell me, *Ambition* ! pry'thee, tell me why,
So many *Dunces, Doctors*, and not I ?
A Scarlet Gown I must and will obtain ;
I cannot else Commence a *Priest in Grain*.

If this Poet's *Ecclesiastical Pencil* has not drawn you to the Life, you shall see that *Lay Prose* comes pretty near you ; Mr. *Marvel*, (whom I choose always to ply you with, above all other Authors,) describes you thus :

' He was sent to *Cambridge* to be bred-up to the Ministry ; There, in a short
' time, he entered himself into the Company of some young Students, who were
' used to *Fast* and *Pray* weekly together; he pick'd Acquaintance with the *Brother-*
' *hood*, and train'd himself up in attending upon their Sermons and Prayers, till he
' had gained such Proficiency, that he too began to Exercise in the Meetings, and
' by Preaching Mr. *Baxter's* Sermons, he got the Reputation of one of the *Precious-*
' *est* young Men in the *University* : But, when thus, after several years Approbation,
' he was even ready to have taken the Charge, not of an *Admiring Drove*, or *Herd*,

† The *Vicaridge* of *Westham* in *Essex*.

' as he now calls them, but of a *Flock*, upon him ; by great misfortune to him, the
 ' King came-in. Nevertheless he broke not off yet from his former habitudes ; he
 ' persisted, as far as in him was, (that is, by *Praying, Caballing, and Discoursing*)
 ' to obstruct the Restoring of the Episcopal Government, Revenues, and Autho-
 ' rity ; insomuch that, being discountenanced, he went-away from the University
 ' without his Degree, scrupling, forsooth, the Subscription then required : From
 ' thence he came to *London*, where he spent a considerable time in creeping into
 ' all Corners and Companies, horoscoping up and down concerning the duration
 ' of the Government, not considering any thing as best, but as most lasting and
 ' profitable ; and, after having many times cast a Figure, he at last satisfied himself,
 ' that the Episcopal Government would endure as long as he lived ; and from
 ' thence-forward cast-about how to be admitted into the Church of *England*, and
 ' find the High-way to her Preferments. In order to this, he daily enlarged not
 ' only his Conversation, but his Conscience, and was made free of some of the
 ' Town-Vices ; imagining, like *Muleasses, King of Tunes*, that by hiding himself
 ' among the Onions, he should escape being traced by his perfumes : Ignorant
 ' and mistaken Man ! that thought it necessary to part with any Virtue to get a
 ' Living ; or that the Church of *England* did not require and encourage more
 ' sobriety than he could be guilty of. But neither was this yet, in his opinion, suffi-
 ' cient ; and therefore he resolved to try a shorter Path, which some few men have
 ' trod not unsuccessfully ; that is, to Print a Book ; and, if that would not do, to
 ' print a Second ; and, if that also would not do, a Third, and so forward ; to give
 ' Experience of a keen style, and a ductile Judgement : After this, he was ready to
 ' leap-over the Moon ; No scruple of Conscience could stand in his way, and no
 ' Preferment seemed too high for his Ambition.'

In the next place, Doctor, you spit your Venom, and that even against their
Majesties ; page 51, you say, *Since the late Persecution in Scotland by that Party*
of Men [the Presbyterians], it is a greater scandal to be called a Presbyterian than
it was before.

I here observe, with what Reverence and Duty you speak of your Superiours and
 their Actions, when they are not so happy as to please you : this last thing is ut-
 tered most scandalously, and with a leering reflection upon the Government ; and
 'tis a dangerous thing, I perceive, for their Majesties to lose your favour. When
 you talk, page 15, of the Accursed Court of *Star-Chamber*, you do it with great
 Modesty and Manners, saying, *If it be lawful for a private Person, as I am, to*
pass a Judgement upon the publick Actions of a then Legal Court. But here (the
King and Queen, seeming to be fallen into disgrace with you,) you assume the im-
 pudence to call their establishing *Presbytery* by Act of Parliament, *A Persecution* ;
 So that, what the *Scots* said, in the year 1640, they may well repeat at this day ;
All means (said they) are used to disgrace this Kirk ; Books, Pasquils, honouring
of our Cursed Bishops, advancing of our deposed Ministers, &c.

'Twas, it should seem, scandalous in some measure, to be a persecuted Presbyterian, in the two By-past Reigns; but (in your Opinion, Doctor,) 'tis so in a much higher degree, to be a Presbyterian, now that Presbytery has the Royal Favour, and is settled by Act of Parliament: and yet you, Sir, did heretofore esteem it no longer scandalous to be of the *Church of England*, than till she obtained a legal Establishment, and I can tell you the exact day when it became a scandal to you to be called a *Presbyterian*; 'twas *Bartholomew* day, 1662, the day when the *Act of Uniformity* took place, and, would a man take the liberty which you do, I should say, when the *Bishops Persecution* was revived in England.

Well, 'Tis a Scandal to be a *Presbyterian*; and it will puzzle a man to find-out what you are: for you seem to esteem it a *Persecution*, that you may not compel all men to be of the *Church of England*, and yet you say, page 52, *It is true, Sir. I have always been kind to Dissenters, and when the great Storm* [in plain English, *Persecution*] *eight or nine Years ago, fell upon the Dissenters, I preserved my own Parish from Charge and Trouble, to the great endangering of myself.* Alas! good Man, did you so, and yet do they abuse you? pray, was all this kindness for naught? did not you interlope with *Dr. Pinfold*? I have been told that you ought to have said, that what you did in that day, was *to the great enriching of yourself*, and that you had your *Why's* and your *Wherefore's* for your kindness to the Dissenters; that you received a constant Contribution from such of them as you preserved from *Doctors' Commons*; and I know that it may be made-out, that a Collection was made amongst them, by *Mr. Ogden* and *Mr. Webster*, to raise the Money for to defray your Charges of *commencing Doctor*; and is it not an Act of foolish Prodigality in you, to throw-off such generous Benefactors as these?

Having thus Examined your *Second Defence*, I shall now, Sir, recount the heads of some things which you asserted in your First, and which, being answered by me, you pass-over in silence.

You affirmed, page 7th of your first Defence, that *the Parliament in their Remonstrance, Dec. 1641, made Reflections upon the King's former Government, unmannerly and false; and that the King answered it and vindicated himself from those horrid aspersions, wherewith they loaded him:* Now, page 35, I denied the falsehood thereof, and said, that the King only answered it, in saying, *We shall, in few words, pass-over that part of the Narrative wherein the misfortunes of this Kingdom, from our first entering to the Crown, to the beginning of this Parliament, are remembered in so sensible expressions.*

You asserted, page 12, that *the King could, by good Evidence, prove, the Lord Mandevile, Mr. Holles, Sir Arthur Haslerig, Mr. Hambden, Mr. Pym, and Mr. Sirode, Members of the House of Commons, to be Guilty of Treason; Page 37, &c.* I gave you the full History of that matter, and shewed that *the King retracted that rash accusation;* which, I see, is more than you will do, though good manners, one would

would think, should oblige you thereto, and to beg pardon especially of the Right Honourable, the present earl of *Manchester*, as he is a Peer of the Realm; and of the Right Honourable, the most eminently-deserving Patriot, Mr. *Hambden*, as he is Chancelour of their Majesty's *Exchequer*, and one of their most Honourable Privy-Council, for such a horrid slander brought upon their highly-deserving Families. But you find it a grievous thing to forego a falsehood that is serviceable to your great undertaking.

You affirm, page 26, first Defence, that *the Scots sold the King to the English Parliament*. I denied it, page 67, and shewed, that *the Scots might, with the consent of the Parliament, have taken him home to his Native Country; but that they refused it, fearing he might raise new Commotions there; and you have not thought fit to contradict me in this neither.*

You, amongst other gracious concessions of the King's, wherein you glory, speak, pa. 11, 1st. Defence; of his consenting to a *Treaty at Uxbridge*. I (page 61) mentioned many things relating to that Treaty; and, to shew the King's insincerity in his pretensions of Peace, gave a Relation how that, at the very instant of that Treaty, he used all imaginable means, to bring, not only 10,000 *Lorrainers*, but the *Irish Cut-Throats*, against the Parliament; That he declared himself resolved to adhere not only to the *Bishops*, but also to the *Papists*, &c. These are Reproaches which you ought to wipe-off, if you would defend this King to any purpose: but you touch them not.

View, now, I beseech you, the Heads of many of the Articles of misgovernment, which I recounted, and which you have overlooked, only saying, in relation to them, *some Birds are not to be caught with such Chaffe*; and then I shall have done.

An enumeration of several high acts of misgovernment, committed by king Charles.

‘ I. King *Charles I. favoured Popery*. By his Marriage-Articles he agreed, that
 ‘ *Papists should not be molested*; he put above a hundred Popish Lords and
 ‘ *Gentlemen into great Trusts*.

‘ II. *His Bishops were unsound in their principles*; in particular, *Laud* allowed
 ‘ *Books which favoured Popery*, but refused to License Books written against it.
 ‘ *His Chaplains endeavoured to reconcile England to Rome*, and got preferment
 ‘ *by it*.

‘ III. *He lent Ships to the French King to destroy the Protestants of Rochelle*,
 ‘ *which (as the French boasted,) mowed the Hereticks down like Grass*.

‘ IV. *He Raised an Army*, and required the Country to furnish *Coat and Con-*
 ‘ *duct Money*; and Levied Money by way of *Loane*, and *the Refusers* of the
 ‘ *meaner Rank (Men of Quality being imprisoned) were compelled to go for Soul-*
 ‘ *diers, or to serve at Sea*.

‘ V. *He Suspended and Confined the Archbishop of Canterbury (not Laud, but*
 ‘ *Dr. Abbot) because he refused to make that good by Divinity, which the King*
 ‘ *had*

- ‘ had done against the Laws. *He imprisoned Dr. Williams, Bishop of Lincoln,*
 ‘ for speaking against the *Loane*, and not prosecuting *Puritans*.
- ‘ VI. *He turned-out the Lord Chief Justice Crew, for opposing the Loane.*
- ‘ VII. He remitted 30,000*l.* to *Holland*, for the Levying Horse and Men there,
 ‘ to serve his Arbitrary purposes.
- ‘ VIII. He violated *the Petition of Right*, so soon as it was passed into a Law.
- ‘ IX. He confined the *Earl of Bristol* near two years, without any Accusation;
 ‘ and he *Imprisoned the Earl of Arundel* in the time of *Parliament*, without ex-
 ‘ pressing any Cause of his Commitment.
- ‘ X. He sheltered the *Duke of Buckingham*, when he was Prosecuted in Parlia-
 ‘ ment, as the Patron of a Popish Faction; and he Dissolved Parliaments when
 ‘ they were intent upon the Duke’s Prosecution, and charged him in effect with
 ‘ *the Murder of King James*: In Relation thereunto, Sir *Edward Peyton*, who was
 ‘ a Member of Parliament in that time, doth thus express himself in a Treatise
 ‘ called the *Divine Catastrophe*; The Duke of *Buckingham* rewarded King *James*
 ‘ by Poyson, as appeared plainly in Parliament, by the Evidence of divers Phy-
 ‘ sicians, especially *Dr. Ramsey*; and King *Charles*, to save the Duke, dissolved
 ‘ the Parliament when he was Impeached for it, and never after had the Truth
 ‘ Tried, to clear himself from confederacy, or the Duke from so heinous a
 ‘ scandal.
- ‘ XI. *He Imprisoned Members of Parliament* in the time of Parliament, for re-
 ‘ fusing to Answer out of the Parliament, what was said and done there, &c.
- ‘ XII. He threatened the House of Commons, that, if they did not give him
 ‘ Supplies, *He would betake himself to New Counsels*; he asserted, that *Parliaments*
 ‘ *were altogether in his Power, and therefore, as they humour’d him, were to continue,*
 ‘ *or not to be.*

You may here see, Sir, to your shame (had you any), what a small advance you have made, in the defence of that Cause which you so briskly engaged-in; and how much of your Work you have devolved upon your better *Pens*. Before I take my leave of you, I shall observe how little you, the mighty defender of Princes, are to be relied-upon; for, though you tell their Majesties, in the Dedication of your first Defence, that you *wrote it to secure them from Danger*; and the most Reverend, Right Reverend, &c. had your word for it, in your Dedication of this Second Pamphlet, that you *had nothing more in your aim, in putting it out, than to preserve the present Government in Church and State*; (A most commendable and highly-meriting Undertaking, upon my word) yet, (which is a melancholy consideration) you, their Majesties great Preserver, who so bravely engaged never to drop the Cause as long as you could hold a pen, do now flinch and give ground, and, as vanquished by a *grey-headed Man with one foot in the Grave* (as
 you

you Confess me to be) you say, page 13, that *you will not give yourself the trouble of Answering me [a decrepit, crazy Adversary] but will spare yourself the labour because you understand it is recommended to a better hand.* It is astonishingly strange that you, this vaunting *Goliath*, who came-out strutting in a gigantic garb of Pace and Language, and with a terrible look, to act a piece of Ecclesiastical Knight-Errantry; that you, who, in an unprecedented manner, luff'd and threatened the World with that vast magazine of stuff, which you had amassed to annoy the Man that should be found in your way; that you, whom nothing must atone, but a *pray, Master, forgive me; and I'll do so no more*; That such a Doctor, such a Champion as you, should, on the sudden, be crying-out for the aid of *better Hands, of better Pens*, than your own, and that, in a quarrel of your own picking, upon the success whereof, you vainly conceit that *the Being and Well-being of their Majesties, and of every thing that is worth the preserving, depends.* But, I see you, *Inferiour Clergymen*, do often stand in need of Guides: and, let who will come to your assistance, (though I am decrepit,) this *good old Cause*, I rest assured, will abide firm and unshaken, against all the attempts of such Assailants as you can list and draw-up against it: I mean, by this expression of *the good old cause*, the true Government of old *England*, by King, Lords, and Commons.

No more at present (dear Doctor): only I acquaint you at parting, that I am sensible I have not paid you the Tithe of what I owe you. But it lies ready for you, when you shall draw a Bill upon

Your Debtor,

Geneva, May 29th, 1692.

EDMUND LUDLOW.

Allatres

*ALLATRES licet usque nos, & usque,
 Et gannitibus improbis lacessas ;
 Ignotus pereas, Miser, Necessè est.
 Non deerunt tamen hac in Urbe forsàn
 Unus, vel duo, trèsvè, quatuòrvè,
 Pellem rodere qui velint Caninam ;
 Nos hâc à scabiè tenemus unguës.*

Rail-on, poor feeble Scribbler ; speak of me,
 In as base Terms as the World speaks of thee ;
 Sit swelling in thy Hole, like a vex'd Toad,
 And, full of Malice, spit thy spleen abroad ;
 Thou can'st blast no man's Fame with thy ill word ;
 Thy Pen is just as harmless as thy Sword.

FINIS.

